



# REINCARNATOR

BOOK 01

*Alla*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# Reincarnator

(환생작)

by

**ALLA**

# Synopsis

---

Humanity has been gradually transported to the Abyss by a bored god to compete against other races and monsters.

Problem is... Humanity failed.

In a last desperate push the strongest survivors chose a comrade to travel as far as possible back in time.

# Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

---

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Ekdud @ [Gravity Tales](#)

Translation Edit by coyotte508 @ [Gravity Tales](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Preface

There are a lot of things in the Reincarnator universe and a lot of the names are in Korean.

But there's a dedicated [wiki](#) that can help you keep track of everything!

# Chapter 1 – Returning To The Beginning

---

God was bored. One day, in order to solve his boredom, he created a new world so he could watch bloody battles between lowly creatures.

Fight and kill, and you will be rewarded.

Be lazy or timid, and you will be left to die.

The god named his bizarre world the <Abyss>, and slowly started to pour in the life forms he had previously created.

\*\*\*\*\*

“As we expected, only one person can go back to the past. We might need to take a vote to see who goes.”

Keldian, who held a golden book and was one of the four people standing in front of a crystal, muttered this while inspecting the crystal.

<Erkanian’s Space Time Crystal>

A legendary artifact that was said to have the mythical powers to send one back into the past.

In addition, this was the last remaining hope of humankind, who

had entered the Abyss 50 years ago and had since all perished.

A man standing in the corner, who held a massive sword, spoke out after hearing those words.

“I’m going. The strongest person should go.”

Keldian laughed.

“Kangtae, you’ve just been lucky and became strong by gobbling up runes and items. It’ll be much better if I go.”

“Keldian, I acknowledge your intellect, but there were numerous occasions of disagreement and inner conflict that occurred when you just clowned around with your intellect. I shall go instead.”

Keldian stared at Eres, who had just spoken, and laughed.

“Eres, you’re too naïve. Think of how much we suffered beneath you. You are disqualified as well.”

The three who were arguing suddenly stopped and stared off into the distance.

Huge dragons displayed their massive bodies as they flew with incredible speed towards the speakers.



Eres, the woman who had first spotted the temple holding the Space Time Crystal, knew that the real owners of the crystal were approaching, and spoke out with a grim expression.

“It seems like there isn’t any time to argue.”

The fact that the dragons were flying there means that their forces used to buy time had all been annihilated.

If those forces had died, that meant that their group of 4 was the last of mankind.

The golden dragon race was one of the top ruling classes, even in the Abyss.

It might’ve been a different story if they were all in their peak condition. However, coming to this location caused them to use too much energy, and they wouldn’t be able to deal with the dragons.

Eres sighed, her face full of regret, and spoke while looking at the solitary black-haired man sitting in the corner.

“Although it feels a little disappointing, there’s no other way. Hansoo, you should go. Does everyone agree?”

At these words, Kangtae and Keldian sighed reluctantly.



“Can I really not go? I have confidence I can do well.”

“...”

“Alright. Don’t look at me like that. Petty bastards.”

Kangtae complained sadly.

Hansoo sighed exhaustedly and shook his head.

“Can’t I stop fighting now?”

It had been 50 years since the Great War started between the original races dragged into the Abyss.

The survivors had to fight rigorously every day for 50 years.

Just to survive.

‘I’ve fought too long.’

Hansoo shook his head.

At this point, he thought that it might be better to just die like this.

But Eres shook her head firmly.

“You are the one who has to go.”

The four people there, including Eres herself, had only gotten this far because they were the most outstanding of the 7 billion humans.

They were confident that if they had a chance to go back to the past, they would do better.

But inside, everyone knew.

‘He’s the one who has to go.’

The ruling races of the Abyss were so strong that even if the three others went back to the past and had more time, there was no complete guarantee that they could win against the rulers.

However, Hansoo had started 20 years after the others had, yet he currently stood shoulder to shoulder with them.

If he had bloomed his unique potential even just 5 years earlier, then they wouldn’t have been pushed this far.

Hansoo looked at the three and then spoke out.

“Say something, then. I should at least listen to the last words of my friends.”

If it were anybody else, it wouldn't have mattered, but how could he ignore their words?

As Hansoo watched the others with a sad expression, Kangtae spoke first.

“Hey. If you have the chance to acquire my previous runes and items, take them and use them all for yourself.”

“Huh? Shouldn't I give them to your past self?”

Hansoo asked with a surprised expression.

The amount of items and runes that Kangtae had was immeasurable, to the point that his nickname was ‘Fate Creator’.

He had so much that there was a huge problem between them.

Kangtae shook his head.

“No, it's better that you use them instead of me. If you're going to do something, do it right.”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

“Eres, what about you?”

“Don’t fling off people who approach you just because it’s annoying, and take care of them.”

“I will try my best.”

“Oh, come on. You’re going to save humanity, aren’t you? Think about how cool it would be to be a hero. At least listen to your leader for one final time.”

“Well, if the situation allows it.”

“Sigh...”

Hansoo turned his back to the sighing Eres as he finally asked Keldian.

“Keldian, what about you? Oh, by the way, I have no confidence in using my brain as well as you did. I don’t know if I can collect all the skills you use either.”

Keldian coldly replied.

“I don’t have much. If you go back to the past... get rid of those ‘cockroaches’ who will only be of harm during the Great War. And that ‘Light Monarch’... kill him for sure. That is my request.”

Hansoo nodded, and Keldian smiled with a satisfied look on his face. Then, he lifted his book up and started mumbling something.

A blinding light exploded out from the Space Time Crystal and covered Hansoo, who closed his eyes as he started to fade away.

‘It’s time to take a break now.’

They all wanted to go, but at the same time, they wanted to rest.

They didn’t know their true feelings, so they had said no just in case they regretted their decision.

After all, this chance was literally the last opportunity they would have.

However, since it had been decided and Hansoo had been sent off, they clearly knew their true feelings.

Now, their minds were at ease.

At the same time, they felt bad for Hansoo.

‘Work it out. We leave everything to you.’

The three watched the disappearing Hansoo as they smiled with

mixed feelings of regret and relief. Soon, the energy blast from the golden dragons swept over them from above like a storm.

## Chapter 2 – Tutorial (1)

---

Hansoo's five senses, which had been frozen from the light, quickly started to recover.

‘It succeeded, but is my head supposed to hurt this much?’

He knew.

He instinctively knew that he had really returned to the past.

Hansoo shook off his headache and checked his surroundings.

‘What time have I come back to?’

He needed to know exactly when in the past he had come back to.

If he had come back too late, then the whole thing would be pointless.

Through his five senses, Hansoo realized that a chaotic situation was occurring.

“Goddammit! What is this? Is there a hidden camera?”

A hundred or so people were standing around and shouting frantically.



The surroundings resembled Gangnam train station, but it currently looked very different.

The Hyundai building was still standing high, but all the glass had shattered, and there were weird vines and trees growing everywhere.

The scene looked like a time 10 years after nuclear warfare.

It wasn't surprising that people fell into panic.

Some were even fighting with each other out of distress.

It was a really messed up situation.

From this, Hansoo knew exactly to what time he had come back.

'It's the first moment after we transported to the other dimension.'

The year of his birth had been rather peculiar.

That year, people started getting abducted from all over the world.

At first it was 100 at a time, and then the number continued to

increase over time.

The year he turned 20, he also went missing in the real world.

Only then did Hansoo know where the missing people had gone.

<Otherworld>

A mid-way area that was created as the Abyss devoured the other dimension.

The terrain and buildings were like reality, but the contents of the world weren't.

This place had many beasts that roamed around due to the influence of the Abyss, and there were people with powers who had come here before them that roamed around.

5 years later, all the people from the real dimension would be transported to the Otherworld, and after that, the passage that linked the Otherworld and the Abyss would open, igniting the Great War between them and the inhabitants of the Abyss.

Basically, the 25 years before that were like a tutorial.

It was something that the people of the real world had to go through before entering the Abyss.

From a certain angle it looked like benevolence, but to Hansoo, it didn't seem that kindhearted.

It seemed like time had been given only because it would be boring if they died too easily.

‘Whatever, it’s good that I’ve returned to the beginning.’

He had earned 5 years of time before the Abyss had opened.

If it was at the moment it opened, he would’ve been in trouble and wouldn’t have been able to do anything, but this was a very good situation.

Hansoo started checking his body’s condition after he understood the current situation.

Because no one could move before a fairy came out and started the basic tutorial, it was good to have a warmup before then.

‘As I expected.’

Tabula Rasa.

All the skills that he knew and the runes he filled his body with were all gone.

‘Well, I can collect them all. Anyways, it should be here now.’

As Hansoo finished his thoughts, something fell from the sky.

‘It’s here.’

Hansoo stared at the creature that appeared.

The palm-sized fairy looked around at the surrounding people and said, in a sweet voice,

“Hello, everyone. I’m a helper, and I’m here to help you get off to a quick start.

‘Tsk.’

Hansoo, who clearly knew what that satanic midget’s ‘quick start’ meant, inwardly clicked his tongue.

‘I see... it wants to see us fight already.’

As the fairy appeared and a weird aura spread over the people, the seemingly uncontrollable situation slowly died down.

The fairy was a very eye-catching existence, even in this abnormal place.

The smiling fairy looked around as the surroundings quieted down and opened its mouth.

“Firstly, I would like to welcome you all to the Otherworld. You’ve now all been granted a wonderful chance.”

“Wait. Wait. What do you mean? What’s the Otherworld?”

The fairy stared at the questioning man for a while, then ignored the man as it continued its story.

“In this place, you are all granted infinite freedom. No matter what you do here, nobody will punish you. All the rules you’re used to following do not exist here.”

“...”

“And that’s not all. We can’t call that a chance by itself. All you no longer have any of the physical limits of the past.”

“What...?”

“You all can now become infinitely strong depending on what you do, like heroes from a movie.”

As the fairy looked at the confused people, its smile didn’t disappear as it opened its mouth again.

“I will show you a quick demonstration, since I came to hasten the progress.”

The fairy pointed its finger at the man who had shouted out first.

From the feeble and delicate finger, a light beam shot out and penetrated directly through the man’s heart.

Puuuk

“Ku...Kuuuk.”

“I don’t like people who talk a lot.”

At that moment, everyone realized that the new environment was not entirely favorable towards them.

“uuuuhp... uhphup.”

“Very good. Shall we continue?”

Then, the fairy flew towards the man’s corpse.

Something weird happened.

Above the man’s body, a translucent and shining symbol the size of a hand appeared.

The fairy grabbed the symbol and spoke.

“This is a <Rune>. Every living organism contains a rune, and if you kill it, the rune will come out like this. However, what comes out will be random.”



The fairy, who disregarded the terrifying meaning of its words, casually looked around as it continued its speech.

“Let’s see. This improves the strength of one’s muscles. Who... should I give this to?”

Everyone hesitated.

If they acted out, they might get caught in the same situation as the corpse.

At that point, Hansoo raised his hand.

How much he liked the fairy was secondary.

One rune helped a tremendous amount in the beginning.

Plus, there was no risk involved.

There was no reason to not raise his hand.

The fairy looked at Hansoo and gave a content look.

“Very good. I like your determination. Put this on the top of your hand.”

The rune was absorbed into his body.

From the outside, there was not much difference.

But the fairy looked at Hansoo with a smile.

“Isn’t it amazing? These runes break the physical laws. Your muscles were only able to lift 117.1kg before, but it has been increased to 122.3kg.”

“...”

As Hansoo gave a nonchalant face, the fairy felt a bit awkward and turned around to continue talking.

“The reaction was pretty bland. Anyways, there are a lot of different abilities one can raise, and there are a lot of runes to follow that. In those, there are special abilities that the science you played around with before cannot explain. Let’s see... it’d be nice to show something one more time.”

The fairy looked around.

Everyone got frightened and shriveled up from the fairy’s expression of hunting for prey.

That expression was too accurate.

It wanted to kill another person as an experiment to get another

rune.

The fairy shrugged its shoulders as it looked around.

“Let’s stop. I like the number 100. Anyways, keep that in mind. There is nothing bad about any rune that raises any characteristic. If you want to be strong from now on, you need to collect a lot of runes. Your muscles won’t improve no matter how many pushups you do.”

At those words, everyone started to look around and slowly backed up.

If they were killed, a rune would come out and would strengthen someone else.

They could all imagine what would happen in the worst situation.

The fairy enjoyed the weird atmosphere as it smiled contently and opened its mouth.

“If you touch your right ear, you can see which runes you have. Humans seemed to like things in numbers, so we implemented this 15 years ago. You just need to know that the average human’s stat is 10.”

At these words, everyone started touching their ears.

[Kang Hansoo]

Strength: 11

Stamina: 9

‘Strength was increased by 1.’

A simple and crappy configuration.

But everyone was like this at first.

It would be weird if normal people had mana.

As one hunted and collected runes, their mana, magic, physical defense and magic resistance would be added.

It didn’t matter if the hunted were humans or beasts.

“Hmm... he would probably be around 17.”

Hansoo mumbled, as he saw a muscular man in the distance.

A well-trained body.

At this point, he's a high ranker among these people.

11 and 17 were only different by about 1.5 times, but it was not that simple.

However, he would be in a superior situation in the beginning with that much strength.

It'd be a lot for a woman to have a 3 or 4.

The fairy smiled and spoke as it looked at the commotion.

"The starting line may be unfair... but where you used to live was like that too, right? Well, I will give you all a bonus, so don't be sad."

The fairy touched its butt as it spoke.

Everything started touching their butts without thinking.

Something was there.

They saw what came out of their pockets, and their faces turned white.

A sharp dagger, which hadn't existed before they arrived, came out of each person's pocket.

Normally, this would have been very reassuring, but the thought of becoming prey for items and the fact that the person next to them also had a dagger was not pleasant at all

The fairy laughed as it watched,

“You’ll at least need those to do something. Forget about the past and take the chance that was given to you. The tutorial I created will begin now, so good luck.”

The fairy disappeared into a hole that had suddenly appeared.

As the fairy disappeared, people started to mumble.

“...A tutorial?”

Everybody was still tense from the words of a murderous being when a sound started from somewhere.

As everybody was on alert, they looked towards the origin of the noise.

Kyaaak!

Tiny green monsters with deformed looks appeared.

“...Goblins?”

As everyone recognized them from the movies, their faces twisted with fear.

The fairy had appeared and told them something.

It was a tutorial.

It seemed simple, but the words of the fairy could not be so simple.

There were more than 200 goblins

Although there were 100 people and the goblins were only half their size, it was impossible to stand still with a calm mind.

However, it seemed like the goblins had the same thoughts, as they only stared back at them fiercely but didn't approach them.

In this tense situation, somebody quietly spoke from the back.

“Don't irritate them, and slowly move backwards.”

Everyone nodded at those words.

They all silently came to a consensus.



They saw it in the news.

No matter what you could do, always run away if the opponents had sharp objects in their hands.

They also had daggers, but who would want to fight sword to sword with those things?

However, Hansoo shook his head.

Those things were really evil-minded. How could they just throw in a few midgets and call it a tutorial?

“...Huh?”

As they walked back slowly, somebody stopped and moaned.

Somebody got frustrated and spoke out.

“What are you doing? Keep moving. We need to get away.”

The man replied to those words.

“No... this is weird. Something is here. In mid-air.”

“What?”

People started hurrying backwards at those words.

And then they shouted in frustration.

“Fuck! What is this? It’s blocked!”

“Here too!”

People started hitting the wall as they shouted.

At that point, somebody pointed something out.

“Hey... this thing is slowly moving towards us.”

“...What?”

People started leaning against the wall.

They all frowned.

The wall was slowly pushing them back.

Kiiiiiiik!

As they heard the cries from far away, they looked in that direction.

At that location, the goblins were also getting pushed towards them.

As the invisible wall kept pushing them, they grew frustrated and started hacking away at the void, but nothing happened.

Kaaaaaak!

“Fuck...”

As they saw the goblins staring at them, the people gripped their daggers more tightly.

At this point, they had to fight no matter what.

At that moment, somebody fell to the other side.

“Huh? What? How did you get there?”

“Uh... I don't know. It just happened to be over here?”

One person got through the clear wall.

And in the air where the man passed through, a number came up.

<49>

“...49?”

As people mumbled, somebody looked around and quickly ran towards that location.

The number changed.

<48>

At that point, everyone had realized the truth.

50 people could leave.

The remaining 50 had to fight with those things.

Suddenly, everyone started running towards the tiny gap.

“Get out of the fucking way!”

“I will go out!”

“Kyaaa!”

Hansoo shook his head at this scene.

If 100 people fought seriously, they could probably win.

Most might die, but at least 20 would survive.

But if this happened, the story changes.

In reality, as the goblins saw the people fighting with each other, their eyes shone and they started running towards the people.

When Hansoo had first come here, 40 of them had died to the goblins.

‘First, clear up the situation. Then, move to the next stage.’

There were too many things to do.

As he made his decision, his whole body started wriggling around as his muscles tensed up.

## Chapter 3 – Tutorial (2)

---

All of the muscles in Hansoo's body started squirming around at a minuscule level.

His body, which he wasn't accustomed to due to the time gap, moved quickly according to Hansoo's will.

Hansoo, who had readied his body, slowly walked towards the goblins, who were crazily running towards him.

They were already trying so hard to get to him, so what was the point of him running?

It was important to conserve stamina in order to wield his dagger.

Hansoo deflected a goblin's swinging sword-arm.

Keeik?

Hansoo, who seemed as casual as someone going out on a stroll through the mountains, suddenly changed fiercely, while the goblin was flustered.

He released all the strength that he had built up.

All the runes were gone.

All the skills were also gone.

But the same strength, the same stamina, or the same perception had huge differences in effectiveness depending on how they were used.

The body was basically a tool of battle, and depending on the way the tool was used, the final outcomes would have differences like heaven and earth.

Hansoo rushed between the goblins and started slashing madly in all directions.

Kiiieek!

A running goblin he slashed screamed in a beastly manner and dropped down onto the floor, rolling around.

In the spot where the goblin dropped, two things were left.

A crude Podao, which looked much more threatening than a dagger.

There was also a tiny rune.

Hansoo spread out his right hand, grabbed the Podao, and swung it fiercely as he grabbed the rune with his left hand at the time



same.

At that moment, a part of Hansoo's body changed slightly.

‘My luck is good.’

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 11

Agility: 10.1

Stamina: 9

As the rune raised agility by 0.1, Hansoo's status menu changed.

Agility, which wasn't previously shown, appeared.

In a sense, one's strength is what made one faster, but agility was a little different.

The user's time twists and becomes 0.1 times faster, and their reaction speed becomes faster as well, as the same movement being slightly faster.

As agility rises, the user starts to live in a different dimension.

Every rune stat other than strength and stamina, which were already present in humans, started at 10 due to the stats not

normally being present in humans.

Hansoo moved his new, faster body without hesitation towards the incoming goblins and started to cut them into pieces.

Sometimes, a rune didn't come out. When one did, it was small, but since numbers were numbers, Hansoo's rune stats rose slowly but surely.

Of course, with his current status, no matter how weak goblins were, killing 200 on his own was a bit far-fetched.

The Podao was so feeble that two or three swings broke it, and Hansoo had to keep changing weapons as he fought the goblins.

Injuries rose as well.

The people who saw that stopped and stared at each other.

At this rate, they would all die.

Not from goblins, but from the hands of humans.

Also, they started to have feelings of greed.

It seemed like runes were very important.

But as one person ate it all, they started to feel anxious.

And they gained courage as they saw Hansoo, who only seemed to be a college student, fight so well.

From afar, his actions looked very sloppy.

The actions were not flashy, but rather only created due to him protecting himself, but as they saw the goblins falling to those slashes, the goblins seemed very weak.

“Fuck...eyy shit I don’t know anymore!”

“Uwahhh!”

The people ground their teeth, but carefully approached Hansoo’s back and started fighting.

Kiiiek!

The goblins stared at the humans who were charging towards them with panicked looks, but then started fighting with loud roars.

And then chaos started.

“Ahhhhk!”

“Goddammit! Help me!”

They each held one dagger.

They knew they had to fight.

They knew they would get stronger if they fought.

The opponent wasn't that strong.

But even then, they were just ordinary people.

And the enemies were also armed with weapons, albeit they were a bit feeble, and had large amounts of killing intent as well.

A lot of injuries were occurring from all directions.

However, even in that chaotic situation, Hansoo continued to kill goblins as he absorbed runes and slowly walked forward.

Honestly, there was no need to rush and risk receiving a lot of injuries.

He could hide between the people and fight slowly, as if he were peeling an apple, and kill more leisurely.

But there was a reason why he rushed, despite receiving injuries.

‘There is no time to dilly dally.’

Including this location, there were countless amounts of adventurers.

‘There are probably over 10,000.’

The 100 people here was not everybody.

There are probably a few hundred of these locations just for Korea.

If the whole world was taken into consideration, there were many more.

However, everyone here was a new first year.

There were no adventurers from the previous years.

The fact that they didn’t come here probably wasn’t due to kindness towards the newbies.

This location would be protected for three months as the tutorial area.

If restrictions like this didn't exist, all the more experienced would come, kill everyone, and take their runes.

With only 1 year of experience, a person could kill 100 newbies very easily.

From one point of view, it seemed like the fairy was being benevolent, but Hansoo's thoughts were different.

‘How do I say it? It was created to enjoy the chaotic fight between weaklings?’

It seemed like the protection was made because it would be boring if a strong person came and wiped out everybody.

Whatever the reason, this was a chance.

In 3 months, they would have to collide against people who had been here for 2 or 3 years.

With that in mind, they must become strong, fast.

Due to Hansoo flying around quickly in the front, the fight ended rather quickly.

As the battle ended and the tension was released, some people couldn't bear the fatigue and fell onto the floor.

‘About 16 people died.’

This was a much better result than in the past.

If Hansoo wasn't here, at least 30 would've died.

While the 100 people fought 200 goblins, the number of goblins Hansoo killed by himself was at least 70.

The surrounding people tiredly stared at him.

As the people thought of Hansoo's mad actions of slashing in every direction with his Podao and dagger, they started slowly moving away from him, and the fairy appeared.

“Wow. The grade is really good here. Well, from this point onwards, you all should know how to survive.”

‘Fucking son of a mayfly.’

The people couldn't curse out loud, so they did it inwardly.

It was rather easy to realize who put up the goddamn wall.

“I will get rid of the wall now. From now, do it just like this. Fighting!”

As the fairy disappeared, people started mumbling.

Hansoo shook his head and then checked his stats.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 14.3

Agility: 10.9

Stamina: 10.1

Perception 11.2

‘It’s not bad’

Hansoo nodded his head.

As he expected, agility runes didn’t come out easily.

And maybe due to the situation being a tutorial, skills didn’t come out.

However, compared to the three goblins he had killed when he started off in the past, it was not that bad.

He even received perception runes, which increased his overall perception, so this start was pretty good.



‘I even got something like this.’

Hansoo laughed as he saw the sword with a sharp edge.

<Podao Gained from Court’s Recognition>

This well-balanced and sharp Podao was one of the more useful items obtainable in the beginning.

It wasn’t a great weapon, but compared to the ones that had lost their edges with a few swings, it was much better.

With the dagger attached inside and the Podao attached by his waist, his whole body had multiple scars, as he had rushed in order to end it fast.

Hansoo, who had finished his basic preparations, thought of the things that he needed to do at the moment.

‘Firstly... I won’t be able to meet them.’

He was a 1st year adventurer.

On the other hand, Keldian, Kangtae and Eres were 19 to 20 year adventurers.

Since they had started 20 years ahead of him, they were probably running far ahead.

So, Hansoo thought of the next thing.

‘Well, telling them about the Abyss is rejected.’

The dimensional corrosion of the Abyss was sped up depending on how much the corroded dimension knew about the strength, intel, and skill of the Abyss.

It was like ink spreading in the water.

If intel about the Abyss were to spread, the invasion of the Abyss would start earlier.

‘First, strengthening myself is of utmost importance.’

He was here in order to change the flow of water.

However, having the strength to change that flow of water was the start, and was of utmost importance.

And with that, Hansoo thought of his friends.

Eres, Kangtae and Keldian.

It was planned that they would all return together with him.

Unlike him, who had become strong by struggling intensively, each of their actions were close to those posted in a guidebook.

And their survival was because of their strength.

‘How did they say they did it?’

They had told him in the past.

How they had gotten strong in the beginning.

Eres told him.

<I gathered people and quickly created a clan. It wasn't that hard, since I was a physician.>

‘Rejected.’

It didn't fit his personality, and more than anything, one needed to be at the level of Eres to do that.

Next was Keldian.

<That first day with 100 people inside that cage was great chaos. Shortly after the beginning of the first day, we fought and killed

each other, and almost everyone died. I was the only survivor.>

Then, Keldian had eaten all the runes and he quickly rushed away.

‘In my view, Keldian might have provoked them a little.’

But Hansoo shook his head.

In the words of Eres and him, who had come to save humankind, doing that sort of thing was absurd.

Also, there was more bad than good in the long term if that were to happen.

If you kill somebody, a rune will appear, but it didn’t mean that the person who took the rune would have the dead person’s strength added to their own.

Runes didn’t drop in large numbers.

In reality, the man who had died earlier had more than 20 runes together, if you combined his strength and stamina, but the only thing that was dropped was a single strength rune.

If you look at it from the point of society, coexistence was the answer. That was the reason why Eres, who had included everyone, was able to stay as a leader until the end.

More than anything else, if he were to think of his plans, killing a person to obtain a rune was forbidden.

It might be different if they were to kill others, though.

‘How did Kangtae say he did it?’

<For me, when I killed the goblins, agility runes started dropping here and there. Even a regeneration rune dropped.>

‘...This doesn’t help either.’

His luck was too good.

Agility was one of the most useful stats out of the beginning stats.

The increase in reaction speed allowed one to easily dominate others.

And there should be a limit to how lucky one can be, killing a tutorial goblin and getting a regeneration rune.

The methods of those three did not fit him.

Actually, their methods were a bit lacking.

He needed a way to leap over their standards and rush forward with dominance.

Hansoo knew of such a way.

‘Something like this existed.’

A long time ago, one of his comrades from the Final Brigade had told him.

The tutorial area, where 10,000 people were trapped for 3 months, contained a secret.

In this place, there was a hidden dungeon.

For a beginner, the difficulty was immense. So, attempting to complete the dungeon would only end in failure. However, just getting to the halfway point would allow one to have an incomparably immense head start.

His comrade, who had only gotten to the halfway mark after a long struggle, became strong enough to the point of entering the Final Brigade.

Becoming one of the Final Brigade meant being one of the top 100 strongest humans.

Because of that, the hidden dungeon was one of the most

important locations in the tutorial area.

This world was not fit for mankind to survive, but one thing was clear.

Something that seemed close to impossible would grant a larger reward when completed.

‘First, I must accomplish that.’

Hansoo set his primary goal.

## Chapter 4 – Tutorial (3)

---

‘In that case... there is something that I need to solve first.’

There was a hidden piece.

If it did indeed exist, then it would be something that an evil god would have hidden, something that overpowered and theoretically unobtainable in the beginning.

From what he had heard, the difficulty of the final dungeon located in the tutorial area was too high for a beginner to clear.

The survivors of mankind were all geniuses, but no one had reached the end of the final dungeon.

In order to finish, Hansoo would have to collect many pieces.

These hidden pieces were hidden around the tutorial area.

To clear the final dungeon, he must monopolize every remaining hidden piece and become stronger.

‘Let’s see... the first hidden piece was said to be located in the nearest train station.’

The tutorial was split into two stages.



The first stage was one in which the first 100 people acted together.

For one week, the 100 people would stay in the designated area, and then for 3 months after that, the second stage commenced in which they would hunt in another designated area.

When those two stages were over, the protective area would be opened, and they would be able to meet with the people from previous years.

To his knowledge, there were two hidden pieces in the first stage of the tutorial.

After one week, those two hidden pieces would disappear. He needed to find them before the week was over.

Hansoo got up and dusted himself off.

‘I’m heading to... Gangnam Station.’

The location of the first hidden piece was Gangnam Station.

By the time Hansoo started heading over there, a chaotic situation had already arisen.

‘I knew this would happen.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue as he heard the screams from multiple directions.

“Why are you doing this!”

“Aaahk! We will go separately!”

“Go where! We need to group in order to survive!”

In the location where the battle ended, everyone was making an uproar.

‘Their opinions probably differed.’

There were a lot of small fights here and there between the people who wanted to act by themselves and those who wanted to group up.

Normally, if their desires were that different, it would be normal to separate.

There would only be problems if you held onto somebody with a drastically different opinion.

However, if one side overwhelmingly didn't want the other side to go for some reason, a problem occurred.

Since there were over 100 people, there were obviously people who were more beautiful than normal.

For the same reason, there were also a few who got used to the new world more quickly.

“Ahh, seriously!”

Suddenly, a group of 3 males and 4 females dashed out and ran towards Hansoo’s location.

“He....Hey, where are you going!”

‘With their levels of beauty... there will definitely be problems.’

Maybe it was because they were at Gangnam Station and were brought here, but their appearances were above average.

One was seriously a league above everyone else.

Suddenly, one woman looked behind them and shouted:

“We will act separately! We are going to work with this person here!”

“...”

As Hansoo heard the frantic calls, he frowned.

“Hey! Hansoo! Why are you pretending to not know us? We’re acquaintances!”

‘Oh. Right.’

Hansoo nodded then, as if he just remembered.

Because everyone had died right off at the start, he hadn’t remembered his college acquaintances.

There was no way he could remember them after 50 years.

He had forgotten already, but after this situation occurred, he started to remember them bit by bit.

‘Oh yeah, we came with four guys and four girls to get closer to each other.’

From the other side, a thirty-something looking man ran towards them while breathing excessively and was startled after he saw Hansoo.

‘That guy is...’

The man remembered.

Hansoo was the guy who advanced quickly as he crazily slashed apart the goblin-looking beasts.

He was so good at fighting that while the others were struggling with 2 to 3 of them, he alone killed dozens of them.

‘Does he do some sort of sport...?’

The middle-aged guy, Taesung, kept contemplating.

He understood that Hansoo was strong.

‘And he looks hurt too.’

But, as the fairy had told them before, no one was at an extremely high level yet.

As Hansoo saw the squirming Taesung, Hansoo clicked his tongue.

‘This is why it’s problematic.’

Normally, the people wouldn’t even think of fighting.

The hype of the battle had not yet disappeared.

Their first injuries, their first encounters with violence, and the results gave them confidence, which could clearly be seen in their excited expressions.

The others were the same.

‘It would be hard to use reason.’

There was really no reason to start fighting with each other right now.

The time in which Hansoo would become angry enough to fight was long gone.

There was no reason to meet this man or stay here any longer.

Hansoo turned and started walking away from Taesung, who was starting at him.

As Hansoo started to walk off, Taesung watched him bewilderingly.

“This bitch, leaving a person in front of him... Hey! Where are you going?!”

Then, Hansoo suddenly got curious and turned around to confront him.

What would this person say to him?

“Is there something you want to say?”

‘Do I set my age as 76 or 201?’

He wondered if he should be formal or informal, but then decided to go with the easier route.

Due to Hansoo’s words, Taesung looked shocked.

“What? This young bitch...”

‘Yeah. What do I say?’

Hansoo’s previous crazy fighting prowess scared Taesung, who did not want to make an excessive demand, but he would be filled with regret if he simply let Hansoo and the young people behind him walk away.

While Taesung was shocked, the man who was standing behind him spoke impatiently.

“We really aren’t bad people either. My name is Giltae. Let’s act together. It seems like you eight are young, so wouldn’t it be better to work together? It seems that there will be a lot of times where strength is needed from now on.”

Then, people who agreed with his words gathered behind him.

‘No, it’s not that they agree.’

From the atmosphere, it seemed that they knew each other.

Hansoo stared at the man who had talked to him, as he seemed like the leader.

‘Hmm, his eyes...’

There were a lot of people like this.

Those who got used to things way too quickly.

No, it would be more fitting to say that they were restricted in the world they had used to live in.

And now, since those restrictions were gone, they were like fish swimming in water.

Hansoo thought for a moment, choosing between the dying



wishes of Eres and Keldian, and then made a decision.

‘Eres, you are saving a lot of people right now. I will let them go, once.’

Honestly, pulling out the roots that hadn’t done anything yet was not in his character.

Even then, his stats were still pretty average.

He needed to get out, but if he killed everyone here and left, the time for hidden pieces would be rather limited.

Hansoo replied abruptly.

“Dismissed.”

Having a lot of people wasn’t bad, since it made hunting much easier.

However, people who were like vultures, trying to gobble up everything they can, were bound to make trouble.

Hansoo, who had finished talking, searched around the goblin corpses and bound two more Podaos to his waist, and then started to walk away.

The remaining friends looked at each other and then followed behind him.

“This son of a bitch...”

Taesung, who had been watching Hansoo, gritted his teeth and stepped forward, but Giltæ blocked his path.

“ ... ”

As Taesung watched his elder brother Giltæ’s actions with a weird look, Giltæ opened his mouth.

“This isn’t the time to be fighting with them. They... can be dealt with after everything is organized. We must first get this place in order.”

Giltæ looked around at the 70 or so people remaining.

The current situation was already chaotic.

A strange place with strange beasts.

And that damnable fairy, too.

Since it was already chaotic, keeping those who would create trouble would only make it hard on him to control them.

‘First, set the atmosphere here.’

From one point of view, this chaotic period was a chance.

Giltae stared intensely at the location where the group had disappeared for a while, and then stomped his way into the crowd.

.....

Taeson, one of the group of friends, stared at Hansoo, who was walking in front of him raggedly, with a complicated look.

‘I’m not sure if this was the right move.’

But Taeson shook his head.

If they stayed in there, a real division would’ve occurred.

Humans were scarier than goblins.

Besides, being next to Hansoo made him feel safer.

Logically, it didn’t make sense that being next to one person felt safer than being next to seventy, but that’s how it was.

‘Anyways...’

Taesoon knew that this guy was peculiar.

Starting all the way back from orientation at the college, Hansoo had been in a corner, dazed.

As if he was thinking of something else.

He had also said that he was an orphan.

And from that, Hansoo seemed like a weak target.

The reason why Taesoon had brought him today was because if there was somebody lesser than him around, Taesoon would stand out more.

‘Tsk.’

But Taesoon didn’t realize that Hansoo was like that.

As Taesoon remembered Hansoo fighting manically in the front, he watched Mihee, the beauty of the group, with a face full of regret, as she was staring at Hansoo. He then cleared his throat and spoke:

“Hey, Hansoo! Do you really not remember us?”

At those words, Hansoo looked at Taesoon, and then spoke:

“I think I got amnesia when we got here. I don’t really remember much.”

“Hey, why do you talk like an old man?”

“...Does it show that much?”

Mihee smiled softly at those words.

Hansoo stared at her.

The other three girls weren’t bad, but she had a beauty that stood out.

At that level, living life was pretty easy.

‘...But.’

In the Otherworld, beauty was a double-edged sword.

If you had the confidence to use it well, it became a weapon, but if you aren’t strong enough, then you would invite all sorts of crooks.

‘Well, she’ll figure it out by herself.’

Hansoo ceased his thoughts and kept moving.

Mihee stared at Hansoo and spoke cautiously:

“Where are you going right now?”

Hansoo had been walking with a purpose from the beginning, as if he knew exactly where he wanted to go.

Hansoo gave a short reply.

“Inside Gangnam Train Station.”

“Why there?”

Hansoo pondered for a moment.

‘If I travel alone, I don’t need to explain all these things, but this is rather annoying.’

However, since he decided to keep Eres’s words in mind as much as possible, he gave a curt reply.

“I’m getting a feeling.”

“... A feeling?”

“Yeah. It seems that with the amnesia, I seem to have gained psychic powers. I’m getting a feeling that I must go to the train station.”

It was too annoying to explain every single thing, and they would probably believe him if he said that he gained psychic powers.

‘Well, even fairies exist, so if I say that I have psychic powers, they will somewhat understand.’

Technically, he didn’t really lie either.

If one was extremely lucky, they could get a rune with something called the ‘Sixth Sense’.

Hansoo, who had organized things simply, continued to walk forward while the others looked at him weirdly.

His actions had been weird from the beginning, but psychic powers?

“...Is it ok for us to follow that guy?”

Jisun, one of the girls standing behind Mihee, softly whispered to her boyfriend, Gangtae.

This couldn't escape Hansoo's enhanced hearing.

Hansoo smirked as he spoke:

“You really don't have to follow me. I'm the type that respects personal preferences.”

“...”

Hansoo, who headed forward without hesitation, went down the steps to the twelfth exit that came into view.

The group made bitter expressions before following after Hansoo.

Honestly, the things humans could do to them were much more terrifying than whatever a beast would do, and what the fairies were capable of was even more terrifying.

‘It'd be nice if he really had psychic powers.’

Taesoon, who was mumbling inwardly, went down to the train station and then spoke to Hansoo:

“Ah! Are you preparing a place to live?”



Hansoo nodded at those words.

Suddenly, Hansoo slashed his Podao downwards.

Kuuuaaaaak

“Unfortunately, there are some friends already living down here.”

# Chapter 5 – Gangnam Station (1)

---

Kaaak!

A beastly sound was heard from below as green blood spluttered out.

Taesoon who had seen this was scared out of his wits.

“What is it!”

‘Green Worm’

This place looked like Gangnam Train Station but it was not anymore.

It copied the looks of the Gangnam Train Station but one could look at it as a dungeon.

And Green Worms were one of the most widely spread mobs of the Tutorial area.

They don’t like sunlight so they stay underground and they come out after feeling the vibrations above ground.

If someone were to be bitten by that somewhat lacking mouth, chunks of flesh getting ripped off was a given.

‘Well, they still give runes.’

From one point of view, it is very dangerous.

If you get bitten once and fall down you will die without being able to do anything.

But there was an easy way to deal with these guys.

Hansoo ruthlessly hacked down on the heads as he spoke:

“If you aren’t confident then walk on the unbroken granite. If you see somewhere that’s broken and earth is exposed, stab it with your sword. Oh and be careful of your hand when you stab.”

Right below the granite was soil, confirming that this place just copied the looks of Gangnam Train Station.

“... How do you know all of this?”

As Taesoon asked with a suspicious look, Hansoo replied very simply.

“Psychic powers.”

“...”

At those words the seven who had been eyeing Hansoo with a terrified face carefully walked on the granite as they stabbed the areas with exposed soil.

Kiiieeeeeek!

Hansoo shook his head at the way they stabbed the earth ruthlessly.

‘Four of them are useful. Three aren’t quite there yet.’

Surprisingly the females were leading.

Mihee and Jisun were stabbing the earth with clenched teeth and Taesoon and Jisun’s boyfriend were also stabbing the earth zealously.

But the remaining three were perhaps afraid of the green worms who came out screaming, they were just watching quietly from the back.

Hansoo didn’t really care about those three.

There was no reason to get upset because they didn’t join in on the fight. Because the work will eventually fall onto him anyway.

Soon there were tiny runes shining everywhere.

Hansoo was picking the runes that came out from his killings then turned around and asked with a weird look:

“...Why aren't you picking them up?”

Then Taesoon laughed awkwardly.

“No, It's nothing much but... isn't it better for you to take them all? Even in games we do something where we give everything to one person.”

Everyone nodded a little bit.

Just because someone assimilated runes, it didn't mean they would become strong like superman.

But if at the moment they were to get caught by those beastly things and get tetanus or something then they would just die.

If they gave all these runes to Hansoo and his protection offers safety, it's a better option.

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

“The things you kill, you take.”

This was not his thoughts.

If they were going to become enemies from the start it wouldn't really matter but if they are going to travel together they at least needed some rules.

And this was the most basic rule that they followed in order to stay together for decades when roaming around the abyss.

<You take the runes for the things you kill. If it's a group hunt then you distribute according to order and contribution>

‘As I expected due to it being the start...’

Thinking that they will protect you because they eat the runes is a very flawed idea.

Why would they since we're friends. Thoughts like if i'm this nice to them they will reward me with something.

When a situation where one's life is on the line comes along, a relationship built on each other's likes disappear like bubbles.

So far reality is still in check but soon after they will realize it.

A situation where one's life is in danger isn't far off in this place.

In conclusion the only thing you can trust is your own ability.

If you are useless you will get thrown off immediately.

They will realize it eventually and once they do they will zealously go for runes and become red eyed.

The above rule was created because of that.

‘I’m not their babysitter, they’ve got to handle things themselves.’

At that moment Taesoon mumbled softly in the corner.

“Hey look over here. There’s a special rune here.”

At those words everyone gathered around.

Everyone saw it for the first time but from instinct they knew what use this rune had.

“If one takes this then they can use skills huh.”

Taesoon mumbled as he stole glances at Hansoo.

The object gives rise to the desire.



Before, Hansoo coolly said that they should distribute the runes but if his eyes turn at the sight of these new runes and he says that he will take it, Taesoon had no way of stopping him.

“Can I really take this?”

Then Hansoo nodded his head.

Hansoo even knew the identity of that rune.

<Ekrool Troll Tribe's Essence>

‘It's a pretty good rune at the start’

A rune that made your skin hard and increased regeneration.

A rune which increases both defense and regeneration in the beginning where survival is important.

And that rune was almost like a passive where learning had no restrictions and didn't take mana.

You get more gluttonous but for the benefit you get, it's worth it.

Food can be stolen once you get stronger and won't be a problem.

But Hansoo shook his head.

‘I cannot learn skills freely.’

Usually one learned a few tens of skills.

It’s not erasable but there isn’t really anything you need to give up to learn the skill.

The strength of the skill changes according to proficiency and rank but since there’s no risk of learning there’s no harm in learning it.

Someone with a good sense and a lot of mana sometimes has over a hundred and Keldian had over a thousand.

And since he was able to use all those skills properly he was one of the strongest four.

Kangtae was the strongest but if they actually fought Keldian was not a joke either.

But he could not be like that.

<Seven Stars>

A nickname given by Eres after seeing his peculiar characteristic.

A characteristic that allowed him to catch up to Kangtae, Keldian, Eres and stand shoulder to shoulder with them despite starting 20 years late.

And the characteristic that was the deciding factor that made the others send him to the past instead of themselves.

.....

The time he realized his characteristics was when he first learned a skill.

The first skill he learned was <Dororo lizard's essence>

But as soon as the rune was implemented to his body he knew he made a mistake which could not be changed.

<...the amount of skills I can learn is exactly seven.>

To be specific the amount of runes that was allowed for him was seven.

Eres always lamented.

<If you had learned a mid-tier skill like Reinforcement (氣功) and evolved it then it would've been so much easier on us.>

The limit of seven was a huge disadvantage.

But more so than that there's a huge advantage to it.

The speed at which the proficiency of the skill rises is surprisingly fast.

At an incredible speed.

And the skill even breaks the limit and keeps on evolving afterwards.

The skill he learned, Dororo Lizard's Essence which basically just gave fast regeneration evolved to the point where it was comparable to his immortal technique he learned.

Eventually the Dororo Lizard's Essence was like that.

The scrubby skills which he learned as a final resort in order to survive eventually strengthened as he struggled.

<Ganglion's Fast Charge> upgraded to the point of Keldian's Void Ripper and <Anon's Vampire Bat> upgraded to the point where it got as strong as Blood Magic.

In the abyss where a strong skill was important, this was a talent of blessing.

And for that Eres firmly told him before he came back to the fast.

Make sure to carefully select before deciding on the seven skills.

And he was thinking of doing that if all went according to his plans.

‘According to my plans... there’s nothing before exiting the tutorial area.’

“Then I’m going to learn it?”

The surrounding friends stared jealously at Taesoon who was very happy.

And soon when Taesoon absorbed the rune a change occurred.

Wriggle

Taeroon's skin temporarily showed a bit of green then returned.

There wasn't much change but Taeroon knew the second he learned what kind of change happened to his body.

The tired body started to have miniscule amounts of vitality flowing into it and the skin which had been grazed by the teeth of the green worm started to heal.

And a newly appeared stat.

'A stat called physical resistance appeared'

Taeroon touched his ears.

[Park Taeroon] Strength: 11.1

Agility: 10.1

Stamina: 12.5(+1.5<Ekrool Troll Tribe's Essence>)

perception:10.3

Physical Resistance: 10.7(+0.7<Ekrool Troll Tribe's Essence>)

<Skill>

-Ekrol Troll Tribe's Essence (Proficiency 1.0%)

‘Good’

The proficiency was only at 1% but quite a lot of stats went up

Dumbass, giving me something like this.

If it was him he would never have given it.

Hierarchy should be taken advantage of when it is applicable.

‘I will catch up to you’

Taeson, who had counted the number of runes, watched Hansoo with a confident smile.

While Taeson was doing that Hansoo checked his stats.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 15.3

Agility: 12.1

Stamina: 12.1

Perception:13.2

‘It’s not bad.’

The level where it was not bad but rather it was extremely fast-paced compared to the past.

Hansoo shook his head as he continued forward.

But at that moment Taesoon came next to Hansoo as he spoke:

“It’ll be dangerous from now on so let’s go together.”

And as Hansoo saw Taesoon steal a glance at Mihee he shook his head.

‘...There’s no way that he’s seeing me as a competitor.’

Actually this much was cute.

In the future one won’t know how it will change.

‘Whatever happens it isn’t bad.’



Even if they split the runes the speed was fast so the rate at which the runes increased was faster compared to when he hunted alone.

He was worried that Taesoon might be in the way but he was at least working enough for one person.

With the two as the lead, the eight kept on going forwards.

Thankfully a little bit of light came through half broken down roofs so there wasn't much issue in going forward.

Though it was a little hard to see.

Kuaduduk

Maybe it was because they got greedy after seeing a skill, everyone was greedily slashing down upon green worms but they could still not compare to Taesoon and Hansoo's speed.

‘Anyways... that guy doesn't even have a skill but he's so much faster than me.’

Taesoon looked at Hansoo with a slightly jealous look.

Due to the new skill he could dash in with a little less fear.

That was the reason why his hunting speed rose.

But that guy ruthlessly dove between green worms as if he was invincible and slashed down on heads.

‘...No. I will win.’

Taesoon, who could not accept that a guy who was quietly stuck in a corner was much better than him, was slashing down on green worms even more zealously than before as he advanced slowly.

Mihee cautiously trailed behind and asked Hansoo.

“...But why are we going downwards?”

Hansoo replied to those words:

“To ride the subway.”

“...The subway?”

As Taesoon looked at the collapsing train station with no electricity, he looked at Hansoo with suspicion.

## Chapter 6 – Gangnam Station (2)

---

Hansoo thought of the words that Minchul, who was part of the final brigade, had told him.

<In the location where all the people who start are gathered there is always a train station.>

<All the train stations are different and have a different layout but the fact that they have 3 floors is the same for all of them.>

<You need to go down to the third floor. There is a train which has yet to depart... you just need to get on that.>

He asked because it was so spontaneous.

How did you know about it?

And then Minchul grinded his teeth.

<Back then a strong guy wanted to take me and my girlfriend as a hunt... so we madly ran down and found out by coincidence. Though thankfully I killed him with what I got afterwards.>

It seemed like a simple suggestion but there was a problem.

This train leaves after one day.

And that's why it was a hidden piece that needed to be solved by today.

Just falling into a weird place was enough to shock somebody but there will not likely be someone who will crawl into the third floor of a monster-filled cave.

But just getting to the Final Brigade meant that you were an abnormal person and there were about four people who knew about this and they all got something different.

But they all received artifacts.

And they were all very useful during the beginning.

‘Let's see what comes out’

Eventually Hansoo's group had their eyes on the entrance that led further down.

Mihee mumbled inwardly.

‘This isn't... this isn't Gangnam Station.’

Never had she heard of this entrance while travelling back and forth through Gangnam Station tens of times.

“Are you really going in?”

When Mihee asked with an anxious look as she looked at the entrance which permeated a creepier aura, Hansoo merely shrugged.

“I don’t know either. I’m just going by how I feel. By the way anybody can leave or stop following whenever they want to.”

If one thought about it there was not really a reason to follow him down.

And there was plenty of game around here too.

Since there were many green worms left.

“I’m going in.”

Taeson said confidently first.

And Mihee, who was contemplating what to do, said while biting down hard.

“I’m going in too.”

‘... She must be feeling pressured.’

Hansoo nodded his head.

She probably understood the situation before.

Someone like her is in a more dangerous situation than others.

Right now, her face was not a blessing but a curse.

If she wasn't going to slash her face she needed get stronger.

‘Would it be enough even if she slashed her face?’

Hansoo shook his head after seeing Mihee's body which was almost about to burst.

Jisun and Gangtae, who were a couple, spoke after staring at each other.

“We will stay here. We can just hunt here.”

Hansoo nodded his head.

That was not a bad plan at all.

It's a good choice to raise your stats while the people higher up

are bickering back and forth.

And one of the three people who were fighting on a small scale, Sangjin who was following from behind with a scared expression, opened his mouth as well.

“I will go down too”

Everyone made a surprised face at those words but Sangjin just bit his lips and didn’t say anything.

And with that it was decided that four will stay and three will go down.

Hansoo ruthlessly moved his body downwards.

.....

‘He said... it’ll be here when I come down.’

Hansoo, who had come down to the second floor, looked around.

Before coming here he had heard everyone’s individual tutorial area stories.

They were old stories but due to it being their first impactful experience, everyone remembered it to an extent.



‘The results... were all different’

The mobs and landscape in the tutorial area comprise of thousands of different kinds and what was in here was going to be random.

But they all had something in common.

‘As I thought, it exists.’

On the second floor of the train station, a convenience store was always placed there.

As if they were rewarding you.

“Wahhh!”

Mihee shouted as she approached the store.

The lights were off but there were plenty of goods including fresh water inside.

Mihee, Taesoon and Sangjin went in and started to collect some necessities.

“There’s even cigarettes”

What each took were different.

Taeson took a few kitchen knives that looked like they could be used as a weapon then found a belt like object to hold them. Mihee blushed as she gathered a few goods like sanitation pads cautiously in the corner.

Hansoo, who was looking at that, went into one of the corners of the store.

‘It’s closer to a market than a convenience store...’

Hansoo nodded as he saw pots to bunsen burners and even portable burners.

As Mihee saw Hansoo who was getting ready to boil something in the corner, she asked with a strange look.

“Anyways, why did you bring those?”

Mihee looked at a pouch in Hansoo’s hands with a puckery face.

Hansoo had cut the goblin leather into a suitable size then brought the blood of the green worm within it.

Hansoo didn’t reply to those words and started to weigh the items on the scale meant for mail.

‘It’s been innovated with extreme detail. Anyways it was 800g of green worm blood and 225g of goblin leather.’

Hansoo who had weighed everything with extreme detail, poured the blood in one pot and then ripped up the goblin leather, put it in the same pot and proceeded to boil it.

Soon, when the blood started to boil, something fascinating happened.

The goblin leather started to melt.

‘Good.’

Green worms, when goblins invaded, bit off the goblins and then sprayed blood from an injury in its mouth to melt down the leather.

And goblins, to retaliate, evolved to counter this.

If the blood of the green worm was to touch their leather, it would become poisonous.

‘The two species probably lived in the same area for a long time.’

Whatever happened, the poison made this way showed a powerful might in the beginning.

Hansoo started to carefully smear the dark red liquid onto the blade.

And Taesoon, Sangjin and Mihee who had gathered around watched as if it was fascinating.

“What is he making?”

Taesoon made a slightly suspicious face as he spoke.

And Hansoo replied very simply:

“It’s poison.”

“How do you know the method...”

“Psychic powers, the knowledge is springing up in my head.”

“ ... ”

‘Seriously, I thought my head was going to explode while memorizing these.’

Hansoo shook his head as he thought of Keldian and the alchemist, Rahiman, who had grilled him.

Hansoo's magic stat was very high but just because the magic stat rose did not mean intellect rose.

Only that the power of the skill increased.

Hansoo's information that he had painstakingly learned was called <Combination> by adventurers.

Since even though getting items was important, creating and enhancing them was also of great importance.

In the earlier years, there were clans or magi who researched these professionally.

Normally a magi like Keldian learned and produced these but the other three in the group of the last four surviving people, those other than Keldian, went through tons of stress in order to memorize these.

‘Though only I survived in the end...’

Hansoo, who was reminiscing the old days, remembered Keldian's words.

Keldian firmly told him while handing down the combination methods.

<You cannot tell these methods in other places. If the knowledge

of the future is spread, the raid of the Abyss will only hasten, always remember. You are not becoming Prometheus. This knowledge must only be used in a dire situation with a careful plan.>

Hansoo, who had thought up to this point, stole a glance at the three who were watching fervently but shook his head.

They won't know even if they see.

Since if the correct ratio wasn't known and the heating time was not done perfectly then it would be useless.

Hansoo emptied a nearby shampoo container, filled it with the liquid he created, then applied it to his sword by squeezing the container.

“Is there a possibility that we can use that too?”

Hansoo nodded as Mihee carefully asked.

“Of course.”

And then everyone's faces brightened up.

If Hansoo didn't follow up with some more words.

“One application costs either a ¼ strength or stamina rune.”

“...Isn’t that a bit too petty?”

Taeson made an annoyed expression.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“I could just give it to you if I wanted.”

“ ... ”

“But if you look at it on the long term, it doesn’t seem like a good choice.”

Mihee nodded after thinking about it for a moment.

A one-way relationship will eventually get ruined.

And Hansoo seemed like a good person to know for long term, or at least he did so far.

“I will give the rune to you later. Let me put it on first.”

Hansoo nodded at those words

“What about you guys?”

Sangjin and Taesoon nodded eventually without a choice.

‘Since we don’t have to give him anything if it isn’t that good. Or just not use it.’

The two thought as they presented their swords.

“Careful when you put it on, since there will be severe pain if it gets on your fingers.”

And at those words the people who were squeezing the shampoo bottles applied the poison carefully.

Hansoo added something whilst staring into the giant bag latched onto their backs.

“If you walk around outside with such a big bag then you will realise why a lure is effective in fishing.”

“...”

“If you want to complete it safely then do it like this. You can’t fight with that on anyways.”

Hansoo gathered a bunch of things then went into a corner



where light didn't reach, dugged a hole then buried it.

Since they had enhanced bodies and swords, digging in the ground was very swift.

Taeson and Sangjin, who had seen this, started to gather every food item and started to put them into a large bag.

Then Hansoo shook his head as he saw this.

“If those all disappear, the guys who come here later will chase us with their lives. Leave some.”

“...”

The two who looked at Hansoo with a dissatisfied face, started to gather necessities first.

Mihee was checking out Hansoo thoroughly from afar.

‘...I thought he was only quiet.’

He wasn't only good at fighting.

Every single action was extremely reliable.

Like a professional survivalist.

‘....Won’t a psychic power like that appear for me as well?’

It was weird that he had used the excuse of psychic powers since the beginning but in a world where monsters and creatures exist something like psychic powers seemed possible.

Mihee shook her head after looking at Hansoo in a strange way.

She was quick to catch on ever since she was small.

There were countless millions of people who had gone missing but not one had come back.

Which meant it was likely that they were going to spend eternity in this place.

And for that she had to adapt to this place fast.

‘I... definitely don’t want to die’

No, maybe dying was a better alternative in some situations.

‘If nothing works...’

This wasn’t the time to look for a man to protect her but a final method was always important.

Mihee looked at Hansoo with a strange look then followed Hansoo, who had gotten out of his seat and proceeded to go deeper into the station, while clenching her teeth.

.....

Taesoon kept on asking Hansoo as he saw him walk through the darkness:

“Is there a way for us to get that psychic power too?”

At those words Mihee, who had been staring at Hansoo, and even Sangjin, who had been following quietly, listened in.

Hansoo nodded at Taesoon’s words.

“Maybe.”

“Really?”

Hansoo’s knowledge of his own future was not due to psychic powers but a few people who come in the otherworld show special skills that they didn’t have in the real world.

This was called <Traits>.

Keldian gave an explanation about traits in this way:

<It's probably as they traveled from a manaless or Ki-less real world into this world, they found a hidden ability in their body.>

People who had a very good personal trait showed a faster rate of growth than others if they survived the start.

His case was a trait called Seven Stars.

A large variety of traits existed and very dangerous traits existed among those as well.

'I need to find those guys though.'

Taesoon asked with a weird face at Hansoo:

"Why did you get quieter all of a sudden?"

He didn't really talk about but he talked even less now.

Hansoo replied very simply:

"There aren't many things to talk about."

Hansoo thought of the annihilation of mankind as he answered.

Everyone was at a dried up state without a moment to talk for the last 5 years.

As there were opponents such as the tribes of abyss who seemed to flood them like water, hope had started to slowly disappear.

And thanks to that a person to talk to rapidly decreased.

“How could he...”

Taesoon clicked his tongue.

‘Was he a loner during high school? Is that why he learned martial arts?’

Well whatever happens as long as there’s possibility for him.

Taesoon, who had always been in the center of the crowd, and who was now in a the second man’s position wasn’t really used to it.

And it wasn’t pleasing either.

‘A guy like him developed psychic abilities and can do that much, if it appeared on me I’d shine even more.’

And when that happens he will become the center of the crowd again.

‘Since that guy Hansoo is useful, I should keep him by my side.’

Taesoon walked forward with hopeful thoughts.

## Chapter 7 – Gangnam Station (3)

---

“Wait a moment!”

“What is it?”

Taeson, who was already annoyed due to Hansoo’s slow movement while he checked the walls and the ground carefully, replied bluntly.

Hansoo ignored Taeson and searched the surrounding ground.

Monsters are living beings too.

They were dragged along with them into this world but their life habits or markings existed.

As Hansoo checked the ground he found a mark that looked like something had been dragged across the floor.

In the tutorial area, the monsters that drag their body across the floor are 17 kinds.

Plus if you take into account the mucus then it is reduced to three kinds.

It isn’t the Black Snail. A unique sour smell was not in the air and the markings are only on the ground. If it was the black snail you

would see the mucus on the walls as well.

It isn't Chopped Up Zombies either. Because then the markings on the ground would be half mucus and half intestines.

Then only one choice remains.

'Land Mermaid?'

Land Mermaid.

This is actually more like a nickname.

Their upper body was a unique shaped human and their lower body was like a grub, from one angle it would look like a mermaid that had been dropped onto the land.

To drag their heavy lower body across the floor with their hands, the strength of their hands was very developed and the paralyzing poison that came out of their lower body was dangerous.

Their lower body was heavy and the speed of dragging themselves across the floor was only slightly faster than walking but if you aren't ready and get shot by the paralysis poison, you will witness the sight of your body getting ripped apart by these guys.

Hansoo made an unsightly face after seeing the overall state.



‘This is a tutorial area with a high difficulty’

If every tutorial area’s monsters were different then their difficulties were different as well.

It’s not an opponent that you cannot win against but it was indeed a problem to deal with.

The Goblin and the Green Worm are similar in terms of physical ability and aren’t that bad when dealing face to face but the consequences could be dire if you don’t know about them.

And because it’s the the first day newbie adventurers not knowing was definite.

When he had first come here, the tutorial stage ended before he came to the train station so he didn’t know but it was set up with rather troublesome mobs.

‘I guess I need a little more preparation.’

Hansoo stopped and then returned back to the convenience store.

The three who had been following mumbled quietly.

“...It is that psychic power again.”

“You guys come and help too.”

Hansoo returned, gathered all the Soju (Korean Alcoholic Beverage), flipped them upside down and started to empty them.

Gluglugluglug

‘They did say it would be here.... but why is something like this here.’

He did heard it from the team he made the plans with but after seeing the paint thinner in the corner Hansoo smirked and laughed. (\*TL: Paint Thinner is Extremely Flammable and EXPLOSIVE)

After he emptied the Soju bottles, he filled them with the paint thinner.

‘Is there no diesel around.’

Hansoo just replaced it with a cheaper version and poured some of the sesame oil in the corner then plugged the top with tissue.

“...Where did you learn how to make a molotov cocktail?”

“If you live in Korea you should at least know this much. We need to make as much as available.”

When the four made it together, it was done quickly.

Hansoo got the lighters from the side of the counter, handed them one each then gathered the molotovs in two backpacks and another bag and talked to the three.

“One will throw the molotov and the three will stand in the front. The Rune displacement will be less for the person on the back who is on the safer location. Anybody up for it?”

Taeson, who heard that the rune displacement was low, stood without words but Sangjin and Mihee raised their hands slowly.

Hansoo looked at the two and spoke.

“Get into a consensus, as to who will throw.”

Sangjin knitted his brows for a moment but since he couldn't bicker with the beauty he was about to lower his hand.

When Mihee was about to make a sigh of relief Hansoo threw out another word as a bonus.

“As a reminder, it will become much more dangerous from now on. Instead of saying let's trade during the fight decide carefully now.”

At those words Sangjin, who was about to lower his hands, stopped and Mihee looked at Hansoo with a resentful face.

Mihee looked at Sangjin with a desperate face but when Sangjin had no looks of backing down she just gave up.

“Let’s take turns with it.”

“...Alright.”

Sangjin thought for a moment but since he didn’t want to bicker around he agreed with those terms.

‘Should I just go up...’

Sangjin pondered for a moment after hearing that it was dangerous but then shook his head.

It felt like if you followed Hansoo something amazing will come out. He also wanted to be part of that.

‘It seems like he shares it fairly so...’

If he lent a hand, would they throw him out.

He did say it was dangerous but he could easily run from the molotov throwing position in case of danger.

Sangjin gulped his saliva then slowly headed into the darkness.

.....

Kuduk

“Uaaak! Throw it! Throw it this way!”

Taesoon screamed as he saw the monster crawling towards him over the stones.

Hansoo's poison was very strong.

Even if they were scratched they would still turn and twist around their bodies.

It definitely was worth paying runes for it.

But the problem sprang out somewhere else.

Whilst fighting joyfully, a paralysis poison sketched by his leg.

Taesoon had already been shot in one of his legs so his movements were not completely free.

‘Goddamit! I fell for it even though I knew about it!’

Even though Hansoo had gone out to the front and showed how they spat it out but since the look of them crawling over the ground was funny, he was caught off guard.

Thankfully the location he got shot didn't melt or anything but the mobs who spread out their long arms and approached in strides were fear itself.

Them, who had looked slow before, are now almost like grim reapers.

“uaaaah...”

Sangjin who had been fumbling around, barely lit the fire then threw it towards the location where the Land Mermaids were gathering.

Chuuuung!

As the molotov exploded, pieces of flame scattered everywhere.

Keeeeeeeek!

As their skin dried up, they twisted their bodies as if it was painful.

Kudududuk

And at that moment Hansoo ran around between the Land Mermaids and smashed the heads.

Since the edge was dulled it didn't cut well but when the Podao was swung with enhanced strength, it had no problem getting through the skin and muscle.

One strike One kill.

Honestly it didn't matter if they didn't die in one strike.

The poison on the blade stimulated their nerves and gave them insane amounts of pain.

The Land Mermaids still shot out paralysis poison and stretched out their arms but Hansoo dodged most of it and the rest he deflected with a piece of goblin leather.

'Does that guy have eyes on the back of his head?'

Taeson spun his tongue around as he looked at Hansoo.

As Hansoo finished them off and all the enemies disappeared they finally sat on the ground as if the tension was released.



“Huuah... Huaahhh”

“Rest a while then bring the runes.”

Taeson walked towards Hansoo who was distributing the runes though he was tired.

At first he was suspicious that he would cheat them but as he perfectly distributed them he stopped worrying.

As if he was looking at the whole warfield the whole time, he knew exactly how many one killed and how much one contributed.

‘Goddamit, it isn’t much.’

After getting shot by the paralysis shot, he fought while dragging his foot so the amount of runes he acquired was much less in comparison to the floor above.

‘Fuck... the physical difference between us is increasing.’

The one who killed takes the runes.

But the combination of the kills of the three was not even a quarter of what Hansoo killed.

And thanks to that the speed at which he hunted increased more

and more.

As Hansoo's physical stats rose, it was like he cast off iron chains and was flying around.

“Eey, fucktard!”

When Taesoon felt something boiling up from this chest, he looked at Sangjin and then shouted at him in anger.

Sangjin couldn't even throw a molotov properly because he got scared by a Land Mermaid that was walking towards him.

Even though he was a friend since he couldn't even do that properly while they fought with their lives on the line, Taesoon's anger exploded.

“Uuuu...”

As Sangjin made a sorry expression Hansoo spoke while looking at Sangjin.

“Come and take the runes. The recovery will be faster after you raise the stamina”

And after Hansoo concluded his words, he started to cut the belly of the Land Mermaids.

‘Let’s see. If you open the area between their rear end and the belly button... it’s here.’

Hansoo took out the paralysis poison sac from between the slit of the stomach, carefully shrouded with goblin leather then started to carefully squeeze it out as if he was making medicine and poured it into an empty shampoo container he brought.

Though it wasn’t useful against the Land Mermaids it was definitely useful against the life forms of the third floor.

Taeseon then looked at his and Sangjin’s runes by Hansoo’s side.

‘If I take those runes too... I can somewhat catch up.’

Taeseon’s eyes shone as he screamed and marched on.

“Why would you give it to a bitch like him! It’s better for me to take it and fight!”

A sword stopped his way when he stomped towards the runes in anger.

“...Are you really going to be like this.”

“The distribution must be fair. You’re not supposed to touch the food line.” (\*TL: Food line = a way for someone to survive)

At those words Sangjin, who had been trembling in the back, slowly came to the front and took the runes that were considered his.

Mihee, who was sighing, asked Hansoo cautiously.

“Isn’t it annoying or anything?”

Though they were fighting zealously but to Hansoo it was probably frustrating to no end but he did not get angry a single time and kept on heading down steadily.

Hansoo merely shrugged his shoulders.

“If it’s this much it could be considered gentlemanly.”

Normal College students. They didn’t even go to the military.

Half were female.

And they were dragged here with no form of preparation.

Will it make sense to fight like a special forces warrior on the first day here against monsters who want to rip them apart.

To those who were living a normal life before, that was a normal reaction.

If it wasn't such a dire situation like this they would have never thought of holding a sword.

‘Well I was crazy in the past so...’

Even if he knew that he could only learn 7 skills he would have still learned Dororo Lizard's Essence.

Because he was not in a situation where he could afford to not learn it.

The days where he ran around barely holding onto his lifeline after learning a Lizard Essence were still remembered by him.

Hansoo, who had finished his thoughts, looked at the three in front of him.

Hansoo didn't have any plans about saying anything about things they couldn't do.

As he lived through the abyss life, he found out that the ones that latched onto your ankles in the end were not the ones who were scared or weak near the beginning.

Rather it was the ones that were fearless and strong that made problems.

‘It doesn’t matter if they can’t do it’

As long as they have a limit to what they can’t do.

“You aren’t abandoning us, right?”

Mihee watched Hansoo with teary eyes and at those words Sangjin and Taesoon both jerked.

Because they felt it through their body.

The only reason they can remain friends and talk leisurely like this was due to Hansoo.

Then Hansoo smirked.

‘It seems like they’ve got the wrong idea.’

He never took them in so what would he be abandoning?

“You three are doing well enough so don’t worry. Since we’ve rested somewhat let’s continue forward.”

These were not empty words, the three were not at the level of grabbing onto ankles.

Even if Hansoo fought alone the speed would’ve been around the

same. From another point of view he was able to move about more freely because the three took away some of the attention.

If the number of monsters were limited it would be different. The only thing that they weren't short of were monsters and the important thing was how many runes you took in the limited time.

‘Let’s see’

Hansoo checked his stats as he picked up his runes.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 25.3

Stamina: 24.5

Agility: 14.1

Perception: 15.2

‘As I expected’

Though it was random you couldn't ignore the specialties of the entity.

The Land Mermaids had high strength and stamina. It seemed like he had gained a lot of strength and stamina in a short amount of time.

‘It isn’t bad’

Rather strength and stamina were more important right now.

Agility and perception runes had a good effect but he can replace them with battle skills and experience.

But on the other hand the strength to get through the armor and the stamina that helped with healing and the duration of how long one swings their sword was more important during the fight.

‘And another thing’

Hansoo moved his hands towards the last stamina rune on the ground anxiously.

And that moment Hansoo’s stamina rose from 24.5 to 24.8.

‘It’s above 50’

The moment the addition of Strength and Stamina rose above 50 the air suddenly stretched apart.

And that the same time a familiar yet unsightly face came out.

‘A mission has been given.’



Hansoo smiled at the Fairy that had appeared in front of his eyes.

## Chapter 8 – Gangnam Station (4)

---

“There’s an adventurer who has gotten over 50 first? Wow.”

The fairy came out of thin air and clapped with its tiny hands.

The three who were standing behind Hansoo just watched this scene in a daze.

Taeson, who was in a daze, asked the fairy.

“What do you mean 50?”

At those words the fairy smiled and answered.

“It means that the basic strength and stamina combined have gone over 50.”

And then the fairy flew onto Hansoo’s shoulder.

“We always like a person who is active and outgoing. And for that we prepare a small reward to the most active and outgoing person.”

“Wait. Isn’t it a little unfair then?”

Mihee opened her mouth.

Mihee was a female.

Because she exercised and kept her body in shape her strength and stamina were 8, it wasn't a bad start for a female but against males it would get pushed away.

Mihee was dissatisfied but asked quietly and tried to show the least amount of disrespect.

Since she had seen that cute fairy rip out the heart of a person.

“You don't need to be that careful. We don't kill once we start. We don't kill on a whim.”

“ ... ”

“And to answer the question. It is supposed to be unfair. Life is.”

“Uh...”

While Mihee was flustered the fairy kept talking.

“This isn't some sort of game. Why do you find fairness? Do you think you can just go out because there isn't a balance patch?

“ ... ”

“You were probably also a part of the unfair faces in your world. But then you didn’t change your face to lower yourself to the average right?”

At the fairy’s bitter words Mihee clenched her teeth and backed off.

The fairy ignored Mihee and opened her mouth while looking at Hansoo.

“Since you were the first one to go over the combination stat I will reward you.”

Hansoo knew what the reward was.

‘3 of any rune.’

It was a reward to the first person who had gone over the combination score of 50 out of the 100 in the tutorial stage.

But to be honest Hansoo didn’t really have high expectations for this mission.

<Mission>

If you satisfy a special requirement then a reward is given.

From a point of view it is similar to a game but the damnable part is that this mission thing isn't really set already.

It was like there was a bank full of problems and the fairy would pick a few then started the tutorial.

He brought the mission list with 119 missions created through people's experiences but he didn't know which mission would've came out.

And this mission was vastly in favor for the person who had a different starting point.

The muscular man he had seen probably had at least around 33-4 of strength and vitality combined at the start.

But on the other hand he started at 20.

He didn't expect much but maybe due to his fast progress or something he luckily received it.

And among the 119 missions this mission had quite a nice reward.

“Tell me 3 of any rune that you want”

‘As I expected’

3 of a stat rune is a large reward if it's a large and is a small reward if it's small.

3 strength runes could be gathered with a little bit of effort but 3 agility runes are hard to acquire as well as giving much more assistance.

But what he wanted was a different rune.

“Is it agility or perception as I expected? Ah. What about regeneration rune? It's a consumable but if you take this then you can even heal a hole in your belly. A normal poison will disappear. Having limbs being cut is a bit far fetched but isn't it amazing?”

At those words the ones who reacted were the three.

If you receive the three regeneration runes then wouldn't it be getting 3 more lives?

And Hansoo might even give it to them.

‘He won't leave us to die, right?’

But Hansoo betrayed everyone's expectations and spoke of a different rune from his mouth.

“Do you perhaps have a rune to resist magic?”

At those words the fairy made a slightly shocked face then smiled as it spoke.

“Of course it exists.”

And the fairy pushed its hand into the void without words then pulled out three peculiar looking runes.

‘As I thought it doesn’t really care much. It worked.’

Basically all these fairies wanted was things to go in an amusing way so they didn’t really ask much no matter how much you planned things.

And Hansoo, who had gotten much more comfortable, laughed inwardly.

Magic Resistance Rune.

Regeneration rune is indeed good but one could obtain it pretty soon.

But on the other hand physical resistance runes and magical resistance runes are not something you can acquire in the tutorial stage.

No, Kangtae said it came out of a random mob but then he is an

exception since he is a seriously special case.

‘It’s really some crazy luck’

Magic resistance runes are very important.

There is no such thing as a health point in this world so one fatal strike meant you were gone.

It wasn’t like a game where if you got hit for 100 damage ten times you would lose 1000 and die.

Increasing vitality meant your recovery speed and activeness rose and not tankiness like in the games.

And for that physical resistance and magic resistance were more important than anything else.

Just because you use these two runes didn’t mean your skin got tougher or get covered with scales or anything.

It had a more essential solution.

The two runes, after controlling their numbers, reduced the incoming attack itself.

‘This is similar to a game’s defense or resistance’



As Hansoo ate the runes, his stats were altered.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 25.3

Vitality: 24.8

Agility: 14.1

Perception: 15.2

Magic Resistance: 13

Magic resistance, which was fixed at 10 from the start and had no reason to be displayed, showed up as it increased by 3.

Hoo-oong

As his surroundings lashed about he could feel the laws which were applied to his body getting twisted a little.

‘Good. With this I gain resistance to skills.’

He pondered between Physical and Magic resistance but in the end magic resistance is the best.

To be honest, in the tutorial area most attacks were physical if you take into account for the attacks you would receive.

But physical defense can be filled in to an extent with his experience and battle skills but on the other hand magic attacks with a wide range of attack and a few vicious skills couldn't be dodged once they were cast.

There isn't a beast or human who would use magic with the normal tutorial difficulty but the place he was challenging were the dungeons with hidden pieces.

Of course it wasn't something that lets you get hit 3 times and survive instead of getting hit once and being gone.

Just reducing the damage to an extent.

But there is a huge difference between getting killed on the first strike and surviving to land another slash of a sword.

Since regeneration runes are only able to be utilized if you were alive.

This will be of great help to his progress.

The fairy looked at that Hansoo and then smiled widely.

"I have high expectations. Please continue to do well."

The fairy, who had finished talking, disappeared into the void.

Hansoo turned around and talked as he walked.

“Let’s go. But why are your expressions like that? It seems like you miss something.”

“... It’s nothing.”

It felt like three regeneration runes had disappeared right in front of their eyes but no matter how shameless someone was they couldn’t say it so they just made pitiful faces as they walked behind Hansoo.

.....

Kudududuk

‘It’s now the third floor.’

Hansoo, who had gotten rid of all the Land mermaids, mumbled as he looked at the creepy entrance in the distance.

But Taesoon, who had been looking at him, spoke out.

“But it seems your movements have remained the same since back then...”

Hansoo nodded at Taesoon’s words.

‘He has some keen perception.’

Hansoo showed him his right wrist.

All the runes Hansoo took were gathered just like that on there.

“This can also be gathered like this.”

“Really?”

‘Well if consumable runes existed a mechanism like this should exist. But how do you do it?’

But then he realized that it wasn't that hard.

He thought 'I should gather them...' and the moment he moved his hands the runes that had been getting absorbed into his body turned into a small dot-like symbol on his wrist.

Hansoo looked at Taesoon and spoke.

"It's not something that's very good."

"Why?"

Hansoo answered as Taesoon asked.

"First it reduces your hunting speed."

If your stats are high then hunting would naturally be faster.

Since you could get the gathered runes and raise your stats instantly in case where you feel like you would get pushed back but there are holes in the strategy.

"The second reason is the important one... if you die from a sneak attack while doing this then all these runes get puked out."

"The runes?"

“Yeah.”

Usually when one died the rune that came out was only a tiny part of what they had acquired and the dropped rune was also random.

You could block a sneak attack but dying at the hands of somebody with similar hands was not a hard task.

And especially during the beginning where one doesn't have physical and magic resistances.

If you aren't focused then you are gone just like that and even if it wasn't a sneak attack something like <Erebong's Poison Sting>, which is an attack skill you can acquire at the tutorial area, would send you off.

Walking around with a lot of runes on your wrist was basically walking between bandits with the body to buy weapons and armor on your back.

“Then why do you gather them?”

Hansoo gave a short reply to Sangjin's question.

“Because we can trade with each other.”

After the tutorial there exists currency which the adventurers had created.

The nine strongest clans created by the existing people. The common currency created through the agreements from two neutral clans of the <The Nine Pillars>, <Golden Star> and <Manoros>.

The runes were of too high value so using them wasn't suitable as currency.

But in the tutorial area where adventurers couldn't get into runes could be used as currency to some extent.

Two of the people who cleared this hidden piece told him.

<I did clear it but... there was a requirement. It was that you had to have over 20 of perception and agility,>

<I was like that too except my strength had to be over 45>

As far he knew that mission was the only mission of a first-come type mission in the first tutorial area so there was no need to keep raising his stats vigilantly.

If he was in a perilous situation while fighting he could just simply use the runes and there shouldn't exist anybody who could kill him anyway.

In this case he could just gather the runes and trade if he was lacking then just simply wear the artifacts.

At those words Taesoon and the others started to gather runes.

Hansoo who had seen them gather runes on their wrist shook his head.

“You guys can’t. Just use them as you get them.”

“...Are you looking down on us right now?”

As Taesoon suddenly asked Hansoo, Hansoo clicked his tongue.

‘As I see it he wants to get those runes and trade them to raise perception or agility...’

If your perception or agility rises then you become better at evading so you receive less injuries.

Probably from their situation they want to go towards the path where they receive less injuries.

But how you get rid of the enemies is dependent upon how hard, and how many times you swing the sword.



If you lack stamina or strength then you will fall before you can get rid of the enemy.

He had no reason to suffer a sneak attack. He had a lot of experience and intelligence.

He was confident physically as well. The techniques were fundamentally different so he could save runes and fight at ease with the remaining strength and vitality.

Taeson, Sangjin and Mihee were not at that level yet.

And they were in front of the third floor. They didn't know which monsters were protecting the train but it was definitely going to be dangerous.

But Hansoo just shrugged.

‘Well if they go down and get wrecked they will wake up.’

There was no need for a hundred words.

If you get hit by a monster once and scream out you will automatically touch your wrist.

He who had been fighting against the crazy monarch's slaves or the demons of the abyss but came back to the past, to him this much was almost cute.

‘Just maintain around that pace.’

“Well do whatever you want. Let’s go down then. Are all three of you going again?”

The three who had been watching Hansoo pondered at Hansoo’s words.

‘The second floor was definitely hard... but we got stronger. And it was only hard at the start and we got used to it after.’

The three made their decisions and nodded.

And if they kept fighting wouldn’t they get something like a mission as well.

They aren’t really much in comparison to Hansoo but they are still better off than the people above.

‘And... We’ve come this far, we cannot let him go alone.’

If there’s something good, they should share it.

The three who had decided followed Hansoo just like that to the third floor.

## Chapter 9 – Gangnam Station (5)

---

Hansoo who had entered the the third floor nodded at the light in the distance.

A corridor that stretched far.

In the space there darkness was best suited for, a stationary train made hissing sounds as it shone its lights in the distance.

And because of that Hansoo didn't need to search in order to find out what lived in this place.

There was a snake that shined silver in front of the train sleeping in a curled up position.

‘Barb snake’

Being soft and squishy, its main diet was normal animals but it also ate Juterium metals as a secondary source of food.

The Juterium metal that is digested within its stomach gets fused with the special liquid released inside its body and gets excreted between the scales.

And this mixture dries in the air to cover the scales on its body.

‘This guy is pretty fast.’

The slippery and hard scales combined with its speed makes it hard to catch.

Hansoo looked at his Podao that had its edge almost dulled out.

It was a good Podao out of the ones that came out of goblins and that was the reason why it survived until now but it was quite lacking to go against those.

‘It might be a little hard with this.’

Paralysis poison is only effective if the blade gets through.

The weight and hardness are important but first you need a sharp edge.

Taeson, who had a kitchen knife on his waist, backed off after seeing Hansoo’s look along with Sangjin who also had them.

Hansoo clicked his tongue as he watched Taeson and Sangjin.

‘These guys need to go through some more socialization process.’

“Try giving them to me.”

One isn’t enough.

They will likely break during the fight.

At Hansoo's words Sanjin looked at him with a slightly dissatisfied expression.

“... You have yours.”

At those words Hansoo looked at Sangjin with an amused look.

‘It seems like this guy has the same idea.’

Hansoo looked at Sangjin and Taesoon and spoke:

“Are you guys trying to fight that?”

If they were to fight he had no intention of asking them for their knives.

He wasn't in a hurry and there were probably a few left in the convenience store, he could just go back and get some.

But unexpectedly they wanted to fight even though he thought that they would say they wouldn't want to.

At that moment Hansoo looked at what they could see and knew what these 3 were thinking.

‘Are they looking down on that thing?’

The Barb Snake was not really a large snake.

Its length was only about 3 meters.

The length was long but its body was smaller than the Land Mermaid.

The Land Mermaid’s length was about 2 meters but it had a lower body that resembled a grub and these looked more agile.

From a point of view they don’t really look formidable.

But you can’t assume things like that.

This guy was more dangerous than all of the Land Mermaids above combined.

Hard scales and fast speed. Along with the strong muscles that can crush the Land Mermaid as well as sharp fangs and grip strength that do not fit snakes.

The barb snake was a predator that chewed upon Land Mermaids.

And it was also smart so it went for the weaker ones first.

If these guys were to attack then they would get murdered.

It won't be a case where they will cry after getting hit once then absorb their gathered runes, instead their limbs will fall off.

'How do I handle these guys. There should be a different situation where you should have greed for runes.'

He had seen these types a lot.

Something that always happened during group hunts.

They will forcibly join the hunt and try to receive some of the distributed goods.

'Eres was really good at persuading'

But he wasn't really interested in persuasion.

It was annoying too.

Normally Eres would persuade, Keldian would threaten and control them with carrots and whips, if a negotiation failed to bloom then Kangtae would walk out to force them off.

And if that failed to clean things up he went out.

There was no need to see blood for these.

Fun was fun and work was work.

He was annoyed with dealing with kids that were a fourth of his age so he gave them two options.

“I will give you options. First, I will get out and you fight them yourselves. Second, you guys get out and watch me fight alone.”

“ ... ”

“How do you want to do it?”

Taeson got angry at the suddenly different attitude from Hansoo.

‘This bitch, we were hunting well together so far but why is he suddenly like this?’

What his psychic powers were couldn’t be grasped by him but his reaction told him that what the snakes dropped was rather good.

If they fought together and shared the drops it would be good but why did he need to get greedy to the point of excluding them.



When Taesoon was about to say something somebody quickly made their decision and spoke.

“I’ll get out.”

“What?”

The one who had made the decision was not Mihee but Sangjin.

Taesoon, who had been looking at Sangjin with a flustered expression, scowled as he spoke.

“Hey! He’s being petty and leave us friends out to eat them all by himself!”

‘Friend. It’s a good word.’

He didn’t decide to bicker over it although his idea was that good things were shared together and hardships were gone through together but it seemed like Taesoon was using it in a slightly different way.

“I told you to follow me. I never said I was going to take you.”

“ ... ”

At those words Taesoon looked at Hansoo with a dissatisfied expression.

And Mihee, who had been listening, spoke as she nodded.

“Let’s stop. If Hansoo is talking like that then it means it’s really dangerous.”

If he wanted to take everything then he would’ve beaten them down then taken all the runes.

Even when Taesoon was in danger after he got shot by the paralysis poison from the Land mermaids Hansoo didn’t talk like that.

From the way Hansoo was acting right now meant that those scrubby looking snakes were actually very dangerous.

No, since there was only one monster on the whole third floor, there was no way that thing was not strong.

They had forgotten that for a moment due to greed.

Taesoon, who had started to come to his senses, calmed down then started to take out the knives by in waist while clenching his teeth.

‘Six of them’

Hansoo started to apply the poison from the Land Mermaid on the edge of the kitchen knives from Taesoon and Sangjin.

Though that thing ate Land Mermaids it was only because it was all digested within its stomach that could even digest Juterium. The land mermaid's poison, which was almost like a neurotoxin, had to get into its muscles to work.

Hansoo, who had numerous knives dangling from his waist, spoke as he looked at the three.

“Hunt the land mermaids above. Hunting should be done constantly.”

Taesoon looked at that Hansoo and answered expressionlessly.

“Didn't you bring us along to take us all the way?”

Taesoon grinded his teeth because he felt like they were used.

Hansoo smirked at those words.

‘How did I not remember these amusing friends.’

He remembered clearly that they followed him in here but it had changed to him bringing them here.

‘You should really be lucky that Keldian didn’t come here. Ah, Keldian didn’t start here anyway.’

Hansoo thought of Keldian who was probably wandering around the purple region and laughed.

If it was Keldian, he would’ve made everyone above fall into a trap and take all their then started.

And because of that he was pushed out of returning here.

‘He’s always progressing forward but the results aren’t the best.’

Hansoo looked at Taesoon and spoke as he thought of Keldian.

“Go stay above. If you aren’t lucky then your eardrums will pop.”

And then Hansoo charged at the Barb snake.

Keeeeeeeeeeek!

And then a frightening scream was heard and the three who had been going back up realized at once why Hansoo told them to stay out.

.....

Kyaaaak!

The Barb snake's whole body squirmed as it expanded out then compressed in an instant.

And the air that was expanded and compressed exploded out of the Barb snake's mouth with an incredible speed.

Paaaaaang

An attack that had slight amounts of Magic.

The power wasn't that great but it was a shockwave that had an impact that shook the opponent's balance by destroying their eardrums and cochlea.

“Uuuk...”

The body of the three, who had been standing by the stairs, swayed for a moment by the impact force that rang throughout the third floor.

But Hansoo already expected that attack after seeing its stomach and neck area.

‘Good’

The impact came through the hands that had been covering the ears.

But the magic resistance came into play and reduced the damage.

Hansoo, who had succeeded in not losing his balance, quickly moved his hands from his ears and quickly attacked its momentarily defenseless body.

Body, to be precise the scales were hard but in between the scales there had to exist a gap from which the melted Juterium mixture came out.

The knife with paralysis poison applied to it went in between the scales.

Kyaaak!

‘Good. Three have been inserted.’

There were 5 major spinal nerves throughout its body that controlled its body.

Hansoo, who had touched the nerve after getting between the scales and its ribs, quickly backed off.

Kyaak...

The Barb snake, who was decorated with three knives within its body, twisted its body while making clattering sounds with its scales as if its body was harder to move than before.

‘As expected, poison is the best in the beginning.’

The beasts and clans in the later stages had incredible amounts of resistance and regeneration so most poisons basically had no effect

on them.

And if they also use skills it gets even harder.

But poison was one of the extremely effective methods against the monsters in the beginning whose body were smaller and had less resistance.

Even him, if he didn't have the paralysis poison, would have struggled a lot.

‘Well. It’s easy now.’

He was bitten on his arm when he first inserted the knife but due to him raising his vitality the wound would heal.

Hansoo charged again to insert two more knives into its body then finished it off by stabbing deeply within the roof of its mouth with the last remaining knife.

“mmm?”

Hansoo made a weird sound as he looked at the skill rune dropped by it.

The skill rune which shone next to a few stat runes.



[Barb snake's shockwave] To use this thing he needed mana so he couldn't use it yet.

But in the case where he gained a mana rune during the tutorial, it would be an effective tactic in the beginning.

Well the visualization of it coming out of the body was not great but as long as it was effective.

‘As I expected. Due to it being a rather strong mob the rewards are...’

And the three who had been standing afar off slowly crawled up and spoke out after seeing the skill rune on the ground.

“...Are you going to use this Hansoo?”

Taesoon mumbled with a jealous filled expression while looking at Hansoo.

Because the already strong guy would get a skill rune so now he would start flying around.

‘Damnit’

At those words Hansoo shook his head

“I’m not going to use it.”

He could only use seven so why would he use something like that.

“What?”

Sangjin stood up and shouted:

“Then can I use this?”

If he wasn’t going to sell it didn’t it mean he would give it to them?

Taesoon scowled at Sangjin’s shout and spoke.

“What would you do with it. It’d be better if I...”

“What are you guys talking about. I’m going to sell it”

“Huh?”

“I’m selling it. To the person who brings the most runes.”

“ ... ”

“If you buy it now I will give a discount. 5%”

Hansoo shook the runes within his wrist and laughed.

“...Can’t we do an installment plan?”

“If you guarantee it. Stand together.”

“...”

From his expression, if one person were to ditch then the guarantees would have to sell all their gear to pay him back.

The three made an expression as if they had chewed on crap.

# Chapter 10 – Gangnam Station (6)

---

“Have you decided?”

Whilst Hansoo went to the convenience store to get something he gave some time to the three of them to decide.

And then Mihee nodded her head.

‘Well. They probably know.’

You can realize just from Taesoon’s situation.

Stats were important but skills were also very important.

If that skill went into somebody up there then the gap they created through diligent hunting could be crushed in an instant.

And to prevent that a trustworthy person of the three would purchase the skill.

‘In conclusion, gathering up the runes has been beneficial.’

The runes that one person has is rather lacking to buy it but it could easily be solved by lending.

Hansoo asked while chuckling:

“Whom was it decided to be given to?”

At those words Mihee answered.

“It’s me.”

‘As I expected.’

He guessed somewhat to this extent.

Since Hansoo saw Mihee pick up a mana rune earlier.

No one was there to bicker who killed it so from her taking it quietly, it seemed like she wanted to hide it.

‘Well the more hidden cards you have the better.’

Whatever happens that skill required mana.

And because of that for Sangjin and Taesoon who had no mana it’d be rather burdensome for them to invest in the skill rune.

Since they would never know when a mana rune would come out.

But Mihee had already gained mana runes and already confirmed that mana runes can drop from hunting.

And from her situation where she had already confirmed the performance of the skill, it would have been very enticing.

And the remaining two probably felt safer giving it to Mihee than giving it to others.

Mihee borrowed the runes from Sangjin and Taesoon while shaking their hands and then approached Hansoo.

“Good. Here they are. There are three each for agility and perception and seven each for stamina and strength.”

“Since I said I’ll give a 5% discount I will only take six strength.”

“You’re quite thorough.”

Mihee looked at him with a slightly resentful expression.

With that many stats you could really become strong.

She had fought a few times but you can tell instantly.

Not having runes is getting closer to death.

Though she had gotten a skill, she seemed to have felt a little regret.

And Hansoo looked at Mihee's expression and chuckled.

“Don't think that it's too much. If you get into the habit of getting free things around here you will die quickly.”

“ ... ”

There is no trade in this world that does not cost in some way.

Whilst chasing costless things the cost will have stacked somewhere else and will explode.

It wasn't somewhere like a mart's food sample corners where no one would say anything if you eat and run away.

‘Let's see’

Since the Barb snake was dead and the trade was complete, there was something he had to finish here.

Hansoo started to look around the train station.

‘The existence of a Barb snake means there is Juterium Ore nearby’

And indeed there was a few orange ores that sprouted out like crystals near the train station.

Hansoo grabbed them with his hands and rooted them out.



Tududuk

It was very elastic despite it being a metal, it felt like pulling rubber.

Hansoo started to mold the Juterium with his hands.

And the three stared at Hansoo.

‘Spike? Needle?’

Taeson stared at the Juterium metal that was being molded like clay enthusiastically.

Hansoo left the needle that was molded to about 20cm in the corner, went up to the barb snake, ripped off the scales and started to rip its stomach open.

Shuuuuk

‘It’s here’

Hansoo made a delighted expression as he saw that the Lysate solution sources hadn’t dried up.

Hansoo took out all six of the of the Lysate solution sources, then set up the burner and the pot and started to squeeze them above the pot.

Ploploplopplop

And soon the pot was filled with a green liquid.

And when the liquid started to boil he started to break apart the scales of the Barb snake and started to throw them in.

The hardness of the scales on Barb snake's skin was extremely powerful but it wasn't to the point where you couldn't break it.

'It's not good enough for a weapon.'

So he had to make a new one.

In the same way the Barb snake made his scales.

Shockingly, when the hard scales entered the boiling Lysate liquid they all melted down.

And Hansoo, who had seen the green liquid slowly turn silvery, plopped down the Juterium metal he made once it turned completely silver.

And soon a change occurred.

Chorurururuk.

The Juterium metal, which did not exceed 20cm and barely entered the pot, started to absorb the liquid aggressively.

The needle which had an orange tint started to change its color very quickly as it absorbed the liquid.

And soon the size increased gradually as well.

The needle, which hadn't reached 20cm before, was already over one meter long and the width was as thick as a thumb.

‘The end... is a little blunt.’

He molded with all his might but due to it being hand molded as well as the enlarging process, the tip was a little blunt.

Hansoo held the needle with all his strength and started to grind it with the dull Podao.

Kududuk. Kududuk.

A hardness that barely peeled off when Hansoo used all his strength while sweating intensely.

‘Yeah. It should at least be that hard.’

Hansoo made a satisfied expression as he was working very hard

to grind it.

‘As I expected, you guys are the best when I’m against strong opponents.’

If his attacks went into the enemy easily then cutting parts would be good but once you go against mobs that have decent amounts of physical resistance, cutting attacks don’t work well.

If one was confident in fighting up close then rather than long swords that cut, needles and daggers that stab are much better in going through the enemy’s defenses.

While the area of damage is small and secondary damages such as bleeding is hard, if you know the weak points of the enemy and have the confidence to stab the weak point accurately, then the needle is the best.

‘And if I need to go through his defenses when fighting him, it should at least be this much.’

Hansoo thought of the opponent he needed to go against in order to obtain one of the two hidden pieces in the first tutorial area.

<Tutorial 1-11>

Number 11 out of 134 weapons that can be created with the materials gained from the monsters in the first tutorial area.

If you think about the alchemists went through a lot of trouble for a long time in order to create the best quality weapons out of the low quality materials that you gain in the tutorial area, it should at least be this much.

If a Rokoko Lizard or Carnivorous sac came out then he could create an even stronger 1-17 or 1-96 but Barb Snake wasn't bad at all.

It would be rather hard obtaining a better weapon in the tutorial area than this.

‘I should conclude now’

Hansoo, who had grinded the edge to a sharp point, took out the goblin leather he had saved, cut it into a long piece and then applied the poison weakly onto it.

Chiiiik

Hansoo nodded as he saw the insides of the leather melt slightly and then wrapped the leather around the handle area of the needle.

As he felt the right feeling of a grip in his hands, he made a satisfactory expression as he stabbed into the air.

When he uses it later he could apply poison or paralysis poison depending on his preference then.

“Can’t we buy that?”

Taeson looked at Hansoo’s weapon with a greedy expression.

If it’s that much then he was willing to buy it with runes.

If Hansoo struggled that hard to make it then it’s hardness was incredible.

As he was dissatisfied with the blades that went dull from a few strikes ever since a while ago, it could only be tempting to Taeson.

And then Hansoo shook his head.

From the start you guys cannot use this unless you were high rankers.

Since the area of damage is extremely small.

And something like this would be especially hard for you guys to use.

‘Well, to be honest it would depends on the user so I would sell it...’

Despite that he couldn’t make more.

“I cannot make more because I used all the Lysate solution.”

“tsk”

Taesoon looked at the bottom of the empty bot and clicked his tongue.

Hansoo left them like that and moved inside the train.

‘So if I get on this then this should move’

He just needed to get on the train and go receive the reward. The battle was over.



The Barb snake was already strong enough but if an even stronger boss came out after getting on the train, how would a first-day adventurer kill it.

Hidden piece just means it's a hidden mission and not an impossible mission.

Hansoo went inside the train leisurely and sat next to the pillar of the train.

His favorite spot.

And then he saw someone getting on after him.

Hansoo chuckled as he asked.

“Why are you guys getting on?”

And at those words the three had a slightly befuddled expression.

They were not stupid.

An extremely suspicious train in the very bottom of the train station.

And as if electricity was working in an devastated train station, the lights were on.

A feeling of a jackpot.

Even in games when something like this exists there will be a jackpot.

No matter how one looked it did not look ordinary but Hansoo, who had psychic powers, went in there.

And even with a comfortable expression.

They have never seen Hansoo lose tension before a battle so the chances of there not being any battles were high.

Isn't following him on obvious.

But they were surprised by Hansoo who had never said anything about following him suddenly saying things.

“This is one person only. Get off.”

“Huh?”

“Only one person can get on.”

Hidden piece is only permitted to one person.

The train was large but it only moved when only one person was on it.

‘It was made so that the difficulty is at where twenty people need to come down to clear but only one person can get...on’

If a god existed then he definitely had an evil hobby.

“...That might not be the case.”

Sangjin mumbled with a hopeful expression.

And then Taesoon spoke after him:

“And is there a rule which says you have to go? We’ve come here with our own strengths as well.”

‘Magnetism huh’

As Hansoo glanced at the Barb snake’s corpse from those words, the faces of the three all turned red.

Mihee was also making an embarrassed face but didn’t really stand on Hansoo’s side and speak for him either.

‘Aiigo. You dummies.’

Hansoo laughed inwardly.

It wasn't that understanding did not exist.

They've probably got the idea somewhat.

Whenever a chance occurs you need to grab it.

If you miss the chance because you are embarrassed or due to pride then you will realize that that's a very foolish act.

The three who were actually talking about it had their face reddened.

They knew that they were pushing it as they were speaking.

'But they have not realized one thing yet'

"Oh. Of course such a rule doesn't exist since there isn't such a thing as an absolute law in this world."

Then Hansoo who was holding onto the handle of the needle grabbed the tip instead.

And in as the bulky handle spun upwards the needle turned into a bat...

Hoong, Huooong.

The bat in Hansoo’s hands cut through the air while making threatening noises.

“You either get out now. Or you deal with me first then talk nicely with your lawyer later and find me in court. Choose one of the two.”

“ ... ”

Hansoo laughed while looking at the three.

.....

“Damnable Bastard”

Taesoon cursed as he looked at the train that was quickly making distance while making clunking sounds.

It was extremely alluring. That thing that was at the end of the train station.

And because of that he pondered for a moment.

Should the three of them try fighting him together.

He even thought inwardly.

‘Surely he won’t be too cruel, we’re friends and we’ve come this far together.’

If they fought and won they could take his weapon and if they lose they could beg for forgiveness.”

Not a bad gamble.

‘And if I take all the runes on his wrist...and even take whatever is at the end of the station.’

It was basically a jackpot.

The chance of success was low but it was a low risk high return case.

Taeson, who had finished his thoughts, tried to move his hands towards the kitchen knife on his waist but gave up as soon as he saw his eyes.

The only reason he was talking over it because they didn’t act out.

‘fucker...’

He was laughing and the way he was handling the situation was so-so but his eyes were different.

He was watching enthusiastically with eyes that could destroy someone's vitality.

As if he was full of expectation to see how it was going to play out.

‘Fuck. Fuck...’

He felt unfairness as he got scared from just his eyes but he had to get off because he didn't have the courage to fight.

“Let's go up. We should move too.”

Mihee opened her mouth as she looked at Taesoon.

Sangjin and Mihee were making expressions as if this situation was supposed to play out like this.

Taesoon spat out curses in his mind.

‘You retards. This is why you guys aren't capable.’

Why are you making such an embarrassed expression.

Anybody else would've done the same thing as him.

'I am not sorry... I am not embarrassed.'

Taeson mumbled inwardly as he grinded his teeth, raised his body and headed upwards.



# Chapter 11 – Otherworld's Moon (1)

---

Rattle. Rattle.

The train moved to the next station swiftly.

‘Let’s see... he did say there were multiple stations.’

Hansoo thought of the stories of the four who had acquired the hidden piece.

<If you continue the stations will continue to come out. I went up to the fourth station.>

<I went up to the seventh station. But it didn’t seem like going far meant better things were given.>

<Yeah I was like that. I thought I’ll hit a jackpot when I get to the end but there were only crappy things. Goddamnit.>

<I just got off on the first station and chose. It was Ograng’s Steel Glove...>

<Huh? Mine was Ketil’s Fingernail.>

<My first station was Mirhan’s Helmet.>

If you were to organize the conclusion was like this.

Firstly. As you take the train you will go through 20 stations.

Secondly. The artifact on each station was random.

Thirdly. A station that you've passed cannot be returned to and going further did not mean better artifacts came out.

‘It's a structure designed to give people mental conflicts’

Hansoo took a glance above.

A map of the train route with 20 stations.

He had to choose well here.

Chiiiiik

There was a platform laid on the center of the empty station with an artifact above it.

‘Let’s see’

There was plenty of time. Since the train won’t move until you get back on.

Hansoo walked up to the platform and checked out the artifact

‘Raroon’s Circlet.’

Hansoo showed a conspicuous color.

It raised the perception stat of the user by almost 10 and it showed the weak point of the beast on your first encounter with it.

With this the chance that you will struggle against beasts in the beginning will decrease.

The requirements was that you needed 25 or higher perception but it was well worth it.

‘The standards are clearly higher.’

Since it was a hidden piece there was an artifact that would help greatly in the beginning.

But Hansoo shook his head.

This one is dismissed.

To Hansoo who knew every beast's weak points it was a rather disappointing item.

The perception stat was appealing but finding something else was better.

Hansoo laid the circlet down and got on the train again to get to the next station.

.....

‘This is the twelfth station.’

Hansoo sighed softly.

‘Eight weapons huh...’

Maybe due to the fact that it was a hidden piece weapon, the quality was good even though it was a newbie weapon.

There were ones with lightning damage and even a gauntlet that raised the number of runes.

Since they were of higher quality than the needle he was holding there was nothing much to say.

But that was the problem.

The fact that they were better than his needle.

In other words the choice was rather disappointing to Hansoo who was holding the needle already.

‘Will weapons continue to come out.’

Honestly since a good weapon in the start had abilities that were beyond simply raising stats and skills it wasn't weird that there were many around.

‘Won't something like a stepping stone come out.’

Shoes that allowed you to momentarily step on the air <Stepping Stone>.

With this you could have a much more three dimensional battle.

It was a weapon that was hard to obtain even in the second

tutorial stage or out of that, the red stage, so finding it around here would be nice. He had a slight hope that this would come out but it had yet to do so unfortunately.

Hansoo slowly walked up to the platform and checked the item on it.

A small cigarette pack.

But Hansoo's eyes bulged out as he saw it.

“Huh? Maniac's Cloud Snack?”

‘Even something like this comes out?’

The stepping stone instantly disappeared from Hansoo's thoughts.

This item was that rare.

<Maniac's Cloud Snack>

A cigarette pack with 20 cigarettes.

But these were not ordinary cigarettes.

As soon as you take a puff your rune stats will start to increase

and it will continue to increase as you keep smoking it.

And when you inhale all the smoke after you finish the cigarette all the rune stats will increase by around 20% and it will stay like that for around 10 minutes.

It was only 20% on paper, if all your stats were to increase by 20% then it meant your battle power basically doubled.

And it rose by percentage. This was very tempting.

It meant that as your stats got higher and higher the effects increased more and more.

And whilst smoking it there were moderate amounts of painkiller effects as well as increase of adrenaline so even without the stat increase your basic combat abilities rose.

An item that raised your battle power by a large amount for about 15 minutes after you start smoking it.

‘huhh’

Hansoo rejoiced.

Although you couldn’t use it outside the tutorial area but it was a small artifact that was one of the best within the tutorial area.

‘This is it’

Hansoo chose instantly.

He didn’t know what kind of artifacts would come out further along but there won’t be much difference to the earlier ones.

Which meant there was no better choice than this.

Hansoo inserted within the side of his upper body then smiled as he walked towards the exit.

‘Wait, but I don’t smoke...’

Hansoo made a slightly perplexed expression due to the unexpected problem.

‘Well. That guy will understand.’

He promised to stop but wouldn’t he allow such a thing like this.

As Hansoo got on the train whilst humming, the train started to move slowly towards where Hansoo started.

.....

‘Did they all exit’



As Hansoo got off from the train, the train rattled as it stopped its operation and even turned its lights off.

A silence space with nobody else, Hansoo picked up the nearby cookwares and then got lost in thought as he started to proceed upwards from the third floor.

‘Let’s see’

Hansoo thought of the second hidden piece.

The first day ended in a satisfactory manner.

Since the first hidden piece was completed, as long as he completes the second one then he will have gotten all the hidden pieces he could acquire in the first tutorial area.

But he couldn’t do it right now.

The second hidden piece could only be obtained after the fourth day.

Hansoo started to ponder for a moment.

There were two things Hansoo could do before the second hidden piece made its entrance.

Hunt and collect runes diligently.

Challenge the remaining missions.

‘There’s not much to decide.’

You will naturally kill beasts as you do missions.

He had to aim one of the missions of the 119, no, 118 due to him clearing one.

‘No. A few of them were done on the way to here.’

First beast kill, First one to gain a new rune type and so on... such things were done on the way to here.

But these weren’t the missions that were officially decided.

The remaining missions were around 110.

Well he had no way of knowing which missions were decided.

There were probably two or three more.

An extremely low chance.

But that wasn't something to worry about.

'Do the ones with better rewards first.'

If he did the easy missions then he could do around 30 of them in two days.

Statistically, clearing thirty missions meant there was a high chance that one would hit.

But that didn't really mean anything.

The lower missions didn't give more than a few runes if you cleared them.

So it's better to do the missions with the best rewards one by one instead.

If you hit then it was a jackpot and if you didn't then it was part of the hunt so there wasn't much to lose.

'Let's see... the mission with the best reward.'

And then Hansoo frowned at the reward he thought of.

<A sage stone that was mimicked by a flimsy mage>

The reward itself was amazing.

As soon as you eat it then every stat will increase and not just the ones you have but every rune in existence including luck by 10 and even heal injuries that could kill.

It was not an object that could be gained in the tutorial stage.

No, this item was hard to obtain even outside the tutorial stage. The red area.

But the requirements was the problem.

‘Who completed a maniac mission like this’

The information in his head was basically things people experienced.

It meant somebody had succeeded.

‘Oh..was it that person.’

Hansoo thought of one of the people from the Final Brigade.

Enbi Arin.

A member of the Final Brigade who went to a prison as a volunteer and got dragged to this place along with the criminals.

A person who got humiliated as soon as things started and acquired rage as a specialty. It was a mission she found out after the seven days where she proceeded to rip apart every single criminal who hurt her, eat their hearts and even tried to commit suicide.

‘...This is dismissed.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

He didn't feel like doing it and to do this he needed to kill everybody which meant the many missions that required people to live will become useless.

Though he didn't know if this mission was one of the decided ones but there was no reason to try.

Hansoo thought of the second best reward.

‘Kill 100 people within one day.’

As a side note, it was Keldian who completed this.

‘Dismissed as well.’

It gave a good skill as a reward but it wasn’t good enough for him to learn and it was also too late.

He spent quite a while selecting an artifact so the day was almost over.

When he gets out it would probably be nighttime.

Nighttime, something flashed by this thoughts.

In Hansoo’s thoughts it was a mission with a rather good reward.

‘I almost forgot about that. <Selfish Wealthy man’s Food Jar>.’

When the first night is over that chance also disappears.

It was better to do this first than the other missions with better rewards.

‘This is first for now. I should fill up my stamina quite a bit though’

Since while the <Moon> is up, he would become very busy in order to acquire that.

Hansoo felt hungry and headed towards the convenience store.

Humans could definitely become transcendently strong as they acquire runes.

The best part was that the number was basically being twisted so the efficiency rose explosively.

It would make sense that one would require twice as much food if your strength is doubled but the amount of strength increased by runes didn't need extra food.

The Otherworld's adventurers could eat and sleep at a similar pace that they were at in their own world and still maintain their battle powers.

Even if you have the strength that could smash apart mountains.

But in other words if you couldn't even maintain that much then your battle powers will sink down tremendously.

In order to maintain the top condition, food, sleep and rest was needed.

And sudden exercise would make one even hungrier faster.

'Let's eat first and...hmm?'

Something came into Hansoo's eyes as he walked towards the store.

The entrance was very different from before.

A completely empty convenience store.

Everything including food was completely gone.

Nothing was left behind.

And the ground was all dug up everywhere.

No, it wasn't everywhere.

The spots where the food was buried were dug up accurately.

“Huh. Look at these kids.”

They did something this courageous despite the fact that the moon would come up soon.

Hansoo looked at the scene in front of him as if it was amusing and laughed.

.....



“Ah... Can’t I stop that.”

Mihee looked at the crowd that was moving the goods from the convenience store with a sad expression.

The seven had gathered together and came back up.

But somehow the rest knew and rushed the store and started to take everything.

‘We’re definitely stronger but...’

Mihee gulped.

The first thing she checked was the status of the other group as soon as they came up.

And she knew.

‘It’s doable’

The ones above weren’t that strong because they were focused on organizing people.

They were of course weaker than the three below and even weaker than the four above.

The problem was numbers.

They couldn't get near them easily but as 10 times the amount of people rushed the store they couldn't do anything.

They brought the backpack as they came up but they could only feel sad as the items they wanted to bring one by one were all taken.

‘ah...’

Whilst Mihee was making a sad expression, Taesoon was laughing inwardly.

‘They’re doing good.’

Taesoon only gave them 1 intel.

There was a convenience store below.

And like magic, despite them being cautious of him, they all rushed the store, took everything and moved it somewhere else.

He decided to keep it a secret from his other friends. Since they were friends it would be troublesome if they get in the way.

Since they had taken everything on the ground, Hansoo had no choice.

Since he would have no food.

And he could use the items within the store very well.

He would probably need the items in the store the most.

And since he couldn't fight against everyone else he could only join them.

And then he would take the leadership position and ask to share the thing he obtained in the station.

And after that they would get rid of the group together and take back everything from the store.

‘You don’t live alone in the world.’

Taesoon had hoped that Hansoo would bring something back fast.

## Chapter 12 – Otherworld's Moon (2)

---

“It’s Hansoo!”

Mihee shouted in glee as she saw Hansoo walking slowly from the station below.

Since they were dealing with the large group over there they could only feel not at ease but as Hansoo came all the pressure seemed to have been lifted.

‘It’s like some sort of superhero making an entrance’

Mihee felt her heart thumping as Hansoo approached but there was somebody else who’s heart was thumping.

‘Fuck. I don’t know if it will work out well.’

He had spilled the milk but where was a problem.

The situation where Hansoo beats down everyone including the sixty over there and the seven of them.

Then he would have basically poked the beast that was sleeping soundly.

It could become a situation where he stole the sleeping lion’s food bowl.

‘Well whatever. Since nobody knows that it was me who did it.’

Since he spilled it very softly while beating up a guy who had charged at him.

<Since I feel good because I found a convenience store I will let it slide.>

‘Yea. I could just fake it and pretend I don’t know.’

Who would know that he did it?

Taeson calmed down and stared at Hansoo who was walking from afar.

And Mihee ran towards Hansoo first as he returned.

“You’re back! But there’s a problem! The guys over there took everything from the store!”

Hansoo chuckled at those words and patted Mihee’s head.

“I know. I saw as I came up. Did you gather the food for us?”

At those words Mihee looked back and mumbled.

“We did but... there isn’t much.”

Since they prepared anticipating they would bring more from the store they didn’t have a lot of food or equipment.

Since there was a limit to the size of the backpack.

And even more so since they gathered up female supplies and weapons.

But Hansoo didn’t add anything extra.

“Well that could happen.”

And then Hansoo started looked around to everyone.

And his eyes stopped at Taesoon.

Taesoon replied as if nothing happened.

“But it’s good since you’re here we can just take it back from them. It would be hard by yourself but if we go together and force them they would give it back.”

Hansoo chuckled.

‘Aigoo. This guy.’

But Hansoo didn't really say much.

“Well. Let's eat first.”

At Hansoo's words, Mihee, Jisun, Gangtae went up to the food they had collected.

Since it was set up in a half broken down cafe there were a lot of tables and it wasn't comfortable to eat.

And soon the table was filled with canned foods and other edibles.

As Hansoo walked towards it slowly Taesoon threw out something jokingly.

“I mean we got these risking our lives, shouldn't you eat after paying us something?”

And then the cafe turned silent.

“Hey. Why are you being like this...”

Mihee glanced at Taesoon then talked back.

But Taesoon had no plans to back down.

‘I can’t keep getting dragged around here.’

And he didn’t really say anything wrong.

Hansoo left the food he would eat at the store but if they didn’t bring it then it would’ve been taken by the gang over there.

In conclusion this was theirs.

And they had brought it with risk but despite him being Hansoo, shouldn’t he pay something up for it?

And as Hansoo made an amused expression and stayed silent, the nearby friends were in quite a turmoil.

“Hey if it wasn’t for Hansoo we don’t know where we could be right now.”

Taesoon replied to Mihee.

“But Hansoo told us before also. Liking free things is dangerous. We need to keep it in check here in order to stay together.”

And at those words Sangjin nodded at the back.

It seemed he had some pent up dissatisfaction from the payments



for the poison and the skills.

“I don’t really have something to give for the food here.”

Taeson spat out something instinctively at Hansoo’s words.

“Why not. You have that thing you earned in there, we could use it together.”

“What thing?”

The four who didn’t know the situation made a confused expression as Taeson laughed and said.

“That guy. He went into an empty space alone. He probably got something from there. If we use that together our survival rates will increase. Let’s share it. We need to act together anyway. Don’t do such a trade like this.”

At those words everyone looked at Hansoo.

They didn’t say anything but with the eyes asking why.

Hansoo looked at those eyes and chuckled.

“You’ve learnt well.”

“...what do you mean learn. You talk in an unpleasant way.”

Hansoo clicked his tongue inwardly at that Taesoon.

He did learn but he learnt it in a flimsy way.

‘Well. Since he probably thinks are we’re equal because we’re friends then that should be normal.’

Basically if one thinks that they’re under then they can’t come out like that but if they think that they’re on equal grounds then its obvious that they would come out like that.

But the problem isn’t that.

Hansoo who had organized his thoughts for a moment landed a decision.

‘I guess it ends here.’

Why would Hansoo carry these guys around?

He didn’t really care for receiving runes.

If he killed a few more then they would come out so why would be rather receive them.

This wasn't a game, a time where he went <HAHAH! I've got items and runes! I am strong! This is fun! I can step on others! Happiness!> was long gone.

Since he had fought too long to do that.

The only reason why he was keeping them was because of what Eres had said.

The reason why he asked for runes is because without doing that then they will make more and more requests that go too far.

'Eres, I've done all I can.'

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders and stood up.

He wasn't a stingy person, he wasn't going to go <You pissed me off so I.WILL.DESTROY.YOU.> or something.

'How did Kangtae manage to say things like this. It's extremely embarrassing.'

Well these guys aren't really enemies, if they separate then that's the end of it.

"Well. It's ok. Stay well. Be strong from now on."

Everyone was startled at Hansoo's words as he got up.

They knew that it would become instantaneously hard without Hansoo.

He only wanted to set the mood not make him leave.

And only then they started to make Taesoon stop.

“Why are you being like this? Don't fight.”

The friends were talking around him but Taesoon landed a decision.

‘Yeah, get lost.’

They were seven. If they act the way he taught them then they could safely gather a lot of runes fast without moving around dangerously like him.

No, even if he got weaker he didn't like the fact that somebody was above him.

And that attitude.

It was an attitude that showed someone like himself was not even necessary.

That really pissed him off.

‘Motherfucker’

As Taesoon saw Mihee slowly walk towards Hansoo, he got even angrier and then spat out.

“Go if you want to go. Principles and principles. If we really give this out for free there will be no end. I don’t know what you’re thinking but we don’t need him.”

Then there was somebody who followed his footsteps.

“Hey! Jin Mihee! Are you really going? And leaving us behind?”

Mihee clenched her teeth at Taesoon’s words.

‘I must live.’

The reason why the others didn’t move because they didn’t see Hansoo fighting below.

Mihee, who had seen that, knew instantly who was safer to go with.

“I’m going with Hansoo. Can you take me?”

Then Hansoo shook his head.

“I can’t take you.”

“Ah...”

But Hansoo added at Mihee who was in despair.

“But I can’t really say anything about you following me.”

“Phew.”

Taeseon talked coldly at Mihee who was sighing from relief.

“You can’t go. You didn’t pay back the rune. To Sangjin.”

Mihee can’t leave.

Since she has a precious skill.

And if she has a debt she can’t leave like that.

‘And... where will I send you.’

A girl that he had eyes upon since admission.

A situation like this was a great chance.

“Ah...”

And then Mihee made a sad noise as she thought of borrowing runes from Sangjin.

Then Sangjin shook his head.

“It’s ok. I’m following too.”

“What?”

At those words Taesoon clenched his teeth.

‘This guy who was always behind me...’

That guy’s dad works at his dad’s company.

And that was the reason why he couldn’t leave so far.

He had used him well so far but to suddenly come out like this.

‘Yeah. Get lost, you have nothing to do with me now huh?’

Tasoon spat out while clenching his teeth.

“Yeah. Get lost then.”

“ ... ”

The four who were looking at the bickering between Sangjin, Mihee, Hansoo and Tasoon seemed to be in a turmoil but then decided to stay next to Tasoon and moved next to him.

Since they didn't feel right about leaving and since all the food was here.

Tasoon looked at the three leaving, clenched his teeth but then shook his head instead.

‘No, it turned out for the better’

Now the leadership position has come back to him.

They weren't at the level of Mihee but the three girls here were pretty high quality and there was nobody stronger than him.

For hunts he could just watch Hansoo to somewhat figure out the weaknesses and then go hunt somewhere else.



And all the food was here too.

As long as there aren't any more problems then there weren't going to be situations where their lives would be in danger.

‘After I get strong enough, I can slowly make my way through.’

Taesoon breathed in and out then laughed as he saw the friends who were looking at his back and not Hansoo's.

.....

Sangjin looked at Hansoo with a dissatisfied expression and said.

“We don't really have to do anything? All the food is with them.”

At Sangjin's words there was some resentment.

If it's Hansoo then he could probably take it all back.

And he stuck with Hansoo because he thought he would do that.

But Hansoo did not carry anything out.

‘What are his thoughts exactly?’

Sangjin did not understand Hansoo.

Since he didn't bring out any food.

He had the strength to do whatever he felt but why was he like that.

Hansoo chuckled at those words.

Since he could tell what he was thinking.

‘Well. If they don't know about the moon...’

The food they have is useless food already.

Why would he bicker around regarding things that were already useless.

‘It seems it's almost midnight’

Hansoo looked at the sky.

At the sudden action, Sangjin and Mihee also looked at the sky.

In the middle of the dark sky there was a single round moon floating.

An extremely normal full moon.

And then something weird came into Mihee's sight

‘...Did I see wrong?’

Mihee made a slit with her eyes and looked at the moon.

‘It was like something flickered on the moon.’

Mihee, who had been looking at the moon, suddenly got the chills all over her body and almost felt bad.

Blink

‘... The moon blinked its eyes.’

The surface of the moon split open with a crack and then a frightening eye appeared.

The iris on the center of the eye moved back and forth without stopping as it scanned every living organism around.

.....

“Since everyone’s left, let’s just eat.”

Taesoon said energetically as he walked towards the table.

Jisun looked at Taesoon with a slightly anxious look.

“Shouldn’t we..at least make up? I think we need Hansoo.”

At those words, flames rose up from within Taesoon.

‘That bitch has already gotten lost! Why are you looking for that bitch!’

But Taesoon managed to laugh on the surface.

His situation wasn't quite well set yet.

If he makes a mistake then they could all leave to Hansoo.

“No. Look at that guy. He has something he had but he's using it alone. He's a guy that would only make trouble if he stayed.”

“mmm...”

Honestly Jisun didn't like that either.

If there was something good then it won't even be enough to use it together but to leave just like that.

And Taesoon who had seen Jisun's expression, added strength to his voice.

“And all the food is here too. If they're hungry they'll come back. Won't they listen better then?”

And then Taesoon started to take out the food from the bag.

And at that moment something happened.

“Huh?”

A strand of moonlight came into the room.

As if the light bended.

And as if it was searching for something, searching every corner.

And at the snake-like light that entered the room, the food that had been shone upon started to burn.

“What is going on...”

Taesoon rushed and checked the rest of the food.

But the food that was stacked was all burnt down without anything remaining.

“Goddamit! How did this happen!”

Taesoon and the remaining four cried out in shock from the strange phenomena that melted down all the food in the interval of a few seconds.

## Chapter 13 – Otherworld's Moon (3)

---

“Huh? Huuhh?”

Sangjin made a shocked face as he saw the chocolate bar in his hand burn down to nothing.

One of the few things he took before coming out.

When he quickly checked, the contents of his bag and his pockets were disappearing at a fast pace.

Sangjin urgently looked at Hansoo and shouted.

“How did this happen?”

And then Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“Even if I have psychic powers, how would I know of something like that?”

“Ah...”

Sangjin looked at the emergency food in his hands that had turned into dust and made a resentful face but then realized something.

‘Is it possible that the other’s food also...’

As Sangjin quickly looked at the outside of the 2nd floor of the cafe that he used to be at, he heard shouts from all around.

“What is this! Which bitch planned this out!”

“Goddamnit! Some guy took everything that was piled here! It’s all gone!”

“I’ll kill you!”

A deserted city at a single glance.

A place that seemed very hard to obtain food at.

Everyone had obtained food from the store on the 2nd floor but logically speaking no one would have thought of going down to the even more dangerous 2nd floor after getting through the first floor which was filled with Green Worms.

Without Hansoo they would have probably had to starve for another 2-3 days.

And when the food disappeared in such a situation the anxiousness of the people had exploded.



And even rage.

“Ehh...”

As Sangjin groaned at the chaos afar, Hansoo smiled bitterly.

‘It’s really a god-forsaken world’

Not a single moment will be left in peace.

Firstly, because of that <Moon>, all the foods that one had in possession will burn down and disappear.

Which meant that it was impossible to stock up on foods and then nibble away at it.

‘That’s why I told them to not take them all. Tsk’

If you leave it in the convenience store that it does not count as being in one’s possession so it remains.

The reason why he had buried it was to share it with the seven after climbing back up with them.

The residents of the Otherworld must scavenge food everyday.

No matter if you search for every food within the corners.

No matter if you kill a beast, find a way to get rid of the toxicity and then eat it.

‘If only it ended there’

And soon another change occurred.

White light started to come off from people’s bodies.

As if they were shrouded with moonlight.

“huh?”

Sangjin panicked as he saw his chance and then looked around.

And then he drooled.

They could see where every single one of the 100 were.

No matter if they were blocked by a wall.

The moonlight was showing each other’s locations and was sharing them.

When he turned around, Mihee and Hansoo’s body had

moonlight coming off of them also.

‘Ah...’

From the feeling of being naked, Sangjin and Mihee clenched their teeth.

There was no way that their location being exposed would feel good.

‘Goddamit’

Hansoo, who had been looking at the two, stood up.

Since the moon has risen, it was time to move.

“Where are you going?”

As the two asked anxiously, Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“Gotta do work.”

It was a reward that could only be gained on the first night of the Tutorial and only when you clear the mission while the Moon was up.

<Selfish Wealthy man’s Food Jar>

The requirements were rather simple.

<Within the 6 hours of the first night while the moon is up, cook up a beast and then eat it>

The problem was that it was on the first night.

Most people will figure out their situation after the first night and then will zealously hunt for food. Beasts will naturally come into their views and naturally they will get their carcasses to cook them around the second day but a situation where one cooks the toxic beast within the first day to eat it was rare.

The Jar that you obtain after all this is rather simple.

It hid the food away from the eyesight of the Moon and always kept the food inside fresh.

The name was a jar but it was in the form of a small pouch.

‘And the storage amount is important’

The storage amount was five times the amount of food you eat within 6 hours.

1 person’s worth meant 5 people’s worth of space, 10 people’s worth of food eaten meant that you could store 50 people’s worth

of food.

The fact that you could store food was very advantageous in this situation where that damnable <Moon> was up.

He had to eat as much as possible.

‘But...I should cook things thoroughly’

It was rather simple but to do that a lot of preparation was needed.

Since you need to get rid of the toxins within the carcass.

‘Cooking huh. It’s been a while.’

Cooking was one of Hansoo’s hobbies.

Since it was one of the things that made the tongue happy as well as being one of the small moments of happiness.

And it was one of the basics of the basics in order to survive within the Abyss where the Moon came up.

## Bubble Bubble

Hansoo leisurely boiled goblin blood as he was lost in thoughts.

‘The current amount of carcasses in possession are four kinds’

Goblin. Green Worm. Land Mermaid. Barb Snake.

And out of the four, if you cross out the Land Mermaid that you cannot eat even after you cook it, it leaves him with three kinds.

And out of those the Green Worm’s carcass was rather difficult to detoxify with the materials you could obtain.

‘The main ingredients will become Goblin and Barb snake.’

In the Abyss or the Otherworld, if you can cook the beasts well then their meat becomes amazing.

One of the friends told him that <If you can cook Goblin Meat well then it’s better than most beef> so it’s likely that it’s true.

## Bubble Bubble Bubble

Whilst he was boiling the blood to get rid of the toxins within the meat, Hansoo pulled out the kitchen knife embedded on the Barb snake, sharpened it and then started to chop the Barb snake up.

The Barb snake has no toxins so you can even eat it right away by making sashimi.

The only problem was that it was hard to catch and that there wasn't much to eat because it was mostly hard muscle.

“Mmm”

He took a slice, chewed on it, and then made a content smile as he gulped it down.

‘It’s rather good’

The chewy taste was rather good.

The seasoning was a little disappointing but the texture itself gave satisfaction.

Sangjin looked at Hansoo with a priceless expression.

‘Isn’t this guy just insane?’

He was eating the monster meat in such a leisurely way.

If somebody saw they might've mistaken him for eating sashimi by the seaside.

But whilst Sangjin was cursing Hansoo off, Mihee had a slightly different thought.

“... Is that something you have to do too?”

“What are you talking about?”

The one who had answered Mihee's insensitive question was Sangjin.

Mihee replied at that.

“He could just move away and hunt but he's doing that instead.”

Hansoo had never done anything unnecessary.

Hansoo who had continuously reminded them of hunting was cooking like that which meant it was a necessary action.

There was only reason why Mihee thought like that.



<Reward>

She didn't know what Hansoo's psychic powers were exactly she could guess somewhat.

He knew what to do in order to achieve rewards.

Hansoo looked at that Mihee contently.

‘Good’

She was growing up well.

But Sangjin wasn't really happy at Mihee's words.

“He would probably just eat it by himself this time anyways.”

At those words Hansoo looked at Sangjin and then answered.

“You guess correctly.”

“... Huh?”

Sangjin was instead flustered by Hansoo's confident words.

.....

“Goddamnit! What do we do!”

Jisun, who was grabbing onto Gangtae anxiously, yelled at Taesoon.

Shouts were coming from afar.

“Didn’t the ones who went to the store first do some tricks on the food?”

“Let’s first catch those guys! Their food might be different!”

“I can see them over there!”

The reason why they didn’t invade was because they both had something to eat.

Since there was no reason to fight unless they were desperate.

But the situation was now much different.

If their food disappeared like this every night, and they had to find new food every time then they had no time to idle around.

They could starve to death at a moment’s notice.

And that problem becomes worse as the size of the group becomes larger.

Taeson looked at the ones running towards him from afar and clenched his teeth.

There was no way to hide either, since that damnable moonlight was showing every living existence below it.

And then Taeson realized what that moon had wanted from them.

‘It wants us to kill each other since the board was set huh.’

They could not face that amount of people.

Maybe if their numbers were eight or seven but with just five they had no way of beating them.

The reason why Taeson was at ease was because they would have thought that there were eight of them and wouldn't rush in thoughtlessly.

And since because they were calm even when it became night like his expectations.

But the fact that there were 5 of them would be discovered at this point.

Whilst Taesoon was clenching his teeth, the girl who was standing quietly in the corner, Sunmi shouted.

“Instead of staying here, let’s go to Hansoo!”

“What?”

Taesoon momentarily burst into anger and then gazed at Sunmi.

Sunmi was slightly scared by that expression but then shouted.

“Then what do you want us to do! Are you going to fight them with only five of us?”

“ ... ”

Taesoon clenched his teeth at those words.

‘He only has strong confidence’

Sunmi clicked her tongue inwardly but didn’t show it.

Every person had a limit and if they went past Taesoon’s limits in a disadvantageous situation like this then they couldn’t expect what would happen.

Whatever happened, the strongest of the five was Taesoon.

Sunmi organized her thoughts and then spoke cautiously as if she was soothing Taesoon down.

“Instead of this let’s cooperate. We aren’t going to Hansoo, we’re just combining our strength. If we become eight then they can’t look down on us. After we buy time we can explain that our food has also disappeared.”

“Hoo...”

Taesoon calmed down at Sunmi’s words of combining their strength and not going to Hansoo for help.

‘Yeah. We aren’t going out to find that guy for help. We’re just combining our strength.’

No matter if it was Hansoo, it would be hard to handle the enraged mob.

He definitely cannot ignore the strength of the five of them.

Taesoon, who had organized his thoughts, stood up and spoke.

“Yeah. We need to help him. Let’s go.”

‘Retard. He seems to still think that this is a world where his father exists.’

Sunmi belittled Taesoon who was holding up his confidence even in a situation like this but didn’t really add extra comments.

Since there was no reason to make enemies.

‘Damn. I stayed here only because of the food but it was a blow. I should’ve noticed when that bitch Mihee stuck onto him’

Sunmi clicked her tongue.

She didn’t follow that group because she didn’t want to be pushed back by Mihee.

In this group, without Mihee here, her beauty was at the top and then she could probably control the two men with ease.

And there was no problem since she usually acted as the leader of the three who were here.

But it had led to this situation.

‘I have to grab onto a new opportunity.’

Sunmi, who looked at Taesoon who was wheezing out pitifully,

thought of Hansoo and ran as she bit her lips.

But at that moment something flew in from behind with a very fast speed.

“Uwaak!”

Splash

As the mysterious object latched onto his ankles, Taesoon's ankles were entangled and he fell just like that.

“Uhh? Uh?”

Taesoon tried to untie the yellow thing that had bound his legs but that thing on his ankles just got tighter and tighter.

‘Fuck. It’s a skill!’

Taesoon panicked and shouted while looking at his friends.

“Hey! Hey! Carry me and run please!”

But Jisun, Sunmi and others who were looking at that Taesoon, hesitated for a moment but then abandoned him as they ran.

Taesoon roared in rage as he saw his friends act like that.

“You bitches!”

“Hey now. Why is such a young friend like you cursing like that.”

Taesoon spun his head as he heard the footsteps and the voice



from behind.

Dozens of people who had red eyes due to being angry were walking towards him.

These people were extremely agitated from the fact that all their food had suddenly disappeared as well as the danger they felt from their positions being exposed.

While Taesoon felt the chills on his back from the eyes of the gang that could beat him at a moment's notice, the man who had been standing in the very front spoke as he laughed:

“How is it? It's called Orun's adhesive. While you guys were doing things we were also working. Since our numbers were high things like this dropped.”

“...”

“But why is there only five of you? Where did the other three go?”

He thought that were eight of them but even if he added the ones running away there were only five in total.

Taesoon rapidly answered at those words.

“I'll say everything I know!”

He knew a lot of things about Hansoo's group.

If they hear about that they will be tempted.

And he was rather skilled too.

It wasn't impossible to join that gang.

At those words the leader of the gang who was standing in the front, Giltae, smiled as he spoke.

“Such a young guy, I like that you catch on quickly. I'll take you in. But after we take care of something.”

And then somebody came out from behind.

‘Fuck...’

As Taesoon saw the guy who he had beaten up to slip intel while coming out of the station checking him out like a snake, he gritted his teeth.

“You shouldn't beat somebody up because you feel like it. Since we're going to be together from now on let's settle things here first”

As soon as Giltæ's words ended, an unbiased violence started.

Puuk!

‘Uuk. Uuuuk!’

He had a skill too but maybe due to the enemy having raised his stats for quite a while or maybe because he wasn't on guard, it felt like his intestines were being twisted and turned.

But Taesoon held back his screams forcefully.

If he screamed then they will enjoy it more and he will become more pitiful.

‘I'll kill them all.’

Hansoo who had turned him like this, and the four who had abandoned him, he would kill them all.

Taesoon grinded his teeth at the four lights running and the three lights at the end as he was getting beat up.

.....

Hansoo mumbled as he saw the lights running towards him from afar.

‘They’re coming.’

<Selfish Wealthy man’s Food Jar>

To be honest this mission had a higher chance of being selected out of the missions.

After seeing the statistics it seemed that this mission had boasted a much higher percentage than the others.

But he hadn’t seen many people who had obtained this.

The method of obtaining it was simple.

Eat as much food as you can while the moon is up.

But there was a condition.

That you needed to be selfish.

And that it was only given to the one person who had eaten the most.

Since it was a Selfish Wealthy Man’s Food Jar.

He could not share anything he cooked himself.

While he couldn't hide himself anywhere.

While everybody was going crazy from the disappearance of food.

If you can get through this situation and selfishly hide and eat the food, only then the Jar will show off its powers.

As if it meant that you need to at least do that much to hide the food from the Moon.

'Anyways, the guy who had selected the mission really had an evil hobby.'

Hansoo laughed at Sangjin and Mihee.

"If you don't like it then you can leave. It seems like there will be a lot of guests for the meal.

First night of the tutorial.

The experience and the situation of the tutorial from the people of the Final Brigade had different but there was a common point.

That nobody went through it with ease.

Something always blew up on the first night.

‘Perhaps I will be able to complete a lot of missions tonight.’

Hansoo started to warm up his body slowly as he chewed on the Barb Snake’s meat.

## Chapter 14 – Otherworld's Moon (4)

---

“Mmm. It's cooked well.”

Hansoo stabbed at the meat with the kitchen knife that was almost completely dull and tasted it while chewing on it.

Meat from which the toxins were perfectly removed by being boiled with blood and having been mixed with the Green Worm's pancreas.

‘There's a lot of juices coming out too.’

Hansoo spoke whilst eating leisurely:

“Most of the toxins within the goblin meat disappear if you boil it in goblin blood. Just don't eat the intestines or the liver.”

But the weren't in a situation where they could focus on that.

The moonlight was accurately showing the mob of people charging at them.

Mihee gulped as she saw the people running at them from afar.

“Are you perhaps going to protect us when a fight breaks out between us and them?”

“Mmm. Perhaps if we’re friends?”

Sangjin’s expression became bright at those words.

Who else would be his friends other than them in this place?

He and Mihee had abandoned Taesoon and picked Hansoo!

But Mihee clenched her teeth at those words and spoke:

“...How do we become that friend?”

Hansoo laughed at those words.

“It’s not like a driver’s exam, why would there be a condition to become a friend. You might have become a friend suddenly at one point.”

You don’t become a friend who can trust each other and protect each other by fulfilling objectives.

You become a friend by protecting and trusting each other in every situation

‘Just like those guys.’



Sangjin then realized his misconception from Hansoo's words and then spoke as his face reddened:

“...But then how do we deal with those guys?”

Hansoo shook his heads at those words.

“You should take care of yourself at least.”

Sangjin was enraged by Hansoo's careless words.

“Damnit! Then why are we hanging around with you!”

But Hansoo only shrugged his shoulders.

“You should figure that answer out by yourself. The fact is that being with me is more dangerous.”

“...”

Sangjin clenched his teeth at those words.

That was actually a fact.

They followed after Hansoo and fought down the dangerous train station.

If they didn't go with Hansoo and instead hung around the bigger crowd it would've been safer.

And Hansoo didn't have any notion of keeping them safe.

Sangjin watched the people running towards them from afar as he clenched his teeth.

Then he breathed in and out and started to walk over.

"I thought that we could go to the end together but you're just too much. I thought that you were my friend but you do not care for me."

Sangjin started to walk towards a direction after ending his speech.

And thought inwardly at the same time.

'But... I didn't do anything bad like that bitch Taesoon so if I come back after removing myself for a while he would probably take me back in.'

Hansoo laughed at Sangjin who was taking shelter in order to first dodge the terrifying storm.

'Seriously huh.'

Once they tie them together in school for a few years, the word friend seems to have gotten much more common.

Hansoo talked to Mihee as he looked at Sangjin who was leaving.

“Aren’t you going too? That’s the best solution if you want to be safe.”

Mihee shook her head at those words.

“...You won’t take me back in if I leave.”

‘She’s really quick to catch on.’

Mihee clenched her teeth while Hansoo laughed inwardly.

‘This isn’t the situation to look for an umbrella to escape the rain.’

The other friend hadn’t realized the essential truth yet.

They are instinctively looking for a safe place because of the dangerous situation.

And since Hansoo seemed safe they had stayed there.

But Hansoo didn't have the idea to protect them and they shouldn't be doing that anyways.

They should not be looking for safety here. They needed to grow.

They needed to rush their growth.

To deal with the strong predators that will flood them.

And it wasn't only beasts.

If you did not want to get eaten up by humans you needed to become stronger at a faster pace than others.

And Hansoo was talking very plainly.

He said he wouldn't protect them but did not speak of not learning from him.

Didn't he say it before?

He won't take them with him but he wouldn't mind them following.

'If they rely on something here... they will really die.'

Mihee came next to Hansoo, who was thinking, and started to

cook the goblin meat after boiling the goblin blood.

‘This is a gamble.’

She had too many things to learn.

And to do that she needed to follow and learn from Hansoo, who had psychic powers, and hunt along with him.

If she could survive today next to him then she had another day’s worth of things she could learn.

‘I don’t know when an unexpected variable like that moon come out.’

Mihee, who had strengthened her resolve, started to sharpen the knife to deal with the ones coming towards them.

.....

“Huff. Puff.”

The four who had ran zealously finally ended near Hansoo.

Sunmi made a ridiculing expression as she saw the view in front of her.

‘... Did he come to camp? And why is he using the pot separately.’

Sangjin was nowhere to be seen and only Mihee and Hansoo were left.

The two were boiling something in the pot and were chewing on that.

Sunmi clenched her teeth at this.

‘These despicable guys. These two knew a way of preserving the food.’

It’s no wonder they had left in such a leisure.

These guys probably knew that all the food had burnt down to nothing.

Sunmi, who had been grinding her teeth, breathed in and out and then shook her head.

‘No. This is better actually’

If he knows the method he only needed to share it.

‘And we didn’t do anything wrong like Taesoon right?’

Actually Taesoon being taken by them was a benefit.

That senseless guy was holding up his confidence even in a place like this.

If she was Hansoo she would not let someone who acted like Taesoon alone.

‘Yeah. If you want to go through this harsh world you need a trustworthy friend.’

Her mind was much more at ease after deciding.

And once her mind was at ease, hunger was rising up.

‘Damn. I just realized that I couldn’t get to eat anything.’

She was in a situation of tension for the whole day along with the intense exercise that she didn’t usually perform made her energy usage much more severe.

And it seemed like that the surrounding friends were in the same situation from their mouths watering from seeing the meat over there.

Sunmi spoke out after setting her mind.

“Huff. You were here. Could we eat together?”

Hansoo smirked and rose from his seat.

And held the needle as he drew a circle around the area 3m away from him.

Shiik. Shik.

“...What are you doing?”

“Don’t come in.”

“What? Are you seriously going be that petty?”

Sunmi spoke out from utter disbelief.

They weren’t grade schoolers or something, to draw a circle because they bickered a little.

And they were simply bystanders.

And the main culprit wasn’t even here.

But Hansoo didn’t reply as he went back to his seat and started to chew as he continued his meal.



Sunmi spoke out after staring at Hansoo for a while:

“If I enter, what are you going to do?”

Hansoo replied softly.

“Oh I don’t know. But from my psychic powers it seems that it won’t be that good.”

“... That bloody psychic powers shows such a thing too huh.”

As Sunmi grinded her teeth, Hansoo just shrugged his shoulders.

“I know other things too. Like if you stay here it would be dangerous for you?”

As soon as Hansoo spoke the four quickly looked behind them.

They had forgotten momentarily from the security and distraction from the food in front of their eyes.

That they were being chased.

The mob was screaming in rage as they were running towards them.

“Look at those bitches! They are cooking by themselves.”

“I know this would happen! Those bitches are the ones that went into the convenience store first!”

“You dare to trick us?”

And in front of the mob, there was a half beaten up Taesoon.

Jisun shouted in glee.

“Taesoon! You were saf–”

“Shut up! You despicable bitch! You dare to leave me behind like that!”

Sunmi, Jisun and the others were startled at the enraged shouts that was resonating through the air.

They were indeed in a hurry but they did indeed leave a friend behind.

But Jisun rebutted in a hurry.

“No it isn’t like that! Listen to me! We were going to come to Hansoo and ask for help!”

“This crazy bitch! You dare say that!”

Taesoon shouted as he grinded his teeth.

By that point he would have been badly beaten up.

If he didn't beg, and didn't say he would go under them then it wouldn't have ended this easily and he would've become minced meat.

‘Fuck... to guys who are weaker than me...’

There's no strong against a number.

And that was the reason why he could not forgive them even more.

‘These bitches. I wanted to be together.’

He could not forgive Hansoo, the four bitches and even Mihee who had betrayed him.

And for that he was willing to go through a little bit of humiliation.

Whilst Taesoon was looking over in rage, the shouts of the people were getting louder as well.

But at that point Giltæ came out as he shouted.

“Woah. Woah. Calm down first everybody. The new guy should calm down too.”

It was the words of one person but they were rather intimidated.

‘He has controlled the mob rather well.’

Hansoo nodded at the guy who had spoke to him when he first left.

Since he came with a bunch of scruffy guys who treated him as the boss so controlling a mob wasn’t that hard.

Since he didn’t seem like a normal person.

Giltæ smiled as he looked at Hansoo:

“It’s good to see you again. A young person has such abilities. Where did you get the meat?”

Hansoo bobbed his chin at those words.

“Why are you looking for meat from me when there’s meat everywhere”

Giltæe looked around the corpses that had been stacked around him.

‘...He ate that?’

Giltæe hadn’t already tried that out.

Since he ordered a few to try it out.

But that food was not something you could eat.

The toxicity was so strong that the ones who had eaten are still having diarrhea and were suffering from dehydration.

They will probably die. Since dehydration in a situation like this meant death.

But he was eating that in ignorance.

Giltæe organized his thoughts and spoke:

“It seems that the younger brother knows the method of eating it.”

At those words Hansoo nodded as he spoke so everyone could hear:

“If you boil it in goblin blood you can eat it. Go and try it.”

A simple intel such as this wouldn't hasten the process of the invasion of the Abyss.

Giltæ pondered inwardly as he looked at Hansoo.

‘Did they say this bitch had psychic powers...’

As they approached here, that Taesoon guy had babbled everything out.

That the guy called Hansoo seemed to have psychic powers.

And thanks to that they had all gotten stronger faster and attained the food from the store.

‘And he obtained something valuable in there right?’

Giltæ made his decisions quickly.

He didn't know what would happen the next day when the distance between them is spread apart further.

And even though he had established a large group but most of them were normal people so they were hard to utilize in a fight.

‘If we’re going to fight then today’s the day.’

He had no intention to kill.

Why would he kill somebody with psychic powers.

And no matter if he flew about he was only a normal person around twenty years of age.

If he receives some beating and some knife cuts he will be in trauma and become submissive.

And then he can suck out his bone marrow.

‘The fact that he’s in such a leisure is a bit troubling but...’

But he could figure that out and that would be that.

Giltae, who had made his decision, gave a wink.

“The new guy should go over and take a bite. Talk a little too. I heard you guys were friend. If you are friends that he should at least give you a bit of meat right?”

Taesoon, who was grinding his teeth, started to walk over proudly.

‘If you indeed have some hidden motives then you shouldn’t be able to act recklessly in front of this crowd.’

Taeson took large steps as he headed towards Hansoo’s pot.

And Hansoo, who was watching this, chuckled.

‘I’m sorry that I couldn’t keep it even for a day, this seems like the end of it Eres.’

From the way these guys were acting, it seemed like Eres’ will would be hard to keep.

Since he was closer to Keldian anyway.

There was a reason why he was closer to him.

Mihee, who was watching Taeson walk over towards the circle Hansoo had drawn, suddenly felt a chill spike up from behind her.

Hansoo’s expression was changing at a rapid rate.

Well, to be more accurate he was still smiling but the expression was turning scarier as his eyes were changing.

Deeper and at the same time, colder.



And Mihee knew instinctively when she saw this.

He wasn't angry.

This was his true nature.

He had simply been holding down on it until now for some reason.

She then realized that no matter how selfish Taesoon and the others acted in front of Hansoo they had never blocked his way or disturbed him in any way.

And Mihee, who had thought up to that point, urgently responded.

“NO! Don't come in! Don't cross that line!”

But then Taesoon grinded his teeth as he shouted:

“You just wait right there.”

And then Taesoon recklessly crossed the line.

# Chapter 15 – Otherworld’s Moon (5)

---

Eres and Keldian often bickered with each other even when they started working together due to differences in opinion.

Eres always said this.

<You shouldn’t make enemies with such ease. Those guys will one day block your paths>

Keldian said this.

<If you see a enemy in front of you then you must thoroughly crush them. Otherwise they will grab onto your ankles eventually.>

And because of that their thoughts were unified.

<Don’t make enemies easily. But once you make them make sure to thoroughly crush them. So they won’t even be able to look at you again.>

And Hansoo agreed with this.

.....

Thukunk

“...huh?”

Taeson made a confused expression as the foot he had set forward slanted on an angle.

And he knew instantly.

That the foot he had set over the line had been cut off.

Taeson fell and screamed as he saw the kitchen knife that seemed to have cut off his ankles being stuck on the ground in front of his eyes.

“Uahhhhhhk!”

Everyone felt the horror in their hairs and bones as they saw Taeson roll about on the floor without an ankle.

The enraged voices quieted down and only silence was left.

The fact that he was strong enough to the point where he cut an ankle off by throwing a kitchen knife was a problem but it wasn't the root of the silence.

It was the fact that he had cut off his leg because he had crossed

the line.

And that look.

‘Fuck. What kind of college student has an expression like that... what kind of work did he do?’

Giltæe grinded his teeth as he saw his eyes from afar.

As Taesoon saw everyone hesitating, he grinded his teeth.

‘These bitches who were so confident... these sons of bitches!’

He went out believing in these people.

But were acting in such a way!

Taesoon, who was looking at the people with tails between their legs, shouted out while squirming in agony.

“Guuuuaa... Guaa.. You dirty bastard! You do this much to a friend just because you don’t want to give a piece of meat!”

Truthfully it didn’t seem like that was the root of the problem.

But that wasn’t important.

The important fact was that that guy needed to die right now.

And to do that he needed to stimulate the ones over there who were cowering like dogs with their tail between their legs.

Taeseon spat out an evil shout.

“You guys! Think well! Do you think that the guy who does this to me because he didn’t want to give out a piece of meat would let you live once he gets stronger?”

And then everyone felt the horror in their hairs and bones.

Those words were right.

The already strong guy had risen up this much in just a day.

And he had obtained a strange weapon as well.

What would happen if he increases the gap in a few days?

And if that happened would a guy who carelessly sent his friend’s leg flying leave them alive?

“Hit him now! You guys are watching like this because you have no confidence in winning!”

Giltae grinded his teeth.

They didn't know if those words were correct.

But they couldn't give up the chance right now.

Even if he didn't have such thoughts, if he becomes strong enough to easily push them down with his hands, and if he needs extra runes in order become stronger then it will become a disaster.

If he were to attack them in surprise during the day, then they would just become a vending machine that is giving out all their runes.

They had to kill him while everyone was excited, had their weapon and escape was impossible due to the light coming out of their bodies.

“Prepare yourselves.”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders at the atmosphere that was becoming sinister.

There was a bit of misunderstanding but the conclusion was the same.

There was no point in persuading the guys who were charging at him with a death wish.

And there was no reason to take care of them all.

Since an easily set fire is easy to extinguish.

‘One step at the time staring from the ones who crossed over the mountain’

He had to finish in a overwhelming fashion. Since only then the other guys who charge at him thoughtlessly disappear.

And it seemed that there were some people with skills in that crowd.

They hadn’t hunted much but their body was good from the start so their basic stats were good.

And to crush those guys his current battle powers were a bit lacking.

‘Cloud snack is a bit wasteful’

He couldn’t use such a thing which he had 20 of.

He needed it to fight the guy blocking the second hidden piece at

the <Altar>.

Hansoo absorbed all the runes in his wrist.

Since there was no need to trade runes for the moment.

All his stats like his strength shot up instantly.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 40.3

Stamina: 39.8

Agility: 26.1

Perception: 27.2

Magic resistance: 13

Hansoo stood up from his seat after absorbing all the runes and walked forward after pulling out the needle.

‘This is going to hurt a little.’

Since it started already.

Before the night ends he will try out every mission with people as



subjects.

The fairies were so evil natured that most missions weren't suited for teenagers to watch.

But since they started the fight they should at least be punished that much

'First <Peel off the skins of the 15 people rushing towards you while leaving them alive>...it seems Enbi Arin did this too. Anyway, it seems I'll be busy in order to try out all 37 missions with people as subjects.'

Hansoo looked at the people rushing towards him coldly.

.....

Eventually the Moon that was hanging in the sky started to blink as it closed its eyes.

Which meant that it was past 6 o'clock.

As the moon closed its eyes the lights that were stuck on the people's body started to disappear.

It had closed its eyes but the moon kept on giving out light as it shone the disastrous scene below.

“uuk...”

“Guuuk...”

Almost twenty or so people were stuck on the floor with holes in their limbs and were barely breathing.

Everybody here were people who followed that man called Giltae.

And Taesoon was part of this group as well.

It has already been a while since the others ran away from here in every direction.

And Mihee was watching Hansoo from the side with a disgusted expression.

‘uue...’

The fight ended rather easily.

The people who rushed him were of no match to Hansoo.

Their experience itself were different.

He knew exactly where to stab and had no hesitation in doing so.

No, even if they had similar experiences and skills, their stats were different.

Hansoo, who had absorbed all his runes, flew around like a flying tiger and gave the people rushing towards him holes in their limbs one by one.

Hansoo had injuries on his body but compared to those of lying below, it was basically nothing.

As the people in their front fell down with holes in their body, the people who were stimulated from the food problem realized that the current problem was receiving holes in their body and not the food and had all ran away.

And Hansoo, who had been eating food next to the fallen people, stopped eating as the moon set.

Because he simply ate too much.

‘I think I’ve almost eaten around 3 days worth...’

One would get bored of beef if they eat a lot but since he ate about 3 days worth his stomach was about to burst.

As Hansoo looked into the air, the air split apart as a fairy came out.

As soon as the fairy came out, it looked around and then smiled.

“You are doing very well. To even take the second mission.”

And then the fairy handed over a small pouch and explained it.

“This is a pouch that can hide the food from the moonlight. Let’s see... it seems you will be able to store around 2 weeks worth of food. Heehee. If you leave them in here then they won’t go bad so use it efficiently.”

The fairy, who had spoken what it wanted to say, disappeared through the air to somewhere else.

‘As I expected.’

He was expecting a lot because this mission had a high chance of being chosen but his expectations weren’t wrong.

In the future there will be places such a dungeons where you will starve for a month because you cannot find food.

This would be of great help in places like that.

Hansoo tied the pouch around the waist and then started to walk somewhere as he passed between the people lying on the ground.

‘Well. There shouldn’t be a reason to see them now.’

He had experimented with missions with humans as a subject all throughout the night.

It was almost like torture but since they were the ones who started it there was no reason to hold back.

The conclusion was that they were all fails.

Two missions, since the 50 stats and the Jar mission were completed then it meant only one or two were remaining.

Since there were over 100 missions and the chances were that one or two missions remained so it wasn’t that weird.

‘But since I’ve attained the <Selfish Wealthy man’s Food Jar> it’s all good.’

Mihee carefully followed Hansoo, who had completed his meal, and asked in such a situation:

“...Aren’t you going to kill them?”

Those guys will undoubtedly heal even though the process may be slow.

Since they had lead the group for a while, and had the already high vitality along with the few runes they had already obtained.

And then Hansoo chuckled at those words.

“What a scary woman you are.”

“That’s not it. I’m saying this because I’m worried about...”

Mihee realized how funny her words were as she finished her talk.

They weren’t his problem already.

Whilst they were healing and laying on the ground, Hansoo will become much more stronger.

And that gap will become larger as they go on.

No, from the beginning these guys couldn’t breathe when Hansoo walked past them.

It will probably remain as a trauma that lasts a lifetime.

‘Yeah. It’s not the time to worry about others’

But there still remained a question.

“But... what if you kill them and take the runes that are dropped?”

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

If his objectives were just to come back to the past in order to become stronger then he probably could've done that.

But this was just part of his plans.

And another set of plans included him settling the rules of when the humans roamed around the Abyss in the Otherworld.

After they were merged with the Abyss, in order to get rid of internal disputes and to combine their strengths, they created rules of unity.

And the most powerful one of those.

<You will never in any circumstance kill a human being in order to get runes>

A rule that needed to be abided by in order to save humanity.

He had followed this rule for a long time.

Killing a man and taking the few runes that dropped never replace the things that one person could do.

One of the reasons why the humans had been pushed around by the inhabitants of the Abyss was because during the five years after he came a large number of people were integrated and naturally the strong started to see the weak people as runes and not people.

And if he, who had to set up this rule, had killed someone because it was the start then that would bring a lot of troubles towards the goal he wanted to reach once the rumors of it spread far and wide.

And it wasn't that they only left runes behind when they died.

‘There are too many eyes watching.’

Since he had cleared all the missions with humans as the subjects, now it was time to try missions that were against monsters.

‘Complete as much as I can before the 4th day when the Altar opens.’

When the Altar opens then the requirements for the second hidden piece will come into play and fill up his time.



And he needed to complete as much as he can before that.

‘Well. Some lucky guys will get to eat them.’

Hansoo left the bodies as he slowly walked towards the beast habitat on one of the corner of the Gangnam Station.

To a place that looked dangerous at glance.

Mihee clenched her teeth as she followed Hansoo’s footsteps.

Hansoo saw Mihee as he spoke.

“Aren’t I scary?”

Mihee had watched his actions throughout the night without blinking an eye.

And she still followed him.

And at those words Mihee clenched her teeth.

He was scary. How could he not be scary.

She had seen what Hansoo had done clearly.

But that's how she realized.

‘I just need to not cross the line’

Then she and Hansoo would remain in a mutual relationship where they can talk and walk like this.

‘Though he is indeed a little scary’

Hansoo chuckled at Mihee whose body was slightly shaking and moved towards the hunting grounds and Mihee disappeared behind him.

And in the location where they had disappeared, Taesoon was throwing all sorts of curses whilst lying on the ground.

“Guuu... Kim Gangtae. Park Jisun. Kim Sunmi. Lee Heeji... you bitches. I will seriously kill you. Seriously. And especially you Mihee!”

Those who had been sucking up to him in the real world had ran away as soon as they fell into danger without looking back.

‘Bitches... I will have my revenge.’

While Taesoon was grinding his teeth on the ground, somebody appeared above Taesoon and the others who were laid out.

Taeroon looked up with an inferior expression but then smiled as he saw who it was.

“Sangjin! This is good! Help me out! And kill everybody around here!”

And at those words Giltæ, who was laid next to him, grinded his teeth.

“This fucking bitch...”

Giltæ made an expression of despair.

Everyone had holes in their limbs. No. It was more like they were all in a very sorry state due to the torture that went throughout the night.

If that one guy came at them then they had no way but to die like that.

But Sangjin performed a much different action than they expected.

Puuk

“Ghuuk... Sangjin... This bitch. Why me...”

Then Sangjin spoke out as he clenched his teeth and looked towards Giltae.

“You still don’t know? This is a place where you must take everyone when given the chance. Did you have fun ruling me around upon your daddy’s back? You bitch.”

“Ghuuuu...”

And soon when Taesoon died, a few runes came out of his body.

It was a sorry amount in comparison to what Taesoon had eaten.

But it wasn’t an amount to ignore.

‘There’s even a skill rune.’

Sangjin, who believed his luck was good, took it in glee.

And then he breathed in and out as he strengthened his grip on the Podao in his hand.

Though there was a grudge. Though the situation was special, it was still murder.

His hands were trembling but he clenched his teeth.

He could not let this chance escape by.

There is definitely somebody within the people who ran away who had similar ideas as him and would come back.

He had to eat up everything before then.

‘I’m just cleaning up the trash.’

“This bitch...”

Sangjin bit down onto his teeth as he walked slowly towards the gangsters who were watching him with despair.

‘Kang Hansoo. I realized now. Why you abandoned me.’

A perfect predator.

The Hansoo that was shining into his eyes looked as such.

And to those eyes how lame would he have seemed.

He was thrown aside because he was weak.

If he was as strong as Hansoo, no, even if he wasn't strong as him, if he just strong enough so that he satisfied the eyes then Hansoo wouldn't have driven him out like that.

And to do that he needed to gain.

‘Just watch. I will become strong. Just like you...’

And when that happens, Hansoo will only be able to look at him differently.

And if he even leaps over Hansoo...

‘First I will take the place of this guy.’

Sangjin, after looking at the place where Hansoo disappeared, walked towards where Sunmi and the other friends would be.

# Chapter 16 – Altar (1)

---

Boooom

A strong shockwave resonated out of Mihee's mouth.



Kududuk

The carnivorous bird that was heading towards mihee tumbled around after getting entangled in the shockwave.

And in that moment the needle in Hansoo's right hand and the Katana in his left hand rapidly embroidered the air

Papapapak

An Elite Goblin's Katana that came out whilst hunting.

It fell behind in comparison to the needle in terms of hardness but it had a good balance and had a good edge so it was decent to use as a sub weapon.

Since as long as you can slash with it then a weapon that can slash is more comfortable to use then a weapon that stabs.

'Goddamit'

Mihee clenched her teeth.

Whilst she was unguarded for a moment, a bird had flown towards her.

But the reason why she clenched her teeth was not because it was dangerous.

Shugak

Mihee smacked her lips as she saw the katana that cut the carnivorous bird in a single sweep.

“I’ve received help again.”

She tried to do it alone but had gained help again.

Hansoo watched her as he spoke

“There is a difference between don’t rely on me and do everything alone. It’s obvious to receive somebody’s help when you use a skill that has a moment of pause. You need to clearly realize the pros and cons of your skills.”

Hansoo then proceeded to divide up the runes on the ground.

Extremely accurately as usual.

‘Has it already been two days’

It has been two days since the incident occurred.

It was almost the fourth day now.

And during this time Hansoo was indulged in hunting without rest.

Mihee checked her runes as she picked up the runes.

[Jin Mihee] Strength: 27.4

Stamina: 28.8

Agility: 18.1

Perception: 21.2

Mana: 18

<Skill>

Barb Snake's Shockwave: 2.4%

Rotating Ring: 2.1%

The rotating ring which they had gained during hunting was also something she had bought which Hansoo had obtained.

<Rotating Ring> which raised the rate of regeneration of Mana and Health didn't really show its might during a battle but if one were to look at it's effect around the whole day, it made a

substantial change.

With just this much there was nothing lacking because in the real world it would be almost at the level of a superhuman.

She can easily beat down somebody with a gun at ease.

Since she can see where the bullet will be shot by looking at the trigger of the finger and dodge them all.

No, if she started a battle in a town it would be even more than that.

Hansoo, who had seen Mihee do this, checked his own stats.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 54.3

Stamina: 55.8

Agility: 42.1

Perception: 42.2

Mana: 22

Magic Resistance: 13

‘Good’

Hansoo, who had raised up his agility and perception, nodded.

You couldn’t compare stats in pairs but strength and stamina, agility and perception had a close relationship with each other.

Without enough stamina then no matter how much strength you have you won’t be able to use it efficiently and no matter how high your stamina was, if your strength was low then it was just wasted talent.

If one were to move properly in the sped up time from agility they needed to have high perception and it wouldn’t matter how high your perception was if your body didn’t follow.

The best solution was keeping all the stats around the same number.

Thankfully he had Mihee who was rather lacking in strength and stamina so he raised his perception and agility while trading their runes around.

At that point a small voice was heard in Hansoo and Mihee ears.

<Ah. Ah. Everybody? Can you hear me? Please gather to the starting point this moment please>

Mihee frowned at the familiar voice

‘Fairy...’

Hansoo spoke as he looked at Mihee.

“Let’s go back.”

Mihee nodded at those words.

But then she stopped turning around and then asked Hansoo.

“Do you perhaps have a girlfriend? Ah... would you even remember.”

Mihee had developed quite a liking to Hansoo recently.

It was scary at first.

Since she knew what happened to the people who crossed the line.

But after watching for three days, she realized that crossing the line was rather difficult.

Since it was like an adult looking over a child, it was rather leisurely.

‘He’s almost like an old man...’

And her mind was much more at ease when she figured that out.

Because he felt like someone that would deal with her no matter what she did.

‘Huh.’

Hansoo smirked at those lovey dovey words.

‘Now that I think about it, if that Gangtae guy came he would’ve been so happy that he’d have thrown a fit’

Perhaps if that guy came back, he could’ve set up a harem kingdom.

But Hansoo shook his head.

‘I can’t lose one again’

He had too long of a road to travel to do that.

Hansoo organized his thoughts and spoke with a small laugh.



“I don’t remember.”

Hansoo walked towards the Gangnam station they had met at the beginning and Mihee followed him in a hurry shortly after watching him for a while.

.....

The place where they had started was already swarming with people.

Because Hansoo had told them how to eat the goblin meat, it seemed like internal fights due to food hadn’t risen up.

Without that it was likely that their numbers would’ve been much lower.

And there were some familiar faces out of the ones alive.

‘They were all alive!’

Mihee felt her mind, which was rather full of worries due to not being able to see her friends due to following around Hansoo which was rather rigorous, settled down as she saw them alive afar.

‘But the situation is a little strange’

Whilst she was frowning as she saw the weird tension, the air suddenly split.

And a familiar face popped out and shouted energetically.

“Greetings! Everybody! I’m here today with two very very good news!”

The fairy, who had shouted loudly, watched the people as it smiled.

“The first good news is that if you hold onto 72 more hours then you can get out of here!”

“ ... ”

The people had heard the news but didn’t really make a happy expression.

Because it sounded like that even if they had left this place, the place they will go to wouldn’t really be safe.

No, since this was the tutorial it was obvious that they were going to a more dangerous location.

The fairy laughed at these people.

“I think I know what you’re feeling. But when you hear the next story you will think that this is a very good news”

And as the people stared at the fairy, it flicked its fingers.

Kugugugugugu

Something rapidly shot up from the small movements of the hand.

A structure almost the size of a small building.

‘...Altar?’

The people made a weird expression as they looked at the new building

It definitely had a similar form to the altars at the ancient aztec grounds.

The fairy laughed as it looked at the people

“It’s a magical altar. There lives a very cute pet inside.”

Then the altar shone bluish as it turned transparent.

The altar was an empty box-like structure unlike its outside appearance.

And the people gulped as they saw the creature within it.

Krrrrrrr...

Something that resembled the Alien.

If you discard the fact that the size of it was 15m.

The thing inside the altar was scratching the wall of the altar as if it was pissed at something.

An even more frightening thing was that every time it scratched the wall, parts of it would fall apart as it made grinding sounds.

“Can you see it? Its called <Carnivorous Beast>. But our friend here is very hungry right now. Since there’s nothing to eat in there it wants to come out of there right now. We starved it for a whole day for this.”

“...”

“As you can see the Altar is very good in terms of looks but it isn’t really useful. It will probably get destroyed soon. Since its a structure that is faithful it’s design.”

At these words the people made a frightened expression.

Everyone knew.

That the area they were in currently was limited.

If that altar fell then they would all get eaten.

Even if they were to hide, the beast will eat them alive as it chased them one by one at night.

The people then realized why the fairy said the earlier news was a good news.

Because in other words, after 72 hours they didn't have to be in the same space as the monster.

‘Wait it said there were two good news before’

The fairy smiled as it spoke.

“I said there were 2 good news before right? Thankfully there is a way to make him fall asleep. If he falls asleep then he would naturally stop scratching the wall to come out right?”

But nobody asked a question.

Since it had shown what happened to someone who questioned it before.

As there were no reactions, the fairy made a dejected expression

for a while then spoke again.

“The answer is very simple. Five a day.”

“...?”

“If you give him five people as food then he would fall asleep. Since its 72 hours you would need to give him food three times right?”

Everyone clenched their teeth at these words.

‘What the fuck. The number of people who are still surviving is only around 60...’

It meant that only if they use a quarter of the people they had now then that beast wouldn’t escape.

‘Damn. Then it’s just better to fight’

As someone had this thought in their mind, the fairy spoke again.

“The choice is yours. Heehee. Give or not give. But I’ll show you this in order to help you decide”

And then the fairy played a short clip in people’s heads.

“These were people who decided to fight it together. From the tutorials before”

The people who had seen this made an extremely frightened expression.

The beast that was released was basically causing a massacre.

Ruthlessly ripping and smashing.

And the beast that had escaped didn't just stop after eating five.

The beast that had come outside devoured the humans in a craze.

They had fought with combined strength but every time it ate somebody its health rose and the injuries on its body healed.

Almost 70 people had charged it but they were all massacred and the ones who ran away were later eaten.

The beast which had eaten everybody was left alone as if nothing happened.

“ ... ”

Everyone realized what kind of decision they had to make after the clip finished.



One of the people who had seen the clip asked whilst clenching their teeth.

“How do we choose!? The people to go in!”

Then the fairy answered with a strange expression

“Why are you asking me that?”

“ ... ”

“Pulling out of a hat, forcibly chucking them in, figure it out yourselves. You just need to put them in while they’re alive. No dead bodies”

“ ... ”

The fairy which had emphasized <chucking> smiled as it spoke for the last time.

“By the way you should decide within an hour. If you put in a sacrifice then you will be safe for 24 hours. And then if you put in more in the next hour after that you will be safe again. Then be strong for the remaining 72 hours. Bye!”

And then the fairy disappeared just like that.

The people started to mumble.

Their opinions were all heading to one path.

That fighting was impossible.

Which meant there was only one way.

Whilst they were guarding against each other a man spoke out.

“To be fair... how about we pull names out of a hat? We pick 5 on the first day. 5 more the next day... like that”

Then one person smirked.

“Why do we need to be fair?”

At those words everybody looked at that direction.

And Mihee, who had also turned towards that direction, also drooled.

‘It’s Sangjin... and friends’

The five were emitting a different aura at a single glance now.

The scars all over the body meant that they were converged in battles until now.

‘And it seems there’s something different about Sangjin...’

His confidence was overflowing. And he was standing in the middle as if he was doing the work that Taesoon was doing instead.

Whilst Mihee was watching Sangjin, the man who has spoken before frowned as he asked.

“Then what do you want to do?”

He didn’t keep his formalities from the fact that his opinions were ignored and the one who had ignored it was a young person.

Sangjin replied to those words.

“Isn’t it obvious that we should throw in the 5 most useless people first?”

Everyone frowned at those words.

They did have a thought like that but it was difficult to speak it out just like that.

Sangjin walked forward as he watched the people and spoke.

“It isn’t the time to idle. We are separated right now but we will leave here in 72 hours! But what will happen after we get out?”

Everyone started to whisper and mumble.

“Think of the amount of people who went missing! It isn’t simply just around 100. If we go out then the people who had gone through similar experiences will be crawling about everywhere. No, we don’t know that an even stronger beast would come out. We might even have to fight a beast like that!”

Everyone nodded at those words.

Since they were all thinking along those lines too.

There wasn’t a game where the difficulty lessened as you proceeded.

And the chances of meeting people who went through similar experiences like them was high.

As the people looked at him, Sangjin shouted loudly.

“Of course, to fight with them we need to combine our strength. And it’s obvious we need stronger people more! Since if when we go out we will need to face stronger enemies!”

And then Sangjin smacked the building next to him

Boom!

The wall of the building blew off from Sangjin's fists.

And Mihee who saw this mumbled inwardly in shock

‘When did he get so...’

She could be certain. Since she had followed Hansoo and hunted along with him she had grown faster than anybody.

But Sangjin was even stronger than her.

If his strength was that much than his other stats were probably similar.

Whilst Mihee was shocked Sangjin continued his speech.

“So isn't it obvious that we put in the weak ones first? Hansoo what are your thoughts?”

At those words everybody looked over to the direction Sangjin spoke to.

## Chapter 17 – Altar (2)

---

‘I’m different from that Taesoon guy.’

Sangjin thought inwardly.

Taesoon had met a cruel fate due to him being hostile towards Hansoo due to his stupid ego.

But he had no plans of becoming enemies with Hansoo.

‘Definitely... don’t want to become enemies’

Sangjin gulped as he thought of Hansoo’s actions throughout the night on Taesoon and the gangsters.

Instead he wanted to on extremely close terms with Hansoo.

Why would he become enemy with such a useful and powerful friend?

‘I’ve grown this much. How Am I?’

Sangjin was very happy with his current image.

A completely different situation than when he was getting pushed down without being able to say anything under Taesoon.

His friends who had been looking at Taesoon were now looking at him and everybody gathered here, and even those older than him, were focusing on him.

And even Sunmi, who he had a crush on all along, was looking at him with a mysterious expression.

He was not trying to show it in his thoughts but he could feel all the eyes on him.

‘This world is about to become better and better’

As long as you have strength you can stand in the center of this world.

Like a main character inside a fantasy world.

‘Hansoo, with your powers you could probably let somebody around Mihee go’

There are probably celebrities in this world.

If you become stronger then you can take women who are much prettier than Mihee.

If Hansoo was with him then it would become easier.

Sangjin looked at Hansoo with an anxious expression.

This suggestion was perfect in this thoughts.

And if everything went according to his plan Hansoo would probably agree.

Since the Hansoo he knew was a guy who wanted to see results without getting swept by with sympathy and emotions.

At those words, Hansoo spoke after pondering for a moment.

“Can I give a suggestion? If you follow my suggestion than you guys can all live. Without sacrificing anything.”

“...What did you say?”

Everyone made a blank face at Hansoo words that sounded like a election strategy full of hope.

But one person shouted in a hurry.

“Are you trying to say to combine our powers to fight with that thing!? That’s just too much!”

Everyone nodded at those words.



It wasn't that the sword didn't go through.

Since during the beginning of the clip the 70 of them pushed it back a little.

But the problem was after that.

That thing healed as it ate more and more people.

Even if you push it back with numbers, the monster did not get tired whilst the people were getting chewed up one by one.

Hansoo just shook his heads.

“Did anybody told you to fight? You guys will just get in the way.”

“...Goddamit! Then what do you want to do!? Are you trying to fight it alone?”

As one person shouted in rebellion Hansoo nodded.

“That's it.”

Everybody was shocked at those words.

‘Did you really get strong enough to the point to fight against that?’

Sangjin bit down onto his teeth inwardly.

He did not have any confidence in fighting that monster.

Even if everyone combined their strength.

But that guy was saying that he will beat that thing up alone.

‘Damn it... Damn it...’

Whilst his inferiority complex, which was hidden away from his recent earnings of confidence, started to rise up again Hansoo spoke again.

“I will fight it but it’s hard currently”

While everybody was disappointed at Hansoo’s words, Sangjin actually felt better

‘Yeah. Even if it was you it would be too much’

If Hansoo were to ask him for help then he had the intentions to help.

Of course it wouldn't be free.

Sangjin spoke with a happy expression.

“Then are you saying we should fight with a small number of elites?”

And then Hansoo spoke whilst making an expression that was asking what he meant.

“I said you will only get in the way”

It might be different on a normal situation but the opponent wasn't good.

They will all become a potion for the monster.

Crunch

Sangjin clenched onto his teeth inwardly.

Basically he was still not qualified to be part of the hunt.

‘Yeah. It’s possible that I still lack the qualifications’

Since it has only been a short time since he started.

But since he was working diligently, he would probably catch up fast.

Sangjin settled down his anger and asked again.

“Then how are you trying to do it?”

Hansoo replied to those words.

“Simple. If my strength and stamina rose by 30 from this point I can fight him one on one”

30 of Strength and Stamina.

It was a bit overbearing currently but if he raised his strength and stamina by 30 and used the cloud snack then he could fight

that thing one on one.

Strength and Stamina at 100, Perception and Agility needed to be around 50.

This was the bare minimum line Hansoo chose.

If the strength was lower than that then it was hard to penetrate the armor and if you lacked the stamina then you wouldn't be able to hold on until it died.

Your agility and perception needed to be around that in order to sense and dodge its attacks.

Since it was a estimate that came from a long time of battle experience so it wasn't wrong.

A number that calculated the cloud snack into it.

If it were other people then it wouldn't be close to enough but if it was him then it was possible.

And there were people who had actually done it.

‘Kwang Goonju’

In reality the only person who found out about this was Kwang

Goonju.

And he wouldn't have known about this hidden piece if Kwang Goonju didn't tell him about it teasingly.

‘Well Kwang Goonju’s trait was rather good for these things’

But even this Kwang Goonju barely beat this while he become half a corpse.

It was not something that was there to be killed.

It just wanted them to fight with each other and offer sacrifices.

That was why it was a hidden piece. No one had the thoughts of killing it and that was the reason why it was hidden.

Even him would have to invest around two to three days in order to reach that point.

But that meant for two to three days, 10 to 15 people would need to be sacrificed in order to buy time.

But if everyone gathered runes and helped him fill up the runes, he had the confidence to jump in the altar where that dumb looking beast was in.

“So I have a suggestions. If you guys can push all the stats onto me, I will take responsibility and kill that thing”

‘And if I do that then the requirements to gain the second hidden piece will be complete’

Whilst Hansoo was thinking, somebody asked.

“Do the 15 people who will be selected to become the sacrifice need to give that rune? 60 runes?”

Hansoo shook his head as he answered.

“No way. I don’t care who gives it to me. As long as that number is satisfied I will go into that altar right away.”

Everyone frowned at those words.

It had already been 4 days since they came here.

Everyone felt the usefulness of the runes but the runes each person needed differed slightly.

The weaker ones focused on Strength or Stamina and the stronger ones wanted to raise Perception or Agility.

And within this weird balance, the rune was used as a form of

currency in some way.

Since one perception or agility rune meant they could trade it for two of strength or stamina.

But not everyone had gathered runes.

The weak ones needed to use runes as they gained even just to raise their stamina a little bit.

So the weak ones who would've been chosen as sacrifices didn't have any runes to spare.

But the stronger ones had some strength to spare so they could collect a little bit.

Since they could fight whilst having some runes collected.

But even the stronger ones didn't have a large amount of them stored.

In order to fulfill Hansoo's requirements they had to empty their pockets of runes.

Everyone made a reluctant expression.

It wasn't ok to not give the runes.



Because if they didn't hand in the runes then it meant they basically wanted to sacrifice 15 weak people.

But it wasn't ok to give the runes either.

If the people who would be chosen as sacrifices gave the runes then it would be ok but the situation wasn't that clear

The one who were weak enough to become a sacrifice had no runes. But then there was no time for these weak people to go hunt for the runes either.

The limit was 1 hour and the sound of the altar being crushed was getting louder and louder at this moment.

Which meant that the people who could spare strength, who wouldn't have had become sacrificed in accordance to Sangjin's suggestion, would have to pay the runes instead.

And then one of those weaker people shouted loudly.

A person who would be chosen first as a sacrifice because he was weak due to him hating fights.

"Shit! Somebody please gather the runes and hand it to him! Damnit! Or pick names out of a hat!"

Sneers were heard from one side at those words.

“What a selfish bastard”

“What did you say?”

The man glared into the corner swiftly.

But the woman didn't get startled at those sharp eyes and spoke.

Though it was a male against a female, such a man who only had his height going for him wasn't a match for her.

She had confidence to go into the high ranks if they started choosing.

Since she tried harder because she was a female and had an unfair disadvantageous start.

“Isn't it obvious? Why should I give runes because of you? When there is such a huge difference in one or two of these? And somebody like you could die anytime so why what would I trust and lend it to him”

“Euuuu...”

The man couldn't rebut.

The reason why he was weak was because he was frightened of fights and had hid in the back.

Four runes meant 40 goblins.

He didn't have the confidence to hunt that much.

If he were to repay the runes, he didn't know how long it would take

“And what do you mean picking out of a hat. You might get thrown in there with broken limbs so don't act out.”

“Fuck...”

The male grinded his teeth but he could only shrivel up because the Podao in the woman's hand was too frightening.

But backing off here meant he was basically being sent into that altar.

So the man shouted once again.

“But then are you saying the weaker ones should just go die? What is this nonsense! Damnit! Weren't you all raised in a democratic society?”

And the woman who spoke before spoke again.

“Democracy is good. Then let’s vote for majority”

“What?”

“Majority rules. We will vote. Between those to want to block it by giving runes and the side that wants to sacrifice. Of cause it will be a secret vote like the democracy you like so much”

“Kuue...”

“Doing this much means I’ve given you a lot of face. In actuality could you guys do anything if I break your limbs and shove five of you in there?”

Most people nodded at those words.

They couldn’t say it out loud because of a guilty conscious but that nod meant that they agreed.

“Ahh...”

The man made a dejected expression at those words.

Since the result was very clear if they went for majority rule.

The order of weakness couldn't be seen clearly but one could guess somewhat.

Around twenty would know they're weak and would go against it but the remaining forty or so would agree.

And since it was a secret vote there was no situation where their guilty conscious would haunt them.

The man hurriedly looked at Hansoo and shouted anxiously.

“You! Can't you take the runes from those guys?”

Then Hansoo shook his head.

He did not steal runes. Since it was the result of one's hard work.

This was one of the rules of the great unification.

Because that was the same as taking the salary of somebody in the streets because you had strength.

“If not.. then can't you kill a few people and then gain the runes like that! If you kill around five to ten strong people then the amount of runes you set would probably come out!”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

Killing stronger people gave more runes than weaker people.

For weaker people, he would need to kill around over fifteen but only about ten or less of the stronger people in order to fulfill the sixty he set as the goal.

“Well. That is true.”

Then the man shouted in a hopeful voice.

“But then can’t you kill those guys then fight with the runes they drop? It’s better for ten to die than 15 to di... ahhhhk!”

“This fucking bitch!”

One of the other men who were listening to this got pissed and had kicked the man who was talking.

That guy was definitely one of the ten strongest people.

He felt anxious whilst he was listening so he rushed out.

He had seen clearly how Hansoo had fought on the first day.

If Hansoo decided to chop down head by head from the top, eat

the runes and then went into the altar, there was nobody to stop him

They had gotten strong as well but this wasn't something that could be compared with just the amount of runes.

Their breed was different from the start.

A pig who had gotten a bit of muscle and speed couldn't fight against a tiger of a similar size.

And that tiger was probably much larger and much faster. Since it had eaten more runes since then.

If that Hansoo decided with a lame counting method of <Yeah. Killing ten is better than fifteen> then all of them would die.

He was listening in leisure because the talks seem to be leaning towards the female but if it were to go this way then he would be perished.

And when he looked around he felt that everybody was mumbling around.

And then everybody started to shout.

“Damnit! Just throw in fifteen weaker guys!”

“Are you telling us to die! It’s better for ten stronger people to die!”

“What nonsense! Then just kill the people in the middle and take their runes! We are going to be of help when we get out of here! It wouldn’t account to fifteen if you kill the ones in the middle!”

Hansoo sighed as he saw the chaos.

Because he knew this would happen

The Moon. Then the Altar.

There was no time to get used to things because the environment was constantly changing.

And since they weren’t familiar with it they couldn’t back off a single step.

It might’ve been different if they knew that there were flat land behind them but in this situation where they couldn’t see behind them, they could fall down a cliff and die if they backed off a single step.

‘I need to do some traffic control’

Hansoo, who had expectations that it would be solved by self control, spoke out.



“Be quiet”

Everybody stood up straight and stared at Hansoo’s lips at those words.

# Chapter 18 – Altar (3)

---

“I will give you a solution”

And then Hansoo started to count.

15 from the bottom.

“One, Two, Three.. fifteen like this. These fifteen people are the weakest”

“What?”

The fifteen who had been chosen made a blank expression for a moment and then shouted in despair.

“No way!”

“Though I have more runes than him?”

But Hansoo shook his head.

He could guess who would win and who would lose at a glance.

It would differ slightly depending on the condition but even if you take all of that into consideration, the people who would go in were rather obvious.

And at Hansoo's pointings, joy and sorrow were shown.

The fifteen who were chosen showed rage and felt wronged.

And the fifteen who weren't chosen let out a sigh of relief because they could save runes.

And in Hansoo's words the man shouted in despair.

"You bitch! You're the same! How dare you throw us off because we're weak! And those bastards over there throw lives away because a of a few runes!"

Hansoo stopped his steps.

"Hmm. It seems you are mistaken about something"

Then Hansoo spoke as he scratched his head.

"You don't get thrown off because you're weak. If you are weak you simply can't follow up with others. Nothing to do with being thrown off"

"..."

"What were you doing whilst everybody was running? It doesn't

matter whether you rested or did something else but you need to take all responsibility for it in this place”

Those words were driven into everyone’s words.

And that they all realized at the same time.

That they had really entered a screwed up world.

It wasn’t like the modern society where you had a chance of bouncing back if you fail and fall behind others.

No, it was actually much more cruel.

Since that fairy thing came out from time to time and tries to cut off the tail which was falling behind.

If you do not want to be cut off, you need to run fanatically.

They had to realize this within the 1st tutorial area.

That this was a world where you needed to be greedy in order to survive.

If you are greedy you will probably receive the curses of others but you will gain the rights to survive during a decisive moment.

Like this situation.

“Damnit! Damnit!”

The man’s voice of despair could be heard behind the disappearing back of Hansoo.

But Hansoo spoke quietly.

“Listen till the end. I’m not telling you to go in there.”

“What?”

Then was there a different solution?

The man looked at Hansoo with a expression full of hope.

Then Hansoo nodded his head.

“The fifteen will borrow the runes from others. Two of strength and stamina each. And then give it to me.”

“Hmm...”

“And hunt during the remaining 72 hours in order to pay the runes back to them”

Everyone nodded after pondering for a moment

There was nothing to lose.

Even the people who were left out were feeling a bit off because of the thoughts of throwing in fifteen people alive into that altar but if this new method were to be followed they had nothing to lose so everything was solved.

And of course in the fifteen people's situation, hunting monsters to pay back the runes is better than going into the monster's mouth as food.

Since it wasn't that hard to collect 2 strength and 2 stamina runes in three days.

But then one person mumbled as if he felt he was mistreated.

Because then only these fifteen had to pay the runes.

"...Isn't that unfair then? 1 per person is fair"

But then Hansoo shrugged his shoulders

"But the one who will be going in is you, you know? Why would the remaining 45 pay?"

“ ... ”

The man who had spoken before shut his mouth at these words but somebody else spoke up as if he felt the greed rising up.

“But then why are we paying them if you are the one getting the runes? Isn't the one who is taking the 60 runes you in the end?”

Hansoo nodded his head.

“I don't have a hobby in free public service. I can't force you to do it. This simply a suggestion I'm giving to the fifteen people. What I suggested isn't the correct solution nor is it the perfect solution. I'm just giving a suggestion on what I think is the best solution. If you don't think you will be within the 15 people or feel pressured by this choice, I will just come back in 3 days.”

He could probably gather up 30 runes if he hunted.

The man quieted down at those words.

Because if Hansoo did leave, he would be thrown inside that altar.

“You need to at least be able to pay for the price of your life”

Another person asked as soon as Hansoo finished talking.

It was the woman who was arguing with the man from before.

“Wait! What happens if the ones we lend the runes to can’t muster up the courage to hunt and cannot pay back? Then we’re losing out on runes.”

The fifteen people were weak because they had no courage to hunt.

They might not be able to return the rune within the next 3 days.

Hansoo replied very simply.

“What are you worrying about? Just chase them down during the night and take it from them. If it still isn’t enough after that then come to me. I will compensate you”

“ ... ”

He needed to set up rules but rules that would even apply to the ones who can’t keep promises or take responsibility were not needed.

Since he hadn’t come to preach to them about social welfare.

Everyone made a scared expression at those words.



Because they realized that they couldn't laze around from now on.

But at the same time everybody made a content face.

Because it was solved without anybody dying in the end.

“There's one hour left. Let's start now.”

Everyone started to gather up the runes at those words.

.....

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 84.3

Stamina: 85.8

Agility: 42.1

Perception: 42.2

Mana: 22

Magic resistance: 13

Hansoo nodded whilst looking at his Strength and Stamina that had risen by exactly 30.

‘The balance has been destroyed but there’s nothing I can do about that’

To be honest, even though you lose out a bit it is better to balance out your stats by trading runes around.

But this was an exception.

Hansoo knew instinctively by simply looking at the Carnivorous Monster.

With his current runes, his attacks wouldn’t work properly.

He needed to get his strength over 100.

And he needed the stamina to follow up the increased strength.

Agility and perception was lacking but he would compensate for that with his experiences and battle skills.

‘It seems I’ll use a ton of these cloud snacks’

In order to go over 100, he will probably need to constantly use the cloud snack that increased his stats by 20%.

‘But it’s good that it’s an environment where I can fight alone.’

Usually, even Hansoo preferred hunting in groups.

Since in reality the hunting speed was slightly faster when he hunted with Taesoon before.

But the situation was different.

If there are others it becomes disadvantageous.

No matter how many there were, their attacks wouldn’t work against the monster and the monster will regenerate its health after devouring the people.

If that guy was released it would’ve been quite a headache.

When Hansoo was about to start heading towards the Altar in the distance, somebody approached him.

“Hansoo, Mihee. It’s been a while.”

“Sangjin...”

Mihee made a happy expression, stopped, then stole a glance at Hansoo.

Hansoo was looking at Sangjin with a impenitent expression.

“Since Taesoon isn’t here anymore, let’s be together. You too Mihee.”

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

But Sangjin didn’t give up and tried to approach him.

“Isn’t it better being with us? With friends?”

Hansoo stared at Sangjin expressionlessly.

“Once we part, we need to go separate ways”

Hansoo had no thoughts of cutting off their relationship because they didn’t want to follow him when he went into a dangerous place.

Since being weak wasn’t a sin and he had no confidence in keeping them safe.

But you can’t become friends with somebody who is always looking for chances as they follow you and then leave because things get dangerous.

This was a problem before strength came into play.

No, being stronger was actually more of a problem.

Since he can't show his back to them with trust.

There won't be a reason to see each other again.

'He's too much...'

Sangjin lost his determination from Hansoo's attitude and made a dejected expression.

Whilst that was going on, Mihee spoke to Hansoo after pondering for a moment.

"I'll stay here then."

Hansoo nodded his head.

"That's not a bad choice,"

Mihee had a bitter expression from Hansoo's words which he didn't ponder over.

Since it felt mean that he didn't realize her crush on him and had accepted her choice.

‘I want to go with him but...’

She realized as she hunted with Hansoo over a few days.

The gap was growing larger as they went on.

And Hansoo was dashing off at a crazy pace. The hunting grounds were limited and she was able to follow up because she could hunt in these places but she had no confidence in fighting against that monster no matter what.

And in the area they move to after killing that beast, it would be even harder to catch up to him.

So she had to choose around now.

Companions around her level.

If she followed Hansoo like this, and then becomes thrown off after the tutorial area then she will be alone.

If that happens then it would be better to move as a six by becoming a comrade of five people.

‘And it’s better to split up now’

She understood Hansoo's standards whilst fighting roughly.

If she ran away while fighting because things got dangerous then their relationship will be cut off. Like the five in front of her eyes.

But if they split up now, Hansoo wouldn't ruthlessly cut her off when he sees her later.

Hansoo just didn't trust in opportunists, it wasn't that he didn't didn't like somebody who knew when to stay out and when to stick around.

'Though it's a little bit regrettable'

She thought about it before for a short moment.

If she became a couple with this man then wouldn't she be able to be with him for a very long time.

Since Hansoo wasn't the type of person who would throw off his lover.

But she knew after observing for a moment.

'There is no space in Hansoo's head for a lover to fit in'

So cleanly split up now and then aim for the next chance.

‘Just wait. I haven’t given up yet.’

Mihee put down her decisions and walked towards Sangjin.

And Hansoo laughed as he watched that.

The five others might be a bit different but he could meet Mihee in the future whilst laughing.

Sangjin didn’t know how to act after watching this scene from happiness.

He was happy to the point where the depression from being rejected by Hansoo almost disappeared.

Mihee didn’t choose Hansoo but his side instead.

Didn’t this mean that his side was more trustworthy.

Mihee was extremely fast to catch onto things.

She had judged that he had better potential than Hansoo.

‘Yeah. I’m still improving. I just never had the chances to do so’



Sangjin, who had laughed out loud, thanked Taesoon who was probably in the netherworld by now.

‘Park Taesoon. I must really thank you’

A girl who he wouldn’t even be able to talk to usually had chosen him.

And in his group there were three girls even if you disregard Gangtae’s girlfriend Jisun.

He felt like he would fly threw the skies from the feeling as if he had set up a Harem.

This was all due to Taesoon.

The only reason why he was able to come this far was he filled the empty space after Taesoon had died.

Sunmi, who was standing behind Sangjin, watched him pathetically.

‘Seriously. I have to trust this retard and follow him around.’

Would Mihee have not been able to distinguish between and sports car and a trash car and came here.

She had only come here because she thought she didn't have the ability to drive around the sports car.

‘Well that’s that.’

Sunmi decided to let go of past issues.

Since Sangjin and Mihee were the strongest of the six, no, strongest of the mob.

If you don't account for Hansoo then these guys are the two tops.

And the four of them were also part of the strongest if you don't count in Hansoo.

If they travel together then they wouldn't have any difficult times for a while.

And even more so since Mihee probably learned a lot of things from Hansoo.

Whilst Sunmi was making such thoughts, Sangjin was watching Hansoo and not Mihee.

‘Am I not good enough yet’

Sangjin made a regrettable expression as he saw Hansoo's back as

he walked towards the altar.

He was trying so hard to become a friend but Hansoo didn't even care about him.

Shouldn't he at least try to do something together.

Unlike Mihee, he was simply just hitting a wall.

‘Something... I have to show him something more’

It was because he was still weak.

Since he wasn't a beauty like Mihee so he needed to show something more to Hansoo. A deciding factor.

But then at that moment somebody called Sangjin.

“Hey friend. Could we talk for a moment?”

‘...Who could it be.’

When Sangjin went over there, a few people were standing there.

‘These people are...’

These guys were the ones who were speaking aloud during the debate before.

The ones who represented the strong, and the real top rankers if you don't count for him and his friends.

"I'm called Suyeol. You're the leader of those friends over there right?"

"The leader?"

Sangjin's face blushed for a moment from the words of the thirty-something man, he then answered shyly.

"We're all friends so ehh. But for now they're listening to me well"

"Oh. Nice"

As Suyeol raised his thumb at him, Sangjin giggled from being happy.

Suyeol chuckled at Sangjin acting like that and then continued his words.

"Then are you friends with that guy called Hansoo over there too?"

Sangjin pondered for a moment and then nodded.

“Of course”

‘We’re friends. Yeah friends.’

Suyeol, who had confirmed up to that point, made a satisfied expression as he spoke.

“Yeah? Then I have something a proposal for you, shall we talk for a bit?”

He said whilst stealing a glance at Hansoo who was walking towards the altar.

Sangjin pondered for a moment but then followed him shortly after nodding his head.

## Chapter 19 – Altar (4)

---

Hansoo checked his wrist before going into the Altar.

‘Flying Cat’s Marble’

Something that healed a small amount of health when consumed.

It was something that he had collected diligently while hunting for a few days and didn’t really heal injuries but it was still helpful.

Since every artifact’s effect differed on how and when you used it.

Hansoo put the marbles in a leather band that he tied on to his wrist.

If you pressed onto the pouch on the band made of goblin leather, than one marble would pop out.

Since there was no time to take it out from around his waist during a critical situation so he needed to make something like this.

Hansoo, who had even sharpened the tip of the needle, looked at the bottom of the Altar.

Grrrrrrrrr!

Boom. Boom.

The Carnivorous Beast was smashing the insides of the Altar as if it was about to go crazy from hunger.

‘Hmm. Goblin poison won’t even work’

Poison would work since its Physical and Magic resistances were low but if you take into account of its regeneration speed than it was practically useless.

It would be much better to just smear on some Land Mermaid’s Paralysis poison and then just stab it into where the nerves were gathered.

Hansoo looked down whilst putting a cloud snack up to this mouth after he squeezed the shampoo bottle and smeared a large amount of the paralysis poison on the needle.

And then he proceeded to inhale all the smoke that came out of it into his body.

‘It’s really been a while. Though it’s really strong’

As the smoke swirled into his body, he felt the number of runes that determined the laws on his body skyrocket.

84. 85. 86...

And when it went over 100, a change occurred in Hansoo's body that hadn't appeared before.



Crack Crack

Hansoo nodded as he felt the change.

‘Good. I’ve gone to the next stage’

Hansoo checked his current condition.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength(Colorless): 0.01% (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

Stamina(Colorless): 0.01% (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

Agility: 50.5 (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

Perception: 50.6 (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

Mana 26.4 (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

Magic resistance 15.6 (Maniac’s Cloud Snack: +20%)

‘It’s been done’

A new energy, that was different from what had existed before, swirled throughout his body.

They show it in numbers in order to make it easy for people to understand in the beginning in the Tutorial but the runes were actually shown in a progressive way.

Like experience.

It said it was colorless but an aura that emitted a faint light twirled around Hansoo's body.

When a color becomes integrated like that then it truly becomes the Otherworld's rune from that point on.

In one sense, what they had to do was similar.

Just like how one got strong when the number of runes went up, when the percentage rose they would naturally get strong.

The fact that you needed to collect runes to become strong was the same.

If there was a difference then it was that when you hit 100%, then your rune will change into the rune of next stage.

From colorless to red, from red to orange, from orange to yellow and so on.

It rose stage by stage.

And every time your rune increased by a stage, you gained a large benefit.

There was only a very small difference between normal rune 99.9 and colorless rune 0.01% but there is a large gap in between.

Since the aura of activating the rune had grown by a stage.

‘Good’

You needed at least this much in order to get through his defenses.

Since at a glance you could see that it was also using an aura of an colorless rune.

The strength of the monster could be felt much closer when he saw it from above.

‘As I would expect, Kwang Goonju. He wasn’t quite sane but he was still extraordinary’

Even if he had used his trait and skills, even if he had become half a corpse, the fact that he killed that thing was unbelievable.

That thing was something you will only see around the colorless area, which will become the background for the 2nd tutorial stage, and only around the mid-late stage of it.

In conclusion, it was not something that would come out in the 1st tutorial stage.

And it was even more burdensome to him since he couldn't use his trait and skills.

‘Tsk. I would’ve crushed it to bits if I just learned something around a Troll’s Essence’

But he also had a lot of expectations.

Even he didn't know what would come out of the hidden piece after he clears it.

Since the only person he knew who cleared this was only Kwang Goonju.

Eres, Gangtae and Keldian all failed.

So he didn't know what would come out but one thing was certain.

That this damnable world kept pushing people around but the reward itself was quite clear.

The harder and more impossible something seems the better the reward will be.

And this was a hidden piece that only one person had succeeded in before.

There was no way something scrubby would come out.

‘It would be a jackpot if a Numbering Artifact or Skill would come out’

Double Numbering, no, even a triple Numbering would be a jackpot.

‘Let’s go’

Hansoo, who had finished his preparations, inserted a Flying Cat’s Marble into his cheeks and jumped down ruthlessly with a cloud snack in his mouth.

The stamina depletion would start now anyways, if you take into account for the marble’s regeneration speed then it would be helpful to go in biting onto it.

Kuaaaaaahhh!

And soon the giant beast’s roar that was filled with rage blew out from the inside of the altar.

.....

Kuahhhh!

Sangjin gulped as he heard the roaring cries from afar.

Because it felt like his legs would shake just from the noise.

It wasn't a problem with strength but rather a problem of breed.

A cry from a predator created to eat humans was shaking their souls.

‘So he’s fighting one on one against that thing...’

The feeling of wanting to become like Hansoo and jealously, and the wanting of being accepted by Hansoo mixed around and filled his head.

And that acted as inertia and helped Sangjin’s shaking legs to move.

‘Yeah. If I succeed this then Hansoo wouldn’t be able to ignore me anymore’

Then Sangjin looked behind him.

And behind there were 10 people whom he was speaking to

before gathered there.

Suyeol, who was standing in the front, made a slightly fed up expression for a moment but then laughed as he looked at Sangjin

“It’s good that you chose not to bring your friends right? Your friends could’ve been in danger”

Sangjin shook his head.

“You’re right. I haven’t thought of your words. That Hansoo could be danger right now.

And then Sangjin remembered that happened before.

Suyeol and Sangjin shared a lot of words.

And there was a question that Suyeol asked.

<We’re going to act together in the future which means someone strong like Hansoo is definitely needed. But there is something i’m worried about... isn’t this work extremely dangerous to Hansoo?>

And when he thought of it after hearing that question, there was some logic into it.

There was a similar case before.

Hansoo pushed them back when he went to really dangerous places.

And the fact that he wanted to go alone this time meant that it was really dangerous.

And he had even asked for extra runes.

Hansoo wasn't a type to lie just in order to scam some runes.

Which meant it was an enemy that he needed at least that amount of runes to go up against.

'Yeah. Even if it's Hansoo, it doesn't make sense that he will have the upper hand against that monster'

Sangjin nodded as he answered.

<Yeah. The enemy this time around would be hard even for Hansoo>

Suyeol laughed at those words as he spoke

<Yeah? Then shouldn't we help?>

<Huh?>



<Think logically. How could we be at a disadvantage when we have the numbers? No matter how weak we are we can at least be a meat shield or distractors.>

Sangjin nodded at those words.

Like Hansoo said before, it was better the more numbers you had.

The only time numbers would be disadvantageous is when things aren't clear and they are wandering around, the people here were the strongest of the 60.

They would be of great help even if they acted like meat shields.

Suyeol looked at Sangjin, who was making a confused expression, as he spoke.

<As I see it, that friend is trying to hard to monopolize everything or something>

<...monopolize?>

And then Sangjin made a slightly dejected face as he nodded.

There is definitely a possibility that that was the case.

It was like that in the train station and even on the first night Hansoo hadn't shared anything he had earned himself.

He was pretending to hand out trivial things such as runes, that could be gathered easily, while monopolizing all the good stuff himself.

<There is a possibility he's doing that>

<Right? And that's what I was wondering, we should look for an opportunity and help.>

<Huh?>

<From our perspective if that Hansoo guy dies it would be a great loss. If that friend got greedy and then dies just like that it would be too regrettable>

<Hmm.. but wouldn't it be too dangerous?>

As Sangjin remembered the clip he saw earlier and made an astringent face, Suyeol beat his chest.

<Look. The guy named Hansoo went in alone. What does that mean? It means he went in though it's dangerous because it's doable yeah?>

<Ah...>

<We just need to give a little bit of help. Look how strong we are currently. We might not be of a lot of help but wouldn't you be.>

Sangjin nodded at those words.

<Then I'll go call my friends>

But then Suyeol shook his head.

<No no. We need to hurry. Your friend is already down there. And when we're giving help even a second is precious. Do you really want to bring your friends and come later?>

Sangjin shook his heads at those words.

If Hansoo were to fall in danger before then he would lose an important chance.

'Yeah, If I help this time... then Hansoo wouldn't be able to ignore me>

“What are you thinking about? Let's follow him up.”

“Ah.. yes...”

Sangjin nodded his head and then headed towards the top of the

Altar and Suyeol grinned at that Sangjin.

# Chapter 20 – Altar (5)

---

<Racial Skill>

A skill that a race has ever since they are born.

There were two racial skills that the Carnivorous Beast in front of him could use.

<Fear> and <Devour>

It would paralyze the prey with fear and then eat it with devour to quickly regenerate its health.

The fear which contains the killing intent of the predator was a skill in itself.

Kuahhh!

The Carnivorous Beast's fear rumbled around the insides of the Altar.

The Fear was basically affected by the individual's mentality.

And to Hansoo who had fought with the Abyss's top rank devils, such a thing like fear was child's play.

But even then it was still a skill.

His body was honest so Hansoo's body momentarily stopped and in that small instant the front legs flew in aggressively.

But at this moment the Magic resistance showed its might.

Hansoo dodged the leg of the beast with only a hair's length and then then ruthlessly stabbed whilst its guard was down.

It was the first time fighting this here it was rather common if you go beyond the tutorial.

‘Anyways, it's good that it's not fully grown yet’

If this thing grew more and reached 20m then it can use another Racial Skill, <Vampric Swamp>.

As it implied, it constantly drained the blood of the nearby lifeforms.

If it even had this, Hansoo probably wouldn't have come in.

Since you would become a mummy and die a very quick death if you didn't have magic and physical resistances.

But even this much wasn't easy to go against though possible.

‘Second location of Primary Nerves between the joints.’

Hansoo, after applying some paralysis poison on the tip, strained all his muscles and stabbed between the joints ruthlessly.

Kududuk

Kuaaak!

Due to its very thick shell there was a moment of resistance but Hansoo's strength which had reached the colorless rune stage plus his ability to find weak points and the hardness of the needle made it so that holes started appearing on the black shell.

Due to its enormous size, even when Hansoo shoved in a 1m long needle it went in for a long while.

‘A little bit more’

Though he had penetrated the skin but there is no point if he doesn't reach the goal point.

Since the injury made from the needle was basically the same as a hole where the hairs grew out of.

He needed to hit the pinpoint.



Kachak

‘It’s done!’

Hansoo, who had felt the needle’s tip penetrate the primary nerve, quickly pulled it out.

Stabbing it in was important but taking out was also important.

Since if you didn’t pull this out on the right time then you will get ravaged by the beast’s outrage whilst the needle was still in its body.

Kuahhhh!

As he expected, the beast which had felt extreme pain and stopped for a moment from paralysis started smashing the ground in order to beat down Hansoo.

Boooom!

But it’s already been a long time since Hansoo moved away from that location.

The sound of the monster’s breath and the sound of bones cracking entered Hansoo’s ears constantly.

And at the same time Hansoo's eyes looked over its body.

The images of its squirming muscles, the way the tail held balance and the contraction of its thigh muscles came into Hansoo's head and created a three dimensional image of the monster.

As the image of the monster came into his head, his experience and knowledge merged with it.

All of this happened in an instant.

And as this happened, the next movement of the monster could be seen on Hansoo's eyes.

It wasn't a trait, martial ability or a skill.

It was simply an god-like ability developed from an immeasurable amount of battle experience and knowledge.

Since Hansoo could only learn seven skills, the only way for this trait to shine was to become strong in a different way than others.

And because of that, unlike the strong people who climbed relatively easily, he had to go through many more times worth of battles and struggles in order to climb up slowly.

But this had made him stronger after.

Since being able to read the enemy and knowing their next move was an overwhelming advantage.

Well most high level adventurers could do this to an extent but Hansoo was unique even out of these people.

<Battle Foresight! I shall give it a name! Calling it Battle Foresight! From now on!>

<Please don't call it that Gangtae, it's embarrassing>

Hansoo, who had thought of the past situations with Gangtae, overcome his extreme lack of perception and agility through reading ahead and pushed the beast back.

Boom

‘He’s still not that easy’

Hansoo barely dodged another attack as he stabbed the needle again.

Puk. Pukpuk.

The needle which had entered its body in an instant, cut off part of the nerve cell cluster on his skin.

It would now have trouble sensing his movements through the vibrations in the air.

From one angle it would seem like that the fight was very one sided but Hansoo’s wasn’t in much of an ease.

There was nothing like hp in this world.

In other words, if your magic and physical resistances are equal than being larger would be a huge advantage.

A human body like his would get shredded even if an attack were to skitch them.

And because of that the high level adventurers basically stacked a

lot of magic and physical resistances on their body.

And these high level adventures who had stacked these would show a miracle like view where they receive the blow of a monstrous beast with just their human bodies.

But you couldn't gain those runes or items in the tutorial area so you needed to dodge every attack.

If he hadn't raised his strength and stamina, he would've gotten thrown off from exhaustion whilst attacking the monster.

Hansoo quickly pulled out a flying cat's marble as he stabbed the shampoo bottle tied onto his waist.

Since he had no leisure to squeeze it out with this hands.

## Squirt

As the paralysis poison came out smeared onto the needle, Hansoo quickly stabbed it again.

Tudududk

It's regeneration speed had been slowing down at an extreme rate as if it used all the materials it had stored.

The nerves which had been recovering despite being broken by the needle and melting from the paralysis poison had stopped regenerating at a point.

And to prove that, it's movements had become rigid and its senses had dulled.

‘As I expected, fighting it inside the altar is the answer’

If he had fought this while it ate humans after escaping the altar, it would've been much more tiring.

Since the needle's area of damage was small, eating one human can heal the damaged nerves for quite a while.

And if that happened even he would have to choose a different tactic.

But if this kept going on, he can lay the monster on the ground and put a hole in his heart before his stamina depleted.

‘Let's smoke another one first’

As the effect of the cloud snack disappeared, Hansoo quickly bit into the eighth cloud snack and then jumped back in to resume the fight.

But at this moment something unexpected happened

“Hansoo! I came to help!”

‘Haha. Look at this thing’

Hansoo chuckled as he heard the voice that came down from the top of the altar.

.....

Suyeol made a fed up expression after watching Hansoo for a while from above.

‘Isn’t this guy just a monster’s spawn’

A physical difference so large that one hit would’ve turned him into a bloody mess.

But Hansoo hadn’t received a single hit and stuck to the monster like a storm and then proceeded to attack in a one-sided fight.



And he was making the monster into a bee's hive with that needle.

‘That bitch. Did he do this to scam us of runes?’

This thought was very normal because the fight seems like that he didn't lack strength or stamina at all.

Since Hansoo looked very laid back in their eyes.

He was so laid back that he was fighting the battle whilst smoking a cigarette one at a time.

So they reassured themselves.

‘It won't be dangerous to help out a little bit down there’

They couldn't go down because they were scared from the power of the Carnivorous beast but it seemed like its movements had slowed down a lot.

And wasn't Hansoo in front of them.

Hansoo was dodging the attacks with ease with a speed that was not that much slower than theirs.

So they confirmed in an instant.

‘He’s trying to monopolize it’

As they saw him fight it with such ease, it was very possible that he felt greed for monopolizing it.

Suyeol’s insides twisted and turned.

He couldn’t even imagine what kind of a reward would come out if you killed that thing.

No, even if the reward wasn’t good a lot of runes would come out

‘As I thought... We have to kill him today. Greedy bitch’

The carnivorous beast was obvious but killing Hansoo would result in a lot of runes.

Since the stronger someone was, the more runes they would drop.

No, he was actually jealous of the items that guy had.

And Suyeol definitely did not want to be trapped in the same space as that guy.

It was like being with a tiger whose stomach was full and not a

human.

His personality didn't seem that bad usually but no matter how timid a tiger is, you cannot live with it.

Suyeol felt more pressure from Hansoo than from the Carnivorous beast.

The beast was trapped in the altar but that guy was spreading his arms everywhere.

And in that moment the scene from the first night came up in Suyeol's head.

‘Uuk’

He suppressed the curses that were coming up his throat and then glanced at the guy next to him.

That guy called Sangjin.

‘Stupid bastard. This is why you gotta have good friends’

He had struck up a conversation just in case he could squeeze out information about that guy called Hansoo but the talk went way too smoothly.

If that guy called Hansoo wasn't much stronger then he didn't really want to come this far but after hearing it was actually a rather close competition.

Then there is a chance for a third person to take everything whilst these guys fight.

And he had agreed to a plan to kill his friend this easily.

'If I take care of this guy then everything becomes clean'

After using this guy as a bait in order to divert the beast's eyes he would just simply take care of everyone once they are tired.

If he got rid of this guy and Hansoo then only five of their friends remain.

And then he could crush them with numbers.

'Haa. That girl'

Whilst Suyeol was gulping from the thoughts of Mihee, Sangjin, who was watching the fight below, shouted.

"It looked like the beast has become slower than Hansoo so let's go down!"

At these words they could see that the beast, who was originally much faster than Hansoo, had slowed down to the point where he was much slower than Hansoo.

If the beast had slowed down this much, and if Hansoo fought on the front these guys could probably dodge the attacks somewhat.

“Let’s go down”

Whilst they were running down after Suyeol’s words from the top of the altar on the stairways that connected the top and the bottom, Sangjin made an unexpected action.

“Hansoo! I came to help!”

As Sangjin shouted before going down, Suyeol was flustered as he cursed inwardly.

‘This retarded bastard’

As he saw, Hansoo couldn’t spread his awareness to other places due to him and the monster fighting each other with everything they’ve got.

He thought he could’ve used the element of surprise attack but if they shout from up above like this wouldn’t Hansoo be aware of this side.

But it was too late to become soft.

And when he saw the fight, there wasn't much change.

‘Yeah. It probably isn't the time to care about other things’

Since the beast was getting pushed back it couldn't pay attention to things like them and since Hansoo probably thinks that they are backup he probably thinks that he doesn't need to care.

‘Good. Good.’

Suyeol slowly walked down as he looked downwards.

The altar was very tall to the point where it reached 30~40m high.

The beast was occupied fighting Hansoo that it hadn't been able to pay any attention to them who had already came down to the 10m height.

Suyeol, who was walking down, stopped and talked as he turned around.

“How about we wait here awhile? If we go in now we might become a nuisance.”

At those words, everybody nodded as if they were waiting for it.

But at that moment a huge amount of fear exploded from below.

Kuuuuuuuaaaaangg!

As the fear that blew out from below bounced off the insides of the altar and got amplified, it exploded upwards as it hit everyone's ears.

Shake

“Kuhuk!”

The power of the fear that was amplified from the altar's structure was much more different.

The 11 had expected the fear to be like what they heard from the outside so they were shaking around without being able to catch their balance.

“Huuuak!”

But these guys were one of the stronger people.

Since they had put up the number of runes, they weren't around the level where they would all fall from just a fear.

“Wow... Be almost got wrecked”

While one of them was still shaking as if he couldn't catch his balance yet, something unexpected happened.

As if something ran up the stairs like a tank charging from the front.



Kudududududk

“Uuk!”

“Uaaaaak!”

It probably wouldn't have worked but they were all in a state where their balances were off from the unexpected attack.

They couldn't hold onto the thin stairs and had all fallen after being hit by something.

Bududuk

“Kuak!”

Their legs didn't break since they barely caught their balance due to their increased perception and agility but they couldn't clear up their mentality for a while after falling from a height of 10m.

Suyeol then felt a chill as he looked at one corner.

Krrrrrrrrrr

The beast was drooling while staring at them.

While blocking the entrance to the stairs above.

And even had an happy expression.

Suyeol realized something from that expression.

‘Fuck... this bitch. It wasn’t that it didn’t know that we were approaching it’

It wasn’t that the monster didn’t know.

It feigned its ignorance and waited until they came into the range of his fear perfectly

‘Kang Hansoo this bitch. He should’ve told us something like this earlier!’

Hansoo probably knew all about this.

How could he not tell them about this.

No, that wasn’t the important part currently.

‘Fuck... what made us all fall?’

Suyeol hurriedly looked up.

And then made a dumbfounded expression as he saw Sangjin run up the stairs crazily while covering his ears.

‘Did that dumbass just...’

It seems he had been blocking his ears alone.

And that was the reason why he was somewhat immune to the fear.

The guy who was pretty much in normal shape had charged up from the front as he pushed them off.

They had no way of countering it when they were pushed back in terms of stats and had even lost their balance.

‘Is that crazy bastard trying to run away alone?’

Suyeol felt like his soul was about to escape his body but he quickly regained his senses.

There wasn’t much of a problem because he was going to fight

with Hansoo anyway.

If Hansoo fought from the front and they support from the back, it will still go according to his plans.

Suyeol shouted loudly as he moved around slowly.

“Hey! I came to help! Let’s combine our strengths and end it quickly!”

And then a voice from above, the top of the stairs where they had come from, was heard.

“Why should I?”

And then the 10 looked up at the sky in panic.

‘...When did he get there’

Hansoo, who was fighting the beast like a maniac just until then, had already climbed up that far.

To the entrance of the altar at the top.

Suyeol desperately shouted.

“What are you talking about? To not kill something that you

almost killed already?”

And then Hansoo shook his head.

“I was about to but it failed. Because of you guys. Now his health is going to regenerate.”

The beast’s attack was something that even he was barely dodging.

These guys had no possibility of dodging.

And if that happened he would devour everyone below, recover his health instantly and cause Hansoo to fall behind on stamina.

Why would he fight in such a situation.

The beast goes for the weaker ones first.

If guys like these guys come he could just simply go out and come back in.

No, it would be easier. Since the ground would be littered with runes.

‘Though there was something I didn’t expect’

Whilst Hansoo was watching somebody outside the altar, Suyeol, who had become desperate, shouted out.

“You... You maniac! Then isn't it bad for you too! If this guy breaks the altar apart after getting healed...”

“I think it'll be alright”

“...what?”

“Didn't you guys come into become sacrifices on your own accord? I will send praises for your samaritanism”

“Fuck...”

They understood the situation finally.

That there was enough sacrifices inside the altar to make the beast fall asleep.

Hansoo had earned 24 hours.

Hansoo could just start all over tomorrow after exiting and sleeping for a day.

He would be able to defeat a foe a second time whom he had already defeated once.

Grrrrrrrr

Suyeol made a expression filled with despair as he looked at the beast slowly approaching him.

And then the beast ruthlessly charged at the 10 of them.

Grrrrrrrr!

“Uaaaak!”

“Aaak!”

“Kyaaak!”

And soon the altar was filled with roars, screams and plosives.

.....

“Hoo.”

Hansoo, who had bit on the cloud snack that he was smoking before, slowly walked up the rest of the stairs after hearing the screams that came down from below expressionlessly.

And he had met with Sangjin who was waiting at the top



expressionlessly with the look of stupidity from before nowhere be to seen.

Hansoo, who had gazed at that Sangjin, chuckled as he opened his mouth.

“Why did you do that?”

And Sanjin’s eyes became deeper at those words.

Then soon after he opened his mouth.

“Because I finally realized what I needed to do in order to be of a help to you”

Sangjin mumbled as he listened to the screams of the people whom he had thrown in.

## Chapter 21 – Altar (6)

---

Hansoo, who was smoking on the cloud snack, opened his mouth while he looked at Sangjin.

“What do you seek for?”

Hansoo could vaguely guess.

That this guy had killed those guys for him instead.

If he had the thoughts of getting rid of him then he could've just pushed them in while he was busy fighting the beast.

But Sangjin had helped in a way that he could survive.

By warning him with a shout from above and acting after the beast's movements had slowed down.

‘Hoo’

Sangjin breathed in and out as he looked at Hansoo.

He had been thinking Hansoo only until now.

‘I want to follow Hansoo’

This was clear.

This had sprung up from three things: Longing, envy and a pursuit for safety.

But he didn't know what exactly would happen from now.

But he thought he couldn't be with Hansoo because he was weak and because of this he thought that he just needed to become stronger.

But whilst he was pondering over this, Suyeol had approached him.

When Sangjin saw Suyeol and his friends approach him he thought of something.

That this was a trap in order to bring harm to Hansoo.

But he followed just to see hear their story.

If they crossed the line he was going to beat them down.

It was clear that he was the strongest after Hansoo and he had created a large gap between him and the others.

And so he had thought that he could become like Hansoo.

Maybe not as much as Hansoo but he thought that he could at least beat around 10 people.

But this was a very big misunderstanding.

There only a single number between him and Hansoo in ranking but there was a gap between them that could not be caught up and smashing down a large group was something only Hansoo could do.

He understood the moment he got surrounded by the ten people.

That he could not beat them.

But he could not deject them here.

Then they will definitely kill him in a manner so that Hansoo wouldn't notice.

From the way they were talking it seemed like that they were going to go hit Hansoo from the back no matter what happened.

Kill him or take him alive then kill Hansoo with him there.

There were only two options.

So he followed.

Since he couldn't die on that spot.

They had told him to try going to his friends but if he had turned around in that situation then he probably would've been stabbed from behind at that spot.

Sangjin thought of countless things whilst he walked.

How he would get out of this situation.

The anxiousness of possibly dying had calmed down as he walked with the ten.

The thought of him having become a lot stronger had been replaced with the thoughts of his lack of strength.

These guys were scared of Hansoo so they couldn't act out in the front and had stayed behind him.

While they were throwing empty threats at them straightforwardly.

He had to look good in Hansoo's eyes but if he couldn't even take care of these ten guys what could he do.

His head started spinning at a crazy rate while in was in danger.

And at the same time he, who had seemed very big, started to look smaller and something became clear to him.

Very very clear.

‘There is no way that I can be with Hansoo by becoming strong independently.’

The thought of being approved after becoming strong and then following him was arrogant in itself.

And the thought of being approved after leading a large group was the same.

He realized after calming down and judging himself objectively.

That no matter how hard he struggled alone or even with a bunch of scrubs, the gap between Hansoo would only become wider.

No, it was likely that he will become even weaker by being near weaker people.

And at the same time longing, envy and admiration had disappeared and a different mindset had risen up.

That jealousy or longing was something that he should have only when he had the leisure to.

The current him was in no state to do so.

If he acted arrogantly just because he got a little bit stronger and get attacked by a mob then he would just get killed.

He had to set somebody faster than him in front of him as the goal and chase them zealously.

When his thoughts had cleared up, one thing became clear.

That he wasn't in the situation to question a lot of things.

He just had to catch up while he was still within his eyesight.

He will approve of me if I become strong... he had been looking at this situation in a very laid back manner.

‘But how?’

He had already lost his chance.

He had to prove his worthiness in order to catch up to him.

And at that moment he saw Suyeol and the others who were

walking next to him.

‘Aha. This is it.’

Hansoo’s existence was fear in itself but at the same time he was a very tempting existence which dropped numerous artifacts and ruins along with his death.

Like a tiger which was scary to no extent but drops a very tempting skin upon death.

People who would want to send Hansoo into traps like these would probably keep coming up.

If they don’t die then they will bother him without giving up.

So he realized.

How he could get approved by Hansoo.

How he could help Hansoo.

“Hansoo. Use me”

“Hmm”

Hansoo showed a conspicuous color as he gazed at Sangjin.



And then Sangjin bit down on his teeth inwardly.

‘I’ve had the wrong thoughts until now’

Since he had Hansoo were running towards the same goal, he thought that they could become acquaintances.

Because he was misled by useless thoughts and emotions he didn’t realize the main point and thought that he just needed to become strong.

But he was wrong.

He and Hansoo had different goals from the start.

While he was looking out to survive day by day, Hansoo was running while looking at something in.

the distance without stopping.

While they were struggling in order to survive and become stronger, he was acting with his personal rules.

From dividing runes perfectly from the start to every little detail.

He had to keep moving but he didn’t hurry and always followed

the things he had to.

The moment he realized this was when he didn't kill Taesoon and his friends and just left them alive.

There was no such thing as being disabled here.

If you don't cut off their lifeline then they could come back even higher health but even so he had left them alive and created future troubles.

Even though it would've been more convenient to take their runes after killing them.

And it was like that on the altar too.

Though it would've been a piece of cake for Hansoo to just take the runes from them, he had given them the options.

Sangjin, who had pondered his actions for a while, realized it finally.

That Hansoo was ignoring the acts which would bring him instantaneous rewards because he was looking at something in the distance.

Though it would be of benefit to becoming stronger in the moment, he knew that it would bring harm to what he wanted to

accomplish.

Sangjin didn't know if this was because of his psychic powers or because he was smart.

But once he figured this out, one thing became clear.

The way he could become useful to Hansoo.

“I don't know why you don't kill people. But as I see it, it isn't that you don't kill them because you don't want to kill them right?”

Even monkeys would realize it.

If he could do that much then killing was a piece of cake.

Which meant there was another reason why Hansoo didn't kill.

And by leaving them behind, it seemed like that he just needed to not dirty his hands.

Sangjin spoke as he looked at Hansoo.

“Use me. I will dirty my hands instead of you. But then take me with you. No, allow me to follow you”

Hansoo always acted with a clear goal.

But because he looked at things on the long term, it was likely that he needed to endure things that grabbed onto his ankles momentarily.

And in that moment, he could do things instead of Hansoo.

Like a cleans who cleans after Hansoo so he could focus on his own goals.

Since he had already threw away his first chances, this was the only chance for him to be accepted by him.

“I could only use a method that put you in danger as well because I was weak but I can make sure that there won’t be a time where I even get close to your line”

Hansoo was special.

There will definitely be guys who will be jealous of and envy Hansoo and block his path.

And out of those people, there will be guys which Hansoo would leave alone because of this personal rules and his goals.

He was willing to thoroughly erase those guys.

So Hansoo can focus on his own goals.

And for that he will become strong by following Hansoo around.

Since he, who had followed him for a few days, had become the strongest after Hansoo.

By helping Hansoo to run faster, he, who is also following Hansoo, would also become faster.

And if he had another small wish he wanted to find out what Hansoo's goals were.

But this would be completed naturally if he stuck by Hansoo and helped him.

Hansoo, who had been listening to his story, chuckled.

“Even if I say yes, what would you if it's a situation where you cannot follow? For example getting pushed off forcefully”

Then Sangjin's expression froze.

He thought that he was being abandoned.

But his thoughts changed after seeing Hansoo who was smiling in amusement.

‘...there must be something in the 2nd tutorial’

He didn’t know what but he had seen it with his psychic powers.

That they would forcibly be separated in the 2nd tutorial area.

Sangjin clenched his teeth.

“Then... I will become stronger and come find you. Let’s at least go back to our old relationship.”

Hansoo laughed as he responded.

“Go down”

‘Dammit, is it not possible?’

Sangjin bit his teeth for a moment and then shouted loudly.

“Kang Hansoo! Can’t a person can make a mistake once in awhile! I had to make a choose something I didn’t have a choice against because I was weak but I’m just starting! Fuck just try using me! And if I’m still useless then you can leave me behind!”

He wasn’t worthy enough.

He wasn't enough until now and he wasn't still enough.

But he gained another chance he had the confidence to do better.

‘Fuck. Just once! Please!’

Hansoo threw down the cloud snack which he had finished smoking and then spoke whilst looking at Sangjin.

“Don't misunderstand things. Come here tomorrow around one. I would have killed that thing below by then”

“Huh?”

“And then take all the runes that are below. You killed those 10 so you should take them. Well. Let's see each other later with smiles on our faces”

Sangjin's expression became bright at those words.

And Hansoo mumbled inwardly as he looked at that Sangjin.

‘Hmm.. though it's a little awkward’

Hansoo thought of what he and Eres talked about in the past.

<You will be acting in a place full of sunshine from now on. But

when that happens there will be restrictions. When you return to the past, you will be heading for a goal because of a goal but run into an ironic situation where your ankles will be caught.>

Hansoo nodded at those words.

Since that was always Eres' problem.

And because of Eres, there existed cleaners.

<Punishers>

No, it was a necessity that every sovereign had even if they weren't Eres.

People who would dirty their hands instead of the sovereign.

And people who would help their owner head towards their goal.

And Eres looked at Hansoo as he spoke.

<To prepare for such a situation, make some Punishers. Those you would move instead of you>

'I was actually going to Enbi Arin but... I will see first'

He would need to use the cloud snack again in order to kill the



Carnivorous beast.

But it didn't seem like much of a loss.

Since it seems that a lot of things changed in a small moment.

'It's very cheap if it's just some runes and cloud snacks'

The cloud snack was just something that worked on the normal runes anyway.

It didn't work on the colorless runes so he couldn't use it for that long.

Of course he didn't know how far he could trust Sangjin.

When the second tutorial begins than everyone here would be forcibly separated around the second tutorial area and they would not know when they would meet again.

His mind might have changed by the time they meet again.

But investments were always something like this.

An investment of a few runes and eight cloud snacks in order to attain a chance of getting a decent Punisher was a very good investment.

‘Well. If it fails then there’s nothing I can do about that’

If that happened he could just follow his original plans.

Hansoo, after looking at Sangjin who was going down, started to regenerate his health.

.....

Kudududk

Hansoo cut off the Carnivorous beast's life as he ruthlessly stabbed the needle into its heart.

Kuuuhhhh...

It let out a last cry as it fell down.

He had went hunting and had already experience him so he only needed to smoke six of them to kill it.

The carnivorous beast didn't drop any runes as if it wasn't designed to be killed.

The floor was littered with the runes of the guys who had died yesterday but Hansoo didn't even take a glance at them as he started to walk towards a corner of the Altar.

The requirements of the Hidden piece was simple in some ways.

To kill the monster before it destroyed the Altar and jumped out.

For it to come out it needed to destroy the Altar but in that instant the chance of attaining the hidden piece disappears.

Which meant that if you wanted to kill him you needed to kill it

inside the Altar where his fears got amplified.

‘It’s seriously not something that was designed for somebody to kill’

Hansoo went into the room in the corner of the Altar that Kwang Goonju had told him jokingly in the past.

And in the middle of the room there was a single artifact.

‘It’s not a skill but...’

He wasn’t that disappointed, if he were to compare an artifact and a skill of the same quality then the artifact was more useful despite his trait.

If it was useful to a point.

‘Let’s see what they give’

Hansoo had a bit of anticipation as he walked to the middle of the pedestal.

And Hansoo’s face, which did not get shocked easily, started to tremble at a minute level.

“...Ring of the Vampire King Nurmaha.”

Solo ranking <9>

The strongest artifact which represented Kwang Goonju.

‘Kwang Goonju this guy. I wondered where he had obtained this...’

Hansoo sighed as he saw this.

# Chapter 22 – Sky Road (1)

---

<Numbering Series>

The level of artifacts all differed.

There were a lot of different bases to judge but the most important one was color.

What kind of energy it can absorb.

It could be an artifact that shows its full potential only if it uses the colorless energy in the colorless area or it could be an artifact that only shows its full potential if it uses the red area or energy of the blue area which came after the red area.

Of course an artifact using a higher quality energy would be of a higher level so the level of the artifact changed with the color as the base.

Colorless artifact, Red artifact and so on...

Once you separate them into these levels they are further split up into different levels.

Unless it's an amazing artifact there was no way for it to be worth more than the artifact of a higher color.

The high quality colorless artifacts were inferior to the low quality red artifacts.

So even if you were somebody who flew around the area you were at you needed to slowly increase the standards of your artifact in the middle area and then go over.

Since the weapons from the previous stage didn't really work very well in the next stage.

But sometimes, very unique artifacts came out.

Growing Artifact.

Their uniqueness was that they went through growth.

Just like an adventurer absorbing runes and changing their tune from colorless to red and to orange, the artifact also absorbed something and improved its color.

Not every Growing Artifact was expensive

If it wasn't as good as other artifacts despite you investing a lot into and growing it than it was better to just find a decent weapon the middle stage before going to the next stage

But of cause Growing Artifacts also had different levels.

The child of a dragon would be stronger than others at the age of one and be stronger than others at the age of ten, this gap would only get larger as they grew up.

The Growing artifacts that improved like this and always stayed at the top were called <Numbering Series>

It was sometimes called <Draconic Series> because it grew like a dragon, these were the strongest artifacts that even surpassed artifacts on higher levels of color.

From number 1 to 999.

999 items that the Manoros Clan, which were one of the nine pillars, had judged and chosen out with strictly, the strongest items of the ones found so far.

It didn't care whether it was a ring, an armor or a weapon.

You put them in a line and then give them a number.

From rank 1 to 9 were solo numbering.

10 to 99 was double numbering.

100 to 999 was triple numbering.



These artifacts were usually famous by themselves but they would get even more famous depending on who used them.

Because even if a weakling got lucky and obtained these, these would eventually fall into the hands of the strong.

It was harder and more important to keep the artifacts of the otherworld than obtaining them.

If you carry around an artifact too good for you than you lose both your life and the artifact.

And solo numbering <9>, <Nurmaha's Ring> was one of the strongest artifacts that got famous because of Kwang Goonju and something that had made him famous.

Nicknamed [Absolute Ring].

‘Kwang Goonju this guy. I wondered where he had obtained this...’

It was extremely hard to obtain but it wasn't that only one existed because it was a Numbering series

Like how despite the strength of a dragon, there wasn't only one of them.

And that was the reason when the people saw Kwang Goonju

cause a massacre they tried to find the ring in a manner that would've flipped the Otherworld upside down.

Since the eight powers of the ring that came out when people were merely sketched by it turned them into rags

And the high ranker's weren't an exception to this

But this thing that could not be found anywhere was actually found here.

'Well yeah. If only Kwang Goonju had cleared this mission it's correct that it's something that cannot be obtained anywhere else'

The tutorial area couldn't be entered unless it was at this moment. There was a reason why the adventurers could not find it even if they wanted to.

'Very good'

This place did not reward people because you cleared a hard objective.

Since something that is hard to a weak person is easier than anything to somebody who is strong.

The best rewards come out when a weak person clears an objective that seems impossible at that level.

Just like the hidden piece where Hansoo killed the Carnivorous Beast.

He had expected something like this to an extent. That the artifact he gained here was not something that could be easily thrown out in any of the colored regions.

But who would've expected a Solo Numbering to come out.

As soon as Hansoo put on the ring the ring shrunk to fit the size of Hansoo's finger.

<Nurmaha's Ring>

A Growing Artifact that contained eight powers.

It absorbed runes and grewed, and every time it rose a level in color it would unlock another power.

The current Nurmaha's ring was a colorless artifact

And because of that there was only one power unlocked.

But Hansoo made a satisfied smile.

'This is it'

The first power. <Power Destruction>

It wasn't simply a dispel magic that got rid of skills.

It was an ability that could nullify anything from passive skills to even an individual's trait.

Of course it wasn't that the person who got smacked would become a traitless person and lose tons of mana.

The Otherworld wasn't such a easy place.

Just because you obtained a godly sword did not mean that you could become a sword master and just because of an artifact a rabbit could not become a dragon nor a pig become a dragon.

And even if such things existed, these things won't land in the lands of a rabbit or a pig.

And even if it did land in their lands they won't be able to use it because of limitations

And even if they could use it, they won't be able to protect it.

To use it one needed to match the other person's trait or when they use the trait and every time you used it it will cost mana, also the destroyed power will eventually come back.

But the fact that you could cancel the enemy's powers at the right time and in the right place was a huge advantage.

Since by the the time their powers come back, they would've become a corpse.

It wasn't just a Draconic Series.

It was called so because it was already amazing at the colorless stage.

And this was a Growing Artifact, this was just the start.

'It seems like I will need a lot of runes from now on. Though I cannot use it properly yet'

Hansoo touched his ears.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength: 92.3

Stamina: 88.8

Agility: 47.1

Perception: 50.2

Mana: 22

Magic Resistance: 13

Though it was in its weakest state it was still a colorless artifact

To use this thing properly, one's runes needed to be at the colorless stage.

You needed at least one colorless rune and it was better if they were all colorless.

But the current him did not have any colorless rune.

Hansoo pondered for a moment.

To either make a colorless rune first or focus on achieving balance.

There was eight cloud snacks left.

Cloud snack did not work at the colorless rune stage.

Hansoo, who was pondering, made a decision.

‘Make one colorless rune first and then achieve balance’

If it's an enemy where he needed to use the colorless rune as well as the Nurmaha's ring, it would be hard to beat him while his balance was off.

And on the other hand if the enemy did not require him to use the Nurmaha's ring then the colorless rune wouldn't be needed as well.

Hansoo, who had made his decision, started to walk out of the Altar slowly.

.....

‘Not Bad’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at his stat screen on the seventh day.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength (Colorless): 0.01%

Stamina: 88.8

Agility: 84.0

Perception: 85.1

Mana: 58.4

Magic resistance: 13

The strength had remained stationary at 0.01%

He had decided that it was good to make one colorless rune in case of an emergency and made it but he could not raise it any further.

Once it turned into a colorless rune then it would only increase after taking colorless runes.

This was the same for Nurmaha's ring.

Since the colorless rune did not come out on the 1st tutorial area, he needed to obtain them from the second tutorial area from now on.

Since in the colorless area, which was the basis for the second tutorial area, both colorless rune and normal runes came out in a good mix.

Since both Strength and Stamina were in demand, hansoo invested by trading all his remaining strength and stamina runes into agility, perception and mana runes.

Mana wasn't needed for Hansoo who did not have a single skill



but in order to use the Power Destruction freely it was better to have more mana.

It was a win-win for everybody.

Since agility, perception or mana runes could be traded for a higher price than strength or stamina so people who luckily found these runes quickly brought them to Hansoo and then raised their strength and stamina at a very fast rate.

If Hansoo hunted alone then he would've never been able to make this balance in time.

‘Well. I couldn’t finish all the missions’

Because he had focused his time on hunting he could not finish all the missions but this did not matter much.

Since he had obtained something more valuable than that.

Taking everything wasn’t the important part.

You just needed to take the core factors that will keep you above everyone else as you go up.

Most people thought runes were important but runes weren’t always the core factors of strength.

Beasts were everywhere so runes could be attained anywhere and since runes were fair to everybody it was hard to make a difference between others.

Runes were important but the quality trait, skills and artifacts whose strength got multiplied by runes were more important.

Runes would get stacked even if you just kill beasts weaker than you.

But the three factors above wasn't like that. Rare things were limited and because of that gaps would be created.

‘Six cloud snacks are left... I filled the food pouch with Goblin Jerky. The Needle has been sharpened well too.’

Hansoo checked the people afar as he checked his belongings.

Though they had gone through a lot in a week, it felt short to some people and long to some people to the point their eyes have changed while some others were still struggling about.

And in the middle of those people he could see Mihee and Sangjin but he did not make any gestures to get their attention.

Since they will get separated soon.

‘Well. Let's greet each other with smiles when he meet again’

A fairy appeared through the rip in the air above Hansoo who was checking this and that.

“Everyone! You’ve worked hard for a week! You’ve probably guess it by now but there are many people like you outside!”

“ ... ”

“You will now start the second tutorial! The place you guys will live on from now is <Sky Road>.”

<Sky Road>

‘...A way up towards the sky huh’

It didn’t matter where they went.

The thing they were curious about was something else.

“How many will live there?”

The fairy smiled at this.

“A little bit over ten thousand I think. You will be there for three months”

“ ... ”

“It will be much more fun when you get there. It was hard until now playing with only a hundred people right? How fun would it be playing with ten thousand people. You will make a lot of friends too. Isn't it fun just thinking about it?”

Everyone's face crumpled at the fairy's words.

Even a hundred was this tiring, but ten thousand at least.

And there was a lot of unprecedented things in this one week.

They couldn't even imagine how many things the fairy would do in that three months.

The fairy spoke after watching that scene happily.

“There's exactly 10842... you will start with around 10 to 11 people”

Everyone started mumbling about and then quickly started to group with close friends.

Of course 11 was better than 10.

And the stronger the people, the better it was.

The strongest and most trustworthy ten had to group.

“Miss Mihee! Take me please!”

“Sangjin! I’m pretty useful man! Take me!”

“This bitch! You ignored us until now! Get Lost!”

The fairy laughed at the chaos below.

“Ahahahaha! You don’t need to be like that.”

“...?”

“It’ll be random. Work hard everyone!”

And as soon as those words ended, the remaining 47 were all warped from the first tutorial area.

To one of the random starting areas of the 2nd tutorial area, Sky Road.

## Chapter 23 – Sky Road (2)

---

Hududuk.

Hansoo rose out of his seat and looked around.

‘Those evil things’

Why would the fairy leave friendly and strong people together in a group for them to enjoy.

In the small white room, ten people were looking around.

And they were actually rather calm and composed about it and weren't shocked. Just like how people who went through the first tutorial should be like.

Be cautious of your surroundings but do not make it obvious.

But then one of these people grumbled.

“Godammit... there's only ten”

And everyone made a slightly unsatisfied expression as if they agreed.

They were dropped in an unknown place.

They didn't know each other but if there were going to be in harsh conditions wasn't it obvious that having eleven was better than ten.

The man who complained before talked.

“Well. Let's at least introduce ourselves. Since we will probably be working toge...”

<Hello. Have you arrived? First, Welcome to the second tutorial area, Sky Road>

Before the man finished talking, the fairy's voice came out from thin air in the room they were at.

And as soon as the fairy's voice came out, everyone didn't say what they were going to and instead focused on the fairy.

<Well I must give you a basic explanation but... I don't think I need to explain to those who don't really need it so let's do something first>

“...?”

Everyone made a confused expression at the fairy's words.

<As you see right now, some rooms have 10 and some rooms have

11 people. But this is unfair right? So I think that we must balance the numbers, I'll explain this afterwards.>

“ ... ”

Everyone made a sigh of relief.

Their room had 10. If they were going to balance the numbers then they would probably kill off one person in one of the rooms with eleven people and then start.

And if that happened they might get injured during the fight and even if they manage to kill somebody off without getting injured then they would be cautious of each other.

But the fairy crushed everybody's expectations.

<But then if we only kill somebody in the room with 11 it'll be unfair right? Since there will be a fight. So here's how we'll do it, the room with 10 people will kill off 1 and the room with 11 will kill off 2. We here respect your choices so come to a consensus by yourselves.>

“...Fucking bitch of a fly. I wondered why it was moving things along so smoothly”

One person spat out curses while everyone who had been sighing in relief started to be cautious of everyone else.



And at the same time they looked for the person who was likely to be the weakest to of all.

There probably won't be anybody who they can easily.

If they searched then they might find some but most of them had already been dropped off at the 1st tutorial area.

The people here were people who would not die alone, they would at least stab them back before they die.

And because of this, it was important to find the weakest person to attack with the nine and kill them instantly.

Daechul, who was the first to curse, mumbled inwardly.

'Fuck... there's no way to know since you can't judge from appearances'

If they were all normal existences then you could judge very simply from their appearance.

Since females were generally weaker.

But if you went on like this in this place you neck will fly off.

Since if they had collected runes zealously because they were weaker, crushing any decent male was possible.

Because of this Daechul instead searched for the existence of weapons.

Since if they didn't have a weapon, they would be the weakest.

'The one without a weapon...damn. They all have it.'

Daechul mumbled.

Everyone was gripping intensely onto their well sharpened blade that was shining in the light.

But in this situation, one person was out of the ordinary.

'...Who's that guy holding the needle'

On the waist of the guy standing leisurely in the corner there was a long needle.

'Is he crazy?'

Daechul swirled his tongue.

That thing was sharp but from one look one could see that it was

harder to use than a blade with a sharp edge.

And unless that guy was at the level of a fencing athlete there's no way he would pick such a weapon.

But he couldn't act carelessly.

Because if he acted with just that as the basis, the chances of danger was too great.

At that moment a female in the corner looked around as she spoke.

"Aren't we going to act together from now? Let's try to appeal each other. To show each other how much they're worth"

Everyone started to nod at those words.

Since it was still very pressuring to act if they think somebody looked weak.

Because they might be the only one thinking like that.

And if they're unlucky and get into a one on one then things become even more of a headache.

But on the other hand, if they were to talk things out in a circle

like this, they can somewhat judge.

As to who was the most useless one here.

Since they were going to act together from now, it was better if they were stronger or have a unique ability.

But on the other hand, if they didn't have such merits then they were useless.

Then the nine could just kill them.

And if that happened then they probably won't get injured.

Daechul pondered for a moment then raised his sword.

It was a little regrettable to show his hidden card but if he hid it and then get ganged upon because he seemed weak then he would just die.

"I'm called Daechul, I'm not sure if you've seen something like this."

And then a humming sound came out of his hands as a shining energy started to flow off from the sword on his hands.

And Hansoo's eyes shone as he saw this.

‘Reinforce’

There was a very unique skill among the runes.

If you learned it then you could raise all your other stats while using your mana.

This was called Reinforce.

The user would continuously use mana while raising the other stats for a set duration.

And a few better ones of those people could infuse mana into weapons like that which increases durability and sharpness.

Well, the Reinforce rune that could be attained in the tutorial area wasn't that good in terms of efficiency but it was better having it than not.

Since it raised the battle power as a whole.

Reinforce was part of the runes that were very useful and high priced even out of the numerous skill runes.

The people who had seen this looked around cautiously as they fought each other in words in order to appeal to others.

“I can heal”

“With just that huh. I can...”

They argued as they talked back and forth but since it was a problem with their lives on the stake so the atmosphere turned darker.

If they lost in this dumb show off competition then it meant death.

But Daechul made an expression of leisure.

‘It’s definitely not me’

It seemed that he wasn’t the strongest.

But the skill he had, reinforce, was better than anybody else’s.

As long as he wasn’t last place.

And that the same time their eyes collected on two people.

It was Hansoo and the girl who first suggested to appeal

themselves.

Daechul made a leisurely smile as he spoke.

“I don’t think the lady over there has spoken yet”

Then the girl stared at Daechul as she spoke with a laugh.

“I’m called Jimin. What I’m good at...I will show you now”

Then the girl stood up and started to head towards Daechul.

Daechul’s caution exploded as he saw the girl move towards him suddenly.

Usually it was a walk that would make his heart beat but his heart rate increased for a different reason at this moment.

“What are you doing? Don’t come close.”

“I said I’ll show you what I’m good at.”

And then the girl pulled out a dagger from her inner thigh.

A blackish dagger that did not look normal.

Daechul spat out curses.

“Fuck! Are you all just gonna watch? This is just a crazy bitch!”

But everyone just pretended to listen.

It seemed like that would start fighting each other, why would they butt in.

It didn't matter who died out of the two and even if one did not die, injury was sure to happen so they could just finish them off after.

Daechul, who was looking at this, crumpled his face as he rose the power of the skill he attained, <SingleWooden Reinforce> to the max.

The 27 mana that was surrounding his body started get converted quickly into Daechul's stats.

The strength that was around 45 rose to 50.

Not only Stamina, Agility, Perception were raised but even Magic power, physical and magical resistances also rose.

One of the advantages of Reinforce, it raised the stats of resistances which were hard to obtain in the start.



Daechul even added mana onto his sword and swung down with his raised stat.

Kuduk

“Huh?”

Daechul, who had seen the female disappear right in front of his eyes, searched for her in a hurry but then looked towards his chest as he felt a warm sensation surge out from the area of his heart

And in that area the girl had already stabbed the dagger in her hand onto where his heart was.

The girl looked at Daechul as she whispered.

“I’ll use the skill well. It seemed like that your skill seemed the best out of these. And even so to the point where it didn’t fit your level”

And at those words Daechul realized why she asked them to appeal themselves.

‘Fuck...’

Daechul fell soon afterwards and Jimin smiled as she saw the numerous runes and the one skill rune drop from his body like corn.

“My luck is good. It didn’t seem like they dropped on a 100% chance. I will take the skill? Ah yes, we should share the stat.”

If you monopolize then you will get sick.

Jimin only took the skill rune she wanted and the rest shook their heads while they picked up the runes on the ground.

‘Crazy bitch. What did she go through in this one week... at least go crazy nicely’

Hanchul, a man who had been watching the girl, clicked his tongue.

It wasn't that he didn't have to confidence to win.

But it'll be tiring if that crazy bitch charged at him because of a few words so he decided to shut his mouth.

And it seemed like a few others had the same thought as him.

But the fact that that Daechul died wasn't really unjustified.

Since he had a skill that was too good for his level.

The skill Reinforce did really look good.

But it needed to be used by someone who could use it well.

Even if Jimin didn't kill him, one of the others would've.

Killing the weak wasn't the answer.

If they killed randomly with no reason then they would attain hostility and die but in a situation like this where a reason existed, it was basically acting like a thankful cleaner.

It was best if you could kill somebody strong when there was a reason to if you can kill them.

Since if you had to kill somebody anyway, it was best to kill somebody who would spew out the most.

Jimin had lowered them into nine and didn't want to struggle anymore so she sat in the corner.

And soon a voice came out of the air again.

<Since this place had turned themselves into nine I will continue the explanation. The 2nd tutorial are you guys are currently at is the <Sky Road>>

Sky Road.

The road to the sky.

<Once this tutorial ends then the real world of adventure will open. Aren't you excited?>

“...Crazy Bitch.”

“Bitch.”

Curses were mumbled out from the surroundings.

The fairy's voice continued in the air as if it didn't hear those sounds.

<The thing you guys need to do is simple. You just need to keep climbing up for three months>

Sky Road.

A road where you had to go from the 1000 starting points and head towards the topmost single area.

There wasn't only one path.

It was a setup where you would get split up and collide into the people from other starting points.

Though there was something very unique about it.

<Well. There's no need for a hundred words. Let's start.>

And then a large amount of light and wind started to pour in from the outside.

“What is this...”

Everyone made a ridiculous expression as they looked at the outside.

The room they were at was currently floating high up in the sky.

A scene that would turn make an acrophobic shrivel up.

A vast sea could be seen thousands of meters below and in the distance outside the white room a large floating island that seemed much larger than Yeouido.

There was a long bridge connecting their room and the island.

A few other rooms just like theirs were also connected to the island and there were many other islands floating about the same height as theirs.

And the thousands of islands that were floating above them in layers.

The people cried out in gloom as they saw the islands that looked like stairs but too far apart to be called stairs.

‘It’s been a while’

Hansoo mumbled as he saw the stairs of islands in his view.

<Sky Road>

Move by moving between the islands floating in the air.

And continue to climb higher and higher.

Every island had rewards you could attain and had special rules or beasts.

‘And there’s also a trap’

The thing Hansoo needed to do on Sky Road was simple.

He needed to prepare as much as he can in order to pass the final parts of the dungeon. (\*Dungeon: Mentioned in chapter 3)

He needed to find every hidden piece and important factors as he climbed the Sky Road.

And the most important thing on the first level of the stairway

island was one thing.

He didn't care about the other things but this was a necessity.

‘First I need to attain <Rune Eater Snake>’

As Hansoo set his goal and started to move out, everybody cautiously moved along the bridge.

The width of the bridge was short but it wasn't dangerous because there were side rails.

And while they were doing so, Hanchul spoke to maybe lighten up the mood.

“Well. At least it feels good, it's like an adventure. Let's do well together. If we don't go crazy and move cautiously and slowly...”



Kugugugu

Before Hanchul's words were finished, a faint tremble was felt from the island.

While everyone got shocked and grabbed onto the side rails, a fairy's voice was heard from above them.

<Oh. For the record, after a while the islands start falling down started from the one at the bottom. If you have thoughts of setting up a campfire and becoming friendly with each other then it might be better to enjoy it in a more mobile form with a hand held torch>

“Bitch-like Fly”

Curses came out of Hanchul's mouth as he could not keep calm anymore.

## Chapter 24 – Sky Road (3)

---

As soon as the people got to the land, the bridge got destroyed.

As the people saw the bridge fall down to what seemed like an endless amount of time, they made a horrified face.

If they can't climb up fast enough, then they would fall along with this island.

“Well. The explanations were done earlier so let's decide what to do from...”

Since it looked like they were all from different tutorial areas and were strangers, Hanchul started his story.

But before he could finish his words, somebody started moving.

‘...needle?’

The guy with the needle started to walk towards the suspicious looking jungle hesitantly.

Hanchul shouted as he looked at Hansoo.

“Hello there? Do you know where to go?”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“It’s a straight line so you just need to go in a straight line. What’s there to think about”

The rest who had seen this made a helpless expression.

Of course there indeed existed a path through the center of the jungle.

An extremely suspicious looking and dangerous looking path where something might pop out.

‘What is this guy’

But he didn’t seem like someone lame.

As long as he wasn’t somebody who treated their lives like flipping a coin, acting like that meant he had confidence.

And at that moment a rumbling sound was heard as the outskirts of the island started to break off.

The exact area that the bridge was attached to just until now.

“...fucking hell.”

It meant that it will not let them rest even for a moment.

The people spat out curses as they followed Hansoo.

It was a straight path anyway, there was no other paths.

‘It somehow feels like I became a lackey’

Hanchul didn’t really feel comfortable but he decided to leave him alone because his ruthless attitude was rather burdensome.

‘I’ll know once I peel him. Either he’s a faker or has something’

Hanchul mumbled as he followed him.

.....

‘Let’s see. With the central Dormant Volcano as the center of direction... the eighth room on the left of the lava river, so turn rightwards twice and once left...’

The <Rune Eater Snake> he needed to obtain was a mutant of <Rune Pattern Snake>

And the place he needed to find for this.

<Rune Pattern Snake’s Forest>

The structure of all 100 of the 1st level of the stair islands was the same.

10 white rooms with the Dormant Volcano as the center and forked roads that connected 498 beast habitats and everything else.

So as long as you follow the path as you memorized than you could find the forest.

And as soon as the fork on the road appeared, Hansoo smoothly turned right.

‘Well it’s actually the same no matter where you go’

The danger was similar no matter which path you took and eventually you will end up on the center where you can move to a different island.

If he wasn’t going to find the habitat for the Rune Pattern Snake then he would’ve just gone in any direction.

Hanchul, who had seen this, asked in confusion.

“Wait. You said you were just going in a straight line before? Do you perhaps know something else?”

Hanchul asked as he looked at Hansoo who was continuously

walking off.

He had tested earlier. To see if he could move to the other roads on the side.

But the creator of this island seemed to want them to only move on the paths so they could not walk outside.

Which meant they had to go straight.

Which made sense until now when he decided to go right in a fork on the road like this without hesitating.

Hansoo looked at Hanchul and then spoke.

“I have a psychic power.”

“What?”

What was this nonsense?

Everyone who had been following made groans.

They thought he had some sort of navigating skill because he was walking so confidently.

But to think that he had no plans.

“What nonsense is this? What are you thinking?”

Hansoo sighed as he spoke.

“You just need to go that way so why are you acting like homing missiles.”

“...”

‘Fuck. He’s right. After hearing him for a while’

He didn’t know why he was following that guy like that.

It seems like that the girl called Jimin and everyone else wasn’t weak but were following his guy without saying anything.

‘My pride suddenly feels damaged. Do I take it?’

Hanchul shook his head.

It was obvious that if one person moved confidently while others were hesitant that everyone would want to follow that guy.

And more so if the island behind them was getting destroyed one by one.

‘Sure. We’ll go as you say’

It’ll be the same no matter which way they go.

Since that bloody fairy wouldn’t have made some parts of the island easier than others.

Hanchul checked the people in the group.

‘First, there is a self-proclaimed psychic and a crazy bitch’

Everyone seemed normal but there was somebody else that stood out.

First the person with the healing skill.

From his walk and the fact that he had the healing skill, it seemed like his stats were good.

And the sword that was shining around his waist didn’t look normal either.

He probably wouldn’t attach something to dangle on his waist if he wasn’t going to use it.

If this were a game he felt like a priest, no, it was more like a paladin.



The rest seemed normal but were even more unique.

A couple and three daughters whom seemed around twenty.

Halchul mumbled after seeing this.

“Huh. People come rather well bunched. Thought it was random...”

They got separated on the first area on random.

What are the chances of the family over there coming together.

But Hansoo knew the reason.

‘Since it’s more fun this way’

There’s no other reason. This was it.

They split up relationships created from understandings but left the relationships created from affection.

Since bringing them like had higher chances of created more interesting situations.

‘Well. That’s just how they want it’

Hansoo, who had stopped his thoughts, stopped walking as he stopped in front of a weird looking tree next to the road.

Hansoo pulled out a kukri instead of the needle that he had on his waist, cut a bit of the wood and then started to chew on it.

“...What are you doing?”

“If you chew on this it gives a slight effect of neutralizing the poison”

“Why do you need to neutralize the poison?”

And then Hansoo slightly pulled on Hanchul’s neck.

Kududuk

“ ... ”

In an instant a 3m long snake that stretched down from the trees bit the spot where Hanchul was standing.

‘...That was dangerous’

Hanchul got flustered at an extreme speed.

Hansoo chuckled at this.

The one just now was this fast because it was an agility pattern so as long as you are careful of ambushes then it wasn't that bad.

‘Rune Pattern Snake’

A unique beast that gained extra stats depending on the pattern on its skin.

The annoying part was that the patterns kept changing.

And if there are mana rune patterns on its body one also needed to be careful of the poison.

Once you get bitten while it had mana runes up then you will be poisoned with a toxin that will steadily burn your own mana.

And whilst the mana burned, your magic power as well as health were also affected.

Of course it didn't burn until you died and the effects will disappear after some time but by the time the effects disappear, you will have become quite a mess.

The bark of the oak tree which it lived in had some sort of antidote-like effect due to it being rubbed against its scales but it was best to just not get bitten by it at all.

Hansoo chewed on the oak bark as he spoke.

“Always be careful of being bit while it has mana runes up and attack when it doesn't have agility runes up. You can dodge the agility runes if you are careful of ambushes but it will still be hard to catch.”

“How did you know all th..”

“Psychic powers”

“ ... ”

Hansoo, who had completed his talk, went into the jungle and

everyone else stared at each other but followed him in with frowns as they felt the vibrations behind them into the jungle where the snakes were.

.....

Kududuk

“Goddamit!”

Hanchul grinded his teeth at the snake which did not die even after getting hit by his sword and had bit into his flesh.

It wasn't that bad because it didn't have mana runes up but he had failed to kill it with in one shot because it had physical resistance runes up.

‘Such difficult beasts...’

They were so strong that his body was full of scars from being bit from these guys despite having been in here for only a while.

And the way their runes changed was random.

If it changed according to how the snakes wanted or needed then they could at least see it coming but it was very dangerous due to the random changes that happened at random times.

He had thought that he could kill this snake instantly just now because it had strength runes up but then it instantly changed to physical resistance rune, resisted his attack and bit into his flesh.

His flesh didn't get bit off because it wasn't a strength rune pattern but the spikes that were attached around the snake had

turned his flesh into rags.

‘Damn... there isn’t time to regenerate much either’

Since he had some stamina runes he needed time to regenerate but he constantly heard the damnable island crumble behind him so he did not have the leisure to rest to recover before moving on.

But there was a bigger problem than the snakes.

“Goddamit! Why aren’t you guys fighting!”

Only five of the nine had been fighting.

The four in the back were just idling about.

Well they weren’t idling to be exact.

Since the guy that looked like the head of the family stood at the back as he slashed off the snakes that flew towards his wife and his daughters.

The man hardened his face at Hanchul’s rage.

“I’m sorry. Please understand. I must protect my family”

‘Damnit... family means a free pass?’

Then what would happen to the guys fighting in the front.

This was a difficulty meant for 9 people.

The fairy had set the difficulty like this from the start.

But because four people were doing nothing the others were struggling.

If that guy called Hansoo wasn't flying around next to them they would've already died.

Ok. He could understand the family man but why was the guy with the heal, who was holding a sword, wasn't fighting too?

“Hey! Why aren't you fighting!?”

He did not understand.

If he had a healing skill then shouldn't he fight even more aggressively.

And then Kangmin, the guy holding the sword, chuckled as he spoke.

“I don't think I really need to fight. I'll just heal you guys.”



“ ... ”

Hanchul's rage skyrocketed.

‘This yankee, then why are you holding onto a sword?’

Hanchul started to calm down his mind.

This wasn't the right time to be fighting.

‘Yeah. Let's think of him as a healer. A healer.’

Aren't there healers in games.

But Hanchul had to curse at Kangmin's words that came out afterwards.

“By the way in order to recieve heals from me then you must bring runes. To heal all the injuries on you I will take 3 strength runes or 1.5 agility or 1 mana rune.”

“This motherfucker...”

Hanchul grinded his teeth.

Was this something a person doing a team play should be saying.

Which means he, who was fighting in the front, should also receive runes.

He wasn't fighting in the front because he wanted to.

That was not normal. From what it seemed from the way he acted, the amount of runes he had wasn't low.

He was probably good at fighting.

And it would be even harder to beat him once he fought while healing himself.

But then to not fight despite having so much battle powers.

'Is this bitch not fighting because then we will get hurt more?'

Since if you set your mind to earn runes from healing, that was the easiest method.

It might be an over exaggeration but there was a high possibility.

Kangmin had heard himself being cursed but he laughed as he spoke.

“But shouldn’t you fight more zealously? I think I can hear the island slowly crumble from behind?”

“Goddamit...”

Hanchul grinded his teeth.

That he had fallen into a very nasty situation.

Regeneration was a necessity.

But he had already been injured even though it was just the beginning.

If he didn’t heal this then his battle powers will fall and the speed at which he got stronger will slow down because the rate at which he gained runes will also drop.

And if you take into account of the fact that stronger beasts will continue to come out then healing was really a necessity.

If that guy was asking for excessive prices that he would’ve just killed him.

It won’t be easy but if he were to continue then he didn’t know how to deal with him once he got stronger than him and continue to treat him like this.

But sadly the amount he offered was a very reasonable price for healing.

It was a perfect amount where he will still profit by not attacking but didn't ask for too much.

And to continue the relationship where they profited from each other.

But this wasn't a situation to make profit of each other but rather a situation where they needed to combine their strengths.

That guy was holding onto the dangerous situation as if it was a chance but this meant their lives will get harder.

Since as long as he took things they will lose something.

'Bitch. The healer is all that huh'

He wanted to just sit and stoutly declare that he wasn't gonna do it but he knew that was a crazy act as he saw the island and road slowly fall bit by bit far behind him.

As he saw it, this guy had understood his worth in that instant and laid down these calculations.

Or he had done something like this in the 1st tutorial area as well.

He had somewhat of an idea how this yankee had gained runes and gotten strong.

He probably wouldn't heal you because you threaten or torture him.

Since if he was somebody who will do that then he would've become a mess during the 1st tutorial area and would not have had the time to negotiate like this.

'Fuck...'

It wasn't that his skill rune will drop with a 100% chance even if you killed him.

And the worth of the healing skill was too high to bet like that

And especially in a time limited situation like this.

"Are you just gonna leave that alone?"

As Hanchul talked to Hansoo whilst grinding his teeth, Hansoo just shrugged his shoulder.

He didn't particularly intrude even if they fought or didn't fight.

Since it will all eventually return to him.

“Here are some runes. Please heal my wife”

As he saw the family man hand over the rune he gathered and asked to heal his wife who was slightly injured, Hanchul grinded his teeth.

It would usually be a very warming view but Hanchul's situation was too dire to look at it in such a way.

The others also stared at the four coldly as if it wasn't just Hanchul's thoughts that were like this.

‘A shit hand. I pulled a real shit hand’

He had thought that the psychic guy was the weirdest one but it seemed that he was the best hand he had now.

A crazy bitch. A heal seller and three harmonious family members.

Hanchul's face expression turned cold.

And at that moment a voice flowed into Hanchul's head.

<How is it? Kang Hanchul? Is the place you arrived good?>

Hanchul answered as if this was all normal.

<It's shit>

<Have strength. It seems like that we can meet each other at the top. Make sure to survive and come up. And keep as much alive as you can. We need to raise our numbers and recruit as many strong people as we can.>

'I don't know... if these guys are worthy enough to take'

Hanchul ended the conversation as he thought of it only and did not send it as a message and then grinded his teeth.

<I'm not sure if you can survive until we meet again. I'll see you later>

Hanchul, who had finished the conversation with his friend and leader Hyunjin, started to walk as if nothing happened.

He had thought that he was criticizing Hansoo but Hanchul believed in the existence of psychic powers.

Since he had already seen somebody with such an ability like his friend, Hyunjin, and even benefitted like this.

But there was a guy watching Hanchul.

‘It seems like there’s already somebody who had bloomed the sovereign’s trait It’s rather quick’

Trait <Sovereign>

A trait which Eres and Kwang Goonju had.

A trait which made them into a leader and the leader becoming a trait, a trait that made somebody into a <Sovereign>.

Hansoo showed a conspicuous color as he looked at the small symbol that appeared for a moment and then disappeared on the back of Hanchul’s hand.



## Chapter 25 – Sky Road (4)

---

While Hansoo was making such thoughts and advancing forward, one person cautiously spoke as they looked at their surroundings.

“It seems like the number of snakes are decreasing?”

Everyone nodded at these words.

It was something they had felt for a while.

Thankfully their speed of movement had increased and they had made quite a distance from the part of the island that was crumbling.

‘Good’

Hansoo nodded his head inwardly.

Since the lack of Rune Pattern Snakes meant he had almost reached the habitat of the Rune Eater Snake.

As soon as the snakes had disappeared they looked at each other while catching a breath.

Their entire bodies had been healed cleanly.

Since Kangmin's healing was rather effective despite the disputes.

Kangmin looked at Hansoo with a mysterious expression.

‘He didn't receive any heals...’

There was no way to not get injured no matter how strong you were.

And the only reason why he had been able to survive was because he had put himself in such situations.

And Hansoo was like that too.

Injuries all over the body.

But there was a clear difference with Hansoo.

‘Just how much stamina does he have’

Kangmin rolled around his tongue.

It wasn't fast enough to see with the eyes but his injuries were often gone while they were walking.

He had thought that he had mistook what he had seen at first.

And he had been dodging all the big injuries that would be of harm during a fight.

He wasn't sure because he didn't look close but he could guess somewhat.

He had made sure to not get injured on his joints and muscles and if he was going to get bit then he made it so the parts of the body that wouldn't hinder him was bit.

Even if his skin were to be all scratched off.

It would hurt much less to get bit around the thigh or buttocks but he had been dodging injuries in important areas as if every part which helped him fight was precious.

And he had been doing so by getting hit all over the body whilst dodging fatal wounds and healing himself with his high stamina.

At once glance he looked like a normal college student but he was fighting like a beast.

As if he was fighting by squeezing every bit power out of his entire body.

‘...Is he like a mercenary or something?’

The skin would hurt a lot but it healed fast so it was the right choice.

But this choice would be hard for a normal person to make but that guy was not afraid of getting hurt.

No, he had even shown that if he could kill the enemy by getting hurt, then he chose to do so.

‘It seems like the sales won’t be that good’

Kangmin frowned slightly.

Amazing was amazing and obstruction was an obstruction.

If that guy didn’t exist than the others would’ve been hurt more but due to him fighting so well he had to set the price of healing low.

Since if there was no demand, the prices will drop.

But at that moment, something appeared in front of Kangmin whom had been thinking of this and that

‘...What is that?’

A humongous tree that couldn't even be compared to the trees until now had appeared in front of them.

And the surroundings trees had been broken and smashed to create an open area.

While everybody was cautiously looking at their surroundings in this new area that was a bit off the road, Hansoo was looking at the top of the tree.

‘There it is.’

<Rune Eater Snake>

A giant snake of 15m that had coiled upon the tree.

It had become the leader of the Rune Pattern snakes by eating them and absorbing their runes.

Most mutant Rune Eater Snakes became strong like that and acted as predators.

A monster that couldn't even distinguish its own clansman and only saw them as food.

And because of this, other rune pattern snakes did not live around it.

‘But that one is useless’

That one was useless.

Since due to its size, if you gave it 3 runes it will eat all of those 3.

It was only useful while it was a baby, when it did not eat much and would puke out two when you gave it three would it be useful.

But since it was only useful for three months, he just needed to release it after that.

Hansoo nodded as he thought of the rune pattern snake’s egg somewhere within the tree.

‘Let’s go’

He had fought in the most dangerous areas for 50 years and had never encountered an enemy who he could leisurely dodge and whom would send only so-so attacks at him.

Foresee the enemy’s movements?

There were much more enemies that moved faster than one could foresee.

And because of this the fighting style of giving flesh and hitting

bone had been deep embedded in him.

Since as long as you kill the enemy, regeneration was possible.

But his tactic was only possible when you could receive their attacks to a degree but due to his resistances being rock bottom low, it felt like he was fighting with chains all over his body.

And he seemed strong right now but later enemies who know how to use skills and their traits properly will appear.

He had a bit of an advantage in stats and artifacts but there was a huge gap in battle powers that came from skills and traits.

Since that girl called Jimin had already grasped her fighting style a bit.

He had to take the advantage before he could earn skills and to do that a Rune Eater Snake was a necessity.

‘If I take this then everything becomes easy’

The family man, Gyucheol, cautiously spoke as he saw Hansoo warm up his body.

“Do you really have to fight that thing?”

“Hmm?”

“Isn’t that something you don’t really need to kill?”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

The Rune Eater Snake was too high of a difficulty for people who came out of one week of the tutorial.

And that snake which ate three and spat out two was a scam to others who needed the strength, stamina, agility and perception runes.

And because of this he had diverged from the path a little bit.

Since there weren’t any snakes here so as long as you were careful you wouldn’t run into rune eater snakes or rune pattern snakes.

The others who had already seen this stood far away as they looked at the tree with worrying expressions.

“You don’t have to fight. I’ll fight it alone so go over there where it’s safe. Or you can go first”

Gyucheol shook his head at those words.



“No... I’m saying let’s go together”

Gyucheol almost spat out something he had been thinking for a while.

‘How would we advance if you die’

Gyucheol knew.

That the reason why it was ok for him to just protect his wife at the back was because Hansoo, who was in the front, was fighting well.

He knew. That if you don’t fight yourself here then you will eventually die.

But even though he knew this in his head, how could he send his wife and daughter out after seeing them bleed after getting slashed by swords.

There might be a chance that a place where his family could be safe might appear if they continue like this.

And for that he needed to live a little bit longer.

‘And because of that I must go with that person’

If that guy dies then he would need to step out and fight.

Because if he doesn't then the defense line will crumble and they would all die.

But then if he died like that, who would protect his family.

He wasn't in the situation to put up with danger.

'And isn't it very greedy to try to kill that snake which you don't need to, to the point of soloing?'

Gyucheol, who couldn't spit out such words, tried his best to make a pleasant smile as he spoke.

"What would happen if you died fighting that thing. It looked dangerous at a glance, let's just continue and not waste your strength on that thing. Shouldn't we continue forward while the gap is still large."

Everyone looked at Hansoo and Gyucheol at those words.

## Chapter 26 – Ticket (1)

---

Hansoo chuckled at those words as he shook his head.

“I’ll refuse. Go ahead first”

Gyucheol couldn’t hold it in as he raged.

“Aren’t you being too much young friend? And this isn’t just my thoughts. We need to move together as nine but what do you want us to do if you enter a dangerous place like this”

Gyucheol’s face was on fire as he spat out the words.

Since he knew that it wasn’t something he should be saying.

But he held it in.

The thing he had realized as he gained age and as he became a man of the family was that embarrassment was just for that moment and being loud was rather effective.

Who would protect his family if he lets Hansoo go because of his ego and then die afterwards.

His wife and his daughters could not even threaten a fish.

They will probably die as soon as he dies.

Or something even worse.

‘It’s better to get cursed at’

And there was still a problem if he beat the snake.

Since it can only take a long time for him to fight the snake.

Since then the destruction line that they had created a gap from would catch up them.

And if that happened they had to fight more anxiously.

‘You..as long as you come with us and fight then won’t be any problem’

Didn’t they do good until now.

This wasn’t a game, this wasn’t the time to worry about killing a strong monster for items or runes but why was he going crazy just because he couldn’t fight that powerful looking snake.

They were already busy trying to push ahead.

‘Damn. It’s not because he’s young. He’s just crazy’.

Hansoo clicking his tongue as he looked at that Gyucheol.

There were times like this where their opinions crossed.

And he understood as well.

If a man wasn't selfish during times of danger then when would he be selfish.

‘But there's no other way’

Since their goals were different there was no other way.

Hansoo shook his head as he walked towards the snake.

“Goddamit! If you were going to act selfishly like that then why are you traveling with us in the first place!”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders at Gyucheol's words as he spoke.

“I never traveled with you. The way we were going was the same”

“...”

“...dammit”

At that moment everybody realized that even though Hansoo had been fighting in the front, he had never traded anything with them.

Though he had taught them a few things discreetly.

Gyucheol, who couldn't hold it anymore, cursed out loud while his wife and daughter looked at Gyucheol with a pitiful expression and him took him away after looking at Hansoo with a resentful face.

They knew that they were alive because of Hansoo but they were sad because of Hansoo acting the way he wanted.

While they were leaving, somebody was watching Hansoo with a regrettable face.

The one who actually stimulated Gyucheol was Hanchul.

He was going to try recruiting him after watching for a little bit longer but he was shocked because Hansoo had said he was going to fight the snake.

It did indeed seem like something amazing will come out if that snake was killed.

But that was only important while they were alive.

They had no thoughts of fighting with that anaconda-like 15m long snake.

If Hansoo had miraculous powers to the point where he could slice it in half then they might've followed him meticulously to gain a little bit of anything.

But they had eyes too.

The snake which was sliding between the trees was quite nimble despite its size and its size broke the branches that were as big as normal tree trunks which showed his strength.

That was not something where they can gain anything out of while Hansoo was fighting it alone.

And they wanted to get away as fast as possible because of these thoughts.

Since it will be bad if they received collateral damage whilst watching Hansoo fight.

They had no thoughts of getting dragged in.

‘Well. There’s nothing that can be done’

If somebody couldn't keep their lives in tact then that was all they were worth.

The eight others quickly left Hansoo and took off as Hansoo bit onto a cloud snack while chucking at this view.

Then he charged at the Rune Eater Snake.

.....



Kudududk

“Hoo.”

Hansoo took out the cloud snack he was biting on and then grasped the rune eater's snake with both hands.

And behind him a giant rune eater snake was laid out dead with its brain pierced through.

‘Now there's only five cloud snacks left’

Rune eater snake was indeed strong.

But it was much weaker than the Carnivorous Beast.

And his stats were much more different from then.

He had used colorless energy and used the cloud snack because of limited time but only one was needed

Kachak

And soon the egg cracked open as a small snake that couldn't be imagined to be a baby of that giant snake came out and crawled above Hansoo's wrist.

‘Good’

There were quite a bit of Strength, Stamina, Agility and Perception runes gathered on his wrist.

These were stats that Hansoo judged to be not necessary for the moment.

Hansoo started to feed the baby rune eater snake with all the runes he had gathered up.

The rune eater snake didn't realize it's parent was dead as it greedily gulped down the runes on Hansoo's wrist.

The four types of runes on his wrist quickly disappeared as a different type of rune replaced their spots.

‘First, raise magic, physical and magic resistances.

His Mana wasn't really lacking.

He had in instead raise these other three stats in order to raise his ability battle powers which were lacking.

Since soon things with abilities will pop out one by one.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength(Colorless): 0.02%

Stamina: 88.8

Agility: 84.0

Perception: 85.1

Mana: 58.4

Magic: 30

Physical resistance: 25

Magic resistance: 25.3

‘Finally I’ve gained the eight great stats’

The most basic and the stat that impacted the battle powers the most, the eight great stats.

From now he had to keep raising these stats in balance.

Keiik!

The rune eater snake which seemed to be content from eating its fill cried out in content as it fell asleep on his wrist

It was indeed the offspring of that giant rune eater snake no matter how you looked at it.

He wouldn't bat an eye during normal battles.

'You just stay asleep'

Hansoo, who had been looking at it cutely, started to walk fast as he saw the destruction line closing in.

.....

"Dad. What do we do..."

"Be quiet please"

While Gyucheol and his Family were left behind on a fork on a road and were struggling, somebody started to appear afar.

Gyucheol nodded after seeing this.

‘I knew this would happen’

He was covered in blood but it was Hansoo.

Gyucheol, who had been looking at Hansoo, spoke out.

“Did you perhaps run while fighting?”

It didn’t seem like his strength, agility or stamina changed much from before.

If the giant snake had given him runes then a his runes should have increased by a large amount.

And the snake did indeed look stronger than Hansoo so the time that he took was too fast for killing it.

Since the time it took for Hansoo to come back only took around the time it took to smoke one cigarette.

“I killed it”

‘Lies’

If he wasn’t going to gain anything then why did he fight?

No he did gain something.

Only injuries all over the body.

But it was to his expectations anyway.

Since he guessed that he would at least run before he died.

Hansoo asked the three as he asked.

“The other people?”

The others excluding Gyucheol and the two could not be seen.

Gyucheol grinded his teeth at those words.

“...they went that way.”

‘and leaving us behind’

He thought of Hancheol’s words before he departed.

<Since Hansoo isn’t here anymore you can’t just stay in the back and fight there. Either come out to the front and fight or leave the group here>

‘That bitch... both this guy and him’

Gyucheol had to choose.

Either to fight in the front.

Or wait until Hansoo came back and then charge through the path with Hansoo in the front.

But he had no confidence to fight in the front.

‘Damnit... I should’ve fought in the front from the beginning’

While the others were constantly fighting, he had been left behind without being able to eat any runes.

And now he could only support from the back, he was not at the level to fight in the front anymore.

And the beasts in front of them would be even stronger.

They at least had Hansoo before, if he had fought in between the others then he would’ve died rather quickly.

So he decided to wait for just 5 minutes.

Just in case Hansoo would run away from the fight.

‘It’s a relief’

If he hadn’t come then he would’ve probably had to fight in the front while listening to their hateful words but thankfully Hansoo had come back.

While Gyucheol was thinking about this and that, Hansoo had chosen a different direction than the others.

If that path had been cleared already then the amount of runes he would be able to gain will be significantly lower.

It was better to go somewhere where there was still a lot of things to hunt.

And this path was more compatible with him.

Gyucheol only looked at Hansoo pass by him but did not move.

Hansoo looked at Gyucheol with an amused expression.

“Aren’t you moving?”

And Gyucheol relied at those words.

“Didn’t you say you were never part of us already. Go ahead first”



“Huh”

These words were correct.

‘I can clearly see his intentions but a guy being this straightforward is a first.’

It didn’t really matter if there was somebody to fight with or not.

Hansoo laughed as he started to move towards the other path quickly.

And Gyucheol and his family slowly followed Hansoo whilst leaving a gap.

‘There... aren’t any options left’

He was not at the level of fighting in the front anymore.

He had to push ahead by sticking to someone.

‘Surely such an environment like this wouldn’t continue’

As long as a similar environment like the first tutorial area came out then they can catch their breath.

Gyucheol started to gaze at Hansoo's back with a feeling of being on a tightrope.

Hoping that he wouldn't get mad and turn his blades at them.

And hoping that he would clear the road well in the front.

.....

Udududk

“Hooo”

Hansoo made a dull expression as he killed the last Kerudal.

This place’s difficulty was where nine people had to fight.

It was hard because he had to fight alone.

Since he couldn’t use cloud snacks in places like this

‘But it’s still very good’

[Kang Hansoo] Strength(Colorless): 0.03%

Stamina: 88.8

Agility: 84.0

Perception: 85.1

Mana: 58.4

Magic: 35

Physical resistance: 32

Magic resistance: 32.7

He had been monopolizing the runes because he was fighting alone.

And the fights had been getting easier because his resistances were increasing due to his monopolization.

And Gyucheol was looking at Hansoo with a fed up expression from the back.

‘...he’s getting stronger and stronger’

It didn’t seem like his movements were getting faster or his strength was increasing.

But he was gaining a lot less injuries than before.

And because of that he was fighting faster and more aggressively.

He just took an attack that he would usually dodge and then sliced off their necks like that.

And because of this his speed was slower than when he fought

together with the other group but he had long recovered the speed back.

‘This kinda bugs me...’

He was traveling safely and comfortably.

He just had to pick up a few bloody monsters that Hansoo had leaked.

And Gyucheol was sufficient enough for these.

But the fact that Hansoo has been getting more and more leisurely had been bugging him.

The perfect situation in his head was that Hansoo was so busy fighting in the front and becoming a mess that he couldn't spare any effort to care about Gyucheol himself.

But if this happened he had no solution to when Hansoo became enraged..

‘Do I have to run away in the next fork on the road...’

But it was hard for him to clear the road alone.

But the thing that had appeared in front of Gyucheol wasn't a

fork on the road.

‘...Tunnel?’

A giant tunnel located near the bottom of the mountain.

And in front of it a very familiar existence was located there.

“Are you not on good terms? You traveled whilst leaving some distance between you two. Well whatever, congratulations on reaching the goal.”

And then the fairy pointed towards the inner parts of the tunnel.

There was a dormant volcano’s crater that could be seen along with few tens of people who had already reached this place next to many weird-looking boats.

Gyucheol cried out in joy after seeing this.

“Uwahaha! Arrived! We’ve Arrived!”

“Daddy! Thank you for your hard work!”

As if Hansoo and Gyucheol were the last ones, as soon as they entered the tunnel closed with a thunk sound and the fairy which was at the entrance flew in.

“Hello everyone. Welcome to the goal line. Heehee. Let’s see... there’s 75 alive right now? It’s good that not many died. You guys worked hard.”

“ ... ”

Whilst everyone was grinding their teeth, the fairy smiled as it spoke again.

“Since there’s 75 people, 75 tickets should be prepared right?”

And then a ticket with strange patterns started to appear on the hands of the people.

While the people were mumbling about the ticket, the fairy continued to talk.

“If you get on that then you can get on the boat that leads you to the island above. You’ve done well. I will now tell you how to use the ticket.”

“ ... ? ”

Wasn’t it just that they had to get on the boat after handing it over.

“Basically the boats you guys will get on is for three people”

“ ... ”

“And of course three tickets must be gathered in order for it to work. Isn't it so peaceful? Since its three tickets per three people, there's no need to fight”

Everyone sighed in relief at these words.

Since that meant that all 75 people could go up.

But Hansoo shook his head.

There was no way that this would be it.

And as he expected, the fairy continued to talk.

“But it will be unfair if one person or two people pay three tickets and get treated like three people right? So we prepared something special”

‘Goddamit, of course it won't just let us go that easily...’

The fairy made an amused expression as it looked at the people and spoke.

“Firstly, if you hand in three tickets then you can go to any island



you want. By the way, if you think that all the islands above are the same then that's a huge misconception. Check the islands map in your pockets."

The fairy laughed and spoke as it saw a few people's eyes shining.

"If you hand in three tickets with two people then you can go together but you cannot decide where it goes. The boat will move randomly"

At the fairy's words, the eyes of the people who were comrades or partners changed.

If they wanted to act together then they had to gather an extra ticket.

"Lastly if you hand in three tickets as three people then you will get off separately. You can go up but you cannot be together. A situation like a family would be very very sad right? I hope if you are in a family of three that you can gather nine tickets to go to the island you want."

"This bitch..."

Gyucheol spat out curses without control.

Nine tickets for three people?

What was this nonsense?

It was hard to even protect one at this moment.

He could see Hancheol and others watching with a fierce look from afar.

And the fairy spoke in amusements without caring for such matters.

“There should be about... 30 minutes left until the island collapses completely? Heehee. I guess only 25 boats are needed. I will separate the boats all around the crater. It won't be fun if you just protect the area of the boat right? Ticket. You just need to gather three tickets with whichever method and then depart! Good luck!”

The fairy disappeared after those words.

And everybody's faces started to stiffen.

It was better to go together and even better if you could go where you wanted.

So it was better the more tickets you had.

If there were 6 in a party then 18 was optimal, 9 was ok and six was a worst case scenario.

The people who had laid their decisions looked around for weak people.

And Hancheol and the others who had been separated earlier looked at Gyucheol's family with a smile.

The other didn't know but they did.

A way to gain three free tickets.

"Goddamnit..."

Gyucheol cursed out.

The boat was next to them.

If they wanted to live then the three of them had to get on the boat at this instant.

But if they get on the boat like that then they would be separated.

Which meant his wife and daughter will die or face an even worse situation.

'Damn..what do I do?'

The fact that they had come this far proved that they were strong.

So there was nobody who could get their tickets stolen by him.

And then Hansoo came into Gyucheol's eyes.

“Hansoo! Please give me your ticket!”

“Hmm?”

As Hansoo looked at Gyucheol, Gyucheol hurriedly smiled.

“If we have your ticket then my wife and I can go together! And then please take my daughter. If you do so then our whole family can live!”

Gyucheol shouted in despair.

Since then he could take his wife with him and protect her a bit more.

And their daughter will be protected by Hansoo so she will be able to live a bit longer despite being separated.

If there are four people with six tickets then they can live a bit longer.

“Please... You can save lives this way! You are strong so isn't a piece of cake to gather two more tickets? You're so strong! Please save our family!”

‘Wow...he's not a joke’

Hansoo swirled his tongue at Gyucheol's words.

He had thought that he was very blunt but this was beyond imagination.

‘He probably isn't a fool that would grant that right?’

But Hanchul was still worried so he started to run faster.

Since if he did grant that then those tickets would be gone.

“Hurry! Please!”

Gyucheol, who saw Hanchul and the others charge at them,

He had pleaded something that wouldn't even come out because of his ego.

And Hansoo's eyes calmed down in a cold manner as he looked at Gyucheol.

## Chapter 27 – Ticket (2)

---

Hansoo shook his head.

You need to handle your own problems.

This guy's suggestion was that two other people had to die.

Since the ticket needed for four people was six.

He was asking Hansoo to kill two for him because he didn't have the ability to do so himself.

It wasn't that he didn't but rather these things were something he had to do himself.

They were precious family to Gyucheol but in Hansoo's eyes, the other two were of equal value as them.

Gyucheol grinded his teeth after seeing Hansoo shake his head

But he realized quickly that it wasn't the time to do so.

Gyucheol, who had seen Hanchul charging at him, clenched down his teeth as he struck down on the neck of his daughter.

Smack

The daughter fell unconscious without even being able to scream.

Gyucheol, after lifting his daughter up, took her ticket as well as his dazed wife's ticket and got on the boat.

It didn't even take a second because the boat was next to them.

As Gyucheol grasped the three tickets the boat floated up in the air whilst making strange sound.

And Gyucheol's wife watched this scene in a daze as she mumbled.

"...honey?"

"I am sorry. But I should at least protect our daughter"

If they go as three then they would all die.

Since his wife and daughter would die if they get separated.

But if he went instead then he could at least protect his daughter to some degree.

“You! Are you crazy!?”

The wife, who was in shock, regained her senses and then spat out in rage.

But that at moment something aggressively landed on the top of the boat.

Booom!

“Hey uncle. Stop”

“...Damn it”

Gyucheol made a expression of despair as he looked at Hanchul who was holding a blade onto his daughter’s neck whom he was holding.

The boat immediately stopped working as somebody who wasn’t part of the boat as well as his ticket got on the boat.

And then everyone realized.

Then you couldn’t leave this damned place with just some good luck.

Only people who can protect their boats can leave this place



safely.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

‘It isn’t the time to sit around and idle’

He wanted to to stick around and then take some runes after killing a few people but if he dragged his time like that and then got caught by his ankles by others to drag him down then it would be over just like that.

He had to leave as soon as he collected the tickets.

“You should get off with your daughter”

Hanchul, who had taken the tickets in Gyucheol’s hands, kicked off Gyucheol and his daughter onto the ground.

He didn’t like it but it was a bit too much to kill the dad and his daughter together.

And if he tried to kill them then they would charge at him in a crazy manner which would drag him down.

“You beast! How could you do this!”

As Gyucheol cried out in despair whilst holding his daughter,

Hanchul moved his blade closer as he smirked.

“So if you had fought in the front like others then you wouldn’t be in such a situation. Uncle knows that you were around the same level as me when you came here right?”

“...”

Gyucheol grinded his teeth at those words but could not say anything.

Since these were all truths.

If he had fought in the front non-stop and ate runes then he probably wouldn’t have lost the boat this easily now.

Gyucheol finally realized why Hansoo didn’t care or interfere no matter how much they fought in front of him.

‘...you were the most ruthless one’

He didn’t whip others nor encourage others.

He just left them alone.

So they could choose and deal with the problems themselves.

And the fact that he had hidden in the fact with an excuse of defending his family had came back to him in conclusion.

Hanchul, who had been smirking at the dazed and despair filled Gyucheol next to his crying wife, turned his head and then spoke to Hansoo whilst looking at him.

“Hansoo. Let’s go together”

“Hmm?”

“I wish for you to be with us. I can gather the tickets for you if you need them”

He hadn’t said anything but Hanchul felt as if steam were rising off from his ears.

A wife and daughter who did not do anything.

And Gyuchul who had stayed in the back to defend such people.

A guy who had the strength to fight but only relied on his heals and took runes.

An extremely strong but crazy woman.

And two who were fighting properly but did not catch the eyes.

But because the others in the front were getting trampled by the eyes, the last two was actually rather dependable.

And at the same time, he thought of a game he used to enjoy in the past

A game where you had to make a team with five people.

In order to beat the enemy, they had to do whatever the team did no matter how much you hated it.

It was the same here.

Even if there were a lot of of the nine who were performing useless actions, they had to endure and follow

No, this was actually harder than the game

Since a game would be over just like that if you gave up but here you would just die.

An extremely serious situation.

He had to take useful people but there were nobody who caught his eyes.

No, it actually made his insides twist and turn at the thoughts of these people becoming a person who would be like a family to him after sharing the Symbol.

And Hansoo was naturally an existence that would catch his eyes in such a situation.

He wasn't a superhero or something like that.

'Well. We had originally started at the same place so there's no way he could be like that'

He wasn't an existence like a Deus Ex Machina which could solve the current situation by slashing apart the fairy and then returning them back to their original world.

Since the current Hansoo was also receiving injuries.

But he was very tough.

He was at least much stronger than them and the attitude of how he fought showed that he could trust and leave things to Hansoo.

He felt like a veteran that had lived through decades of battles.

'And if his character's like that then it's not that bad'

He followed the thing he needed to and didn't fall back, he also didn't take more than he earned.

This was why such decisions were made.

‘We need people like him’

Someone like him was the type of people he needed to him and Hyunjin.

That was the only way to go through this world in this damnable world.

“Come with us. I believed that you have psychic powers since I've also seen it before”

And then Hanchul showed the back of his hand.

Ooong

A small shining symbol.

A symbol that couldn't be seen until now was shining on the back of Hanchul's hand.

As Hansoo showed a conspicuous color, Hanchul continued talking after believing that he had caught his interest.

“This is a psychic power that was manifested by my friend”

And then Hanchul told Hansoo the fact that he had found out, which was rather lacking informatively because the time they had it for wasn't that long, that Hansoo already knew.

“If I gain the permission of my friend then I can give you this Symbol to you too. And my friend would definitely agree to you”

The talk had already been completed already

If this guy was that trustable then let's give him the symbol first.

It didn't matter what his plans that he had in his mind were.

Since if they receive the symbol, they would become a trustable companion.

“Be with us. We are different from those mediocre people over there. And once you get this we can trust each other completely.”

‘I know well’

He knew too well.

How could he not.

Hansoo, who had thought of Eres and his other friends, just shook his head.

He could not go beneath a Lord this time.

“I’ll refuse”

“Hmm?”

Hanchul spoke out in surprise as if he didn’t expect the refusal.

‘Why would he refuse this?’

It wasn’t that they were tying him down with a contract.

The Symbol was connecting them with credit and connection.



And it was more trustable than a contract because of this and it also shone during times of crisis.

It wasn't a relationship made of understanding, which was like a sandcastle, which would collapse at a slight touch.

It was a psychic power that made a Lord.

He had looked at Hansoo as if his explanation wasn't enough but that was not it.

It wasn't that he was pondering but rather a direct refusal.

‘Does he have a reason?’

Hanchul wanted to try a bit more but realized that this wasn't the time to be doing so.

Since others were approaching him after realizing that he had three tickets.

He definitely needed three tickets.

Since he agreed to meet in the <Central Island> above with Hyunjin.

“Damn. Then there’s nothing I can do”

The boat was not rising as if it didn’t work if there was more than three tickets.

Hanchul threw a ticket at Hansoo and then spoke as the boat rised up.

“You will probably survive and rise up. Let’s see each other again if our destiny meets”

And then Hanchul disappeared quickly with the boat.

“Damn! This is mine!”

“No! I’m the one who’s going to take this!”

As Hansoo left the ticket on the ground, everybody was making a huge commotion as they charged at the ticket.

But even within that chaos, Hansoo just continued to stand firmly.

He could interfere and then distribute three tickets at a time.

But if he did that then somebody who had the ability to collect three will lose their lives.

And it wouldn't mean much to save them to raise them up.

Since weaklings who can't even protect their own ticket will just die above.

Since it got harder and harder as things went on.

'In the end, you must take care of yourself'

The fight for the ticket continued after Hanchul had left.

The boats departed one by one.

The strongest people leisurely collected tickets and then rode on the boat alone to go where they wanted.

The people who weren't at that level looked around and then made an alliance as they got on the boat in duos.

And the weakest ones decided that going as a group of three was better grouped up and then rose in the boats as threes.

Soon there were only two boats left.

And somebody approached Hansoo while he was looking at the boats.

“Why did you refuse Hanchul’s offer earlier?”

When Hansoo turned around he saw Jimin.

Jimin was rather laid back as if she had already collected three tickets.

Hansoo opened his mouth after staring at Jimin for a while.

“I have my own reasons. For what reason did you come to me?”

Jimin laughed as she spoke.

“I wanted to give you an offer as well. Let’s go together”

And then Jimin showed him the black symbol on her hand.

A clear evidence that she was connected to a Lord.

But Hansoo shook his head.

A Deny.

‘Well. It’s as I expected’

Jimin shrugged her shoulders.

She knew that her offer would be refused he he had already refused Hanchul's offer.

Hansoo was a necessity to her sister but if not then there was nothing she could do.

‘But why is he still around here’

Hansoo was just quietly standing in the corner without stealing tickets from others.

‘Is he doing this because he feels bad stealing tickets from the others?’

Then there wasn't a failure like this guy.

‘I knew as soon as you brought that Gyucheol or whatever guy behind you’

Jimin tutted her tongue.

And if it was really like that then Hansoo was not needed to them.

They didn't need people who weren't determined.

‘Well. He wouldn’t die at least’

As long as he protected his ticket then the last boat will remain.

So there will not be a case that the boat will leave as long as he held his ticket in his hand.

He would probably go up after gathering the remaining tickets right before the island fell completely.

‘Well I’m not interested anymore’

Jimin, who had lost interest in Hansoo, got on a boat and then left the island.

And now there was one boat, three tickets and tens of people left.

The people who had been running away and throwing their tickets because they were afraid of the people on the boats.

In one aspect it was a clear choice.

Since the people who had left were the people who wouldn’t only take their tickets but also take their runes.

As the situation got dire, the people who had charged at them

died just like that.

The people who had been zealously fighting and gathering runes were not an opponent for people who did not.

But it was right before the island would collapse.

It wasn't the time to hide around anymore.

They needed three tickets to activate the boat and the tickets in their hands would be meaningless without the ticket in Hansoo's hands.

And soon the people who had been hiding the tickets started to run crazily at Hansoo.

That guy was actually much much stronger than them.

Since the people who knew he had a ticket had all been crushed after trying to take him on.

Wasn't the fact that he stayed meant that he would take the last two with him.

Which meant the two people Hansoo chose would go with him.

But the others wouldn't just stay to watch this scene.

The people started to charge at the people running towards Hansoo.

“Damnit! This is mine!”

“You crazy bastard! There’s no such thing as yours and mine!”

“Dammit! Please take this and take me too! You have to survive too!”

And Gyucheol was naturally part of this

“Hansoo! Please for the sake of the friendship we had so far! Please! At least take my daughter!”

Hansoo made a sad expression as he looked at them.

Their expectations were wrong.

He hadn’t stayed to take two more people.

‘...I am sorry.’

These guys weren’t cards that were abandoned.



These were people that he had come back to save.

But he could not save everyone.

He could at most only save a few tens more no matter how he struggled within the tutorial area where the influence of the fairy was too strong.

There were too many things he needed to do and he could clearly see how many people would die if he failed to do so.

If he were to be pushed around because of his emotions here then billions of people will die.

He needed three tickets.

Since he needed to go to the <Central Island>

The only reason why he had stayed was because he had something he still needed to do.

‘I will act according to my plans’

He needed to focus on his main mission.

Eres had told him that he was going back to save humanity but that was just the result.

He hadn't come back to save every single human.

He had come back to win.

Becoming strong in the tutorial was just a part of this plans as well as a part of his methods, without this method then he would fail to reach his goals and failing to reach the preliminaries meant failing to see the goal.

If humanity lost again because he took a step back then he had to just kill himself by smashing his head on a boulder.

“I’m Sorry”

“...what?”

The people spoke in confusion from Hansoo's abrupt speech.

Hansoo's expression, which had sadness, started to turn cold.

The reason why he hadn't killed or stolen so far was to stop the stories from spreading.

And he couldn't kill everyone who had seen this just to shut their mouths.

Eres disagreed until the end.

<Are you crazy?! What are you doing?! You're going to do such things when you're going to save them?! What did they do wrong?!>

But Keldian kept pushing him back until the end

<Those guys have already been weeded out. They would die eventually even if they go up>

And he added something else.

<And Eres. You know that this place isn't the place where you die if you do something wrong. It's a place where you die if you are weak.>

<...>

These were people who would fall along with the island.

The people here aren't the people who he would choose from.

These were people who had already been weeded out in this damnable round of game.

And this is where Keldian's suggestion came out.

<If they were going to die anyway let's just use them as fertilizer according to our original plans>

They had finally reached a consensus after arguing for a while.

He would not purposely kill them.

He didn't feel like it and if he did do that then the people with the Lord's marks would know that he had done it.

And that would be troublesome.

But he was going to devour everybody who had been left behind until the end before he left.

Since these guys were going to fall with the island anyway.

And down below was an ordinary looking but harsh ocean.

If they fall then they would die in extreme pain.

Slowly, bit by bit.

The fairies watched this in extreme amusement.

‘I’ll at least send you off comfortably’

Kiiiiik!

Hansoo grasped the needle in his hand so hard to the point it crumpled.

The rune eater snake that was around his wrist shouted in glee as if it expected predation.

Then Hansoo charged towards the people making a commotion with a cold look on his face.

## Chapter 28 – Central Island (1)

---

Hansoo looked at the Central Island that he could see afar from the boat.

An island that was huge even in comparison to other islands.

“You’re always out of the expectation. Heehee. Don’t worry. We don’t spread things like this around”

The fairy looked at the needle on Hansoo’s hand which was still dripping of blood as Hansoo looked at the Fairy expressionlessly.

‘No regrets’

Killing humans wasn’t comfortable even if they were going to die anyway and he was just sending them off in a more comfortable way after judging that leaving them alive would be more painful for them.

But he had no thoughts of hesitating if it was necessary and didn’t interfere with his plans.

Since he hadn’t come to play hero.

The fairy might have gotten awkward as Hansoo stared at it expressionlessly as it shrugged its shoulders and started to explain.

“Welcome to the Central Island. You are the last person. We will start now”

And at that moment, everybody who was on the landing area teleported into one place.

“This is...”

Everybody looked around.

A giant castle.

Thousands of people were looking around after being teleported high above the walls.

And soon the fairy which had appeared above their heads started to explain the situation.

“Hello, 1912 participants in the Central Island. I guess I need to explain three things first basically. There are three things of utmost importance on this island. Castle. Demon Lord’s Castle and Underground Dungeon.”

Everyone made a bitter expression at those words

There was only the underground dungeon marked on the island maps.

The underground dungeon of the central island was filled with beasts with good rewards and that they could get strong and armed quickly.

And that was why everyone had used three tickets in order to come to the central island.

The castle they were standing on was one thing, but what was the demon castle.

The fairy laughed as it continued to speak.

“My explanation was a bit lacking but these aren’t lies. Can you see the castle afar?”

At those words everybody above the castle looked at something on the edge of the island.

It was an island but it was so big that they had to focus really hard with their eyes in order to see and figure out that it was a castle.

“That is the Demon Lord’s Castle which is your final destination. Well you would all die if a real Demon lord were to come out so we specially prepared a weaker version of the demon lord for you instead.



‘A Demon Lord...’

Hansoo chuckled.

He thought of the thing that would be causing a massacre against the other races on the 7th level of the Abyss.

If that thing did really come here then everyone would’ve been killed off just from a simple breath.

The people here, including Hansoo, were not of the level to kill it even if it was a weaker version.

“The Demon army is largely separated into the demons and undeads. The demons are the ones that give bountiful rewards that you think of. But the undead do not give anything. No item, no rune no anything.

The fairy rested for a moment and then continued to explain.

“And the castle is where you guys are at. There is 1 month. If you can withstand the attack of the Demon Lord and protect the crystal in the center of the castle you will win. You can also win by just taking over the Demon Lord’s Castle.”

Everyone made a bitter face at these words.

Since they could see the swarming armies on the way to the

Demon Lord's Castle at a glance.

When would they have the time to break through them.

It was obvious that defense was easier than offense.

“And finally, I should explain the underground dungeon. You can see multiple entrances on the insides of the castle right?”

Everyone nodded as they looked towards the inner parts of the castle.

There were multitudes of suspicious looking dungeon entrances located in numerous places.

There were entrances on the castle walls and even entrances in the drill hall.

“These are the same as the underground dungeons that you know of. If you hunt in there then the runes will drop like flies and artifacts will drop as well as you knew”

And then the fairy talked about colorless runes and artifacts.

And then everybody's expression changed.

A lot had happened but it had only been 10 days since they came

here.

They had become stronger physically but they only at a knife at most as a weapon.

But a chance to earn higher runes and artifacts.

The fairy persuades them to go into the dungeons asap in order to become stronger.

‘That damnable thing’

Hansoo sighed.

Since he knew what would happen if things went on like this

“Now. You will need a tutorial right? Since it’s only the first day there’ll only be about three attacks. There also won’t be any demons. Start!”

And soon a large amount of skeletons started rising up at a scary rate outside the castle with clacking sounds.

“Damnit... Isn’t that a weak mob that we fought around level 1?”

A person mumbled atop the castle walls.

The skeletons with blue fire burning in their eye sockets or the ghouls who were screaming out terrifying roars were not weak mobs in anybody's eyes.

No, they were actually armed better than themselves who only had a sword at most.

Since they were even wearing armors.

And soon the undead who had formed a battle line started to charge towards the castle door and the castle walls.

“Guard it!!”

And soon the adventures and the undead started to clash with a fearsome energy.

.....

“...We need to make roles.”

One of the Lords spoke with a fatigued expression.

There were a few Lords between adventurers.

The Lords had armed their forces and came into the Central island by getting three tickets in order to recruit stronger people.

There were 12 clans and Lords gathered in the Central Island.

They weren't even half of the two thousand people here but it was enough to speak out with power.

Since the other adventures didn't even have anything driving them.

But there were expressions of fatigue on the faces of 12 Lords after the defense had ended.

'Damn...It's really gruesome'

The owner of the symbol on Jimin, Yerin, grinded her teeth.

The attack continued for an hour, then they were given a three hour break only to continue fighting for another hour.

This had repeated three times.

When they first fought, about 30 didn't fight so about 1900 people fought above the castle walls.

1500 fought during the second time above the castle walls.

There were only 700 people left above the castle walls during the

final fight.

And thanks to that the castle was almost invaded by a mere tutorial attack.

‘Those damnable bastards...’

It wasn’t that they had died or got injured.

At first only 30 people had escaped.

The 30 people who had discreetly went below came back completely different after fighting two to three hours.

They had gained a large amount of runes and artifacts in that short moment.

The fairy did not lie to them.

Hunting in the underground provided a way for them to improve very fast.

The problem was after that.

After seeing the 30 people get strong, people who were defending the castle walls had gotten jealous.

The undead who were charging at them didn't drop any runes nor artifacts.

So they realized after one defending wave.

That they couldn't get strong defending the castle walls.

And at that moment around 400 people left.

They couldn't even control them.

Since the entrance to the underground dungeon was everywhere, they just simply escaped during the chaos of the battle.

But it was fine to this point.

Since the conscious that the undead's attack was threatening and that they needed to protect the castle was still alive.

The problem was the third wave.

The thirty who had entered the dungeon while the others had become a mess whilst defending had come out with a complete makeover.

They had fought relatively safely and collected a large amount of runes and artifacts. And the might of these artifacts were indeed

very strong.

The people who were below the Lord received the symbols because they naturally had good teamwork and good potential.

They were a level above the others in terms of skill.

But this gap was closed within a few hours.

And the 400 people who had entered whilst ignoring the second wave had also come out stronger.

And this had made people anxious.

They couldn't become strong if they didn't enter the dungeon.

So the people who had become anxious all left during the final wave and then the people left above with good consciences were just barely able to defend the wave.

The first day. Despite it being the tutorial.

They couldn't even imagine how they would defend starting tomorrow.

'Damn..Now it's hard to control them'



The people who had entered first got well along with each other so they got together to create a laughable group called <Semi-Basement Union>.

If their name was at least cool then it might've been less infuriating but it made them even madder.

And people who had escaped the defense line had been gathering under that group.

They had solved their guiltiness of betraying their comrades and going to the dungeon for their own benefit by grouping together.

They would be treated as traitors around the defenders but there was nothing to be embarrassed about when they grouped with others who had done the same thing.

And thanks to this the Semi-Basement Union had become as strong as the twelve clans combined.

And the root of the problem was that the twelve Lords thought they had to defend the castle and had not entered the dungeon.

They had to hunt in turns even if they had to defend a little harder.

They had focused on defending because they didn't think that the gap would be closed in a day like this but the effect of hunting in the underground dungeon was beyond their imagination.

And they had even created justification.

<In order to defend against the undead's attacks then you must become stronger below>

And this justification had been excusing away the guilt that the Semi-Basement Union and the others had been feeling.

‘Motherfuckers’

Yerin's beautiful face crumpled.

The justification was good.

And she approved of it.

They couldn't just defend in order to defend this castle.

They had to rotate between defending and attacking.

If they improve too much than they would invaded due to the weak defense and if they defend too much than they would get overwhelmed by the forces getting stronger and stronger.

But when would they actually come out?

The people were now setting camps in front of the dungeons and were going back and forth.

And they were acting like this while their powers were around the same level.

If their strength increased than they could see what would happen very clearly,

‘Damn... How do we solve this.’

While the Lords were racking their brains like this a commotion was going on below.

“This bitch! It’s a hero of justice really!”

‘What?’

They had poked their heads outside the windows with confused looks.

.....

“Bitch. Who are you to be ordering us? We are going to defend the line above tomorrow?”

Seonghoon, one of the original members of the group, shouted

aggressively.

A change starting from tomorrow.

What was this nonsense?

Hansoo nodded at those words.

“Yeah. Since we played our fill today, we need to start earning for our own food starting tomorrow. The people who had been defending shall go into the dungeons tomorrow”

“...You damnable fellow”

Seunghoon grinded his teeth.

He was one of the 30 people who had first entered the dungeon.

Why was he acting kind after he had started the whole thing.

And then Koonjin, who had been standing in the back, spoke as he walked out.

“Calm down. We aren't saying that we won't go out. If we hunt for two more days then we can defend it properly after getting stronger. We can trade then. Let's not fight between ourselves”

Hansoo smirked at those words.

By then the Lord clans would have become a huge mess.

‘That’s why it’s difficult’

Then there was no reason to splitting it perfectly like this.

“Dismissed. Starting tomorrow, everyone will go up to fight”

Gukjin crumped his expression at those words.

‘This guy had some guts...’

The reason why Gukjin had stopped the fight was because he felt that Hansoo was still very useful.

Since he had been advancing in the dungeon with that weird psychic powers.

They couldn’t have become that strong by themselves.

But the situation was now different.

“You were definitely stronger before but... if you come out like this then things might become difficult”

Gukjin looked at Hansoo coldly.

They all had one or two colorless runes originally.

And from today's hunt they had all accomplished in getting over 2 new colorless runes.

And a few people succeeded in making colorless runes for strength, stamina, agility and perception.

And because of this they knew.

Their colorless perception runes told them clearly.

That that guy only had strength colorless runes.

Hansoo chuckled as he touched his ear.

[Kang Hansoo] Strength(Colorless): 0.03%

Stamina: 88.8

Agility: 84.0

Perception: 85.1

Mana: 88.4

Magic: 84.5

Physical Resistance: 85

Magic Resistance: 85.3

‘Of course I can’t win like this’

There was a huge difference between one and four colorless runes.

And there were even differences in numbers too.

Hansoo looked around at the thirty people around him.

He didn’t like to interfere but they had to at least work their worth.

If the people here who only cared about self gain went crazy then the castle will get destroyed.

“You won’t listen if I just talk right?”

“...this bitch.”

Hansoo smirked as he put a cloud snack in his mouth.

‘There’s a lot to do in order to destroy the Demon Lord’s Castle in one month, I need to do things properly in the beginning’

They needed to work non stop for the whole month.

And even then it was just a possibility.

The difficulty of the Demon Lord’s Castle was that high and because of this it was necessary to clear it.

Since that’s the only way to challenge the final dungeon.

This was something that even Kwang Goonju couldn’t clear, he just went up after defending fervently.

There was only one person whom he knew that had cleared it.

‘Eres. Well I won’t be able to clear like you but...’

As long as you reach the destination, that’s all that mattered.

Hansoo, who had inhaled the smoke, looked around as he laughed coldly.



# Chapter 29 – Central Island (2)

---

Hooong

Hansoo stared at the Podao flying towards him expressionlessly.  
<Eripan's Podao>

A colorless artifact that increased cutting powers.

It was a pretty good one.

Cutting was considered a skill so it was something that required both Physical and magic resistances.

But Hansoo stared at the sword expressionlessly.

It was easy to dodge.

But Hansoo just charged at it.

It wasn't always good to dodge.

If you dodge then your balance will fall apart which will slow down your counterattack.

And if you had the confidence to block it completely then it was even less necessary.

Of course, resistances acted as something that reduce the damage but not as a shield.

It didn't make one invincible even if it was at the colorless level, so getting a severe hit can't have no damage.

If it had only that then he probably couldn't have beaten the Carnivorous beast.

However, that was only when you get hit properly, in a situation where you can see the attack clearly it was actually hard to even purposely get hit properly.

‘I can see it all’

Perception that had reached the colorless stage couldn't even be compared to the previous.

A more perfect battle foresight came into his head than what he had when he fought the Carnivorous beast.

Kududududk

Hansoo deflected the side of the blade perfectly with the ring on his finger.

Tong.

And at that moment the <Power Destruction> of Nurmaha's ring activated and destroyed the Cutting magic on Eripan's Podao.

“Urk?”

Even before the enemy could get surprised, Hansoo's fist had even pushed back the enemy's blade.

Then the sword which was dispelled of the cutting magic couldn't penetrate through his physical resistances.

Tumble.

Sacrifice your own flesh to break its bones.

A battle style that he had learned while progressing through the abyss.

You can't attack if you focus on dodging.

Then the enemy will live longer and this will in turn cause your few remaining friends next to you die.

As long as you don't die then you needed to kill them in one strike.

You can't kill if you are afraid of getting hurt.

Since as long as you survive, you can just heal it back up.

One shot one kill.

His battle style, which he couldn't utilize due to his lack of resistances, started coming back as his resistances and Nurmaha's ring was set up.

Since he had blocked it was now time for the neck.

The blade moved at an extreme speed towards Gukjin's neck after he had lost his balance.

“Uaauuuhhh...”

Gukjin felt like his soul was about to depart as he saw the blade that felt like it would cut his neck in two.

The damnable increased perception and agility was showing the

blade flying towards his neck clearly.

‘Oh right. I shouldn’t kill them.’

Hansoo came to his senses as he spun the sword around.

A podao that he had attained in the floors below.

This was also a colorless artifact.

It wasn’t an amazing artifact but if he hit them like this then their heads would get crushed without resistances.

He deactivated the skill on the blade edge and even turned the direction of the swing towards his abdomen.

It wasn’t that the abdomen was safer but he had an artifact that he picked up earlier <Abdominal Bandage of Revival>

It won’t destroy his intestines since he had even drained the strength from the strike.

Puuuk!

“Kuuaaak!”

‘It’s rather tiring trying to not kill.’

Hansoo frowned but he had to do so.

If he carefully whips them then he could send them to the battlefield after healing them.

He had to let loose a little bit.

This was not the Abyss

‘I need to save them. They are precious resources’

The event in the Central Island was a bit different than the ones so far.

It was not something that could be cleared by flying about alone.

He had to use as much as he could.

He had settled down about the half but the cloud snack’s duration still had around 8 minutes left.

‘...It’s a little wasteful to smoke the whole thing’

But Hansoo threw away his regrets.

Since he could raise all his runes to colorless stage by tomorrow.

Which meant this “guy” won’t be needed anymore.

Hansoo loosened up a little and then charged at the 15 people who were staring at him in fear.

.....



“...hmm.”

Jimin, who had been standing next to Yerin, gulped her saliva.

The thirty over there could go up against a clan if they combined their strength.

But they weren't even opponents for him.

He wasn't even dodging their attacks.

She had thought that he was crazy but she knew now.

That he had the confidence to ignore all those attacks.

‘How high are his resistances...’

She had learnt of resistances by chance from a skill.

It was so hard to raise that the person with the highest resistances only had around 30.

But they had realized that it was better to raise perception and agility to dodge than resistances so they gave up raising them.

Since it wasn't that the resistances absorbed all the damage if they raised it.

But her thoughts changed completely after seeing Hansoo fight.

There was no outstanding stat out of strength, stamina, agility or perception.

But his defense, ability to control his body and battle perception were at a level of a different dimension.

A battle tactic that was minimized in order to cut the opponent's neck in one strike.

Approach by dodging and charge whilst blocking with the body until they got into range, then kill them in one shot.

Physical similarities weren't important.

No, it was the exact opposite.

If the 4 great stats, which were strength, stamina, agility and perception, were similar to him then you would the instant you stand in front of him.

'What the hell is that ring also. Where the hell did he gain something like that.'

Jimin mumbled as she looked at Hansoo who had beaten down all thirty of them even before he finished the cigarette.

There were no deaths.

But the ones alive couldn't even meet their eyes with Hansoo.

Jimin could figure out why that was the case.

'They probably felt like their necks had been sent flying'

Those guys probably felt like their necks had been cut off.

Since they would've felt like that if they were in their position.

'Damn it.. That's just unfair.'

Jimin made a complicated expression.

It wasn't something that could be solved by raising stat, getting better skill, having psychic powers or having better artifacts.

She had realized that it would merely be pearls on a pig's neck if you couldn't melt them down into your own battle style.

She probably wouldn't be able to display half the battle power of Hansoo even if she had the same amount of stat, skill, psychic

powers and weapon.

And Yerin, who had been standing next to her, had the same complicated thoughts.

‘What exactly is his psychic power? Did he use a skill?’

She had thought that other than psychic powers like hers, no one would be able to be her opponent.

Since the rate at which one person getting strong could not compare with the strength of 50 or 100 people getting strong.

This was a huge misconception.

‘It exists’

An existence that could crush a clan in a headfirst clash alone.

Whilst everybody was looking at Hansoo with complicated expressions, Hansoo shouted around after staring at the half smoked Cloud snack for a while.

‘I should solve everything before I burn up the Cloud snack’

“Starting tomorrow the Semi-Basement Union and the Clan Unions will form an alliance then fight and defend on rotations.

This is my opinion and is not the answer so if you have any objections, come out now to talk. If it's reasonable we shall talk it out. Objections?"

But of course there wasn't anybody who could come out.

Of course they could probably win if all one thousand of them charged at him.

But no one had such thoughts.

But from the start, the Semi-Basement Union was a group formed by people whose greediness had advanced a bit far.

They knew that the people going first would be crushed to bits so who would go first.

And talking things out.

The one thing they wanted to suggest was this.

Let them hunt a few days more below without rotating.

The blade will come flying at them instantaneously and they knew from the way he fought that the ones who went first would get crushed.

And the clan unions behind wouldn't stand still either.

They were already on bad terms.

'This is indeed much more comfortable'

It was faster and more comfortable to crush down thirty of them as an example instead of going against all of them.

Hansoo, who had trampled upon the masses in one shot, turned around towards the Clan Unions as he spoke.

"Let's talk for a bit"

"...hmm?"

They were all anxious as they looked at Hansoo.

Honestly they had a bit of confidence in suppressing the Semi-Basement Union if they went crazy until now.

Since the people who had been gathered from understanding were like crumbs unlike them who were like a compact mass.

But if that guy acted as the centripetal force and ate all of Semi-Basement Union then they could not look down on him.

No, his battle force was very burdensome to them from the start.

Hansoo chuckled.

“Don’t worry. I don’t have any thoughts of becoming a leader”

He hadn’t tied them together in order to become a king.

It was better to leave things like that to people with appropriate traits.

The thing he needed was his own sphere of influence.

‘First I will put down the basic rules and system’

If these guys fall apart then he won’t be able to roam around because he would be defending.

‘Of course it won’t last long but.’

Hansoo mumbled as he walked towards the Clan Lords.

.....

“Hmm...”

Guktae, who was one of the twelve clan Lords, smiled in contentment as he saw the view in front of him.

‘That guy called Hansoo. He really did something admirable’

All the ruling powers within the castle were divided around the twelve clan Lords.

Hansoo’s words were simple.

<Being a leader is impossible without your psychic powers. Feed the useful ones as much as you can and get them into your clans while leaving the others under your command>

And at those words the others started to hurriedly absorb the remaining Semi-Basement Union’s people.

If there was only one clan then they probably wouldn’t have gathered this hard.

Since they wanted to fill them up with as many elites as possible.

But they couldn’t ignore anybody in this place because they were just mediocre roamers.

They had to decrease the amount of mediocre roamers and increase the number of their clans people in order to not get pushed back.



And in result the number of people in the clans had multiplied to about 1100.

Everyone had recruited people under their clan up to their limit.

So about 800 people were left.

And these 800 people were also divided fairly into the clans.

And after this, every clan had about 90 clansmen and about 70 normal adventurers.

A number that the clan could control.

And after they had completed this process, they agreed to continuously defend and hunt in rotations.

And when the runes and the system that everybody had to keep and follow were set up, Hansoo let go of his influence.

He was nowhere to be seen during hunts and had participated during defense but he didn't have any interest in being a leader.

<That's not something I'm good at. I can't catch up to something built with you guys' psychic powers as base.>

‘Well yeah...’

The psychic powers they had was the strongest point out of all the charisma, power and decision making abilities.

‘Though I want to use non-clan membered a bit more...’

Guktae didn’t like the fact that he had to treat normal adventurers and his own clansmen the same way.

But he couldn’t do anything.

Since they had set up fair distribution with rules clearly and the fact that the Semi-Basement Union had still existed.

‘Tsk. It would’ve been much better if those 30 had been killed then’

They couldn’t treat them recklessly since the 30 who had been beaten down acted as the main leaders and looked over interchanges.

Since they might move to another clan and the fact that the number 800 was still a very burdensome number.

‘It somewhat feels like raising a worker’s association’

Whatever happened there were some leisure now.

Though it was only a bit.

‘Hmm... then there’s no reason to send them all to defend’

The 1900 gathered here were not grouped stably.

Since there was always friction between clans to clans and clans to Semi-Basement Union in order to gain a bit more.

‘I should prepare a little’

Guktae, who had completed his thoughts, went into action immediatly.

.....

Yerin spoke with a cold expression.

“As I saw it the people assigned to defend didn’t do so. Didn’t your clan have responsibility of the Northeastern side? A few undeads had gotten past the other defense lines because you took out of the defenders to hunt”

Guktae, one of the clan Lords, smiled leisurely as he spoke.

“Oh come on. Miss Yerin. Listen to me for a bit. There’s quite a lot of leisure lately yeah? Is there a reason for all six clans to defend the walls?”

Some of the clan Lords nodded at those words.

Yerin grinded her teeth.

‘lot of leisure my ass’

These were people who were secretly pulling out defenders during waves to hunt.

She could have ignored them if they defended their spot properly at least.

Since they tried to defend without casualties with small numbers their lines had been pushed back and because of that there were damages to other clans as well.

Guktae laughed at Yerin as he spoke again.

“And look. We have some leisure now but does it make sense that the fairy is leaving us so comfortably like this? The demons are nowhere to be seen yet. We need to prepare for that moment and get stronge...”

“You are talking about some interesting things. Include me too”

Hansoo smirked as he entered the room of Lords and at that moment the expressions of a few other Lords and Guktae froze.

‘Well. Two days. It’s lasted a while if it’s this much’

But it was better to solve anything before the real start of the battle on the third day when the demons come out.

‘Kang Hansoo... This bitch. He was nowhere to be seen but why did he have to come now’

Guktae, who had been looking at Hansoo with a slightly anxious expression, shook his head.

It was said that they had to keep the rules no matter what but who could argue him for only this much?

And they had gotten strong in the past few days and their numbers had increased to around 160 from the 50 in the past.

He had also hunted but it seemed like his artifacts didn’t have much change and two days of getting stronger won’t change much.

Their situations were different from the past.

‘You raised us up like this. Let’s see what you’ve got to say’

There was no reason to back down.

Guktae calmed down as he started to look at Hansoo with a cold expression

## Chapter 30 – Central Island (3)

---

Hansoo spoke as he looked at Guktae.

“I was sure we agreed to abide by the rules. We said that you can take the things you earned while hunting but that we needed to keep a ratio between hunting and defending.”

Guktae made a slightly anxious face but then quickly shook his head.

He couldn't back off here.

‘Then my rebellion was useless’

They had grown to the point where nothing can shake them.

But this was only possible because Hansoo had given them all the power.

So he was curious.

What did he believe in to hand all the power over to them and raising them like so.

‘I need to find what he is believing in’

Their clans were at a level where it couldn't be compared to the ones of the past.

Because Hansoo in front of them had created a safe measure, they could fight faster and have less casualties.

And the non-members under his authority had become closer to him due to his hospitality.

Everything from quantity to quality.

Their power could not even compare to Hansoo when he had crushed the others on the first day.

‘Well... This guy did indeed get strong too.’

It seemed that he had gotten strong as well.

As if he had gotten strong by eating the colorless runes from the dungeon.

‘Though it's amazing that all his runes are colorless...’

It wasn't that blades didn't go through.

How could the speed at which one person gets stronger compare to the speed of 150~160 people getting stronger.



‘And I’m not alone’

At least a few clans had the same thoughts as Hansoo and the defenses will fall if they aren’t here.

So how could he attack him in such a situation.

The only reason why they had some leisure was because the 12 clans were defending, and if there is a fight then the defense will break apart.

‘But there’s still some leisure’

Which meant there exists something that could threaten them.

And Guktae did not like the current situation where he did not know what that could be.

‘I need to poke him a bit more’

Guktae, who had finished his thoughts, made a leisurely face as he spoke.

“I mean come on. Friend. Listen. Would that fairy thing leave us like this? It’s logical to be getting strong while we have the leisure to do so. You need to have some flexibility in the rules”

Hansoo made an amused expression as he spoke.

“Then why didn’t you discuss it with other clansmen? I’m pretty sure it’s in the agreement. The ratio of hunting and defense won’t be decided by one clan but rather on the consensus of six clans.”

“...”

Yerin glared at Guktae in anger.

Her clan had taken damage because that guy hadn’t followed that rule and acted how he wanted.

Jimin, her precious younger sister, was injured and was recovering.

Guktae mumbled inwardly.

‘What would it mean to follow such rules’

The reason why he had discreetly taken out some forces was to be better than other clans.

He knew instinctively.

This place was dangerous but it was a place where they could get

stronger much faster than in the other islands.

They needed to create a gap here so they can crush down the others after getting higher.

But if all the clans were to put with the same ratio of clansmen in the fight then what would it mean if there were 11 other clans at a similar level as his?

Superiority was a result of difference.

It hadn't been long since he had come here but he knew something very important.

'I must get strong whenever I get the chance to. Without stopping.'

That was the only way of winning.

'But I can't say it out loud like that'

"It was because it was a decision that came up whilst I was thinking. It seemed like everyone was busy."

It was an excuse that a dog wouldn't believe but that was why it was effective.

‘Quickly. Show me what you are believing in’

Does he act like this because he believes he can cut off their necks here?

Guktae knew that Hansoo wasn’t somebody dumb.

And there were plenty of guards outside.

He would get surrounded immediately.

But at that moment Guktae, who was making a leisurely expression, froze for a moment.

‘Wait. How did he get in here?’

At that moment Guktae felt a chill run down his back.

The location of their conference room was right below the lookout tower for the crystal they had to protect.

This was the safest room where the castle’s entirety was visible.

That was why they had decided for it to be their conference room.

Since it would be cumbersome if some crazy few ones caused

terror because they don't like how things are.

And they had selected the most trusted people in their clans as guards and had set them up outside.

Three from each of 12 clans to make 36.

The conference doesn't last long so if it wasn't a number that affected the defense and as a Lord, they should have at least this much privilege.

But there was no sound of clashing.

'Did he perhaps crush them all?'

Everyone had been looking at Hansoo with similar expressions.

Hansoo chuckled as he laughed.

"You see, I've gotten a new merchandise these days. To fit the season."

And then Hansoo sent in a bit of mana onto the bracelet on his wrist.

Shshhhhk.

Hansoo's body quickly disappeared from the site.

The eyes of the Lords became cold.

'That is...'

Invisibility.

If that was it then it wouldn't be a problem.

Since their perception stat wasn't that bad to the point where they would lose the enemy because they couldn't see something.

But they couldn't see where he was.

He had disappeared in front of them but they didn't know where in the room he was.

There was something that worked even against their increased perception.

There was a skill that helped with perfect invisibility on that bracelet.

If a weakling had used it then it would've been obvious but they couldn't know because of the bracelet's powers coupled with Hansoo's movements.

Everyone felt chills run down their back.

He had walked through their most trustworthy 36 clansmen.

Despite the fact that they were on extreme alert.

This meant that the amount of the clan's strength wasn't important.

What would it mean if the surrounding army was strong.

It would be over right away if he cut your neck in your sleep.

‘...He showed it to us on purpose’

Why would he show something so precious?

Something like that was a hidden card.

But he had shown it to them on purpose.

It meant do things well on their own.

Guktae finally knew why Hansoo wasn't interested in the position of a leader.

‘...You just need to take down the twelve of us huh?’

He couldn’t control the 2000 people alone.

That was impossible no matter how strong he was.

But that was possible for Clan Lords.

And that was why he had given 2000 people over to the Clan Lords.

Since as long as he controlled the twelve of them, it was like controlling all of them.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly whilst looking at Guktae.

‘I got it right on time’

<Arangkal’s Bracelet>

It absorbed the user’s mana to give basic invisibility as well as sending out force waves to interfere with the enemy’s perception.

And it was something he needed to acquire first in this dungeon of the Central Island.



If this is combined with his movements then most people wouldn't even be able to find him.

Of course it would be useless in battle because of the aura and harsh moments but this wasn't for such times.

He had invested all his time in the dungeon in order to gain this.

'Well. Thankfully I got all my runes up to Colorless.'

Hansoo, who had finished his thoughts, showed himself back to the Clan Lords as he spoke.

"It may happen that a person makes a mistake. We can solve it with talks."

"..."

"Then the profit you gained from extra hunting will be shared equally with the clansmen participating in the defense and you can just fix the ratio of hunting and defense tomorrow right? Oh and give payments to the injured for compensation."

This was exactly like it was written in the original rules.

A few Clan Lords grinded their teeth at this but nodded their heads.

They realized that they weren't in a situation to try to show their guts anymore.

But Guktae still looked at Hansoo just in case.

‘Shall I provoke him a bit more?’

It hadn't ended yet.

Even if they didn't follow the rules, he wasn't in the situation to attack them.

Since the castle would become dangerous without them.

There was a huge difference between twelve Lords and one person.

And he probably wasn't the only Lord with the same thoughts.

But Guktae shook his head after seeing Hansoo's eyes.

‘I can't’

Those eyes weren't those which would let him go.

He was smiling but the eyes were cold.

He had seen those eyes before.

‘It was like this before’

Those were the same eyes as when he crushed the 30 people on the first day.

He realized after Hansoo’s eyes which were looking for a reason to give a good lesson.

He was looking at it in such a way that if he beat one down in order to show the others then it would be fine.

He hadn’t killed them before but there was no proof that he wouldn’t this time.

‘Just this much for today.’

Udududk

Guktae took a step back after mumbling inside his head.

He couldn't stand the fact that somebody else was above him.

He really really did not like that.

And that was why he wanted to have a stronger power than others.

But Hansoo had clearly shown him who was holding onto his lifeline.

His rage was bubbling but he had to retreat for today.

'I shall excuse you just for a while'

Guktae was a person who firmly believed in the limitations of one person's strength.

The person in front of him was a bit different and that was why he had lost superiority here but eventually a chance will come along again.

The conference ended like so and Hansoo chuckled as he looked at the people walking down.

‘Well. Somebody who uses their head is better’

You can’t give up on a blade because the edge was too sharp and it might cut you.

It was better the sharper it was.

‘Not listening to my words is in the expectations as well.’

There would be nobody left on this island if he cut off their heads because he didn’t like them or because they were greedy.

All of the tutorial was full of greedy people, it was just that the degree of their greediness was different.

It wasn’t that all of them had turned greedy in just 10 days.

Since 10 days was a bit too short to change one’s true nature which they had lived with for decades.

But ten days was more than enough to kill of every kind person who would care for others.

And people realized as others quickly died off next to them.

That encouraging good and punishing evil was only possible in a

book or something.

This was not a place where a kind hero of justice would survive but rather a place where someone who would hit that hero from the back would survive.

‘Well. Eres was a special case.’

If you searched then a few would exist but then they really needed to be blessed.

Since it meant that they had the luck and skill to keep their kindheartedness whilst surviving.

There weren’t many people who weren’t greedy in front of death and the people who had survived were learning of these things very quickly.

The game was very long and they could only survive by crushing others on the island above.

So how much would their insides hurt since they had to distribute things fairly in such a situation?

This won’t last long either.

So he needed to do something before then.

‘The thing I need to get next is...<Judgement of Dekrados>’

The fairy indeed did not lie.

Since it was clear that this was a land of opportunity.

‘It’s coming.’

Hansoo looked at the sky.

And soon after, the fairy appeared.

.....

The fairy which had appeared suddenly above the castle.

‘Can’t it just piss of...’

Everyone in the castle frowned as the fairy appeared.

The fairy greeted everyone as it saw their looks.

“Hi everyone! Aww, Don’t frown like that. I’m not here to lay my hands on you.”

“ ... ”

“If you look at me with such distrustful eyes then you’ll hurt me. I’m just here to tell you something which I didn’t tell you about. It’s not much. If the crystal gets crushed then the whole island will fall. Well. It won’t fall right away. It’ll fall slowly in about 10 to 20 days.”

“ ... ”

There wasn’t much shock between the people.

Since they had expected as such.

The fact that they had to protect it with all their strength did not change.

The fairy spoke as it looked at these people.

“The actual important part is the second part. You were all comfortable so far right? The undead is... well, just child’s play. This team defended better than I thought. The demons will start coming out on this third day!”

“...fuck.”

Everybody cursed as they looked at the fairy.

That son of a fly was like a messenger of destruction.



There wasn't a bit of good news whenever it opened its mouth.

The fairy made a slightly hurt expression at those words but then opened its mouth again.

“You guys are too much. Don't you realize how good of a news that the demons are coming out is? This is a really rare chance for you guys!”

“...”

Everyone looked at the fairy at those words.

The fairy did mention it before.

That there were extravagant rewards.

But even then it would be all over if they died.

“It isn't some crappy rune or artifact. If you kill the Demons then a mini-crystal comes out. Hehee.”

“...?”

“If you collect the Mini-Crystals then you can trade it for a really good artifact! It is much better than the ones you have. It's obvious

that the reward would be better the more you collect right? Look at the catalogue in your pocket for those. By the way there aren't many demons, you need to try harder than the others in order to get the crystals"

Everyone made a sour expression.

Even if they had such things, it would merely be pearls on a pig's neck.

And how would they collect enough from the bits the demons dropped to trade it for an artifact when there's thousands of people?

They might not be able to lay their hands on one after a whole month.

Even if they did lay their hands on it, only the Clan Lords would do so.

'And the thing that that thing will throw at us won't be weak.'

As the people made sour expressions, the Fairy added another thing.

"Oh. I didn't say this yet. There's another use for the crystal."

"...?"

“As long as you have the crystal, you can leave this island to go to the island above at anytime. Isn’t it a really good privilege? The people with it won’t need to care if everybody dies either from falling after the crystal gets shattered or from being invaded by demons right? A total of five people can move on. Heehee.”

No matter if that giant crystal broke or not.

No matter if the defense line broke apart or not.

They can escape this dangerous situation to a different island at any time.

Which meant that this was a privilege equal to a life.

Everyone’s expressions changed at these words.

The story was different then.

The fairy smiled as it looked at everyone’s expressions.

“You get it? About how important of an existence the Demons are? Be strong everyone. One demon coming your way for today!”

And the fairy disappeared as a beastly looking otherworldly existence started to slowly approach them.

Everyone started to calculated their risks.

There wasn't enough information yet.

They didn't know how strong the Demon was and they also didn't know how the others would act.

But one thing was clear.

That it was better to get it before others do.

They didn't charge in first but they had no thoughts of missing this chance.

Since it wouldn't matter if they just kill the person who obtained it as soon as they get it.

Everyone knew that the best scenario was to attack them as the one who charged it was was about to kill it so everyone stood still while standing close to each other. [\*PR Note: Kill Steal!]

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at this scene.

‘It starts now.’

A different name for the Central Island that attracted people

below with its sweet runes and artifacts.

<Graveyard>

If you disregard the people who went up using the crystals then the survival rate here was 8%.

And this was only when the defense is successful. Since they would all die if they fail.

And this was all because of that damnable Crystal.

‘I must take it so nobody uses it’

If five die in order to attain it and another five go up using it, then 5 more will die from lack of numbers.

Which meant in conclusion, five will live and ten will die.

It was not an object that should be allowed to be set free.

And at the same time it was something he needed to collect.

‘I will collect it and exchange it for <Judgement of Dekrados>.’

Hansoo walked forward after looking at the others for a while and everyone’s eyes shone at Hansoo’s back instead of the

Demon's.

## Chapter 31 – Central Island (4)

---

The Clan Lords cautiously but quickly set up an arrangement to surround the demon.

But their opinions were split.

Some of them thought,

‘That...if we get it, it’s good’

The mini-crystal was good whether you used it or collected it.

There were quite a few nice items that could be bought with just two or three of them.

<The Flag of Ariknon Hill>

It created an aura around the person holding the flag which increased the speed of regeneration as well strength and stamina by 5%.

In the situation where the artifacts and runes didn’t have much difference between people, the artifacts that could be gained from the mini-crystals showed a clear difference from other artifacts.

An object that could create differences between Lords.

And five people per one mini-crystal.

This was a significant number even to a Lord.

If 100 were to be released and the clans were to distribute them, it'll still be eight per clan.

It meant that during a serious emergency, they could move with enough forces to act as a basis for a new start.

And there were many other uses for it as well.

But some Clan Lords thought as such.

‘Damn.. They can’t be spread around.’

The people moving with the mini-crystal will be happy.

But then what would happen to the ones below.

And the clans weren’t the only ones here, there was no way for them to monopolize them.

They couldn’t make every one of their clansmen escape no matter how many they collected.



‘In that case... it’s better to defend instead.’

The fairy wanted them to suffer but it did not want them to all die.

This was probably set up so they could survive if they tried hard.

They had to decrease the number of people ascending prematurely as much as possible.

They needed to turn them into artifacts as soon as they got hold of them so they could get rid of other thoughts.

The two types opinion were different but the conclusion was the same.

‘I’ll obtain it no matter what.’

The twelve Clan Lords made a slightly anxious expression as they set up the formation.

If the clansmen thought as much, the non-clansmen’s thoughts were a bit different.

‘Fuckers. They just keep trying to suppress us. Do you think we don’t know what you guys are thinking?’

Hojin grinded his teeth.

The clansmen and non-clansmen got treated equally and received equal distribution if one were to look from the outside.

But this was only due to the fact that the situation around these few days was quite stable.

They could feel it when they looked at the hunts of the clansmen.

As soon as you receive that weird looking symbol, you start caring for each other.

On the other hand, the clansmen stayed together with them because they thought that the non-clansmen needed help seeing how they were doing but the way they treated them was almost like they were treating potential criminals.

They didn't allow any form of communication between non-clansmen under different clans and they purposely separated hunting grounds between them to stop any form of meetings from happening.

In such a situation, who between their 90 family members and possible 70 enemies would be thrown off first in a dangerous situation.

Even if their battle strength were similar, the non-clansmen would be picked off one by one.

And no matter how one thought about it, this world didn't seem like the difficulty was set such that it was ok for them to just defend decently.

Look at that demon at this moment.

There was no way that that thing would be weak and plenty of them would die from now on.

So they had a lot of opportunities during the next month.

So they had to take care of their own lives.

‘But...it would still be hard right?’

At this moment a lot of people, including themselves, had already gotten close to the demon.

Since there wasn't anybody who wanted to charge towards the Demon they just saw.

And the people behind them were more of a problem than the demons.

There probably aren't many who aren't aiming for that crystal.

But they were only taking glances, nobody was able to charge at it.

Logically, they knew that the chances that a crystal drops to them was incredibly low.

There's even a chance they would get stabbed in the back even if they manage to almost kill the demon.

Since even he would do such a thing if he could get the crystal by killing that guy.

‘...If somebody was fighting it already there might be a chance for me.’

At that moment something happened.

Kudududk

Something jumped out from the center of the defense formation.

The existence which was charging towards the demon at an incredible speed shouted loudly.

“Get back as much as possible!”

‘....that guy is?’

Hojin’s eyes shone as he looked at Hansoo who was charging at the demon whilst shouting so loudly to the point where it resonated throughout the whole battlefield.

.....

“Get back!”

This guy extremely dangerous.

‘Yeah. Just look like that.’

Hansoo looked at the Lords who were also looking at him from around the battlefield and then dashed out quickly.

‘I’ll get it.’

The medium-sized Greatsword in Hansoo’s hands sliced the air as it made a heavy noise.

Kuuuaaangg!

The Demon, which had been standing still, made a beastly noise as it intercepted Hansoo by swinging its fist.

Keeddddk.

Hansoo’s greatsword sliced the skin but could not make a deep injury.

And if that wasn’t enough, the area that had been injured was healing rapidly.

‘As I expected... even when it’s a weaker version.’

Demons.

Clansmen of Evil.

Their appearances were similar to humans.

If you discard the fact that they were 4m tall and had horns

growing out of them.

But this guy was an entirely different species from humans.

‘I can’t let down my guard even for a moment in order to kill this guy.’

It was rather ok until now.

The cloud snack gained as the hidden piece had been thrown out after being used out cleanly.

One had been left over since his runes had been all changed to colorless but he had smoked it deliciously as well so it had been taken care of cleanly.

He had increased his defense and resistance with Nurmaha’s ring and the Rune Eater Snake.

Now there wasn’t going to be a situation where he would die accidentally from a skill.

But this still wasn’t enough.

‘Attack power is lacking.’

Showing off his attack power against humans who had low

resistances and who couldn't really take hits well as a race was merely a childish act.

Most Humans here were close to being superhuman but their ability to take hits and their defenses were the same as normal humans

A situation where they would die if they got stabbed in their vital parts.

On the other hand, the things he needed to slice apart in order for him to get to the Demon Lord's Castle were Demons. Even if they were weaker versions.

Defense and Resistances aside, their ability to take hits were on a different dimension because they're from a different race.

These guys even had two hearts so they would continue to fight even if you stabbed one of the hearts.

'I need to fight it for around half a day just like the Carnivorous beast.'

rephrase. '

In order to beat it using the decent weapon he was holding that could be picked up in the dungeon, he was holding, he basically needed to wrestle it.



That was why he needed to raise his attack power.

Using the crystals he would get from killing the thing in front of his eyes.

Runes will increase steadily as he hunts but the thing that dictated the attack power were artifacts.

‘Hooh’

Hansoo ruthlessly charged at the Demon while swinging the medium sized greatsword in this hands.

All of Hansoo’s senses were focused on the Demon.

And the Demon’s movements started to form a three-dimensional image in Hansoo’s head.

And soon Hansoo and the Demon started to fight whilst creating noises like the storm.

But just a short moment after he started to fight, a movement that he expected but didn’t wish for, happened outside of Hansoo’s senses.

‘Tsk’

Hansoo slightly frowned.

.....

Hojin mumbled as he slowly approached Hansoo.

‘Though it’s strong...’

The Demon’s physical ability was not something he could go up against.

Since Hansoo, who was going against it, looked like a monster.

But aiming for the crystal wasn’t something that one needed to be strong for.

‘Looking at the situation... don’t go too close...’

It wasn’t the time to drop his guards yet.

Since it would be dangerous if that thing decided to go for the weaker ones first.

But then there won’t be space for him to interfere if the demon died, or was about to die, if he was too far away.

A few people who had similar thoughts as Hojin started to close in the formation that surrounded the demon slowly.

Which meant that they would look for chances whilst Hansoo was fighting.

‘Hoo.’

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

Their thoughts weren’t wrong.

Since there was definitely a chance that they could go for i.t

But how could the demon’s physical abilities be all it has.

There was another frightening thing about Demons other than their physical abilities that was on a different dimension compared to those of humans.

<Racial Skill>

The problem was that there was no way for him to know what this racial skill was.

Basically, it was random.

Because of this, even Hansoo wouldn't have had thoughts of attacking it without his resistances and Nurmaha's ring.

‘It seems like it's not using it yet... it's definitely an area of effect attack’

If it was a single target skill then it would've already used it.

Hansoo, who had been pondering for a moment, made a cold expression.

‘Well. Their purpose is clear.’

It wasn't bad to increase the level of alert on others by killing a few of them.

No, it was better to clean off people like these by borrowing the Demon's hands.

Since he wouldn't have any surplus power to escape from fighting the Demon.

Even before Hansoo's thoughts could end, the body of the Demon, which was standing still until now, started to heat up.

It started to prepare this skill because the number of people around it had gotten sufficient.

Huuuuuukk.

And soon the surrounding air started burning, then it became a ring as it exploded outwards from the Demon.

The black flame, which haad spread out in a reddish blackish manner, radiating outwards as it scorched the air.

Hansoo, after staring at the black flame for a while, applied Nurmaha's power, power destruction, onto the sword he gained in the underground, <Karkil's Medium sized Greatsword> and then swung.

Hoooong.

The Nurmaha had split the black flame just like that.

'As I expected... it isn't something to laugh at'

But Nurmaha's power was not something that one could use for free.

Hansoo frowned as he felt the mana drain out from his body.

If his magic, which increased the might of Power Destruction, didn't reach the colorless stage then he might not have been able to cancel it out and may have just been covered with it.

The wave in front of him had been split but the other parts were ruthlessly charging as it headed towards the others.

“Goddamit! Get back!”

“Uurk!”

The people who had seen the waves of black flame started to hurriedly run back but some unlucky people had been swiped up due to the fast speed of the flame.

The bodies of the non-clansmen that could not escape to the back slightly touched the wave.

Slightly.

But the people who had been touched by the flame cringed as they screamed.

“Goddamit! Uuaaaak!”

The flame instantly enlarged as if it swallowed the person whole.

And the person covered in flames screamed as he rolled about on the floor.

The fairy had only thrown one at two thousand people.

How could such a thing be weak?

The only reason why it had thrown it was because it could still damage them greatly even if it went up against two thousand.

He hadn't raised his resistances for nothing.

But attacks like that which covered a large area was much weaker in comparison to single-target skills.

But this was only the case for him, who had resistances as well as Nurmaha's ring, and the other adventurers who did not have magic resistances had a lot of strength but didn't differ much from ordinary people when it came to flame resistance.

Which meant that there wasn't much difference between them and an ordinary man being swept up by a gas container explosion.

'He was from the blaze descent huh.'

<Blazing Inferno's three ringed Demon>

This guy's Type was the worst thing possible for people other than him.

It might be different if he was of a different descent but the other adventurers basically had almost nothing they to do against this

guy.

The clansmen and non-clansmen hurriedly backed off as they saw the attack that had bursted out.

They had realized that its Advantages were too horrid to do something with numbers.

‘Just stand like that.’

Hansoo, after looking at the people who weren’t approaching him anymore, charged at the Demon just like that and the others made a reluctant expression as they looked at the Demon and Hansoo

.....

Kududuk.

Hansoo breathed out roughly as he cut off the Demon’s head.

‘Hooh...’

As Hansoo cut off the Demon’s neck, a few runes and a small crystal came out.

When Hansoo grabbed the runes with his right hand, the rune



eater snake zealously ate the rune as it distributed the runes evenly.

And as he grabbed the crystal with his left hand it turned into a small symbol and got engraved on his left hand.

The eyes of the people who were watching changed slightly.

They couldn't kill it.

But there were no rules which said the person who killed it had to take it.

As everyone's expressions turned grim, Hansoo, who had seen this, smirked.

“Woah. Don't stare at me in such a scary way.”

“...?”

As everybody looked at him from those words, Hansoo smirked as he spoke.

“If I go up because it's too scary then who's going to fight that thing from now on?”

Of course they could kill it if they charge it with numbers.

Since they could use a special method which would supplement their resistances with skills.

But the fact that casualties would increase was definite.

# Chapter 32 – Central Island (5)

---

Hansoo shrugged at the glares directed at him.

Of course he had no thoughts of going up.

This was merely a threat.

Since he wasn't to here to pick up a few more runes.

And because of that he couldn't concede any of the crystals that would come out from now on.

“The Lords should have a conversation with me.”

Everyone made a bitter expression as they approached him, they disappeared from sight to somewhere else while everybody was watching them.

.....

“Tsk. I'm not sure if it was a good thing.”

Guktae mumbled alone after the conference ended.

Hansoo's proposal was very simple.

<I shall take care of all the Demons and Crystals from now on>

‘He’s really a special case.’

Guktae actually knew that he would concede all the duties of defense and roam about alone.

Since there’s nobody to stop him even if he did so.

It would be just that if he decided to not hunt any of the undead and hunt continuously below and only come back to cut off the Demon’s head around the time everybody became a mess fighting it.

Since the possibility of somebody blocking him if he told them he would take the last hit was a question in itself.

Who could block him with such power and invisibility.

But Hansoo didn’t do such things.

<If that happens the Rules crumble apart. Don’t worry. I won’t neglect the defense either.>

‘...What is he thinking? What?’

In conclusion, it meant that he would take over the risk of the

Demons by himself.

If you take into account the strength of the Demons, it meant that Hansoo took on a huge burden alone even if you were to calculate for the benefit of the crystals.

From his actions it seemed like he a person who grew impatient because he couldn't save someone.

Though there's nothing bad about it.

‘The demons... are peculiar.’

There wasn't enough information because only one had come out.

He didn't know if they all used similar skills or if stronger ones would come out from now on.

Since the problem wasn't strength but rather their Advantages.

It didn't seem like that they couldn't beat Hansoo if everyone in the clan charged at him.

But things like that had really horrid Advantages.

Like rock paper scissors.

It was already hard to kill it due to the fact that it took hits very well but for it to also use area of effect magic.

It wasn't that they couldn't kill it if they used skills and traits but at least a few tens of deaths would occur.

It wasn't a low number even in terms of the whole and if that were to happen every time the Demons came then they might all die off.

So Hansoo's of proposal of him taking over the problem with Demons was not bad.

And the crystal wasn't that tempting either.

'That's just a trap.'

It wasn't really attractive to the Clan Lords who had to save as many as possible from their clans even if the artifacts that could be gained from collecting those were good and even if the crystal could be used in emergencies.

And the reason why they wanted to get it so bad was because it would be very straining if it were to fall into the hands of others.

No one knew what sort of crazy thing a Sovereign who had attained his own safety would do when things became dangerous.

Since they could just escape even if the defenses fall.

‘It’s just better for nothing to get solved.’

Him monopolizing it all was the best option but this was impossible.

The many Clan lords distribute the crystals.

This was a good plan but it didn’t really mean much.

There won’t be much profit if you think of the numbers they would lose while acquiring the crystals as well as the fact that these would make it difficult to determine each other’s strength.

And there were a few non-clansmen with a bit of strength.

These guys won’t hesitate to hit them from behind during the decisive moments of taking the crystal.

Since they could just take the crystal and go up.

In whichever way, it was better if both the demons and crystals didn’t exist.

The fact that Hansoo would take everything didn't differ much from the rule which said the drops from a monster which somebody killed goes to that person.

‘Though it gets on my nerve that one person gets all the crystals...’

He also looked over the catalogue.

Incredibly menacing artifacts were lined up.

If he had to choose between these things going into the clan lord's hands or Hansoo's hands then he would choose the latter.

<Drum of Lempal>

‘Isn't it crazy. Such a thing...’

An object that you could buy with 15 crystals.

All of your allies within 300 meters had all of their stats increased by 15% even if you were just holding it.

And if you beat the drum, the effects were even more glorious.

One beat to increase the regeneration speed of those who heard



it, two beats decreased the perception by 15% but increased strength and agility by 25% and three beats even increased resistances.

You couldn't use it for 5 days once you beat it three times but even the thought of another clan other than his having this was frightening.

And no matter how he looked at it, the worth of this thing was not merely 15 crystals.

The only reason he could think of as to why it had been listed as 15 crystals was one.

It was a price that seemed like could be gained if the clan lords hit and killed each other and fought.

If it was an absurd price such as 100 then he might've given up but 15 was pretty doable.

And it seemed like every object on the catalog was like this.

He didn't know if it was intentional but all the group use objects were much more formidable than self use objects.

As if it was promoting them to hit and receive hits from each other en masse.

‘Wicked bastards.’

Guktae clicked his tongue as he thought of the fairies.

Then Sunghoon, one of the clansmen, standing next to him asked.

A person who had gotten the position of a personal guard because he was his friend and most trusted person.

“Then shall we give up making the special force?”

Guktae shook his head at those words.

There was no rule saying that the special forces had to be used against Demons only.

“Please keep preparing them. And... there probably is somebody who has known Hansoo since the first tutorial. Please find them no matter what and gain some intel. Whatever you can get.”

Sunghoon wholeheartedly nodded his heavy expression at those words.

And Guktae threw another sentence at that Sunghoon:

“And please go down there and find as many people with special

psychic powers.”

2000 people.

If you search then they would exist.

Psychic powers that were good against Invisibility.

No, not just invisibility.

He had chosen people based on how good they were against other humans because he had thought power was the most important thing.

This was a miscalculation.

Everything from that Demon to that guy called Hansoo.

Their opponents were not mere humans and problems that would be hard to solve with people who could swing their swords well will continue to come up from now on.

In order to prepare for all sorts of situations, he needed people with vastly different skills and psychic powers.

He had to prepare thoroughly from now on.

‘It’s ok as long as I do it properly from now on.’

He had met a tiger after looking at deers until now.

Which meant he just had to prepare a way to deal with the tiger.

Since when did humans fight against tigers barehanded.

‘Still... it doesn’t seem like it’ll be hard to leave this island at this rate?’

Hansoo would take care of demons as others dealt with the undead in turns.

He didn’t want to acknowledge it but the rules were set up without much commotion thanks to Hansoo.

Casualties would constantly occur but a lot of people could survive at this pace.

‘But I should still prepare.’

There was no need to think of the tiger as a friend even if it is helping you.

Guktae started to prepare as he thought of Hansoo who could be anywhere.

.....

“Wow... It seems like a lot more of us would survive than I thought?”

“It seems so....”

Everyone gazed at Hansoo who was fighting fiercely with the Demon in the distance.

At first there was a bit of a resistance when Hansoo said he would monopolize the crystals but after a while it was clear that it wasn't a bad choice.

‘Yeah. It's already hard for us to have a look at crystals... It's better for that guy to grapple around with Demons and for us to all ascend together alive.’

20th day of the defense at this moment.

The amount of people alive was a huge number of 1300.

600 had died but if they had gone up against the demon, and if the crystals were set loose, then the number of the people alive and dead would be reversed.

But Hansoo, who had cut off the Demon's neck, shook his head.

‘....Now the hidden piece will activate.’

Defensive Battle.

It really didn’t suit his personality.

But despite that, he had been focusing on the defense whilst jumping around back and forth and killing off demons constantly.

He was managing with his best ability in order to gain crystals to arm himself and to set up the rules so no internal fights occurred.

He hadn’t even taken a step towards the Demon Lord’s Castle because he was also taking care of those who were trying to aim for his back.

Since as long as the hidden piece didn’t activate, there was no point in going to the Demon Lord’s Castle.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

‘I’m not sure if you guys coming back would have been better instead’

He had seen and learned from watching Keldian and Eres but he could only imitate them and do as well as them.

But Hansoo shook his head.

If it was something that could be solved with one strong sovereign then there was no reason for humanity to have gone extinct.

He had come back in order to do things that Eres couldn't.

'Keeping more than 50% of the people alive by 20th day. I succeeded Eres. But didn't I win this? I saved even more.'

Hansoo had a broad grin.

He couldn't unify them as well as Eres but had reduced the damage from the Demons as much as possible so he saved even more.

And when this happened, the fairy, who couldn't watch the peacefulness of the people, appeared and the hidden piece got activated.

'It's here.'

"Hello! Everybody! It's already the 20th day! The people here have really defended well! Normally there's only around 500 alive by now."

At these words the people made expressions full of pride as they still grinded their teeth.

Since it felt like they fucked the fairy up from the fact that they dodged the hidden motives of the fairy and had defended in such an excellent way.

‘If it stays like this...then we can ascend without many problems’

But the fairy grinned as it looked at those people.

“But what do we do. It gets really bad from now on. Everyone, do you even know how to get out of this island?”

Everyone mumbled about at those words.

How could they know such a thing?

The fairy laughed as it spoke.

“Very simple. After a month, a portal will open from the crystal you guys had been defending. You guys can ascend higher through that.”

“Huh...”

“But there is a very slight problem. That crystal has a limit. Only



500 people can leave through that crystal.”

“...”

“What to do? Too many survived. Usually I don’t even need to come out... since occasions where more than 500 people surviving don’t happen often.”

Everyone’s expressions started to gain an edge.

The current survivors were 1300.

And if they defend in this spirit then at least 1000 could live.

However, the amount that could leave was 500.

But then the fairy grinned whilst watching these people.

“Don’t worry too much. There’s a place with a much larger crystal! There’s more than enough for all of you to escape through in that place!”

“...where is that?”

As someone asked, the fairy grinned as it pointed to the Demon Lord’s Castle which could be seen from afar.

“Over there. It normally doesn’t work but... I’ll start it up now. Heehee”

Hooooong.

At those words, a grand noise started to resonate from one location within the Demon Lord’s Castle and everyone who heard it grinded their teeth.

And at the same time the people started to split up.

And Hansoo also had a cold expression.

‘It starts.’

Actually, this was more of a surprise event if you looked at it differently.

It was a hidden piece that didn’t happen unless the requirement of more than 50% living by the 20th day has been accomplished.

Since if it was below that, the numbers would reduce to below 500 whilst defending.

Would Eres have gone to the Demon Lord’s castle because she wanted to?

Eres didn't know what would come out when he went there back then.

He didn't know what he would gain but it was obvious that more people than if they were defending would die.

In a situation where Eres wanted as many people to live by combining their strengths, there was no reason for him to go.

But there was only one reason which made Eres head towards the Demon Lord's Castle in such a situation.

It was all due to this damnable hidden piece.

Eres had defended too well.

And ironically too many people had survived.

While other teams couldn't even keep 200 alive out of 2000 on average, Eres had kept over 1000 people alive before the 20th day arrived.

It was the result of firmly rejecting the mini-crystals and combining the people's strengths.

Actually it wasn't only Eres who had activated this Hidden piece.

There was a few times when people who had gained amazing traits and skills had fought well against the demons and forcefully united the remaining people in order to keep more than 1000 people alive has existed.

And the people standing in front of the hidden piece had to make a decision.

To head towards the Demon Lord's Castle despite the dangers.

Or defend and defend... and have a huge battle royale in order to choose the 500 in the end.

And after collecting all the intel from the Final Brigade, there was nobody he knew who had chosen the first option other than Eres.

It was obvious, since at least 500 could survive even if they didn't go.

And if the 500 people who could live said that they won't go, the remaining people won't be able to go anyway.

Since they won't have enough power.

"We aren't going. It's better to focus on defending."

"We don't have a reason to go either. Instead of everyone dying by going, let's save 500."

The forces split up and grouped up with Clan Lords as the center.

‘He had taken these people huh.’

Hansoo started to admire Eres.

And thought.

That he would never be able to become like Eres in his life.

Hansoo walked forward as he warmed up his body.

## Chapter 33 – Central Island (6)

---

‘Let’s see.’

Taejin, one of the Lords, mumbled inwardly.

He didn’t know if the Demon Lord’s Castle was dangerous or not.

But he just needed to decide between the two.

Between whether his clansmen could be included within the 500 who would go up or not.

If that was possible then there was no reason for him to go to the Demon Lord’s Castle.

‘I need to do some traffic control.’ (\*TL: Where have we heard this before? o.o...)

<Let’s talk>

There was a location where they had gathered one of their clansmen each for quick communication during times of emergency.

And they could talk through these people and voice their opinions.

It was created for an emergency and if this situation wasn't an emergency, what was this then?

And their decisions had come to a consensus through the people who voiced the Lord's opinions for them.

<First, we do not fight between ourselves. When we ascend we will go up after making an alliance between the clans>

If they fight with other clans so they could take all of their members up with them then they would all die.

If that happened then even 300 of 500 was too much.

The best option was for the twelve clans to fill up the 500 spots one by one to ascend.

If that happened then they could at least take 40~50 people up with them.

They didn't like the fact that all twelve clans ascended alive with similar ratios but it was still a profit.

They had gotten strong quickly by going through the underground dungeon and were armed with artifacts.

They didn't know the situation in the other islands but if they

took 40~50 elite members like them then they could still utilize them to an advantage above.

‘This is solved for now.’

Once a consensus is met then an answer was set.

<Defense>

If they defended here then there was no such occurrences where the Clan Lords and their elite members couldn’t ascend.

Since the problem between clans had been solved, the problem was now non-clansmen.

‘Hmm...there’s quite a lot of non-clansmen.’

It was better the more people you had for defense but the story changes once the people who could live was set to 500.

The current total population was 1300.

About 600 clansmen and 700 non-clansmen.

The non-clansmen felt uneasy joining clans after seeing the strange scene where people, who were on bad terms even to the point where they tried to kill each other, unnaturally and



forcefully get reconciled through the symbols of the clansmen.

They would guarantee their safety but it was obvious that people will avoid it if they see their free will being controlled in such a way.

And even more so if there was an existence above them called the Lord whom they had to listen to even if they were to command them to suicide.

They might've gone in if the situation was dangerous but the fact that the defense progressed flawlessly also contributed in keeping the ratio of clansmen and non-clansmen.

But there were too many non-clansmen currently to leave them to just die.

If only 600 clansmen are left then the casualties would increase at a shocking rate.

So they had to stop them from going.

But they didn't need to stop them.

“Our clan chooses to defend!”

“Us too!”

Every clan started to shout their choice in defense from all over.

And then all the non-clansmen mumbled.

‘There’s no way they could leave’

Taejin laughed inwardly.

The weak always had their choices limited.

And now those people had to wait for their choices.

.....

‘Bitches...’

Sangtae, one of the people who were in a non-clansmen union, grinded his teeth.

‘Dammit... I should’ve went into a clan when thing were normal.’

But he couldn’t go in from uneasiness after seeing the clansmen who had received the symbol.

He hadn’t joined a clan because he thought he could ascend without many problems if they defended like this but for such an

unexpected event to happen.

‘Well. Even if I did go in, I might’ve been cut.’

500 was that low of a number.

But in such a case, something bad would happen.

There was no way they would leave a spot for the non-clansmen to ascend.

Since they’ll be too busy trying to take all of their people.

It seemed like the other non-clansmen who were quick to catch on had realized this already as they mumbled about.

They had three paths they could choose from in that case.

Exclude the clansmen and head towards the Demon Lord’s Castle with non-clansmen.

Form an alliance between the non-clansmen and fight the clan for the spot of 500.

And final choice.

Stay with the clans to fight and hopefully wait for the empty spot

that may come their way.

‘Goddamit.’

Sangtae shook his head.

In reality the two options above were basically impossible.

The non-clansmen adventurers had long been ripped apart by the clans.

The two options above were only possible when they form an alliance and agree with each other to create a clan vs non-clan composition.

But if they only had the choice of choosing from the two above then they would’ve gathered their strength in some way.

Since they couldn’t just sit and die.

The damnable fact was that hope still existed.

‘The third option is the problem.’

If they continue to defend then the number of clansmen will go down.

But those guys probably want to fill up 500 completely to ascend.

Since it was better the more you had if you thought of the place above.

Which meant, there will be space where non-clansmen would be able to come into.

A much higher chance than the first two which had the chance of a complete massacre.

‘Damn.. can’t really do anything then.’

If this happened then as long as they don’t think of getting all the non-clansmen to have a fight, they could only get on the good side of the clan unions.

It might be barely possible if the 700 remaining people gathered their strengths but if they were split like this then they had no choice.

‘Fuck...As long as we group up then we might be able to do something.’

Actually the main point of this game was very simple.

If they split their power then both sides die.

So everyone had to choose one side.

Either to defend or to attack.

But if one side advocates strongly then the other side could only obediently follow unless they were determined to have a battle royale.

So there was no way for the non-clan powers to win.

Since the clan unions were unified in thought whilst the adventurers of non-clan powers were split up all around.

And even if they were to emphasize that it was more beneficial for the clan unions, they could only get pushed around whilst holding onto a dim thread of hope.

Sangtae shouted loudly after pondering.

‘This can’t go on like this.’

“Hey! Is there nobody to go with me! Damnit! You know what will happen if you stay here!”

A few non-clansmen flied at these words but nobody had walked out on their own.

‘Damn it...’

But while the Clan Lords were looking at Sangtae with ridicule, one person came out from the crowd and walked up next to Sangtae.

And Sangtae frowned as he saw this.

Since a person that was totally out of the expectation had walked out.

“Why are you all so surprised?”

Hansoo, who had walked out into the eyes of the people, shrugged his shoulders as he looked at them.

“...if you stay here then you will definitely be part of the 500 though.”

Hansoo chuckled at Sangtae’s words as he spoke.

“Well. There’s always personal circumstances. I’m going to the Demon Lord’s Castle.”

And then one of the non-clansmen shouted with hope.

Everyone knew.

That Hansoo had a strange psychic power.

‘Did he perhaps... choose to go to the Demon Lord’s Castle because he knows something?’

“If we follow you, will it be safe?”

The reason why their ankles were caught was because they could not even imagine how dangerous the road to the Demon Lord’s castle would be.

Since if there was a confirmation for such a thing, there was no reason to stay around here.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders at those words.

“I don’t know. The same amount of 500 might survive if we go there, or maybe even less”

Will more survive if they all combined their strength to head towards the Demon Lord’s Castle?

He didn’t even know this.

Since there are too many factors.



But he knew one thing for certain.

If they stay here then no more than 500 can survive.

If 600 were to survive in the end, will the remaining 100 peacefully die?

Of course there will inevitably be a collision and the others who aren't part of the 500 will die.

On the other hand, Eres had managed to ascend with 600 people out of 1000 after choosing to go to the Demon Lord's Castle.

Hansoo chuckled as he saw the dejected looks on the people as he spoke.

“But if you aren't part of a clan it's better to go. If you stay here then the ones taking the risk are you so why would you try to stay here.”

Even if they were die off the same way, it was a problem of ratio in the end.

Even if the same amount of people die on the way as they would if they defended, once they arrive there then they can ascend together.

But on the other hand, if they were stay and defend and succeed

the non-clansmen who aren't chosen by the clansmen would all die.

At those words, the expressions of everybody who had been pondering this turned fierce as the mumbling got louder.

“I’m going.”

Taehee questioned Hyunwoo’s words which he spoke out after hearing the story.

The Hyunwoo she knew was a safety-first believer.

But then he was risking on such a dangerous looking gamble.

“Really?”

Hyunwoo smirked as he spoke.

“There’s something I had found out about him separately.”

There once was a movement that went around in order to collect intel about Hansoo.

And as such movements occurred, Hyunwoo became curious as well.

No, this was not only Hyunwoo's question.

Everyone was curious about that guy fighting there.

Since it was weirder to be not curious about that guy who was so eye catching.

And so the rumors of rumors and opinions of opinions combined.

It started from the people who had been with Hansoo since the 1st tutorial area and went up to the people who had seen Hansoo so far where the intel grouped up and got organized.

And the conclusion that came from it.

‘He can be trusted.’

Surprisingly they said he was strong from the start.

There were plenty of ways to take advantage of others in the beginning.

He could kill people to pull runes.

Or he could hunt and steal all the runes by suppressing others with his strength.

But he wasn't like that.

No, he was actually extremely thorough in distribution.

He had eaten things to the point where it was close to monopolization but as they heard, he only fought in dangerous places.

Which was the same if you looked at him fighting the demons right now.

‘And I like the fact that he doesn't get swept around by useless emotions the most.’

One of the things he hated the most were people who wanted to get carried around.

But as they heard, if they couldn't pay up for their own worth then he did not care about them.

Of course they couldn't confirm just by piecing together rumors.

There was just one important fact.

That others were probably thinking the same way as him.

‘The chance has come.’

It has been a while since the rumor of him being rather trustable had been going around.

Since he proved it with his actions rather than words.

He didn't neglect in hunting down the undead while taking down Demons.

And because of that he was worth having as the center.

And they had to group up in order to break the game where the clans were the center.

If they go on with the current situation, the clans won't have to take any risks while they had to shoulder all of the risk.

The non-clansmen adventurers would die off in piles even if they chose to defend.

And the ones who couldn't get into clans would be thrown off in the end.

Hyunwoo shouted loudly as he walked towards Hansoo.

“I'm following!!!”

And then Hyunwoo discreetly poked Taehee.

“Hey. You follow too while shouting loudly.”

Taehee chuckled as she shouted.

“I’m going too! Dick-like clan bastards!”

‘...you don’t have to go that far. Why is this girl’s mouth so dirty?’

Well whatever happened, as the two walked out straightforwardly as they shouted, mumbles were heard from all around then curses were heard as well.

“Eyy. Bitches. Being bossed around is annoying!”

“I’m going too! Fuck! There’s no way that the fairy would have set it so only one of attack or defense would be easy!”

They weren’t heading out because they were just pissed.

Since it was an important judgment where their lives were at stake.

But if they carried on like this then the situation will flow the way the clans wanted after they swing back and forth under the

clan's dominion.

They were confident that this was more dangerous than going to the Demon Lord's Castle.

“This crazy...you can't move! It's not child's play, why would you move at such incitements...”

While a clansmen got flustered and tried to stop them after seeing everyone moving and mumbling, something ruthlessly flew down and embedded itself from the sky.

Boooom!

“Huuuuurrrk!”

“Why are you blocking them when they're saying they'll go on their own feet. Leave them be.”

Hansoo smirked as he spoke.

The Clan Lords turned gloomy as they saw the giant chain sickle which had flown from Hansoo and landed in front of the clansmen's foot.

It was a weapon Hansoo brought back one day whilst fighting the Demons.

They had known what this was.

Since it was on the catalogue.

<Judgement of Dekrados>

Cost.

60 crystals.

An armament that couldn't even be compared to <Drum of Lempal> which costs 15.

From the beginning the fairies probably didn't expect that someone who would buy such a thing would come out .

Since they probably didn't think that there could be a guy who could monopolize all the Demons that came out.

“You guys over there should think about it again? Since a man's thoughts can change.”

Guktae clenched his teeth as he looked at Hansoo who was talking to them whilst retrieving the chains.

‘Damn it... He's the problem again.’



The thing that made so many people move was not the words that Hansoo had spoken.

The core point was the actions and the power that grinded the Demons which Hansoo had shown while defending.

He might've been less annoyed if they struggled to form a non-clansmen union but the fact that this had happened because a guy who didn't do anything and only hunted stepped out and spoke a few words annoyed him even more.

Because the effort in which they put in to gather people and have a power struggle felt like it was being mocked.

‘Damnable bastard.’

Guktae was locked in worry as he looked at the 200 non-clansmen who were running behind Hansoo and were increasing rapidly.

‘Do I need to pull out the special forces?’

Guktae pondered if he should forcibly shut this situation down with the hidden piece that he had prepared for a moment but he shook his head instead.

If they were to collide in this situation, it would be a battle royale.

‘I’ll follow your orders for now.’

Guktae started to quickly converse with the other Clan Lords.

# Chapter 34 – Demon Lord's Castle (1)

---

‘Well. It practically became like this.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the scene in front of his eyes.

600 of clan union and 700 of non-clan union.

How would the clan union stay behind if all the of non-clan union decides to go to the Demon Lord's Castle?

The result was already set.

‘I should at least do the thing I need to before I leave.’

He couldn't leave a single margin of error.

As soon as Hansoo made his decision, he started to loosen up the <Judgement of Dekrados> and wildly swung it around.

Charrrrrk.

<Judgement of Dekrados>

The fact that its chain could stretch up to a few hundred meters, the fact that the chain won't break even if a Demon were to pull on it as well as the shape of the scythe were very alluring but the true

worth was in its skills.

The skills that <Judgement of Dekrados> possessed were two.

One was on the chain and the other was on the scythe attached to the end of the chain.

The skill that was on the Scythe was <Judgement>.

It absorbed the mana of the user and then gave powerful destruction and explosive capabilities gave to the scythe.

It was a skill that was simple, but extremely formidable and faithful towards its objective as a weapon.

It was better than frost skills or explosive flame skills that were uselessly extravagant.

And the skill on the chain was <Suppression>.

This was not a skill that was activated by spending the user's mana.

It actually activated by absorbing the enemy's mana and the one who got tied by it would constantly lose mana as well as get cursed with <Suppression> which lowered all their stats.

A formidable artifact that was befitting of 60 crystals.

Actually there were a few artifacts that Hansoo could purchase with 60 crystals but Hansoo had chosen the chain scythe.

Chain scythes were very difficult to use.

And in this world, if the costs were the same then there were as much advantages as weaknesses towards each other.

Difficult weapons often had high specs if they had similar costs.

This was the same for Judgement of Dekrados.

The 2 skills on <Judgement of Dekrados> were simple but a lot stronger and more efficient than other artifacts.

‘Weapon types aren’t important.’

Hansoo wasn’t really lucky in terms of artifacts.

He couldn’t even imagine obtaining an amazing artifact and using it constantly like Kangtae so he used whatever he could get his hands on or had good options.

And the chain scythe was included in those.

The Chain Scythe, which had a higher chance of having stronger skills in comparison to other weapons, was very attractive to Hansoo who didn't really have his traits and skills set up properly and because of that he would use it for a long time.

He had gotten a habit of sustaining such a battle style for over 50 years so he could use most weapons properly.

Which meant that using it wasn't a problem.

Only the options were important.

Hansoo, who had loosened up the chains, used centripetal force to throw the extremity of the chain scythe towards a direction aggressively after the chain had lengthened quite a bit.

Hooooouuk!

The extremity of the chain scythe flew towards the crystal on the top of the castle at an extreme speed.

The skill which was on the chain scythe, <Judgement>, activated as it drained Hansoo's mana.

Booom!

The crystal broke apart as it couldn't withstand the might of the skill on the chain scythe and the people who had seen this shouted

in shock.

“What the fuck!! What are you doing!”

Hansoo smirked at those words.

“What’s the problem is we’re going to advance. If we leave a hole to escape then we’ll all die.”

“ ... ”

A few people made guilty expressions at those words.

These people had thoughts of returning to the castle if they advanced and things didn’t really roll out well.

And this tendency was rather strong in a few of the Clan Lords of the clan unions.

But only for a moment.

A clansman who had been sent below came back as he spoke.

“...The dungeons are closed.”

“Tsk.”

It seemed like the dungeon closed along with the appearance of the fairy.

Which meant that leaving was indeed the better option.

Since they'll just get piled up if they stay here.

Kurrurru.

As the crystal exploded, the island started to shake in a rough manner.

And then the fairy's voice resonated from the air.

<Let's see. There's 13 days and 10 hours until the island falls. Heehee. I give my praises for such courageous actions. Be strong until then!>

Everyone made a complicated expression at those words but then shook their heads as they headed towards the Demon Lord's Castle.

.....

The road heading towards the Demon Lord's Castle was structured very differently from the ones until now.



Unlike the situation during the defense where the non-clansmen and clansmen were mixed up with the 12 clans as the center, it was now split up between clan unions and non-clansmen adventurers.

It was something they had realized painfully from what they had been doing until now.

That the clan unions can throw them off at any time.

And they needed to group up in order to prevent that.

Of course everyone's thoughts couldn't be the same so there were a few people who went into the clan unions who have caught them in their eyes but there were still about 500 people grouped up separately.

“...So you came to me because of that?”

Hyunwoo and Taehee nodded at those words.

“Yeah. We're just following while believing in you.”

Hansoo opened his mouth after looking at Hyunwoo for a while after those words.

“There isn't much that I can do for you.”

Hyunwoo chuckled as he spoke.

“Don’t worry. I’m not asking you to take care of all our lives. Just stay in that position well.”

He didn’t long for care.

He was content if Hansoo acted as the flag which everyone could see and follow.

Since they had been pushed around because they didn’t have that flag.

There isn’t a single person who wouldn’t try to improve their future in times of danger in such a damnable world as this.

And because of this, the most important thing was to have enough strength to save themselves.

Since they didn’t know what would happen during times of crisis no matter how good of a personality they had during normal times.

And because of that, Hansoo was more than enough.

‘And well. Even if we only follow, the surrounding enemies almost get smashed apart.’

Taehee clicked her tongue as she looked at Hyunwoo while he was thinking about this and that.

‘...It seems like he has been infatuated.’

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at these two.

‘Hmm.’

Though they seemed like they were well bunched up, and though they were just following him around, a human’s thoughts are something which changes very rapidly in times of crisis.

Towards a safer side.

But Hansoo just shrugged his shoulders as he advanced.

‘I just need to do what I’m supposed to do.’

The three gateways they needed to go through in order to get to the Demon Lord’s Castle.

Door of Bones, Door of Flesh and Door of Blood.

Hansoo quickened his footsteps towards the first gateway in the distance, the Door of Bones.

.....

Chararak.

The chain, which was a few hundred meters in length, cut apart the air restlessly.

It wasn't only the extremity of the scythe that could be used as a weapon.

The scythe pulverized the enemies as the scythe should and the chain was coiling around the surroundings without rest.

Once the chain suppressed the enemy enough, Hansoo flickered the edge of his right hand to control the scythe and charged forward with a blade and stabbed down at the enemy who was entwined by the chains.

Kuuuuuuuaaang!

One of the demons, which had been stabbed by Hansoo's weapon, screamed.

Hansoo didn't just have one weapon.

There were 7 daggers around Hansoo's thighs and there was also a Podao and a medium sized greatsword by his waist.

There weren't any limitations from carrying this many weapons due to the increased strength.

The problem was whether he could utilize all of these weapons or not.

From the <Renoperon's red dagger>, which Hansoo had stabbed into the enemy Demon, an effective hemorrhage bursted out as blood started to flood.

Kaduk.

Kaduduk.

Hansoo didn't rest there as he started to put injuries all over Demon's body as he stabbed his daggers into its body.

Judgement of Dekrados wasn't used properly just because one used <Judgement>.

Rather, the true worth of the weapon shone when you were able to use <Suppression> effectively as well.

And the chain and scythe were restlessly flying around Hansoo's surroundings.

But of course it wasn't alright even if he was Hansoo.

<Thorn Hell's Plate Armor Demon>

When it received the attack of the enemy, a strange curse injured the body of the one who had attacked them.

Hansoo was holding on with his resistances and Nurmaha's ring but blood was flowing out from his body as injuries occurred one by one.

But if one were to hesitate because of such things, they would receive an even greater injury.

Kuduk. Kuduk.

Hansoo ignored the light wounds as he canceled out the curse which activated when he stabbed the heart of the demon with the Nurmaha's ring, took the runes and crystal which had dropped from its body and then flew off somewhere else as he bound up his surroundings with the chain and stepped on it.

Since there wasn't much time for leisure in the current situation.

“Uaaaak!”

“Damn! It's a mage! Kill that first!”

“Aaak!”

Endless screams could be heard all around.

A huge number of undeads and Demons which couldn't even be compared to before.

They weren't really giving large amounts of casualties to people.

Since the demons came in pairs when they charged and since both of them were bound by Hansoo's chain.

And even now, one had just died at Hansoo's hands and the other one was fervently battling Hansoo and his chain scythe.

The thing which had caused the most damage to them were mages.

Skeletal Mage.

It was a weak mob in games but reality was cruel.

Every time skills exploded out from it's hands, even though it was only poison, frost and fire for a total of three elements, it froze people down to their bones and burned their skins.

And the fact that it was long ranged and had an AOE move bugged them more.

Hansoo's chain scythe was turning them into powder whenever it had the leisure to but there were many occurrences where people were screaming here and there after getting hit by the skills.

And the Clan Lords were looking at their surroundings with cold expressions.

It was important to maintain their battle strength before but it was even more important as of now.

Since they could take all of their maintained battle strength up along with them.

In the defensive war, where the defense areas were set between them, their improvements and the damage they received were very similar.

But in a situation like this where they were advancing, it was much more different.

Since no matter how fair you set up the rules, one's actions changed how much damage they received by a lot.

But no matter what Guktae did, he was still the leader of a group.

He had the duty of keeping alive as many clansmen as possible.



Was being greedy that bad?

‘We could at least adjust the speed at which we advanced if the Crystal wasn’t destroyed. Damn...’

No matter how much of the battle strength he wanted to save, there was a limit to it.

The vibration which resonated throughout the island was getting larger.

The fairy had told them that there were over ten days left but nobody knew if those ten days were enough for them to get to the Demon Lord’s Castle.

Playing chicken is only when you can, what sort of meaning would playing chicken have in a situation where you would get massacred anyway if you hid around in the back.

The Clan Lords could only advance forward while accounting for the danger.

‘Anyway...Are the demons coming out at similar difficulties?’

Guktae looked at the Demon, which Hansoo was killing, coldly.

He was worried that a stronger demon might come out when they got to the Demon Lord’s Castle.

But it seemed like these were at the same level as those during the defenses.

And at that moment a noise came from the ground as another demon came up from beneath.

“Uaaakk! Another one came out!”

“Dodge it!”

Unlike the defensive stage where they had something to protect, this was over as long as you could arrive there.

There was nobody who wanted to go up against the strong Demon.

All the non-clansmen flew away like flies in all directions.

But a few Clan Lords laughed as they looked at the chaos.

‘It came out at a good timing.’

<I shall test it out first. Go.>

If they don’t account for their weaknesses then they were a failure as a human being before being a Lord.

The clansmen of Evil and Kang Hansoo?

Those crazy things were jumping about around him and showing off their strength.

Didn't he prepare something for such a situation?

The 15 special forces, which Guktae had been saving, came out.

These were the guys who were armed with the runes, skills and artifacts of other clansmen.

Warriors created to fight monsters with their raised resistances and attack power.

'Though I've been saving them in order to reduce casualties...'

He was going to save them if stronger Demons came out on the way to the Demon Lord's Castle.

But what if they were around the same level?

'If it's that much then they can hunt without casualties.'

They didn't need to depend on Hansoo.

‘I’ll show you. As to who should really be in the center.’

The thing that they weren’t comfortable with wasn’t just Hansoo’s power.

It was the fact that he was acting as the center of the non-clansmen.

And the reason that he could fight the Demons up front was a large factor as to why he could do that.

Since they believed that it’ll be safer if they followed Hansoo rather than the clans.

But if they could fight the Demons then they didn’t have a reason to group up with Hansoo as the center.

They was no worry for traitors either.

Since the clans could just take them all in.

‘Well. It is just so even if it seems uncomfortable.’

They will soon realize.

That it’ll get more and more dangerous and that they had to hold onto a reliable pillar.

And in order to do so, he had left them alone with the mages.

‘Let’s see what happens...if the non-clansmen that you trust in so much come to me.’

There was no reason to hurry.

They could advance slowly, like water being absorbed through.

“Go.”

At these words, the fifteen special forces that Guktae had prepared advanced forward in order to hunt down the Demon.

# Chapter 35 – Demon Lord's Castle (2)

---

“Huh”

Hansoo chuckled at the movements he felt behind him.

‘I wondered what he was preparing so hard for.’

Hansoo nodded.

It seemed like they were well prepared as they employed the method they learned from Hansoo fighting the Demons.

Artifacts that could slow down the movements of the Demons instead of ones that would damage them fatally.

And resistances and buffs to deal with the basic AOE attacks of the Demons.

They had a decent assortment.

Their movements and attacks couldn't follow up to Hansoo's.

But they were filling the gaps with various skills and traits.

‘If you do that then you can definitely hunt it safely.’

The opposite method of Hansoo's.

If Hansoo was trying to catch it as fast as possible by taking on the hits while trusting his resistance and his dodges to suppress it down with an overwhelming attack then this method was a safe hunting method in order to receive no casualties whatsoever.

The fifteen special forces were rotating endlessly as they injured the demon.

This was possible because they could withstand the Demon's skills to an extent.

They couldn't reduce the damage like Hansoo but they were compensating it with healing skills.

While Hansoo was about to finish off his Demon, the special forces had also pulled out both the hearts from the Demons.

The people's expressions turned grave.

They had thought that only Hansoo could kill the Demons but the Clan Lords were killing them well too.

And as they started killing the Demons, the other clan Lords pulled out their own special forces that they had hidden and basically crushed the mages apart.

The mages were very threatening to the non-clansmen who didn't have my magic resistance but it wasn't really hard for the special forces, who had magic resistances as well as heals and other skills, to deal with it.

And the most attractive thing was their number.

Hansoo was one person.

That fact did not change no matter how strong he was.

But the sum of the different Clan Lords' special forces were over 100 and they were hunting that much more efficiently.

“...if this happens then isn't it better to just join the side of the clans?”

Somebody mumbled.

Hansoo was strong but he only had one body.

And the non-clansmen were constantly getting injured from the mages.

On the other hand, the Clan unions were advancing while receiving the thorough protection of the special forces.



“Bitches... if they had such things then they should’ve protected us too.”

As one person gazed at the special forces in resentment, a friend next to him, whom he had gotten close to during the defense, shook his head.

“Those words don’t even make sense. You think they would protect you.”

Why would they protect them?

They weren’t even part of the clans.

The friend, who had been talking, looked at the Demon Lord’s Castle in the distance.

This was the first day.

There was a long way to go.

Disliked things were disliked things, so he had to decide rationally.

He started to ponder after laying down his possibilities of choices.

Either to stay in the non-clansmen union.

Or shamelessly go under the clan union.

‘...it’s not that bad?’

The reason why he was worried about being thrown off was because the number that could move through the crystal was limited to 500.

But on the other hand, that problem did not exist anymore.

No, the clan unions would actually welcome them instead.

Since the adventurers who received their symbols would become part of their powers and ascend together.

‘Well. Let’s at least talk about it. If not then I can just stay here.’

It wasn’t bad for them no matter what happened.

If they were denied then they could just follow Hansoo’s back.

And if they were welcomed then they just needed to fight under the clans.

And soon multiple people with similar thoughts started to head

towards the clans and Guktae smiled inwardly as he saw this.

‘As I thought.’

What kind of loyalty would these guys have.

They were just grasshoppers looking around for safe areas.

The only reason they had gone under Hansoo was because he looked quite reliable and because it would be dangerous for them if they stayed behind.

As long as their motives for going under Hansoo were clear, the answer was already set.

‘Yes. Come. We will take you in.’

It won’t take long.

Until he will be left alone.

‘I’m curious. As to how far you can go alone.’

.....

“...The people keep leaving. Is it alright like this?”

Hyunwoo mumbled as he looked at the 300 or so people left

‘They’re all so amazing.’

Hyunwoo mumbled quietly.

They had split up like this within a day of deciding to group up.

No, if you look at it another way then it might be something obvious.

There aren’t many people who have something more important than their own lives.

Especially in a world like this where family, love and faith was hard to maintain.

Hansoo chuckled at Hyunwoo’s words as he spoke.

“Well. It’s not that bad. If they fight that well.”

Hansoo actually thought that the clan unions were rather good.

Those guys, who had set up a way to fight against a difficult enemy with near perfection in 20 days, were actually worthy of praise.

And no matter what happened, it was easier to control them if there were more people in the clan union than in the non-clan union.

In conclusion, this would increase the number of people who would live and even the speed in which they would advance towards the Demon Lord's Castle.

“...But doesn't the fact that they're taking the crystals piss you off or anything?”

Hansoo shook his head at Hyunwoo's words.

The things he had been worrying about until now were two things.

People dying at the hands of demons because they tried too hard to get their hands on the crystals and the people who had gained the crystal ascending just like that.

But such things won't happen anymore.

There was nothing bad about it because the special forces were hunting demons safely and it was only fair for the killer to take the crystal.

And Eres had saved 600 out of 1000 people.

If they advance like this then it meant that the Clan Lords and their core members won't fall into danger.

But why would they leave their gathered powers here and ascend with the crystals?

Actually, if they fought better by buying artifacts with the crystal then it was even better for him.

Since he will be able to arrive at the Demon Lord's Castle with the best bodily condition.

'It'll be so much better if they only did things up to this point.'

As soon as his words ended, Guktae walked towards him audaciously from afar.

"Since we caught it the ownership belonging to us is definite right?"

Hansoo nodded his head.

"Of course. The ownership of the items that dropped from the beast or demon that you killed belongs to you."

Guktae shrugged his shoulders.

‘Well yeah. He won’t fall for simple things such as this.’

He had thoroughly guarded the crystals from being distributed.

And because of this, if he had said something about it then he was going to show some supremacy with that as the reason.

He was strong but of course they would win if they put their special forces, which numbered over a hundred, in front of them and pushed him back.

And currently the people under him were quickly dropping out.

He thought that once he suppressed him, the 300 people stuck to him will drop off in piles but to come out in such a calm manner.

‘Well. It’s not that bad.’

It wasn’t that bad as he saw the guy who hadn’t allowed for his intentions to bend act like this.

‘Well. We’ll be in more of an advantage as the time goes on.’

There was no need to hurry.

Since the gap will continue to grow.

Once he gathered the crystals and got equipped with artifacts like the Drum of Lempal, the gap will clearly get widen.

“Ey. Fucker.”

Hansoo chuckled at Hyunwoo, who was cursing as he looked at Guktae in the distance, and then started to count the number of crystals he had.

‘But if I collect crystals at this rate then I can even obtain <Justice of Dekrados>.’

<Judgement of Dekrados> was a set item.

If he were to obtain <Justice of Dekrados>, which he needed 55 crystals for, then he would be able to progress through the Demon Lord’s Castle with much more ease from the synergy of the two.

If they advance on friendly terms like this then he might even be able to save more than Eres.

‘Though it seems that it’ll be hard.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then jumped at the Demons just like that.

.....



Kudududk.

Hansoo swung his scythe widely towards the special forces that were slowly approaching the Demon which he was fighting

The ground dug up following the path of the scythe and because of this the special force members stopped their movements.

Hansoo smirked at those special forces.

“Don’t really need to help though.”

Sunghoon, one of the special forces, grinded his teeth and then spoke out.

“But no matter how I see it, it seems very unfair.”

“What does?”

Sunghoon pointed at the corpse of the demon which was on the ground.

“You are catching three at the same time. And with just a chain on you.”

Since they had gotten under the clans, they couldn’t prevent

damage from the mages from reaching the clansmen anymore.

And because of this the Lords split up their special forces.

60 people were fighting the demons with around 12 people to 1 while the remaining 40 were to go up against mages.

But while the 60 were hunting five, Hansoo killed three by himself.

As if he had spat on them already, he tied them up one by one with the chains and then killed them off one by one.

There was a difference in speed due to the fact that they were fighting rather safely in order to prevent injuries from happening to every precious special force member whilst Hansoo was charging in like a maniac without caring for his body.

But even so, they were 60 people.

And not any 60, these were the elites who were created by combining psychic powers, skills and runes by using the resources of the whole clan.

Hansoo smirked as he spoke.

“That’s why I first moved to action when you came to kill them. Just like before.”

‘...damnable bastard’

What had occurred was that he had split up two of the three demons, who were tied up by the chain, to approach another six of them at a time.

He had tied up three but only fought one at a time so they had split up a team to approach the other two which were tied up.

And then this guy just let loose the chains which tied the two up, which of course made the demons go on a rampage, and almost caused one of the special forces to die.

‘Damnable...’

It seemed like there were many demons but once they started killing them, there weren’t as many of them.

The number of demons which had appeared to them within the past three days was about 50.

While they killed 30, Hansoo had eaten up 19 of them all alone.

And because of this the Lords couldn’t keep up their face.

Since they had killed 30 with 12 people.

And they couldn't even get 10 when they fought for 10 days straight.

On whose nose did they want to stick this? (TL: Korean saying describing inadequate things)

‘This won’t do.’

Sunghoon quickly backed off with a cold expression and then hurriedly walked towards his Lord, Guktae.

.....

‘A genius is really a genius.’

He had a gist of it but for their hunting speeds to have that much of a difference.

‘Well. The crystals aren’t the important things.’

The crystals were bonuses no matter what happened.

Guktae sighed after making a fed up expression then thought of his motives.

He had thought about the past when he read the Romance of

Three Kingdoms. (\*TL: Whoever does not know what this is, go read it.)

<It's already tiring even if three parties of similar strengths exist.>

But here there were 12 clans.

It was likely that the stage would get smaller as they went higher and higher.

If they think about organizing things later then it'll be too late.

'Let's see... if you say it takes 10 days then the remaining time is 7 days.'

If you discard the fact that they had to go up against undeads and demons without stopping as they advanced, it was a rather long time.

But it wasn't that long in order to complete his plans.

'I acknowledge the fact that you're strong.'

Acknowledge.

He was really strong.

Even more so than the clan he created with all his might.

And he will think that from now on, there will be times where his individual strength would surpass the strength of a group.

‘I really want to take him.’

But he had already looked into this.

As he heard, he had already denied the proposals of other clans.

But everyone probably poked him once at least.

And to his knowledge, he denied all of them.

‘It seems like there’s a reason...’

He had many things that he kept hidden.

The fact that he didn’t ascend despite having crystals was suspicious too.

‘Well. Thanks to that there’s an opportunity for me’

If I cannot use it then others cannot either.

That was too dangerous.

Even if things were to get dangerous because of his disappearance, he could just escape using the crystals along with his core members and special forces.

Though they had a connection, the level in which the Sovereign and the ones below, the people with symbols, were very different.

A Sovereign wouldn't tell a general to not go to war because he treasures the general.

‘There's no need for me to do it personally.’

It'll be over if he made somebody go get hit by the blade and die.

Even better if the blade got damaged.

‘Let's see. Somebody who would be the easiest to make him fall into such a trap is... Taejin.’

<That guy called Hyunwoo is still sticking around right? Yeah. Tell that Hyunwoo guy beforehand.>

Guktae ordered something to the clansmen below through the message as he got up and headed towards Taejin.

.....

Taejin stared coldly at Hansoo, who was standing in front of the giant door made of bones.

Because he thought of the words of another Clan Lord, Guktae.

<Hansoo has already agreed to act together with our clan. So tell the special forces to avoid friction with him. I'm telling you this because I'm worried that you are having too many frictions between you and him these days despite you also being one of my secret allies.>

And then he said that this fact needed to be remained a secret from others in order to avoid the eyes of the other clans.

‘...this bastard. You deny my offer but accept Guktae’s?’

Taejin grinded his teeth.

Of course he wasn't dumb and didn't believe right away.

So he had threatened that Hyunwoo guy who was always with Hansoo.

And he found out that there indeed were positive talks going between Hansoo and Guktae.



‘It cannot happen. It cannot.’

Guktae already had the most power out of the 12 clans.

It was comparing the height of acorns but a huge difference was created once that guy came in.

Though they were secret allies within the Clan union, how could he just watch things like this when he didn’t know what would happen after they went up.

‘This bitch...I had left him alone because he was in a neutral position.’

There was a huge difference even if they say that the power between him and the affiliated person were the same.

And it’ll be a huge burden once the crystals in his hands go into Guktae’s hands.

‘I need to make some preparations.’

He fought all the way in the very front.

So a chance will come by if he looks for one.

Especially if it's near that dangerous looking and suspicious door.

‘Yeah. You’ve been quite comfortable up until now.’

Unfitting of this damnable world.

Taejin grinded his teeth after seeing Hansoo and the giant door made of bones in the distance as he proceeded to order something towards the clansmen below.

## Chapter 36 – Demon Lord's Castle (3)

---

Hyunwoo gulped his saliva as he looked between Hansoo next to him and the giant door made of bones in the distance.

“Hansoo. You at least feel good. Since you can escape during times of crisis because you have the crystal.”

And then Hansoo chuckled at Hyunwoo who was looking at him enviably.

“Don't worry. I'm not going.”

“Yeah? Well. Logically speaking, you're probably here because you have something to gain.”

Hansoo chuckled as he looked at Hyunwoo who was mumbling ‘Because you'd gone up if that wasn't the case.’

‘Well. Those words are right.’

It was better for him to go up then to stay down here since he wasn't a Clan Lord who logically had to save everybody.

Since the hunting efficiency here was rather low.

The only runes that came out were from killing the Demons but the amount they dropped wasn't really satisfying it if you take into

account their strength.

Some people who have already fulfilled the requirements of other islands rather quickly were probably already roaming around the most attractive area out of the islands above, The <Tower>.

Since this fact was already on the Island Maps.

But he hadn't come here for such things from the start.

‘Demonic Jade Crystal.’

If he didn't obtain the <Demonic Jade Crystal> from the end of the Demon Lord's Castle then there was no point even if he got to the end of the final dungeon.

He wouldn't have known its existence without Eres.

Eres wasn't in the condition to utilize it properly but he could pull out all the power from the Demonic Jade Crystal.

He had come here for the Demonic Jade Crystal, the Judgement and Justice of Dekrados were merely part of the process.

‘About 21 crystals collected.’

Also, if he were to hunt with ease then he could probably obtain

the Justice of Dekrados also.

“It kind of seems like the Clan Lords don’t like you much. Is it because you’re strong?”

There was no reason to hate Hansoo in Hyunwoo’s eyes.

He helped others well, was diligent in his own part of the work and felt very secure because he was strong.

There were basic rules and he was very diligent in following them.

The reason why the non-clansmen had followed him at the start was because of this.

Though they had all split up now.

Hansoo chuckled as he spoke.

“Well there’s that but...it’s as you say. They just don’t like me.”

The road was long and they didn’t know when an enemy will appear.

If they thought logically then they had to combine their strength in order to defeat the enemy.

But Lords were a little different.

Historically speaking, it wasn't that the kings did not slash off the necks of capable generals because there was an enemy.

Lords instinctively hated people who didn't work in their way.

Lord of a Clan.

As soon as you awake the trait <Lord> , you realize it instinctively.

That your words became the law and the rules within this household.

He didn't know himself but according to the words of Eres, it was a very addictive and amazing feeling where you are living in the modern society and then getting into a situation where others had to listen to your words.

And they tried to increase the number of their clan because of this.

To increase their influence inside and outwards as well as to apply the rules they created.

The reason why the Lords increased their power wasn't just for

survival.

But who would like it when somebody else were to come and then tell them to follow different rules.

It was a different problem from their own rules being right or wrong, he, who was an <Executor>, couldn't have a good relation with Lords from the start.

‘Well they might not be able to judge things reasonably.’

The Lords who had been around for tens of decades were growing impatient because they couldn't kill him.

The fact that the ones who just became Lords were around him and were suppressing themselves was even more amazing.

Since reason and emotion are different from the start.

And when somebody sets their mind on something, they're bound to create some reason for it in their head.

‘They still need to grow a lot.’

A new ability.

And a new world where they can use it freely.

It was obvious that they wanted to swing around the fascinating new sword that they had obtained.

And getting angry was normal since they met somebody which their sword, which usually worked well, didn't work against.

But they needed to see more and hear more.

And they had to realize that this was just the start.

And that was why they needed to escape the tutorial area in order to survive.

The most important quality of a Lord wasn't suppressing the other Lord.

Suppressing oneself and knowing how to work with other Lords was the most important thing.

Even Kwang Goonju and the Lord of Dark Angler weren't self-assertive.

'Well. It's a little early for them to know of it. Anyways, I should try a little bit harder.'

What would he do by showing off his strength against baby Lords in the tutorial area.



The people here were people who came from living in the real world and had only been here for about a month.

They might look at him in a marvelous way but if Hansoo wasn't able to do at least this much then Kangtae would've probably went overboard.

His real rivals were people who have been here for a few years or even 20 years while going through all sorts of hardships from square one.

People who had broken through a tutorial like this over 10 or so years ago and had been roaming around the Otherworld for a long time.

His goal wasn't to be ahead of others by 1 to 2 years.

He had to catch up to 20 years between him and them.

Hansoo loosened up the tension in his body as he approached the first gateway, the Door of Bones.

'The time it will take to eat up the rest of the members will be about 3 days... it seems it'll take a while.'

The non-clansmen couldn't follow him.

They will receive more damage than usual as the environment gets harsher if they did not have the commands of a Lord.

And that was why he induced the Clan Lords to absorb them back in.

Since it seemed like most members had been absorbed into the clans, things were doable.

‘Let’s have a look here.’

They’ll have some sort of an image as they see how he deals with the Gatekeeper.

Hansoo smiled at Hyunwoo then slowly walked forward.

.....

Guktae frowned as he looked at the giant door in front of him.

A giant door that seemed like it was made of hundreds of thousands if not millions of bones.

One could see that from the door that reminded of France’s Arc de Triomphe, a fearful aura was coming off from it.

‘Let’s see... the remaining number is 1200.’

100 died in 3 days.

From one's view it was merely a trivial loss.

This was a result that came off from Hansoo and the Special forces fighting the Demons competitively.

If both of them were slugging about then the damage would have skyrocketed.

‘Well. Since they have almost absorbed them all.’

As people saw that Hansoo didn't care about keeping them safe and was focused on hunting the Demons, they all ran and joined the clans.

They had all realized.

Though Hansoo can hunt all the Demons with his body alone, that he could not defend them from the attacks of countless mages

If they didn't go into the clans then the special forces wouldn't defend them and then they'll be wide open against the attacks of the mages.

Though the people who had survived from Hansoo hunting the Demons were hundreds, being safer was the better option.

While Guktae was making a satisfied expression, a familiar existence appeared in front of the Giant Door.

“Hello everyone. Welcome to the first of the three doors, the Door of Bones.”

<Door of Bones>

There wasn't any other name that more befitting.

The fairy who had seen the people's expressions nodded.

“It's very simple. Do you see the giant door over there? You just need to get past it.”

“...It's closed.”

The giant door that the fairy pointed to was firmly closed.

But then climbing the walls that stretched tens of meters next to it seemed impossible.

No, if they were meant to be climbed then why would the door exist.

‘We don't even know if the fairy might kill us as an example on

the way up.'

Their lives were too precious to test climbing up the wall when they could just talk it out.

The fairy laughed as it spoke.

"Eehee. You need to pay a passing fee."

Everyone made a bitter expression at those words.

"What do we need to pay with?"

The fairy shrugged as it spoke.

"What else. The crystals on you guys. Crystals. Just pay 30. Then it'll be a free pass."

"..."

Curses almost exploded out from their mouths.

The sum total they had hunted in the past 3 days was 50.

And there were only about 30 in their possession.

But for them to pay 30 crystals in order to open a door.

Which meant they had to hand over their lives too.

The reason why they were able to plan things about while trying so hard was because they had a backup plan which came from the crystals.

The <Tower>, which was right above the Central Island, was shown on the Islands Map and was told to have even more opportunities than now.

The reason why the name Central Island was given was because it was an island right below the Tower.

And they, who had already gained a lot in the central island, could still look out for opportunities even if they go up with heavy losses.

But if they lose the crystals then they would have to give up on all of those opportunities.

And the fairy had told them clearly.

That there were 3 doors.

Which means there was a chance that they will get robbed 2 more times like this from now.

Guktae struggled to maintain his expression and then spoke.

“Is there a way to pass without paying?”

The fairy nodded at those words.

“Simple. You need to kill the Gatekeeper.”

“...Gatekeeper.”

“Yes. Gatekeeper.”

As soon as the fairy’s words ended, a fearful vibration started to ring throughout the ground.

The origin of the vibration was the door in front of them.

Kadududuk.

Udududuk.

The hundreds of thousand if not millions of bones that had made up the door mixed and intertwined as it turned into something giant.

“...Wolf?”

Somebody spoke out in dismay as they saw the giant wolf that stretched 50m long from head to its tail.

Grrrrrrrrr.

Though it was made of bones, there were blue flames burning from its eyes.

And this was from 30m above them.

It was only 30m on paper, it felt like a building was standing up and growling at them.

It didn't even squeak like the weak skeletons.

Since the number of bones that its body consisted of was too many to do so.

The people made fearful expressions as they saw the giant black wolf made of bones that were polluted black.

The fairy laughed as it saw those people.

“Here. There isn't a moon anymore right? If you aren't going to pay then you just need to walk beneath it.”



Grrrrrrr

The people gulped their saliva as they gazed at the giant Wolf.

“...How about giving 30 crystals?”

“Yeah. How are we going to...”

30 crystals.

A number that could only be gained if they killed 30 demons.

It actually looked as strong as 30 demons.

And that was the problem.

They had hunted 50 of them by killing them 8 or 9 at a time but 30 of them charging at them at once was of a different dimension.

The Clan Lords made bitter expressions as they looked at each other.

There weren't any crystals on the few remaining non-clansmen.

Which meant that they had to pay 30 crystals.

No, another person did exist.

He didn't have as much as them but someone in possession of a lot of crystals.

They looked at Hansoo as they spoke.

“Let's pay the crystals together.”

That thing was too burdensome no matter what.

Hansoo shook his head.

“We need to fight it.”

“...what?”

Everyone's expressions froze.

‘Damn... does he mean it's not worth it.’

Guktae frowned inwardly.

But it made sense that it wasn't worth it.

They were 1200.

On the other hand, he was alone.

It was possible that he would feel wronged if he had to burden part of the 30.

But they couldn't act recklessly.

The situation would become very complicated if he decides to go up when they try to force him with strength.

“We aren't telling you to pay all 30. Just a part of it...”

Hansoo thought quietly inwardly while listen to those words.

‘Eres. I really think you are extremely amazing.’

Eres had saved 600 out of 1000 people and ascended.

Surprisingly, Eres managed to have less than 30 deaths before they reached the Door of Bones.

The thousand people Eres had numbered a little less but were much more formidable than the ones here.

Like steel which got stronger as you hammered it, people who were strengthened from 20 days of fighting without rest.

They had good synergy, kept on fighting against the demons and continuously reinforced their Battle Power from crystals.

And the only action that Eres had regretted in the central island.

<I shouldn't have paid the crystals to go through it>

Eres was scared of people dying while fighting that giant thing so she had paid the crystals she had gathered to pass it.

And because of this, she had to pay crystals on the next gateway too.

Since she had already given the crystals once and could not reinforce their battle powers with those crystals.

And the same with the next gateway as well.

And after she had arrived at the Giant Crystal at the Demon Lord's Castle at that pace, she had lost 400 out of 1000 people during the final battle.

No, It ended with 400 because of luck.

If they pass through something sweetly once in this world, then it'll just come back with interest and Eres had felt this through pain in her bones.

‘It seems like I’ll need to make some extra explanations.’

Hansoo mumbled inwardly as he saw everyone’s frozen expressions.

## Chapter 37 – Demon Lord's Castle (4)

---

“We’re fighting. There’s two more gateways after this, what are you planning to do if you give the crystals over to it here?”

“...Goddamnit. You don’t know about that.”

Taejin clenched his teeth at Hansoo’s words.

‘Is he out of his mind?’

Just say you don’t want to if you didn’t want to give the Crystals.

Who in their right state of mind would try to fight that monster.

But he couldn’t assert his position strongly because he felt like that was the correct choice.

“Didn’t you grind your blade fervently. Then you should at least try swinging it against the strong.”

“...Fuck.”

Hansoo, who had finished his wards, started to untie the weapons from his body slowly.

Taejin grinded his teeth at this sight.

‘Goddamit... Is it really doable?’

He didn’t know about other things but one thing was clear.

That Hansoo’s fighting ability was simply monstrous.

And when such a person had told him to try and have a bout with it, he weirdly thought that it might be doable.

And he had said he even had psychic powers.

‘I’m the crazy one.’

He was actually getting tempted by a point with no basis to back it up.

Taejin clenched his teeth as he flinched at his weirdly tempted mind.

‘No. I need to be careful of guys like him.’

When somebody, who was rather good with the sword in the beginning, ambushed him and his friends, they easily suppressed him.

Though he was strong, there were still five including him and his

friends.

He had let him go alive because he thought that the speed in which one got stronger couldn't catch up the speed of five.

Since he thought that was the right choice at that time.

The greatest misconception was thinking that he would come back alone next time as well.

But he did not come back alone.

He had brought others behind him.

His friends had all died and he barely survived and escaped.

And when he awakened his trait and gained more power, he killed them all and then vowed.

That it was not ok for him to let people who were as dangerous as him alive.

Hansoo wasn't the problem.

Even if he was perfectly normal, it'll be dangerous if he were to go into a dangerous household.



Especially in a household where it is composed of a Lord's Symbol which was hard to disobey.

One could tell Guktae was dangerous with just a simple glance.

That was why he had allied with him but this decision was something he laid down because he felt that fighting against him was doable.

He didn't like that guy but he didn't mind holding hands with a dangerous and strong guy in order to defend his followers.

But if someone like Hansoo goes under Guktae and heeds his command then it will become uncontrollable.

He had to do his best to supervise the dangers for the people who receive his mark with trust.

While Taejin was pledging to himself within his mind, Hansoo rose from his seat.

‘I'll finally get to use this thing properly.’

<Judgement of Dekrados which reached hundreds of meters>

The gatekeeper was one of the greatest reasons why he had bought this in the first place.

He couldn't control and lead everyone like Eres.

But he could do the thing which he was the best at.

'I'm fighting in the very front.'

And the others didn't have the leeway to choose.

"Let's go. Only people of the special forces level and people whose long-ranged skills reach 250m in range follow. It seems like some of you could do it in combination to your psychic powers. And the healers should be stationed 500m behind."

The Commander's Aura drained the health of the people nearby.

They'll just become baggage if they don't have magic resistance.

"..."

"What are you doing. Not coming with me? If you aren't coming then I'm going to drag that thing over here."

"This crazy bastard..."

Everyone was frightened at the sight of Hansoo who seemed like he was about to pounce on it alone.

Hansoo chuckled as he saw these guys.

“Follow the commands properly. You need to at least work for your meals.”

‘...’

Hansoo then charged forward ruthlessly, swung the scythe around and then slammed it down onto the head of the giant gatekeeper.

Boooom!

Kuaaaaaangg!

The gatekeeper, which had its head smacked, roared loudly as it glared at Hansoo while the fairy muttered quietly.

“Eyyy. What is this. They’re fighting. Killjoy.”

Everyone realized the answer from the from the unsatisfied voice of the fairy.

“Goddamnit... Run!”

“Receive as many buffs as possible! People who have Aron’s Arrow shoot it from over here!”

And then everyone, as well as the special forces, started running towards Hansoo's back.

.....

‘As I thought... this guy was created with the gatekeeper of the 7th floor of the abyss as the basis’

It was a version which was so weak that it couldn't be compared to the original but the physical structure of it and the skills it used seemed the same.

‘Then I can read it.’

Kadudududk

Kuaaaaaa!

The gatekeeper shook his body crazily in order to break apart the chains which were entwining its body.

Of course it was impossible for Hansoo to suppress the strength of the giant wolf by himself.

Since their size and mass were different from the start.

It was a different issue from strength.

But Hansoo was flying between the body and the joints of the gatekeeper as he tied the chain around it.

So that when it tried to swing its body, its whole body would be squeezed.

So that when it tried to run forward, its front and back legs would get tangled up.

Kududududk

The Judgement of Dekrados was constantly draining the mana of the Gatekeeper as it activated its <Suppression>.

‘... It’s barely holding on.’

The gatekeeper wasn’t average as he expected, the chains straightened as if they were about to snap.

Hansoo limited its movements by loosening and entwining the chains.

He wanted to tie it up into a ball but then it might really snap.

Hansoo loosened and tightened the chains at different times as he tied it up as much as he could without snapping the chains.

Its movements weren’t suppressed completely because the chains didn’t tie it up completely but its movements were still dulled.

“Dodge the front leg!”

The special forces, who were scattering the bones apart below, scattered in all directions while shouting.

Boom!

Charuruk

As Hansoo loosened up the chains, the beast, which was twisting its body in annoyance, swung the now-free front leg. But this was all as Hansoo planned.

He had loosened up the area which was the easiest to dodge on purpose.

Kirik. Kiririk.

Hansoo was changing the direction of the beast even in such a situation by loosening and tightening the chains.

Kuuuuuaang!

The gatekeeper got even angrier because it felt like it became a marionette but Hansoo didn't care as he continued to twist around its movements as he pulled on the chains.

‘Well. I can't move it how I want but...’

It took all of his power to control the chains.

Since a gatekeeper of this level was no joke.

But such a thing like swinging a sword could be done by others.

Kudududk. Kududk.

“Hurry and smash its ankles first!”

“Since the bones come back to connect with each other, shove some things into the location where you smashed apart!”

As Hansoo heard the endless voices from the clansmen of Taejin, he nodded his head.

‘They’re doing pretty good.’

The Demons use a variety of skills.

And because the special forces had gained a vast amount of experience, they didn’t get flustered at the magical sight of the bones combining back and were neutralizing the ankles first.



Grrrrrrrr

And at that moment, a weird shockwave could be felt from the gatekeeper's mouth.

And at the same time, the blue eyes in its eyes started to burn up.

‘That’s a little bit difficult’

If that thing were to burst out then at least half of them would become a mess.

<Hellfire>

A power that was granted to the doorkeepers in order to incinerate the intruders.

Charururk

Hansoo grabbed onto the handle of the scythe while flying about on the chains.

Kururururu

The scythe in Hansoo's hands started to drain his mana aggressively as it activated the skill, <Judgement>.

And Hansoo swung it like so and smashed it onto the lower jaw of the gatekeeper.

Boom!

Kwadududk

His neck bones were so thick that the attack, which he poured all his power into, just bounced off its cranium but still made it to face the front from it's original position of being ready.

But Hansoo didn't expect this attack to send its head flying.

His goal was the blue marble that could see seen between the bones he had smashed apart.

‘Ignition Stone’

The hellfire could only be let out once the mana from deep inside its body reached up the cranium and met the ignition stone with a violent reaction.

An information was obtained after Keldian and Hansoo realized that this thing was the gatekeeper on the road to obtaining the Demonic Jade Crystal and had personally killed one and dissected it.

Basically, as long as you ripped off the Ignition Stone then the hellfire wouldn't get completed.

Hansoo roughly shoved his hands between the regenerating bones and pulled out the bead.

Chiiiik

An extreme temperature which even made sounds of burning Hansoo's flesh which was protected by his magic resistance.

Hansoo threw the Ignition stone down and then continued to suppress it with the chains with his burnt hand.

One of Taejin's clansman, who was looking at him, asked through the message.

<He seems like he's having trouble. It feels like it'll work if we attack now. Shall we try attacking him right now?>

The clan member was making a bitter expression as well.

Since the thought of such a guy joining Guktae's Clan and holding his blades at them was feeling extremely dangerous.

But Hansoo was using all his power to suppress the wolf and was having a hard time.

A situation where there's a chance if they attacked.

But Taejin shook his head.

<No. Focus on killing the gatekeeper.>

<Yes.>

The clan member was rather confused at the changed attitude of Taejin but didn't talk back as he charged onto the giant gatekeeper again.

And soon the giant wolf started to get disassembled one part at a time from the long range skills and the Special forces who flew into it like a swarm of bees.

.....

“It was pretty doable right? Here. Take the runes.”

Hansoo chuckled at the Lords as he started to distribute the runes according to the amount of contribution from each Lord.

Taejin stared at this Hansoo for a while and then spoke out.

“Why do you roam around alone? It doesn't seem like it'll be hard for you to make a clan without psychic powers.”

That much strength and a weird psychic power.

And a weird aura that radiated from his whole body.

It wasn't that you needed psychic powers like theirs in order to become a leader.

If he's that strong then he could probably create a much larger clan than theirs.

No, even if Hansoo was to continue maintaining the Semi-Basement union and had used his hands a few more times then they would probably be rolling around beneath him.

Hansoo chuckled at those words.

When will he raise them and when will he use them.

He needed to run but if he were to take them with him then his back will bend.

And if he wanted to maintain this amount of people at all times in the place he was going to be at from now on, he'd be simply too busy just to fill the holes.

Since they'll die off in hundreds.

"Everyone has their personal issues. You probably have them too."

"..."

Taejin stared at Hansoo for a while and then looked at Guktae in the distance.

‘This Bastard... set up a trap.’

He wasn’t somebody who would stay beneath that Guktae.

Taejin threw out a word after looking at Hansoo for a while.

“Be careful of that Guktae.”

He couldn’t tell more than that.

Since if he were to say that Guktae was aiming for him and created a dispute, everyone would be in danger.

Since even if Hansoo wanted to do something to Guktae, the other Clan Lords wouldn’t just stand idle.

The Lords hated Hansoo and at the same time, felt pressured by him.

They weren’t clashing into each other because they agreed of his usefulness, but once he starts acting on Guktae, they will react extremely sensitively.

‘But my mind would only be at ease if I at least tell him about



this.'

Hansoo smirked at those words and Taejin glared at Guktae while returning to his clansmen.

Guktae clicked his tongue while looking at that Taejin.

'Tsk. So this is how it rolls out.'

He had been found out but it didn't matter.

Since when was the relationship between them good.

And even if he knew, he couldn't do anything about it.

How would a guy who valued his clansmen so much fight recklessly.

'You need to know when to throw things.'

Hansoo was the same.

But one thing was clear.

'It's better to leave him alone for a while.'

He needed time to practice and it was better to not touch him if he could hunt the gatekeepers like that.

Since they could save crystals then.

Guktae, who had judged that it was best to leave him alone temporarily, moved back in between his clansmen.

.....

Kudududk

Guktae mumbled quietly as he saw the final Gatekeeper being eliminated.

‘...It’s finally here.’

A giant castle could be seen over the carcass of the final gatekeeper.

The <Demon Lord’s Castle> which was only seen in the distance.

A ginormous crystal could be seen in the corner of the Demon Lord’s Castle.

‘Let’s see. About 1000 people left.’

Guktae looked at his wrist.

8 miniature crystals.

It wasn’t a large amount because the 12 clan Lords had to share but he could still obtain a pretty good artifact with it.

A <Wilderness Lord’s Cape> which could be used once a day to allow the user to summon 12 protectors he choses as well as raising the speed of regeneration and movement near the user and the

<Thorn Wood Casket> which surrounds the body of the person whom the user touches with thorns could increase the battle powers of the clan by a lot.

But Guktae shook his head.

‘Twelve is too many as I expected. And he is dangerous too. It’s time for things to end soon.’

It was really the final gateway and the final chance.

“Since we’re injured we’re resting here first before moving out!”

“We’re going into the Demon Lord’s Castle after healing as much as possible!”

Guktae started to send a message towards somewhere as he heard the shouts of the Clan Lords.

## Chapter 38 – Demon Lord's Castle (5)

---

Taejin made a strange expression as he looked at Hansoo who had appeared in front of him while he was looking at the Demon Lord's Castle in the distance.

“That's a dagger that I haven't seen around.”

Hansoo laughed as he answered.

“Oh I bought the newest product.”

‘A dagger and scythe...’

A shiny dagger, which wasn't seen until now, was attached on Hansoo's waist.

A sword with a 30 cm long blade, which had a rather peculiarly long shape for a dagger.

Of course he had many daggers dangling on his thighs but that weapon felt different at a glance.

‘...Set artifact?’

He had seen it on the catalog.

<Justice of Dekrados>

An artifact that showed off its best effect when used in conjunction with Judgement of Dekdrados.

He thought that he was a guy who only used complex weapons just like the chain scythe.

Though there was nothing to say since he used them well.

And he also had many weird things.

‘What is that pouch...’

While the people were cooking the strange plants which appeared on the road, food continued to come out from his pouch.

But they weren’t really jealous because the food which came out from it was on par with the plants they cooked.

“Can we really not be together above?”

Taejin asked with a regrettable tone as he looked at the Giant Crystal which had gotten rather close to them.

Hansoo chuckled at those words.

“I said follow if you want to follow. I won’t take you with me but I won’t stop you either.”

Taejin shook his head at those words.

He wanted to follow him but he was not alone.

They had gotten a little closer while fighting and because of this he had the opportunity to talk with him.

And he could find out after talking to him for a while.

There weren’t many reasons why this guy was trying so hard to become strong.

Just one.

In order to go into more dangerous locations.

His clansmen were strong too but if they were to follow him then they would die off in strokes.

He didn’t want to become strong that bad.

The reason why he wanted to become strong was for the protection of the clan but that thing had different means and aim.

‘It’s a good choice.’

Hansoo smiled as he looked at Taejin.

Since the road which he will be traveling from now on will be even more dangerous.

The things he needed to do in the Tutorial were two.

Clearing the Final dungeon.

And one more.

‘A Dark Lord who is bound to be somewhere.’

Dark Lord.

One of the guys he needed to pull out by the roots for the safety of humanity.

Guys who were dangerous to no extent.

No, the reason why they were so infamous was because they had the potential to be so dangerous from the start.

There was one in this tutorial area too.



‘I will clash with him properly... in the Tower.’

No matter where you are, you meet in the Tower.

Since clashes were inevitable according to its structure.

Hansoo muttered inwardly as he slowly walked inside the Demon Lord’s Castle.

The inner parts of the Demon Lord’s Castle was empty.

And a red colored crystal existed within the deep parts of the Demon Lord’s Castle.

‘It is not... working yet.’

The aura of the Crystal was too lacking to say it was working.

And in front of that Crystal, in the large field which was enough to accommodate for the surviving thousand people, a statue which looked intimidating at a glance stood.

‘Is that the Demon Lord?’

While the Clan Lords were frowning, Guktae approached from afar.

Taejin frowned as he looked at him.

‘Detestable bastard.’

But even so, he could only agree with his usefulness.

Since his clan showed off the greatest might out of the ones here.

Guktae approached the Clan Lords as he spoke:

“I have a suggestion. We have finally arrived at the final gateway together. It seems like the crystal would work if we break that statue apart.”

Guktae looked at the giant statue in the distance and then spoke to the Clan Lords.

“Honestly speaking all of us have seven to eight mini crystals right? This isn’t a large number but it is more than enough to preserve our powers.”

Everyone nodded at those words.

The amount of mini crystals differed from each other’s contributions but it was a number which could at least take 40 of them up with them.

If it was this much, it wasn't lacking to start anew in a new place.

In a place where they could be in a very advantageous situation just by gathering up 10 people, there was nothing to even say about 40 of them.

Since it was a very pressuring number to go against if they weren't Clan Lords like them.

But Guktae threw out a very straightforward talk as he looked at them.

"Let's speak really honestly. In my situation I want to kill off everyone else. It's probably the same for other friends too."

"... Isn't that too honest."

"Let's put all in the open and speak."

Everyone thought inwardly at those words.

Even if they weren't that frank, rejoicing at the reduction of power of other clans was an obvious fact.

Who would like a strong competitor in a world where the fairies were setting up tricks in order to get them to compete with each other.

They might even have to kill each other as soon as they go up.

And the other 11 clans were dangerous competitors and by the time they regret about fighting, it'll be too late.

Everyone wanted it even if they weren't saying it as straightforward as he was.

For the power of others to get reduced in the final battle.

As Guktae saw the expression of a consensus from them, he added in some more words as extra.

“But I don't think we should do that. The reason why we have gotten here together despite hating each other so much was because we were on the same boat. We need each other that much. We need to combine our strengths in order to break through the gateway to ascend.”

“What do you want to say?”

Guktae laughed at Taejin's words as he spoke.

“Very simple. Let us all reduce the risk and raise the chances of winning.”

“...?”

“I know that all of you have not exchanged all of your crystals into artifacts in case of emergencies. The same goes for me.”

“ ... ”

“But think about it. How lame is this. If we just change our crystals into artifacts then the power of our Clan Unions rises by a huge amount. On the other hand, the crystals are an existence which just cut down our battle power even if we have it. Because you won’t be able to fight properly as you never know when the guy next to you will attack your back and run away. If this were to happen then we could all die. A massacre.”

“Hmm...”

Taejin thought inwardly.

Guktae was a guy he didn’t like but there was nothing wrong about what he had said.

Honestly speaking, they had to convert all the crystals in their possession in order to face the giant statue, the Demon Lord, in front of them.

Then the number of survivors would increase.

But the reason why they held onto the crystals was because they

felt uneasy.

Since this crystal was a sure escape path.

Gukgtae looked at them and shouted as he suggested.

“So I have a suggestion. Let’s all change the crystals we have into artifacts. Whichever artifact you change it to is however the user wants but let’s use it all without a single one remaining.

“Kuhmm...”

“Hum...”

“This is a means to get rid of the escape path. Since we don’t know what kind of crazily orders the Clan Lord will give after escaping if there’s one left. Since there’s probably somebody who thinks that it’ll be a profit massacring the 1000 people here and surviving by himself.

“...”

“Oh. By the way, I’m part of those guys. Can you trust in my clan like this and fight?”

It wasn’t an impossible feat.

They didn't know how strong that statue was but if 1000 of them had to fight with all their might, 100 people acting crazily would be extremely fatal.

They could bury everyone here except the five who would escape with the mini crystal.

“...too honest”

“Thank you for the complement. On the other hand, if there wasn't a single crystal left in my hands then I couldn't do such a thing. Because that just means let's just all die. I don't want to die that way. If we all set our boundaries and have our clans fight in those areas with all their might then there will be no instances of being backstabbed. You just need to do your best on your defenses.”

“Can't somebody hide the crystals?”

Guktae shook his head.

“We can't hide the crystals because we know the number of each other's crystals too well.

Once we all agree let's buy and show each other. If we compare the number of crystals distributed and the cost of the items on the catalogue, you won't be able to hide the crystals even if you wanted to.”

“Hmm...”

Everyone started to ponder at these words.

It's not like there were an uncountable amount of demons and because they had hunted them down employing their special forces together, the number of crystals were clear.

A situation where they knew the number of crystals on each other very well because it was impossible to sneakily move around the special forces to hunt.

According to those words then it was possible to know the total amount of crystals without a single one being left out.

Honestly speaking, it was an obvious thing to decrease factors for anxiety and reinforce their battle strength as much as possible.

Guktae added more words as he looked at these people.

“Think about it. Would the fairy have set the difficulty so that it wasn't possible to win? No matter how much fairy likes for us to die then they wouldn't have put in so much effort like this when they were going to kill us all. They could just simply kill us off and that'll be that.”

“Mmm...”



“It means that that thing is possible if we all combine our strengths. Then it means a lot more can survive than you guys escaping with the mini crystals. If you all agree then I’ll change first.”

Everyone pondered at those words but then nodded.

And they all started to buy artifacts one by one and showed each other.

“I’m choosing the Thorn Wood Casket.”

“I’m getting the Ariadnea’s Essence...”

Guktae made a content expression as he checked them one by one.

“Good. I’m choosing the Wilderness Lord’s Cape. This costs 8 crystals. Everyone should know I received eight... Hansoo you had exactly 59, where did you use them all?”

“... 59 of them.”

Everyone thought silently.

If you include the Judgement of Dekrados he bought before then it totals to 119 crystals.

They had known this but confirming it again made them amazed.

Hansoo chuckled as he lifted and showed the dagger hanging onto his waist.

“I used it here. Justice of Dekrados.”

Guktae gazed at Hansoo dagger and then nodded with a content expression.

“Though four are left over... is there anything else you’re going to buy?”

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then shook his head.

Guktae chuckled at that Hansoo.

“You probably don’t have a reason to go up. Keep it well then.”

‘Well. You’re probably here because you have an objective left.’

Guktae laughed inwardly.

If he was somebody who would go up for his own safety then he would’ve left already.

The fact that he had stayed until now meant that he had

something to do left.

Anyways, if he decided to not fight and create a chaos or go up then nobody could stop him.

It was better to just tell him to hold onto the escape path and fight actively.

“Well. There’s not a single crystal left between the Clan Lords. We can finally focus on the enemy in front of us.”

As soon as Guktae’s words ended, the giant statue squeaked as it raised its body.

No, it was not a statue.

It was like a living thing having been petrified like a statue.

‘It’s been a while huh.’

Demon Lord, Barbatoy.

Though it was a weaker version, old memories sprung up when he saw the thing he had fought back then to death with after a long time.

Though it wasn’t a good memory.

Just the number of humans who had died by getting ripped apart by his hands was easily over ten thousand.

While Hansoo mumbled inwardly, Taejin shouted loudly at the Demon lord.

“Normal clansmen fall back and special forces, long range and those with healing skills...”

A decision that had been laid because it could be a massacre if the normal clansmen, who couldn't even fight against the gatekeepers, got swept up in the fight against the Demon Lord.

If they couldn't even fight against then they were not of help.

But Taejin, who had been shouting, realized that this wasn't necessary.

Since an enormous amount of undeads started to rise out of the ground in a crazy pace.

“Goddammit... Don't fall back and cover us instead!”

It looked like that they couldn't even get close to the Demon Lord without normal clansmen.

And soon the undead charged ferociously and chaos was created.

And at that moment the fairy appeared above their heads.

“Wow! For one thousand people to have survived! Amazing! You just need to finish it off. First of all, the arrival point, even if you chose the same island, would be different from the mini-crystal to that of the giant crystal so you don’t need to worry about getting revenged. Heehee.”

“...”

It sounded like that they should attack from behind and leave without feeling any pressure since they didn’t need to worry about being chased after running away with the mini crystal.

But everyone snorted.

Since they didn’t have any mini crystals anymore.

But the fairy’s words did not end.

“By the way, it isn’t that the giant crystal turns on when you kill the Demon Lord!”

“...?”

“It will turn on after 30 minutes. So you just need to survive until then right?”

The fairy disappeared with those words and everyone flinched.

It was survival and not kill.

Which meant the clan which fought the hardest would have the greatest loss.

‘It’s perfect. Really.’

And Guktae laughed as he looked at everyone flinching in the battlefield.

# Chapter 39 – Demon Lord’s Castle (6)

---

Kududuk

“Aim at the neck!”

“Damnit! We’re getting pushed on this side!”

The clansmen started to clash against the undead under the command of the Clan Lords.

The sounds of crashing and ripping resonated from all directions.

And within the small gap that the clansmen had created, Hansoo and the special forces started to charge ruthlessly.

Towards the giant statue, no, towards the Demon Lord which was stretching.

And then Hansoo, the special forces and the Demon Lord clashed aggressively.

Kuaaaaaah!

‘Maybe because it’s a weaker version it cannot talk huh.’

Hansoo muttered inwardly as he looked at the 15m tall human shaped Demon Lord.



‘But...As I expected.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

The Clan Lords weren’t attacking properly.

They didn’t have to kill the Demon Lord.

They just needed to endure.

30 minutes.

A time which could be held out if you focused on defending and dragged out the time.

There were twelve clans and anyone who survived were part of the forces they could take above.

It was obvious that everyone wanted to save as many as possible.

And because of this the Clan Lords, despite having the Special Forces out in the front , were just keeping their distance.

The Demon Lord threw a fist along with a rough scream while everybody was not fighting properly.

Hoooong

The giant body combined with the unbelievable speed generated a tremendous amount of wind as it created a humongous shockwave.

Boooom!

“Goddamit!”

“Kuaaaahk!”

Ironically, the Demon Lord, the king of the Evil Clan, wasn't using any skills.

The only thing it had was its overwhelming stamina, health, speed and regeneration.

But this was dangerous enough to the point that every attack from the Demon Lord crushed the people ruthlessly but this just suppressed the Clan Lords from taking action even more.

If he had used an area of effect attack then they might've attacked him because of fear but seeing that he was killing them off one by one, it seemed like they could keep quite a lot alive and then run away through the crystal.

And even better if the special forces of the other clans die off.

“Goddamit! Stick properly! Why are you backing off!”

Taejin gritted his teeth at how the others were acting.

The only special forces that were fighting properly were Taejin’s and Yerim’s.

These two didn’t want to fight at the very front either.

They had just stayed here because it seemed like everything would collapse in an instant if these two were to back off as well.

But the one who was fighting the most actively at this moment was Hansoo.

Since the others were others and he had to kill this thing.

He didn’t have the leisure to care about other things anyway.

‘Because only then would the Demonic Jade Crystal come out.’

Hansoo was currently fighting close to the Demon Lord.

‘It’s been a while since we fought. Barbatoy.’

It wasn't Hansoo of back then. And it wasn't the Demon Lord of back then too but fighting it whose attacks and habits were clearly inscribed in his head made it less of a burden for Hansoo to fight.

Barbatoy was a pure physical type.

If he had gone up against someone with a peculiar skill then it would've been very pressuring even for Hansoo.

Of course the basic skill which it had, <Speculation>, made it so normal clansmen wouldn't be able to come close.

‘And that's why the special forces need to do well.’

Hansoo flew around the Demon Lord as he started to tie it up with great vigor.

Kuaaang!

When the Demon Lord applied some strength, the chain made a crackling sound as if it was about break.

‘That won't do’

Hansoo pulled out the new artifact he got, <Justice of Dekrados>.

Charururk

As Hansoo sent in some mana, the single dagger in his hands instantly turns into twelve.

<Division>.

One of the two skills of the Justice of Dekrados.

The dagger could divide into twelve that had the same durability but once one of them is broken, then the broken copy wouldn't be regenerated even if you were to use Division again.

Hansoo dodged the attacks of the Demon Lord as he stabbed the dagger into the body of the Demon Lord who was tied up with the chain of Judgement of Dekrados.

Puk

Pupupuk

The dagger went through the chain and got embedded.

As it was made as a set item, the holes on each link of the chain were just the right size for the dagger to go through.

The effect <Reinforce>, which was activated when he used these two artifacts together, started up.

And in this unique form, the chain became even stronger and the dagger sharper.

Hansoo, who had swiftly embedded all twelve daggers, aggressively pulled on the chain.

Kudududuk

As he pulled the chains, the daggers which were embedded along with the chains followed as they sliced apart the Demon Lord's flesh.

Like an electric chainsaw, as the chain which was tied around the Demon Lord were pulled, the daggers started to tear apart the flesh of the Demon Lord.

Kuaaaah!

‘It might break.’

As the enraged Demon Lord shook its body, the chain tensed up as if it was about to break.

It was a situation where it couldn't untie the chain because the daggers were embedded deep into its body.

But even if the set effect, <Reinforce>, was activated, there was still a limit.

‘But it doesn't matter.’



Charururk

As Hansoo sent in mana waves, the twelve daggers combined into one and came into Hansoo's hand.

<Collection> and <Division>.

It was a simple but very efficient function for the dagger.

As long as there's these two functions then there was no lack of firepower.

As the daggers were removed and the chain was loosened, the Demon Lord started to become even more crazy.

“Uaaaak!”

“Goddamit!”

‘Tsk. The special forces need to fight properly.’

Though he had turned it into a mess, it was regenerating at an extreme speed.

Its true might came from that abnormal rate of recovery, ability to take hits, resistance and things like strength, agility and savagery were just the surface of it.

The special forces needed to shove their skills into it and destroy it faster than the speed of its regeneration while he tied it up.

There was a limit to how much one person alone could damage the Demon Lord. But though the Special forces were attacking it, they were doing so in a very passive way and were using safe tactics so the damage couldn't catch up to the regeneration speed of the Demon Lord.

‘If this continues then more will die before 30 minutes are up.’

And the Lords were all getting further away from the battlefield as if they had judged that the battlefield was dangerous.

Hansoo shook his head as he saw these signs.

.....

“Bastards! What are you going to command from back there!”

Taejin gritted his teeth.

It was better for the Lords to be in a safer spot.

Since it'll be over for everyone if they die.

But if you wanted to raise the strength of the clan then it was better to command from the center of the clansmen.

It was good to leave things to work automatically but it was also important to look over the situation of the battle to increase the strength of the clan by preserving their numbers and even making them fight forcibly at times.

But the only ones who were fighting in the center of their clans were only Yerin and Taejin.

The ten other Clan Lords, including Guktae, had already backed off into the distance.

The other Lords smirked at Taejin shouting in the distance.

“Why are you fighting in the front like that if you aren’t of much help anyway.”

“This bastard... if you take the people who protect us then who is going to fight the undead.”

One of the Lords laughed at these words.

“We only brought around two per person. Don’t be so sensitive. And we already sent the special forces to the front.”

“ ... ”

While Taejin was gritting his teeth, Guktae shouted while looking at him.

“You guys should come here too since it’s dangerous. Rather, it might become a nuisance because they have to protect you.”

“I will humbly decline.”

Taejin, who had finished his words, controlled his Clan as he charged towards the Demon Lord.

And Guktae made a regretful expression as he looked at such Taejin and Yerin.

“Nine... though it’s a little regretful, this is enough.”

“What?”

While the Lords were making weird expressions from Guktae’s words, the cape that was surrounding Guktae started to shine brightly.

“Fuck.. What are you doing!”

Guktae giggled at these words.

“What do you mean what am I doing. I’m calling some protectors.”

<Wilderness Lord’s Cape.>

Once a day, the user can summon twelve designated protectors to himself.

And the thing that had come out of the light were the Guktae’s twelve special forces.

Guktae spoke to the Special forces.

“Get them.”

As soon as the words ended, the 2 protectors combined with the 12 special forces as they charged at the protectors of other Lords.

Kuadududk

Kududk

“Kuak!”

“Goddammit!”

The eighteen protectors fought back but the power of the special forces were a step higher.

And Guktae’s Special Forces were even a step higher than that.

“Dammit!”

While the Clan Lords were calling their forces in a hurry, Guktae’s other clansmen started to jump about crazily and started to get a grip on the people’s ankles.

Despite the difference in numbers, because they had defended with their lives on the line, the speed of the other clansmen had slowed down and by the time the other clansmen killed off all of Guktae’s clansmen and got near, the Clan Lords had long become hostages of Guktae.

Guktae giggled as he looked at the 10 special forces around him who had become a mess.

Two had died and the ten who were alive had become a huge mess, it was still easy for them to cut off the necks of the Clan

Lords who they were holding hostage.

‘One needs to just protect me. It’s very clean.’

One of the Clan lords gritting their teeth as he looked at Guktae.

“You crazy bastard! If this happens then you die too! Isn’t your ability valuable to you!”

Why wouldn’t they have thought of such a situation.

The only reason why they weren’t expecting internal fights between Clan Lords was because if one of the Clan Lords were to create a mess then they would all die here.

What would you do if you take them as hostages.

If you act crazily and create a chaos here, you will get pushed back by the undead and the remaining people will all die at the hands of the Undead and the Demon Lord.

It had already been awhile since the fight had been tilted towards the advantage of the Undeads in the fight in the distance.

They had fallen quickly while the remaining clans were clashing.

Hansoo and the remaining two special forces were stopping the



Demon Lord but how would they hold out 20 minutes at this rate.

They don't even have mini crystals.

Guktae giggled as he laughed.

"It doesn't matter if I die."

No, it wasn't that it didn't matter if he died or not.

His job was to get everybody here and die together.

Why would he have gotten rid of all the mini crystals?

"What?"

Was he such a maniac out of maniacs?

And at that moment, one of the Lords, who had a blade up against them, made a pale expression as they thought of something.

"You bitch... you aren't a Lord. Some crazy bastard sent one of the clansmen instead of themselves... you crazy bastard! Do you mean that it's ok for you to die!"

Guktae's expression chilled at those words.

Such a way of speaking when they had their fate in the hands of others despite having such formidable power of a Lord.

‘There’s too much of a difference.’

He thought back of the scene when his Lord had sent him here.

<You take these 3 tickets, go to the Central Island and pretend. The others there who have already received the message will treat you as the Lord.>

The symbol could be given from a clansmen and not a Lord as long as the Lord gave permission and clansmen could communicate between each other through messages.

The command was very simple too.

Since there was the first command every newcomer of the clan received.

<Treat Guktae as the Lord and follow his commands.>

If you do this then you can pretend to be the Lord perfectly.

As Guktae, who had finished thinking, gave a signal with his eyes, the grip of the special force member holding the Lord’s neck tightened.

Squeeze

“Kuk..Kuuurk.”

“What do you mean crazy bastard. He’s a much more formidable person than scrubs like you.”

And at the same time everyone’s expression paled as Guktae laughed coldly at them.

.....

Hansoo made a cold expression as he looked at the chaos occurring behind him

‘...Fraud Lord.’

A tactic which used one of their clansmen to pose as the Lord, make them careless and then die together.

Not everyone could do such a thing.

First, if you want to become a Fraud Lord then you need to be able to sustain the same amount of clansmen as the other clans.

Since it’ll be weird if a Clan Lord who could command 100 did not sustain 100 people.

Which meant that you needed to be able to control 100 people to reinforce the Fraud Lord and another 100 for himself adding up to 200 people in total.

And you also needed the commanding power to command suicide as well.

Once the clansmen go under the Lord, they create a connection between themselves and there are no occurrences where the Lord cannot order a clansmen because of such connections.

Since clansmen and Lords were in a system of up and down.

But such a command like suicide is hard to make because usually when you give such an extreme command, the symbol will break most of the time.

Of course there are exceptions there as well.

A situation where you raised the trait of the Lord with exceptional aptitude and had your trait become much superior to the point where the strength of your trait becomes much stronger than their soul.

Once this happens then it was possible to command things almost forcibly.

And there was a person who was capable of this in the past tutorial as well.

A guy who showed extreme aptitude beyond the specialties of Lords.

Though the regrettable part was the fact that he was crazy.

‘Dark Mad Lord... you’ve done something huh.’

A typical example that showed that, although a crazy guy is dangerous, a crazy guy with good abilities is even more dangerous.

And at the same time, one of the guys who will become the biggest obstacle in this preparation for the Final Dungeon.

One of the representatives of the <Dark Lords>.

Hansoo looked at Guktae, who had caused a chaos in the distance, with a cold expression.

## Chapter 40 – Demon Lord's Castle (7)

---

Though the trait of Lord seemed overpowered, there were still a few limitations.

You could only give limited orders to a strong clansman whom you had given the symbol to.

Since if the order is too extreme then their self-defense mechanisms will activate and break the symbol.

And there was also a limit to numbers.

Due to a few more limitations other than these, even a Lord couldn't show invincible-like abilities in an area of people around the same skill level as him.

But like every other skill or psychic power, the trait's level was the most important thing and few Lords with amazing potential appear from time to time.

People who bloom the trait much faster and use this as a base to start with a huge head start compared to others.

<Dark Mad Lord> was one of them as well.

While the others could barely control 100 people, he had a powerful control over 200 people to the point where he could order

them to commit suicide and had stood out starting from the tutorial.

Though he was a crazy bastard.

And even more regrettable was that this guy was part of his own tutorial group.

Out of the 9000 people who had gotten to the second tutorial area, only 300 people, excluding the 200 of his clansmen, survived due to this guy.

Since he had killed them all.

And with a very simple philosophy as the basis.

<Potential rival, if I kill the ones with similar psychic powers as me when they're separated and monopolize the advantages they would've received in the tutorial then I could make the 200 I control much stronger and then pass through the tutorial with ease. This is stronger than a 1000 man army I cannot trust.>

A result that came out from a personality that could not trust others, amazing potential and ruthlessness.

He had thought that the real enemy in the tutorial area was not the monsters but rather humans who had the possibility of causing riots, he used this as the basis and had thought to kill off every potential rival.

Usually people prepared and grouped up in large mobs after calculating the fact that they had to fight against the people who had gone missing before them but this guy was not like that.

<Everybody who participates in the tutorial could only survive when they go out if they combine their strength? There's no way that would happen.>

Make them not able to compete against the people ahead because they can't combine their forces?

Would they have made it so they would survive if they grouped up in a crowd of 3000 but kill them if they roamed around alone?

After setting up the tutorial like this?

If there was some sort of consistency in the fairy's actions then such things won't happen.

There will probably be an area where the people who had arrived earlier wouldn't be able to lay hands on them right away or prevent them from doing so for a while.

An area which would make it possible for the newcomers to be able to rival the people ahead.

And he was a successful man, he had followed the above



reasonings and had succeeded in eliminating his rivals with his own power.

And his calculations weren't wrong, he had gained an infamous title by the time he had arrived at the purple area just within 5 years of coming out of the tutorial area.

<Lord Slaughterer.>

An infamous title which he had received after hunting down Lords fervently due to his personality, which hated Lords to the point where it was weird, despite him being one, along with his notions of destroying possible future rivals.

Thanks to this guy, most of the Lords in the same group as him had died.

He had even killed normal adventurers whenever he saw them with the reason of them having the potential to become dangerous as well.

<It'll be tiring once you get there. Since the Dark Mad Lord would act out and you have to clear the Final Dungeon as well. But remember.

The most important thing in the tutorial area is the Final Dungeon. Prepare well for the Dungeon. He is after.>

Keldian's words came to his mind.

‘Tsk. It’d have been better if we were to fight now though.’

But it’ll be a huge loss if he didn’t get the thing he was going for while following that guy around.

He might’ve skinned him off slowly, like peeling an apple, and destroyed him if it wasn’t for the structure of the islands but this was not possible since there were set islands which he had to go to.

He had to differentiate clearly between the main mission and sub-missions.

And his path wasn’t clear anyway since there were almost no survivors.

Since everyone who had met with his clan had died.

So he had focused on the dungeon first.

But there was one place where his objectives of the Final Dungeon and that guy’s path would cross for sure.

<Central Island>.

A place where the biggest amount of Lords had gathered.

And a place where you could massacre a large amount of Lords if you use a Fraud Lord.

If he had some form of logic then he would've taken the Lords as hostage and would have used their forces but this guy would kill them all since he hated them to no end.

Hansoo had never stopped being on guard against the Tower even when he was hunting.

He had set them up so they grouped and guarded against each other and had always hunted near the dungeon so he could rush back because he didn't know which one of the twelve was the Fraud Lord.

Since the hardness of Crystal was not something somebody normal could smash, it was only because it was him that he was able to smash it apart.

'I had thought that he didn't exist because he didn't come out...'

<If I was him... I would probably attack from the back during the most dangerous time. Since that's the only way to kill them all if there are many clans.>

It seemed like he had been looking for the final chance like Keldian had said.

And because of this Hansoo had never created a dangerous

situation.

Since it wasn't possible for him to act when there was no danger.

‘But it's a little too much to do that while fighting Demon Lord.’

He wasn't sure because the decision of using up all their mini-crystals was a very reasonable method but Guktae was the Fraud Lord.

‘Let's see. How do I deal with this.’

He couldn't stay away from the Demon Lord for a long time.

If this guy gets released then all the Special Forces would get shredded.

And if he were to dash up there then they just needed to do one thing.

They would make the other clansmen attack him by threatening the Lords held hostage.

‘It would be troublesome if that happens. First... I will open a path for you to live.’

Hansoo smiled as he shouted loudly while continuing to fight the

Demon Lord.

“Woah. Don’t get too excited. Calm down for a second.”

“...?”

Guktae, who was about to order the Special Forces to cut off the Lord’s heads, flinched at these words.

‘What else could he do in such a situation?’

Guktae had unconsciously gotten curious because Hansoo was such a unique guy.

And the next answer was something which exceeded his calculations.

“Let’s trade. You wouldn’t want to die either.”

Guktae flinched at these words.

Who in the world wanted to die.

He was acting like this because he couldn’t go against his Lord’s orders.

Hansoo spoke as he looked at him.

“There are crystals on me. I will give them to you.”

“ ... ”

‘Is he crazy?’

What kind of nonsense was this?

Hansoo spoke again.

“I don’t know who your Lord is but wouldn’t it be better to take those Lords and use them instead of killing them all?”

Everyone nodded at these words.

If they take the Lords as hostage then all their forces become part of Guktae’s Lord.

Since there wasn’t anyone who wouldn’t comply if there was a blade up against their necks.

Hansoo spoke as he looked at him.

“The terms are very simple. First, you take the Lords up with the crystals. Then you threaten the Lords up there and order the special forces to kill the Demon Lord with me. Simple right? Then

every force here can go through the crystal and survive.”

“ ... ”

“Then your Lord is basically gaining nine Lord’s worth of forces. And I get to hunt the Demon Lord.

The remaining people could survive. It’s a win-win. Even you can live. It was tiring anyway because the others were pulling their forces back.”

“ ... ”

Guktae clicked his tongue inwardly.

His words were wrong.

Since his Lord had hated Lords to the point where it was weird.

If these guys go up then they would all die.

But the temptation of crystals were too strong.

And something else which was even more alluring.

‘If I go up, hunt the Demon Lords with the clansmen of these guys and kill him by attacking his back at the last moment?’

Would they be able to resist if he orders them with blades against their throats.

Take the forces of the Nine Lords up, use them for a while, kill them off, collect their artifacts and runes and give them to Wongyung and kill the Lords too.

‘It’s perfect.’

But the one who had moved first was Taejin who had been fighting with him.

“Hansoo man. How can you trust him?”

Guktae shrugged at Taejin’s words.

It seemed like they have seen through his thoughts already so it was time for him to push strongly.

“Don’t trust me then. If you don’t want to then we’ll just kill the nine according to the plans and I can also just die like that. And the remaining 1000 here would all die. Maybe it’s not even 1000 anymore. I’m not sure if you guys can hold out, it seems like there’s still 20 minutes left.”

“... This son of a bitch.”



‘Damn retards... getting caught as hostages.’

Their actions weren't to Taejin's liking from the start but he didn't fail to disappoint until the end.

Hansoo chuckled at Guktae.

“I'll take it that you agree then. Take them.”

Guktae, who had received the crystals which Hansoo had thrown carefully using the special forces, hurriedly used the crystals and the 10 special forces, 9 Lords and Guktae started to get covered in light.

‘Goodness... for it to play out so easily.’

Guktae cheered inwardly as he selected the destination point.

‘Destination is... Island of the Tower!’

The light which came out from the mini-crystals soon covered the 20 of them and soon afterwards they couldn't be seen within the Demon Castle anymore.

“... Dammit. I don't care anymore then.”

“Don't worry too much. He looked pretty naive. He will keep his

promise.”

Hansoo, who had shrugged his shoulders, looked up at the Island of the Tower and then shook his head.

‘It’s done. It seemed like he wanted to live. He would have realized that some things were fishy if he had thought about it for a moment.’

But he had cleared it.

‘It seems like I can focus a little bit now. If he is that guy’s subordinate then... he would go to the Island of the Tower.’

And it didn’t matter because he had already worked on that separately.

Hansoo finished his thoughts and turned around.

Then he started to slash apart the Demon Lord seriously

.....

Hooooouug

The disappeared Lords, Special forces and Guktae had appeared within a dark space while bathing in light.

A location where they moved to if the mini-crystals were activated.

‘Perfect.’

Two Lords had survived but it wouldn’t be easy for them to survive either.

Since he would give the orders now.

“It seems like you would need to comply for now. Hurry and give the order. First attack the Demon Lord and once you kill it, attack Hansoo.”

The special forces pushed the blades against the Lords’ necks.

“Tsk.”

The Lords nodded despite clicking their tongue.

They couldn’t do anything else because they were held hostage but it seemed like he wouldn’t kill them.

They could always look out for chances as long as they were alive.

‘Dumbasses.’

And this was why his Lord was trying to get rid of them whenever he had the chance.

He could already hear their eyeballs rolling about. (\*TL: Korean Saying for planning things out)

While Guktae was smiling, a man’s voice was heard behind them, who were on the ground.

“Huh. Look at these guys.”

When they turned around quickly, a person with a weird mask was approaching them.

“Who are you?”

The man smiled as he was about to speak out his name but then stopped.

Then there would be no point of putting the mask on.

He had disguised himself in order to not show the relationship

between him and Hansoo.

‘But they really did come? He had told me that they would come if I waited here.’

The man spoke out after mumbling inwardly for a while.

It’s not like the psychic power is being marvelous only once or twice.

He just needed to do what he needed to do.

“Mmm... no need for names. We won’t be seeing each other for long anyway.”

‘I just need to cut off their necks and take the things that come out right?’

Kudududk.

“This crazy bastard!”

Sangjin, who had cut off a Lord’s neck with one swing of his sword, laughed coldly at Guktae who was screaming.

## Chapter 41 – Demon Lord's Castle (8)

---

Sangjin laughed as he thought of the conversation he had with Hansoo before they got separated in the first tutorial area.

<If you really have thoughts of doing things properly, don't go to the Central Island and instead go to the Long-legs Island next to it and gain the <Shadow Technique>. You need to do ... And then get to the Island of the Tower fast and wait at the ... for me. If some people say my name then let them live and if they don't then kill them. If nothing comes out by the 32nd day then just move out.>

Sangjin made an astonished expression as he swung his sword.

At first he wasn't sure.

Since nothing had happened despite it being 3 days since he started waiting here while hunting.

But they had really come.

And in a very weird way too.

‘Is it teleportation?’

Sangjin didn't really know about that but he believed in the words of Hansoo.

‘It’s probably that psychic power again. And it seems like I won’t have to worry about whether I should kill them from the way they’re talking.’

He didn’t know their identities but everyone here had to die with one order from that guy over there.

Sangjin started to hack crazily at the clansmen who had appeared in front of him in a mess.

Ssssgggk

“Kuaaaak!”

“Ahhk!”

‘Well... though there’s a lot of them, they’re a total mess.’

And the might of the skill <Shadow Technique> that he obtained from the location Hansoo had told him was amazing.

‘It might’ve been a little hard without this.’

A large amount of runes, skills and artifacts dropped every time he slashed.

These were people of the strongest special forces and Lords with expensive artifacts.

It was reasonable for them to drop a lot.

Sangjin used a moment of carelessness to slash one and then stole the weapon of another only to swing it around crazily.

“This crazy bastard! Who are... kuuk!”



“Talk too much.”

Guktae tried to run backwards but his head was cut off in the end.

‘It seems like a few things these guys drop seem more valuable than the others.’

Sangjin shrugged his shoulders as he looked at them.

He wasn’t really tempted.

Since the Shadow Technique was a great gift by itself.

‘But he had told me to keep these things. Let’s see. Since they came before the <Earring of Seven Siblings> he had told me to get, the next is...’

Sangjin smiled at the shadows swaying around him and then disappeared into the dark forest after picking up all the artifacts and runes.

.....

Kudududk

“Dammit! Keep the formation!”

“Fuckers! If you want to live then hold on more! Hold onto another 5 minutes!”

The people had cleared up and were chopping apart the undead crazily.

And the two clans were throwing attacks ruthlessly around Hansoo.

Their numbers had decreased rapidly in a short time and only 600 were left.

‘Dammit... Is it almost done now?’

Taejin took a deep breath as he thought of what happened earlier while grinding his teeth.

Right after Guktae went up.

People’s symbols disappeared and the control over them had disappeared.

And the chaos that had come after.

It wasn't that the people turned into emotionless puppets after receiving the symbol.

It's just that they would act normally and only when they receive an order from the Lords would they move to follow the orders the best they could.

They had known the current situation clearly and had realized what they needed to do in order to survive as soon as the symbol disappeared.

They started to struggle in order to buy time while creating distance between them and the Demon Lord.

Taejin had wondered what this scene was at first.

'Did Guktae kill them all? Then... Why did he take them up?'

There were tons of things that were unclear but this wasn't the important part.

Hansoo, Yerin and Taejin started to repair the formations quickly.

And they had reached the current situation.

About 400 people were chopping apart the undead crazily and

Yerin and Taejin's clans were assaulting the Demon Lord whom Hansoo had tied up.

The two clans were fighting much better than he expected.

The two clans were made of special forces who had filled up the spots after they had sent out part of the normal clansmen.

A decision which was made due to the dire situation.

If the special forces didn't participate in the fight then they would all die.

They had slowly increased to number around 130 but Guktae's special forces had left and a few had died so the remaining 100 had been absorbed into Yerin and Taejin's clans.

In a normal situation they had to receive the symbol with an agreement from both sides.

And the special forces were actually reluctant to join the clans.

Since they will be ordered around by others and will have to fight against the Demon Lord.

If only Hansoo didn't speak to them:

<If you don't fight now then I'll fall back too. Shall I run around for 15 minutes?>

<...>

15 minutes was enough time for that thing to smash apart the remaining 600 people.

So the special forces received the symbols almost by forcing themselves.

Since they realized that there was no other way.

And as Hansoo and the two clan Lords blocked off the Demon Lord completely, the remaining non-clansmen started to fight against the undeads.

They couldn't run away anyway and fighting undeads was much less of a burden.

With the two thoughts of it being doable and there being no other choice, the people started to fight much more actively in the front.

Kududuk.

Udududk.

“Hold the line for a little longer!”

Taejin shouted urgently as he looked at the almost-killed Demon Lord.

It was much easier to fight since the Clan Lords saving their own bodies had disappeared and their special forces were now under them.

While Hansoo was pulling the Demon Lord's aggro and suppressing it, the 100 special forces controlled by the Clan Lords were assaulting it with attacks.

If they continue at this pace for 10 more minutes then they could kill it without problems.

But Taejin's mind was urgent.

Since 10 minutes was too long of a time.

‘Dammit... the Crystal will open up soon.’

The only reason why they were able to focus on the fight with the Demon Lord was because the non-clansmen were blocking off the undead that the Demon Lord summoned.

What would the non-clansmen do when the crystal opened up?

Would they simply go <Oh, we shall kill the undead for the hard-working clansmen>?

They will all run away while they are fighting against the Demon Lord.

They couldn't back off before they could kill the Demon Lord anyway.

Hansoo and the two special forces were in a balance with the Demon Lord so if one of them were to back off then the remaining two will suffer greatly.

They would get picked off one at a time then.

And the others will all escape during that time.

At this moment a giant ray of light shone in the distance.

'Fuck. If it's going to open at least open quietly.'

A light had come out from the Crystal which was so large that wherever one was in the island they could see it and know the portal opened.

And at the same time the Crystal that was embedded on the ground floated up as a black hole, which could be identified as a portal with a glance, opened up in the center of the Crystal.

The people who had seen the hole stopped.

They glanced at each other and then started to madly charge towards the Crystal.

“Fuck! Don’t Block it!”

“Daaammitt! I’m going up!”

Chaos.

Casualties were occurring during this time but the people were heading towards the Crystal fervently anyway.

‘Dammit...’

As the non-clansmen stopped focusing on the undead, the remaining undead started to slowly gather around the Demon Lord.

“Dammit... do we really have to kill that thing? Let’s get out!”

Hansoo shook his head at Taejin’s words.

If they leave recklessly in such a situation then they would receive a huge amount of casualties.



If they run towards the Crystal then the Demon Lord would chase them and kill off everyone who was focused on running away.

It needed to be finished off now.

Hansoo chuckled as he saw them.

Taejin sighed roughly as he saw this.

“Dammit... Then take the Demon Lord in front of the crystal! Wouldn’t the non-clansmen have to fight against the Undead then?”

If their escape route was blocked then they would come to their senses and attack the undead again.

But Taejin soon realized that such a thing would be hard to accomplish.

It would take too long to drag the Demon Lord in front of the Crystal in the distance with no casualties.

And on the other hand if they were to bring the Demon Lord in front of the Crystal before the non-clansmen left then the amount of casualties would become huge.

If too many of the Special Forces die then the Demon Lord would become too hard to kill even if the undead problem was gone.

Hansoo laughed at these words.

Since he never thought such a thing wouldn't happen.

It isn't possible to bring the Demon Lord in front of the Crystal.

But the opposite was possible.

<As I saw before... When the Crystal activates it floated up in the air. You can bring it then.>

“Wait for a moment.”

Hansoo, who had thought of the words of Eres, grabbed onto the scythe part of <Judgement of Dekrados> which was tied onto the Demon Lord and then started to run towards the Crystal at an extreme speed.

Papapapak.

Endless amounts of daggers were thrown out of Hansoo's hands and Hansoo jumped from dagger to dagger as he charged towards the Crystal.

The undead tried to attack from below but the height at which Hansoo was running was too high.

And soon he arrived at the Crystal and then started to tie up the Crystal with the chain after laughing at the people running towards it.

“Uhh....Uhhhh? What are you doing!”

“Hey!!”

Hansoo spoke as he looked at them:

“Let’s combine our strengths guys.”

As soon as his words ended the Demon Lord shook his body with an enraged scream.

Kuuaaaangg!

And then the Crystal, which was floating in the air, started to get pulled by the immeasurable amount of force and started to fly off.

If the Crystal was embedded on the ground then the chain would’ve snapped.

Since the Demon Lord’s strength was that fearsome.

But the chains didn't snap because the Crystal was floating in the air and the Crystal, which could not resist the strength of the Demon Lord, flew towards it.

Kuuuung

‘It’s hard. It won’t break with this much then. I wonder if I can take it closer.’

Maybe it was due to the fact that it could transport more people, the Crystal in the Demon Lord’s Castle was much sturdier than the Crystal at the Castle.

Hansoo followed behind it as he pushed it.

And when the Crystal neared the battlefield he untied the chain around the Crystal.

Hansoo laughed because if you take into account the Crystal’s hardness then it was safe from destruction from the Demon Lord but it was in a location where one could not recklessly run into the portal.

“No free rides. Work your worth.”

Hansoo ended his words and then charged towards the Demon Lord again and the faces of the non-clansmen who were heading towards the Crystal turned dark.

Since it looked like they would get swept up if they tried to go for the Crystal.

No, the people fighting there wouldn't allow them to do so in the first place.

Taejin sighed as he looked at this scene.

Since now it looked like they could kill the Demon Lord.

'We're finally going up. Did Hansoo say he was going to the Island of the Tower?'

Wherever they went they were able to leave this damnable Central Island.

Taejin stared at Hansoo but then threw away unnecessary thoughts as he focused at the Demon Lord in front of him.

.....

"Hmm... Guktae died."

As one guy muttered while sitting on top of a giant beast, the woman next to him smirked as she spoke:

"I told you already. Don't place your trust in such half-wits."

Why would they sent a guy like him when they had plenty of people with ability?

“No. He did a good job. Far beyond what I had told him.”

Guktae had done more than he asked.

Only an unexpected event occurred at the last second.

“Heh?”

While the woman made an expression of curiosity, the guy, Wongyung, laughed as he shook his head.

“It’s nothing. We’ll meet eventually. Let’s not worry about it and focus on what we were doing.”

‘Are Hansoo and that masked guy related in some way?’

Lord Wongyung mumbled inwardly but then shook his head.

Guktae did tell him that the location which one arrived at using the Mini Crystal was fixed.

But how would Hansoo know the location of such a place and send somebody of his own there.

There was no possibility of such a thing.

If Wongyung had such an information then he would also have done that.

‘Well. It doesn’t matter.’

He didn’t know about the guy with the strange mask but he would soon meet that Hansoo guy.

“Let’s prepare ourselves.”

The woman who was standing next to Wongyung nodded and then shouted loudly:

“Surround this area and prepare your skills! And then hide! Until they all cross over!”

Wongyung’s clan which was made of 100 people.

They only had 85 currently because 15 were somewhere else but their battle power was much greater than normal clans.

Since while the others were killing beasts in a fair manner, these guys were killing people and had stolen their artifacts and runes.

And the people who come up from below would be a huge mess.

They couldn’t lose such a great opportunity.



‘I wasn’t like this originally... it seems like I’ve changed after I’ve gotten the Symbol.’

The woman finished her thoughts as she asked Wongyung:

“Anyway, did you say that they would come this way if you wait here?”

“At least the people coming up from the Central Island will?”

It seemed like the Warp gates to the Tower was different for every island below and were spread around the Tower Island.

But if his calculations were correct then the Warp gate which connected with the Central Island below was this one.

Since it looked like the Warp gates were set up so the path was a straight line from the Island of the Tower to the other island.

Others were like that too.

Not everyone will come here but there’ll be quite a number who will.

Since going through the Island of the Tower was the most efficient according to the Islands Map.

‘Tsk. If he had taken care of everything below then I wouldn’t have to do such a thing...’

He wanted to kill them off one by one by waiting in front of the portal but then if a clansman came up the others below would know of it and everyone would stop coming up.

It had become much more tedious because two Lords had survived.

They had to wait as much as they could and then kill them off when enough people grouped up.

‘Well... I can’t kill them all but...’

It wasn’t bad for something you could gain by waiting a little bit.

They just needed to kill as many as they can and then go into the Tower.

Since there will be plenty of chances.

‘I’m not sure how many will come up but... hurry and come. It’ll be nice if that Hansoo guy is there too.’

Wongyung laughed coldly.

# Chapter 42 – Tower (1)

---

Kurururu

Taejin sighed as he looked at the shredded corpse of the Demon Lord.

‘We finally killed it one way or another.’

Another chaotic situation would’ve occurred if runes came out so he was worried but no runes came out thankfully.

The undead all turned into dust and flew away after the Demon Lord died and the people who were up against the Undead all crashed down.

‘Around... 500 people? A lot survived.’

If you take into account the event in the middle and when everyone ran trying to save their lives, quite a lot survived.

‘Tsk.’

He didn’t like the non-clansmen over there but the fact that random lives had not been lost was not bad.

At that moment he could see Hansoo, who was searching around the Demon Lord’s corpse, approaching him with a complex expression.

Taejin made an expression of confusion as he looked at him.

“What’s wrong?”

Then Taejin looked at the bloody red marble in his hands.

.....

[Kang Hansoo] Strength (Colorless): 20.8%

Stamina (Colorless): 21.1%

Agility (Colorless):16.7%

Perception (Colorless): 17.7%

Mana (Colorless): 15.7%

Magic (Colorless): 15.7%

Physical Resistance (Colorless): 15.7%

Magic Resistance (Colorless): 15.7%

‘It’s not bad.’

Hansoo nodded.

If you take into account the fact that he had raised Nurmaha’s ring by feeding it runes then it was a number which wasn’t bad for a month’s work.

The normal runes were prepared for the tutorial stage from the start so they rose fast but increasing the experience on colorless runes was not easy.

Making one of the runes into a red rune within the three months of the tutorial was a great feat.

Because having one red rune meant that you are a <Beginner> who has the prerequisites to travel the red area.

And the Demonic Jade Crystal in his hands had a close relationship with these runes.

<Demonic Jade Crystal>

It increases all of your runes into 99.99% the second you eat it.

An amazing hack of an item.

The difference between 99.99% and 0.01% was like heaven and earth even if they were the same colorless runes.

And that was why raising the experience was hard also.

But of course there are shortcomings with it too.

First, it only lasted a single day.

And the second fault on it was a bit more extreme.

After that day all the runes will drop to 0.01% and he needed to start all over from there.

It was most similar to a forbidden medicine that exploded your potential like those from old martial hero stories.

And because of this he couldn't use it randomly.

Only 1 chance at using this item.

The Final Dungeon, and from there, the third gateway.

‘Turn all my runes into red runes... then use it.’

This is the most efficient way to use it.

Only colorless runes and normal runes came out in the 2nd stage of the tutorial.

And because of this the perfect situation one could be in is getting 8 red runes at 0.01%.

Basically becoming an <Expert>. This means an adventurer whose runes had all reached the red stage.

But that was still a bit lacking.

And that was why this thing was needed.

If he uses this then he will become a <Master> whose runes are all at the peak.

And there aren't any risks either.

Since he started at the 0.01% anyway, he will just be going back to where he was.

‘I must save it until then.’

There was no need to focus on raising the runes.

Since there was another plan for that.



He needed to focus on other things before that.

Like this Demonic Jade Crystal.

‘Just gaining this in the Central Island means success.’

And it was even better since he had gained the Dekrados set.

But there was still another problem.

Hansoo put away the Demonic Jade Crystal as he spoke to Taejin and Yerin.

“We hunted together but only this came out. I really need this. I can’t share it with you but I can give you anything else we gained from the hunts so speak out what you want. Both of you.”

He needed to distribute things fairly.

He couldn’t give away this item but he also couldn’t ignore the two clans who had hunted the Demon Lord together with him.

Taejin and Yerin looked at each other for a while and then chuckled.

“Just take it. We would’ve all died without you anyway. We even

gained more special forces thanks to you.”

A few of their clansmen had died but their overall strength had increased by far.

Since they had filled 50 of the 100 people limit with special forces.

“Mmm...”

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then spoke to the both of them:

“What are your plans from here onwards?”

Taejin and Yerin said very simply:

“Go to the Tower.”

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

He wasn't sure if the Dark Mad Lord was going to wait in front of the entrance above.

‘But that guy probably knows about the situation in the Central Island.’

He should also know that Guktae had died.

Which means that he could assume that a lot of people from here would survive and come up.

He might've prepared something or he might not have but he couldn't ignore the dangers due to unexpected chances.

Since he will be an entirely different existence from the previous clans.

Full frontal fights would not be easy.

‘Let’s see... I cannot let them do something good for him.’

Hansoo looked around at his surroundings.

.....

“... Nobody’s coming?”

Changhee, who was standing next to Wongyung, asked.

‘Is there a possibility where this guy is wrong.’

He could make mistakes because he was a human but it was rather wondrous since they had never seen him make a mistake.

Before Changhee could finish her thoughts, a single person appeared from the giant circle in front of them.

But Changhee clicked her tongue.

Since it was a familiar face.

‘Dislikeable guy.’

That guy over there was hard to trust because his attitude changed back and forth too fast.

‘Well. That was probably why he acted as the person close to Hansoo.’

Changhee spoke out to the guy who had just come up, Hyunwoo, as she looked at him.

“Didn’t you say you had a friend called Taehee?”

Hyunwoo shrugged his shoulders.

“She was just for cover anyway. What’s there to call a friend when we had only seen each other a few times. She died on the way.”

“ ... ”

While Changhee was clicking her tongue, Wongyung asked Hyunwoo while staring at him:

“But it seems you’re alone. Did the rest die?”

Hyunwoo shook his head at Wongyung’s words.

“Nope. Exactly 531 people survived.”

“... But none of them came to the Island of the Tower?”

It might’ve been different if they had all died but for that much to survive and not come to the Island of the Tower.

The Island of the Tower was a very alluring location.

Hyunwoo sighed at those words.

“That guy fucked it all up at the last moment.”

Then Hyunwoo thought of the words which Hansoo had said to the people at the last moment.

<If you guys are thinking of going to the Island of the Tower then think about it very well! It looked very sweet on the Islands Map

but remember that it was just like that for the Central Island as well!>

“... No one would come if they hear that. But is there really a chance for nobody to come like this?”

The thing about a person's greed is that it usually did not work out the way they wanted but for none of the 500 plus people to have come.

Hyunwoo added a few more words at that:

“It's because they all know what happens if they ignore his words now. He's really a talented fellow.”

“ ... ”

Wongyung clicked his tongue inwardly.

The people who had survived there would probably be much stronger than the ones who had gone through other islands.

This was the perfect chance since they would be a mess from fighting the Demon Lord and the undead.

‘Well. If it didn't work then there's nothing I can do about that.’

If Hyunwoo spoke out then he would only arouse suspicions.

“Did you check where the Hansoo guy went?”

Hyunwoo shook his head.

“I don’t know about that but I did see him going into the Crystal.”

Wongyung shrugged his shoulders as he rose from this seat.

“Well, that’s enough then. Since we did everything we needed to do here, let’s go into the Tower.”

Hyunwoo asked at these words:

“Doesn’t your heart ache? We got nothing out of the Central Island in conclusion.”

Wongyung spoke as he laughed.

“What’s there to have a heartache over. It was one failure out of many. And we killed a lot of the Lords too.”

“...”

“And according to my senses... the thing we’ll gain from the

Tower will be much greater.”

The Islands Map never lied.

The thing they would gain from the Tower would be much sweeter than the thing they would gain from the Central Island and wouldn't be comparable in terms of quantity and quality.

‘Hansoo that guy... I'm disappointed.’

He didn't know about others but he felt like that guy would come up at least.

But for him to dodge him like this.

‘There probably won't be much difference huh.’

That guy probably didn't know since he hadn't gotten to the Island of the Tower yet but everyone eventually gathered to the tower and there would be more instances where they would collide.

Meeting him then will just be the end of it.

‘Though we won't meet for a while... I should at least give warnings. But this guy... why doesn't he have any distinctive features?’



Wongyung sent a message to the 15 people in other places.

<Be cautious of a guy with a chain scythe and a dagger and report at once you spot him. Finish off what I asked and then come into the Tower. I'll see you above.>

Wongyung, who had sent messages to the people all around, shrugged as he spoke.

“Let’s go.”

At those words a large amount of people started to walk slowly towards a location.

Towards the giant black tower that pierces the skies in the center of the island.

.....

A long while after the circle shone as it spat out another person.

Hansoo, who had come out of the circle, checked his surroundings.

Clear signs of people.

It was definite that a clan was waiting for people here.

Hansoo smirked as he looked at these.

‘I knew this would happen.’

The Dark Mad Lord always liked to be doing something so he wasn’t good at waiting.

A very diligent guy from a point of view.

Though the fact that he was working diligently on crazy things was the regrettable part.

He had used Arankal’s bracelet to pretend entering the crystal and then waited nearby while hiding.

Though they could’ve spotted him if they looked hard enough, they probably didn’t expect him to do such a thing in a situation where they were trying to get into the portal.

He had fooled that Hyunwoo guy like that.

‘Who would get fooled if you stick around like that at all times...’

While that guy was looking around at him he was doing the same.

The result was that he was very suspicious.

It might've been different if he didn't know about the Dark Mad Lord.

But that wasn't the case.

Anyways, Hansoo had waited until everybody left, healed his body completely which was exhausted from fighting the Demon Lord and then came through the Crystal.

Since this amount of time would've been enough for them to have left.

'It's too tedious to go around.'

Hansoo then looked towards the Tower in the distance.

The final level as well as the stage of the second tutorial.

The <Tower> in the center was piercing the clouds up above and many islands were floating around the tower.

And like branches of a tree, black bridges from the tower extended to connect to those islands.

If you were to start at the island where the tower was standing

then you could sweep up from below but even if you were to start at the nearby islands you would eventually go into the Tower.

This was why he pondered going to other islands but then he might not be able to gain what he wanted.

Since if he went to other islands he will start at a different floor and not on the first floor.

‘Let’s start.’

He was going to prepare faithfully for the Final Dungeon.

Since this was his 1st target.

And the Dark Mad Lord was going to be included within it.

Hansoo grinned as he organized his gear.

‘I’m not sure if that Hyunwoo guy remembered my physical traits well or not.’

Hansoo pushed down the Justice of Dekrados deep within his thigh.

At the same time he shortened the length of the chain on Judgement of Dekrados as much as he could, wrapped it around

his waist once, fixed it firmly onto his back and then covered it with his cape.

And soon it was almost like the two weapons disappeared.

Hansoo then proceeded to grab onto a sword he had picked up randomly before coming in here.

A decent level Podao that a dead adventurer was holding onto.

Hansoo's image instantly turned into a mediocre level which you could find anywhere.

Well Hansoo's image wasn't what caught the eye in the first place.

But this wasn't enough.

Hansoo quickly moved out.

Since there was a place he agreed to meet that guy.

After a while a very familiar face came into view.

“Hey. Hansoo!”

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“Thanks.”

Sangjin grinned.

“It’s a win-win. Anyways... here it is.”

Sangjin handed over a small earring.

An artifact which Hansoo had asked for him to get along with the <Shadow Technique>.

<Earring of Seven Siblings.>

It absorbed the user’s mana constantly as it changed the user’s appearance.

To one of the seven which was saved onto it.

‘Saved some time thanks to him.’

Hansoo put on the earring on his hand.

And as he inserted mana onto it his face changed.

No, not only his face but his whole body made crackling sound as

it changed.

Sangjin made a scared expression as he looked at this.

“Is it okay for you to do this?”

Sangjin had actually used this before.

Since it was much more charming than the mask.

But this wasn't something where one could change their face however they wanted.

It was something which changed their whole body onto one of the seven saved images.

Of course the battle power decreased and Sangjin, who had realized this, gave up using it and put on the mask.

But Hansoo shook his head.

“This is good enough.”

He needed to do at least this much. He couldn't fool the enemy just because he had changed the face a little bit.

Since the adventurer's perception was too high for that.

Since that was basically covering one's nose with a biscuit and then saying that they have disguised themselves.

They would be found out by other adventurers who had memorized the shape of their entire body.

He needed to change his whole body structure as so.

‘It does decrease my battle power but this is enough.’

This wasn't the important part.

Hansoo made an expression so cold that it was fearsome.

‘Everyone should remember me to some degree by now.’

The 500 people of the Central Island remember him.

The clansmen of the Dark Mad Lord remember him.

Rumors about him would be spread far and wide.

He does not kill people.

He sticks by the rules.



He tries to fight in the front and also tries to save as many people as he can.

This much was enough for him to create an image.

‘Eres. This should be enough.’

And now it was time for him to keep Keldian’s last will.

‘Dark Mad Lord. Until I come find you... keep doing well.’

Hansoo laughed coldly at the tower in the distance.

## Chapter 43 – Tower (2)

---

Hansoo who had sent off Sangjin looked at the tower in the distance as he got lost in thought.

‘It’s seems like I will need to play hide and seek. He’s a real talent huh.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

They could choose because the structure of the tower was unique.

To either move in small groups or in large groups.

And a fitting difficulty and reward is prepared from that.

Normal clan lords would try to move by combining all their forces.

Since they had done so until now and since it was safer this way.

But this guy was different.

<There isn’t enough time for us to kill off everyone else by moving around in a big group. Separate and move with a mindset of killing 10 people per one person. Monopolize the chances that would be given to 10 people and then take the runes from those corpses.>

With such thoughts he splits up his clansmen and then mixes them in between other adventurers.

A method that was possible because he was confident in each individual member's abilities and because they could communicate with each other no matter where they were in the tower.

It would actually be eye catching if they were to move in groups but moving in small killer squads allowed them for them to pretend they're normal adventurers between other people and then wipe them off during decisive moments.

People who had died from the Dark Mad Lord's small killer squads had numbered over a thousand in the past and these killer squads had monopolized around 1000 people's worth of artifacts and runes and had reached a point where they could openly massacre people and no one could do anything to them.

Since they were all separated he had to find and kill them off one by one as he climbed.

There was no need to look out for his image because he had transformed himself, but he hadn't done this to just kill normal adventurers to turn them into runes.

He had changed in order to get as close as he could to the Dark Mad Lord, who knows of his appearance, to cut off his neck in a single swipe.

‘It won’t take that long.’

Hansoo thought of this and that and laughed coldly as he slowly walked towards the tower.

After a long walk the people inside the Tower greeted Hansoo.

“A newcomer has come. I’m called Suhan. What about you?”

Hansoo made a befuddled expression at the words of the man in the front.

‘Ah. I have to choose a name.’

Since he was a different person he had to make a separate name.

Since he wasn’t Kang Hansoo anymore.

Hansoo laughed as he spoke his name.

“My name is...”

.....

“Is that the tower...”

Chulman frowned as he looked at the giant tower in the distance.

How hard had it been getting to this point.

Chulman looked around him cautiously as he walked.

At the same time he glanced at the giant tower in front of his eyes.

Giant Tower.

Many entrances existed in all directions but not many differences could be seen.

‘... Do I just need to go in?’

Chulam chose one of them and then headed in carefully.

The passageway was long which was befitting of the giant tower.

As he followed the tunnel in, a giant circular plaza came out.

‘...This is?’

Chulman checked his surroundings instinctively.

Hundreds of entrances had surrounded the plaza and a few of them already had closed doors.

And above the entrance there were various numbers.

Some said 1 and others said 50.

Some big ones even said 80.

Similarities between them was that to the inside of the entrance was not a passageway but rather a small room.

‘What is this...’

But that wasn’t the only peculiar part.

People who had grouped up in the corner.

‘9 people.’

It was only 9 but he couldn’t let his guards drop.

Whilst Chulman was on guard the guy in the very front spoke out as he looked at him.

“Don’t be so anxious. We’re meeting each other for the first time here too.”

“...?”

The others couldn’t drop their guards but had their curiosity perked at these words.

What was the reason for 9 strangers to group up.

And the fact that 9 people were mixed into the group was also strange.

“Why are you gathered so?”

The man who was standing in the front, Suhan, replied at Chulman’s words.

“I’m called Suhan, well... since you’re alone I can guess to some extent. There’s really nobody you can trust huh?”

Chulman frowned at these words.

Correct.

He had felt this while going up the other islands.

That there was really nobody he could trust.

No, this damnable fairy had made it so.

He didn't resent it.

They only had one life, who in the world would give up their life for somebody else.

Since he was like that too.

Suhan smiled as he looked at Chulman.

“But what do we do. It seems we have to group up again no matter what. You're the tenth person. It said we needed one more person.”

“?”

While Chulman was making a confused expression, the fairy appeared in the sky.

“I welcome you to the tower. Heehee. This is a land of opportunity. Of course everywhere in the tutorial is like that but this place is even more so.”

And at that moment a small map had appeared within Chulman's



hands.

‘This is...’

Information about the hundreds of doors nearby was written on it.

<2 Man Room: Arunan’s Crown, Kokulka’s Elixir> (Closed)

...

<9 Man Room: Seven Stripe Cape, Karun’s Doll...>(Closed)

<10 Man Room: Roropin’s Sharp Hook, Circlet of Kiladerape...>

...

<47 Man Room: Kelpin’s Sub Equipment, Sword of Akin...>

...

<80 Man Room: Divine Wrath, Sword of Lightning...>(Closed)

<80 Man Room: King’s Sword...>(Closed)

By pressing it he could even read descriptions about the options

on these.

‘... King’s Sword? Diving Wrath? They even give this? Isn’t this a bit too much.’

While Chuman made a flustered expression the fairy smiled as it spoke.

“This is a friendly care for you guys. You’ve seen instances of people moving in large groups in the islands below right?”

Chulman nodded his head.

‘Damn... that’s really out of the norm. How do you want us to go against such things.’

Clan Lord.

Their psychic power was fascinating itself but it was also very superior.

50 to 100 people moved about in groups, how did they expect them to win against that.

He had gone through two islands on the way here and one of them had a Lord on the island.

It was an island that could hold 100 people but the whole time while he was there the island was basically controlled by the Lord who lead 50 people.

“I was watching from above but phew. How would the people traveling alone live from such sorrows? So we prepared this for you. This way you won’t be in a disadvantage because you lack numbers right?”

He realized it then.

What the 2 Man Room and 3 Man Rooms meant.

A game which could be played with 2 people, a game which could be played with 3 people.

‘Clearly... if you were to do this then the chances of going against clans go down substantially.’

It seemed like large rooms such as 80 Man Rooms were rooms that clans had targeted and entered.

Since it was that dangerous but had enormous rewards to go with it.

The 2 Man Rooms or 3 Man Rooms seemed like they were all closed due to people coming ahead but rooms such as 10 man rooms were still left.

‘This is what they meant when they said when they were waiting for me.’

They wanted to go into the 10 Man Room but they couldn’t because 1 was lacking.

But Chulman looked at the fairy with an extremely suspicious expression.

‘These flies are friendly huh?’

How could they be.

But at that moment he heard Suhan’s voice calling at him.

“There’s no point of pondering over it. Since the lowest one right now is the 10 man Room.”

“ ... ”

As if the people ahead of them had similar thoughts, all the 2 Man to 9 Man Rooms were long closed.

‘Well... Since they could enter by gathering for a small time it would’ve been filled up quickly.’

He was alone.

The 10 Man Room was the least burdensome.

If he missed this chance and were to enter a 11 Man Room with a group of 3-4 people then it would be extremely hard on him.

‘There’s no way that it wouldn’t have set something up.’

Chulman nodded his head as he went into the room which had <10> written on the entrance along with the nine people.

As 10 people got into the room the doors made a grinding noise as they closed.

Kuguguguuung.

And soon the small room with 10 people moved about aggressively as it started to dig deep into the tower.

.....

Kyaaaaak!

Kudududk.

Chulman cut off the neck of the Beast which was charging at

him.

The beast which had the shape of a red ant spat out a rune after having its head cut off by Chulman's black medium sized Greatsword.

‘Let's see. Did he say we should get the things from whatever we killed ourselves?’

He didn't drop his guard against the nine of them even whilst he was hunting.

At the same time he was inspecting them the whole time.

‘First... it seems like these guys know how to play as a team.’

Maybe it was because they were cautious of each other or they had decided that it wasn't the time for them to fight each other but a clear rule was set between the 10 of them.

The two basic rules which said that they had to fight in the front and distribution of runes and artifacts were according to their contributions.

‘As I expected... there's a difference in levels.’

The three which were composed of two men including Suhan and a female were really strong.

Since it looked like the 7 others could not beat these three.

‘That guy called Youngjae is strong too...’

The four including himself were at a decent level.

There were three of them who were weaker than him.

‘Thankfully there isn’t anyone who wants to take over because they’re strong... and the girls are fighting well too.’

Being a female did not mean they were weak.

No, the fact that their poisonous aura could be felt at every swing of their sword showed how hard it was to get to this point.

But then a thought came up in Chulman’s head.

‘... This is too simple.’

Of course he didn’t mean the difficulty itself was hard.

Since if it was that easy then it wouldn’t have taken them a while day to get here.

Just like the name of the 10 Man Room, the difficulty was set so 10 people needed to work well with each other in order to clear it.

It would've been hard on them if they had 8 or 9.

The difficulty played a huge role to the fact that they were all keeping by the rules while advancing forward.

If it was too hard or too easy then the relationship between the people would be much worse than it is now.

Since a person would have separate thoughts when they were in dire situations or had leisure.

But because of this they felt much more at ease.

'The fairy didn't set anything up?'

While Chulman was surprised Suhan swung his sword while shouting energetically.

"It seems like all ten of us could survive this way? Let's stay strong!"

Chulman nodded at these words.

'Yeah. Let's first focus on advancing forward.'



Who would enjoy killing and stealing things from them.

If they could combine their forces then doing so was the best.

They would all become zealous since their lives were on stake.

And have their own circumstances.

Just like him.

‘Damn... I’m not sure if I can find Suhee.’

Chulman grinded his teeth.

He had to survive and find his daughter who he had separated from during the ticket stealing wars.

His daughter Suhee and him, the two of them weren’t strong enough to gather three tickets so they had to get a third random member and go up with three tickets.

Since they would’ve lost their tickets and died there if they had remained a bit longer.

It had been a month since he had been separated with Suhee.

Insecurities rose up from deep within but he couldn't do anything.

He could only search fervently.

Swinging the sword about crazily, the location of their goals could be seen.

A clearly different place in comparison to the jungle-like environment around them.

Chulman sighed a breath of relief.

“It seems like we're almost there, Old man.”

Chulman looked to the side towards where the voice came from.

A girl who was swinging the sword diligently besides him.

One of the three weakest people.

‘Did she say she was Minhee. Hoo...Suhee is just about that age too.’

Chulman sighed.

Because thoughts of Suhee sprang up again by looking at her.

“Yeah. But it’s good because evil people don’t exist here.”

Minhee shook her head as she spoke.

“You don’t know by looking at them from the outside.”

“...”

Chulman grinded his teeth.

It was just as she said.

There might be somebody who was looking for a decisive moment.

‘And... will it finish like this?’

There might not be any evil people.

But when a situation changes, the people turning evil wasn’t even a big deal.

Chulman, who had been lost in thought, flinched as he looked at the location where they had arrived at.

‘... There isn’t just one door.’

The doors which were laid in front of them weren’t just one.

Exactly 10 doors for 10 people.

‘This doesn’t feel good.’

Chulman and the others frowned.

## Chapter 44 – Tower (3)

---

At that moment the fairy appeared above everyone's head.

‘...’

While Chulman frowned, the fairy quickly started to babble:

“Hello everyone. Congratulations on clearing a room. Heehee. It was decent enough for 10 people to clear right?”.

Everyone unconsciously nodded at these words.

It took about a day for them to get through one room.

And runes had come out too.

The fairy spoke as it looked at these people.

“Well it's exactly at the difficulty for 10 people. But isn't the reward a bit too lacking for a day's worth of work?”

Everybody flinched.

‘Looking at it again....’

They had ignored it because they were hunting the beasts whilst being on guard with the nearby people but it seems like the beasts they had killed had not dropped a single artifact.

‘This is a bit troublesome.’

Artifacts and skills were important beyond anything else.

Runes did not create a substantial gap and even if there was a gap it was still possible to catch up to it.

But a good artifact or a skill was different.

Chulman had an incident where he collided against somebody of similar skill level as him.

A guy who tried to rape a woman.

Thoughts of his daughter enraged him and made him collide against him.

Of course he had calculated that the guy would realize their skill levels and then refrain from colliding against each other.

But this was a misconception.

They were at similar levels in terms of strength but a huge

difference was made at a decisive moment due to their artifacts.

He had almost died because his sword had broken apart after colliding against that guy's sword a few times.

If you take into account the fact that the difficulty of the Tower would continue to increase then the level of one's artifacts could not stay stationary.

The fairy smiled while looking at the people trapped in their thoughts.

“Come on everybody. We aren't that heartless. We've prepared it right here! Since it has taken around one day the rewards should be around this much right?”

The fairy pointed towards the entrance.

The people who saw this stopped for a moment.

Artifacts were placed in front of the 10 doors.

Artifacts that were listed under the 10 Man Room on the map.

<Roropin's Sharp Hook>

<Circlet of Kiladerape>

...

<Haul's Glove>

Chulman asked the fairy:

“Do we just need to take one of them then?”

Ten people. Ten doors. 10 variety of artifacts.

It was quite an obvious choice.

The fairy grinned at these words.

“How could that be. Only one out of those 10 doors will open.”

“...One? Then ten people would go through one door but only one artifact will be given?”

The fairy smiled as it spoke again.

“Could you first check the standards of those artifacts?”

Everyone pulled out their maps as they started to check the options of the artifacts.



And then flinched.

‘... Why is there so much difference?’

<Haul’s Glove>, which was in front of the door which said <10> was pretty good but it was something one could achieve by working just a bit harder.

And 10 of them existed too.

On the other hand, the single <Roropin’s Sharp Hook> which was in front of the room with <1> or two of <Circlet of Kiladerape> in front of the room with <2> were at a level which couldn’t even be compared to something like Haul’s glove.

An overwhelming difference in power.

The fairy laughed as it saw this.

“The figure listed in front of the door isn’t a number. It is something that tells you about how many could survive. The number of people leaving this room alive hangs on your decisions. Heehee.”

“ ... ”

“It’s not bad to choose the 10th door and leave together in a nice

manner with Haul's Gloves. Though I wouldn't recommend it due to the structure of the tower."

"Fuck..."

It wasn't just a problem of this moment.

He would just be dead meat if he was to take the Haul's glove and was to face a crossroad of choice like this and meet somebody who had killed off the other nine and had gotten something like the hook.

Chulman cursed out loud as he gripped the sword in his hands.

The moment they started to move away from each other Suhan shouted out.

"Wait! Come to your senses! Isn't it a safer choice to get through the next level together as ten!"

Everyone flinched at these words.

Of course it was logically better to have nine comrades than a single weapon like that.

And even more so if you take into account that you were the one who might die during the fight.

The fairy smiled.

“I don’t know. Heehee. Is it okay for you guys to be at such a leisure when this is just a start? After this room...”

Suhan aggressively glared at the fairy as he shouted.

“Shut up.”

“...”

Everyone flinched as they got away from Suhan.

‘That guy. What are his thoughts. To go up against the fairy...’

Chulman looked at Suhan with a worrying expression.

He felt bad for him because though guy’s personality was pretty good, he was about to get killed by the fairy.

But the fairy didn’t act out and instead made an amused expression as it spoke:

“What an aggressive man. Can I really not speak about it then?”

But then a man in the corner spoke out.

“No. Please continue. I must hear this out.”

The man looked at Suhan as he spoke.

“You shut up instead. Shouldn’t we at least hear what is about to come. If you aren’t going to take care of all our lives then don’t cut off important intel. Do you want to die or something.”

“... This bitch.”

Suhan glared at the man but he could not swing his sword.

Because that guy was one of the three strongest along with Suhan.

If they fight here then they would be helping them to choose the eighth room.

The fairy continued to talk.

“It might not be bad to go along with ten people but you will cross against the people of other rooms. Though the number of people you would get tangled up with depends on the room.”

Everyone became serious at these words.

If they choose Haul's glove then all ten of them could survive.

But going together at this moment did not guarantee them going together next round.

‘No. It'll be good if we don't become enemies then.’

This was proven by previous experiences.

And what if the people they meet in the next room had also been in a 10 Man Room but chose the 3rd or 4th door?

What if they were from a 40 Man Room and had chosen the 10th door?

If you start at similar starting points then the level of artifacts was the most important part.

If they head off like this then they have to go against people who are armed with much more powerful artifacts.

“ ... ”

Everyone's expressions turned cold.

A definite decision to increase their chance of survival in this damnable structure.

Keep on choosing the low-numbered door and arm themselves.

It might be hard in the beginning but once they grasp the advantage the gap will continue to increase.

But even though everyone had such thoughts they couldn't move thoughtlessly.

Since there was no guarantee that they would be part of the winning side even if they felt greedy.

Suhan spoke cautiously whilst looking at everyone:

“Wait! If we fight here then we might receive injuries and get hurt! If we go into the next room in such a situation then it'll still be dangerous! It's just better to go as ten...”

“Oh. All your injuries would get healed as soon as you go through the door. We should at least give that much as service when you fought so hard to take over. Heehee. Having a limb cut off is okay too so fight well.”

“This damnable...”

While Suhan was flustered from the fairy's words, Youngjae looked at Suhan for a moment and then smirked.

“Why are you trying so hard to survive all together. Quite a funny guy.”

“What?”

Before Youngjae’s words ended, a woman started to walk towards Youngjae’s side.

Suhan narrows his eyes.

Mijee.

One of the three strongest along with Youngjae.

“What is...”

“I just like the idea on this side. Let’s do it simply. Those who want to be with us stick here. We can organize it roughly. Even if it isn’t the 1st or 2nd room hmm... 4? 5th room sounds good?”

‘Damnit... it seemed like they were talking quite a bit on the way here...’

Chulman grinded his teeth as he looked at Youngjae and Mijee.

They didn’t predict things up to this point but had shared some part of their thoughts.

Suhan grinded his teeth and shouted at the scene in front of him:

“You crazy bastards! Why are you doing this when we can end it without fighting...”

Youngjae laughed.

“We could end it without fighting. But it seems like if we were to do so here then we would get eaten by those who had fought and won. That’s what I’ve had to go through.”

“Fuck...”

While Suhan grinded his teeth, Youngjae clicked his tongue inwardly.

“It’s going to take all day.”

As soon as his words ended, Youngjae rushed out and swung his sword around him.

Kwadududk.

Ududuk.

“Kuaaaak!”



Chulman, who had been off guard, had his wrist cut off.

He had tried to dodge backwards because he wasn't that dull but his wrist had flown off because there was a bit too much difference from the start.

Everyone who had seen this started to crazily head behind Suhan.

They had all realized.

That they would all die if this was to continue.

That guy was a maniac.

“You bastard!”

The opponent was two.

But it was two of the three strongest people here.

‘Damn... and that guy was hiding his true strength.’

Chulman grinded his teeth as he looked at Youngjae.

He had known that he was strong but for him to be this strong.

One could see how much muscle they had by looking but there was no way to find out about the number of runes they had before they get into a full head on clash.

If one were to hide their skills like that then there was no way to know.

They would not be an opponent if they didn't group up with Suhan as the center.

Youngjae smirked as he saw this.

“Damn. It's the opposite effect. I had done it to get you guys to this side. Then there's only two people along with this lady?”

It was a very disadvantageous situation from one point of view but Youngjae didn't show it as he charged towards Suhan.

And a sword fight had occurred after the other people had also charged in.

“This bitch! Die.”

“You fucker! Getting blinded by the artifact!”

Youngjae and Mijee were strong but Suhan was not a pushover either and they also had an advantage in numbers.

And everyone, excluding Chulman who was rendered unable to fight, started to send off a bloodthirsty aura from all around.

No. There was still another person who was not involved in the sword fight.

“Hey Minhee...”

“U...uuu.....”

The child who had barely held a sword up against the beasts was scared out of her wits and could not get near as the people started to clash with each other.

Chulman who had been clutching onto his wrist looked at her with a sad expression.

Words of her having to help out had come up to his throat.

But he couldn't say so after seeing a child who was so scared.

‘Damn...Youngjae this bastard...’

Chulman tried to heal his wrist with all his strength but it

seemed like he won't be able to for a while because the ligaments in both of his hands had been cut off.

And soon after the fight had ended.

“Kuuu...”

“Kuuk...”

The result was that Youngjae and Mijee had won.

The skills which Youngjae had hidden was really much higher than the norm.

They had both become bloody but the others could not even stand and were all rolling about the floor with painful expressions.

Mijee grinned as she looked at that Youngjae.

“Hoo... you fight well. But why didn't you try to kill any of them? Is there a reason?”

Everyone had fallen to the ground but none had died.

Of course they had their wrists cut off and had suffered extreme injuries so they were unable to fight but they were still alive.

Youngjae laughed as he spoke.

“There’s a reason for this. Anyhow...”

At that moment Youngjae’s expression froze frightfully.

And then he pushed Mijee away.

“What are you...”

And in the spot where Mijee had fallen from, a sword had flown past it with extreme speed.

And the sword continued to swing as it stabbed Youngjae.

Mijee was able to dodge barely but still had a deep wound on her shoulder and Youngjae’s abdomen was punctured from that.

“Kuuuk...”

Youngjae mumbled at the handle of the sword which had gone through him.

A speed which was not even comparable to the fight before.

Youngjae coughed out some blood as he looked at Minhee who had thrown the sword.

“You... your skills... why did you stand still if you were this good?”

Minhee laughed coldly as she answered:

“No reason for me to act out when you are doing the work I was going to do for me. It’s a first meeting somebody crazier than me.”

<Lord. I’ve cleared this place easily.>

Minhee laughed as she sent Wongyung a message.

She had been looking for a chance but it was quite burdensome because the three were quite strong.

And this was why she was going to look out for chances for a while.

In order to aim for their backs when an even more dangerous situation occurred.

The fairy had set it up but she had clicked her tongue and given up.

Because it didn’t seem like a fight would happen.

But then that Youngjae guy started to fight with them.

‘I’ve blown my nose without even touching it.’ (\*Note: Korean saying meaning “Something was done without me having to do anything”)

This was why greedy people were good.

It was hard to go against ten people even for them.

But there was a reason why they had gone in one to two at a time.

Since there was no need for them to fight them all alone.

Things became really easy if one or two people like him existed.

While Minhee was laughing quietly, Youngjae mumbled coldly in front of Minhee.

“You guys really have too much patience. For you guys to come out only when I do this.”

He had always felt it but the problem with these guys was the fact that they had too much patience.

That was why they would only come out when one had set up everything.

It was going to be even more dangerous from now on, it'll be troublesome if he proceeded without taking care of such things.

‘Tsk. Though it'll heal... it hurts like hell.’

As soon as the room opened everybody would get healed.

Of course there's nothing they could do about the ones who were dead.

“What?”

Even before Minhee could react, a dagger which had come out from around the thigh pierced Minhee's chest.

‘It's the second floor now. Let's see each other soon.’

He would just kill off small fry like these on the way.

The real goal is the guy whom he would meet on the third floor.

Hansoo laughed coldly as he thought of the <Treasure Hunt> that would happen in the next room.



## Chapter 45 – Tower (4)

---

Everyone made a confused expression.

‘What is going on...’

But Chulman just sighed.

What was the point of thinking such things.

They were going to die soon anyway.

It didn’t matter whether he died from Minhee’s hands or Youngjae’s hands.

At that instant, something flew over at a very fast speed as it smashed his head.

Puuk!

‘Dammit...’

Chulman fell unconscious as he felt his senses fade away.

Youngjae, who had gotten the 8 others unconscious by throwing the daggers, walked up and chose the 9th room.

Suuuururk.

As he chose the <Dagger of the Princess trapped in the Tower> in front of the 9th room, the door opened and the injuries of the people inside the room disappeared.

Hansoo chuckled at the people laid around on the ground with all their injuries healed and then started to loosen up his body.

‘Though they’re a bit strong... one is easy enough’.

The underlings of the Dark Mad Lord are strong.

Since they had not only monopolized the runes of others, but skills and artifacts as well.

But that differed from person to person.

And one person could be taken care of simply by releasing the hidden strength.

If it doesn’t work out then he could just take a blade, kill them off and just heal afterwards.

Since that was his battle style anyway.

‘Which means... this girl’s artifacts are mine.’

Hansoo chuckled.

There was no need to run around from place to place in order to gather artifacts in the Tower.

Since the underlings of the Dark Mad Lord will make their way to him by themselves.

Simple.

They will set some things up and bring artifacts up with them.

And he just needed to cut off their heads and take those.

Hansoo took the runes and artifacts that came out from her body and then showed a conspicuous color as he saw an item.

‘Seven Stripe Cape... to wear something like this.’

Hansoo made a slightly astonished expression.

If she had activated this and fought then it would really have been annoying.

<Seven Stripe Cape>

An amazing cape that increased the defense against seven different kinds of weapons.

‘It was hard enough fighting without the powerful artifacts but this is great.’

This was a huge help in his situation where his stats had decreased and where he could not use the Dekrados set.

And even more so if you take into account of the fact that he would fight against other humans more often.

The underlings of Dark Mad Lord will suspect him with it but they won’t be able to confirm.

Since it isn’t the only one of its kind despite it being hard to obtain.

Hansoo who had prepared some things started to ponder about his future plans.

‘There’s two stages left.’

If he goes through two more things then all the preparations for entering the Final Dungeon will be done.

The first one of those.

<A well-imitated Philosopher's Stone.>

All the artifacts that are currently equipped on him are colorless ones.

Including the Seven Stripe Cape and the Dekrados Set.

But his runes will become red during the Final Dungeon.

And of course he could only fight the enemy if he prepares red gear.

'But that's impossible.'

It was quite obvious actually.

How would he gain red gear in the colorless stage?

To do that he needed to gain a growing artifact like Nurmaha's ring and then feed it with a lot of runes to make it red.

It would impossible to cover his body with such artifacts.

But the thing that made it possible was the weaker version of the Philosopher's Stone.

If you turn it into powder and then apply it, the quality of the

energy a weapon could absorb increases by one level.

Though it's not like a new skill is unlocked like with the growing artifacts, the simple fact of it being able to absorb the red energy and not the colorless energy was still a huge improvement.

‘Though there's a time limit... it's good enough.’

If you take into account of the size of that Philosopher's stone then he could probably turn all his gear into red artifacts while he is inside the Final Dungeon.

‘I'm going to the room of the Treasure Hunt.’

This was a hidden piece which could be obtained in the 50 Man Room of the 2nd floor, at the <Treasure Hunt>.

If you go to the 2nd floor from the 1st then another circular plaza appears and one would get into a group there again.

As Hansoo moved, his whole body made crunching sounds as it changed again.

Soon Youngjae had disappeared and a completely different Hansoo had appeared.

He had knocked the others unconscious because of this.

‘I can’t get found out yet.’

Minhee had died in a single strike.

Even if the messaging system existed, it was impossible to send the message about something happening suddenly.

But unexpected events still happen.

In order to accomplish the final level properly he couldn’t get found out by the clansmen of the Dark Mad Lord yet.

‘Let’s see... What should my name be this time?’

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then made a simple decision.

‘Let’s do Chungjae.’

Hansoo chuckled as he started to walk into the darkness quickly.

.....

Kududududu

The giant room which was filled by 50 people started to move with a small noise.

These were all people who had accomplished the room on the 1st floor.

It had taken a whole extra day to collect 50 people.

These people were mostly not part of any clans.

It was actually quite reasonable since most clans had gone up to the 2nd floor right away from the start.

Since most people here were people who had come up after clearing the mission on the 1st floor.

‘Those guys have come too.’

Hansoo laughed inwardly as he looked at Suhan and the others who were looking around the room.

They were confused because the person who had come up before had disappeared.

‘Well. They would probably think that I went into a different



room.'

There were other rooms than this one on the 2nd floor.

They would probably think that he had gone into one of those while they were unconscious.

While they were thinking about this and that, the fairy's voice resonated throughout the room clearly:

"The thing you guys will do this time is the Treasure Hunt!"

"..."

"The rule is very simple. You just need to search through all of the limited space here and find the treasure!"

Everyone frowned as they looked at the map and the view they could see outside of the room.

'... It's too wide.'

Though it was of limited space, the size of the Treasure Hunting area was almost half the size of Yeouido. (Yeouido is about 3 km<sup>2</sup>)

A bit too big for 50 people to roam around in.

“You just need to find this.”

While they were having numerous thoughts, a small spherical marble appeared in front of their eyes.

A pretty normal marble, though it did shine.

As everyone made strange expressions the fairy laughed as it spoke:

“The treasure itself isn’t an artifact but rather an exchange ticket. If you bring this to the center then I’ll exchange it for you. Since there’s a lot of different articles it’ll be fun pondering over it too. I’ll show it to you in advance.”

Artifacts were shown row by rows in front of their eyes.

It seemed like they varied from number 1 to 50.

1 artifact on number 1.

And 50 of the same artifact on the 50th number.

It was an obvious thought but it seemed like that the lesser the number the more precious it was.

Everyone looked at the 50th one.

### <Kurutan's Golden Bludgeon>

The artifact which you could gain 50 of was just a bit better than the weapons they were holding.

A useful artifact but not really at the level of being eye-catching.

“As you see it the 50th one is... well, still useful. Though it's not as good as the 1st one. Which artifact you would exchange for is up to you.”

Everyone's gaze had already been focused on the 1st item even without the words of the Fairy.

### <Inkaron's Golden Cape>

An item which boosted Charisma, Charm, Luck by 15 and the 8 base stats by 5% too.

The other options were amazing too.

If you take into account that runes would be very hard to gain from now on, the price of this item was not even comparable to the other ones.

Even if it wasn't the 1st item, items up to number 10 were pretty amazing and items up to 30 were items that were a bit hard to gain

by hunting.

“Only when you bring the Treasure and exchange for the price in the center the door to the next room will open. No one can leave before that.”

Not being able to leave was something they had already heard.

They had come in here after taking that into account.

The situation wouldn't be different in other rooms as well so it was just better to start as soon as possible when 50 people had gathered.

And who knows?

They might find the treasure if they're lucky.

“Then let's start! Heehee.”

With those final words the room clunked and stopped.

And a giant jungle had appeared in front of them.

‘Hmm...’

The people glanced at each other and then separated into the

giant jungle.

Being in a team was not always the best option in such a place.

Actually it might be harder to find if you are grouped.

But just before everyone was apart to separate, the fairy's voice resonated throughout the air.

<You didn't think that you'll just need to have some luck and find it first right? Heehee. The treasure is guarded by protectors. Which means that you'll be able to find the treasure if you kill the protectors one at a time right? This is my small gift to you. Since it'll be too hard to find without this information. One of the 128 would be protecting it.>

And then the images of the protectors appeared in air.

All 128 of them.

Everyone saw this and then frowned their faces.

'Fuck. It's not something I can kill alone...'

They realized instantly.

Though they had gotten quite a bit of skills and runes, it was not

something they could solve with just that much.

It was at the level where they at least needed about 5 people to hunt it down safely.

The people who were dispersing flinched.

Since they did not have any confidence in fighting those things alone.

But there was no need for all 50 of them to group up.

One person shouted loudly in the center.

“Is there anybody who would go with me?”

Everyone started to size each other up as they started to group up in tens or so.

The good thing about this treasure hunt was that multiple people could share the result.

Since they couldn't do anything alone, it was better to group up and act together.

There were actually a few people who weren't interested in the treasure among the crowd.

Since it seemed like it was better to hunt for runes in the time where they would fight to earn some crappy thing.

‘And as I heard the explanation earlier, it seems like normal beasts gave artifacts too.’

It seemed like that the beasts were pretty good in giving out runes and artifacts in this place.

Which means the artifacts around the level of those in 40 to 50th spot were faster to earn through hunting.

At that moment a voice was heard in the air.

<Oh Yeah. There’s one more thing, I promise this is really the last thing. It’s because it’ll be a bit boring if there is no tension, and I feel like there’s some people here ignoring the prize.>

“ ... ”

<It doesn’t matter who finds the treasure but everyone without a prize in their hands will die before they leave. Remember this. There’s only one treasure but if the person who finds it exchanges it for Inkaron’s Gold Cape before anyone can stop it then everyone else but that person would die right? Ok be strong! The time limit is 2 weeks!>

It meant that no matter how strong they were they would all get massacred if one crazy guy exchanged the treasure for only one artifact and left this place.

Everyone's expressions turned hard.

.....

<Lord. I feel like I might be able to massacre everyone if I'm lucky>.

Wongyung nodded at the clansman's words.

<Look for the chance as much as you can.>

"Then... we should start too."

"Uuuuaaak!"

Wongyung laughed in joy whilst looking at the room which was already in chaos as he moved his steps.



## Chapter 46 – Tower (5)

---

While everyone was being cautious of each other and mumbling about, Chulman cursed out loud.

“Damnable bitch of a fairy...”

2 weeks.

If they don't find the treasure within 2 weeks then they would all die.

Since no one will have the prize they needed to exchange the treasure for in their hands.

And 2 weeks, or 14 days, was definitely not a lot of time in order to kill all 128 of them.

If they're unlucky then the last protector might give the treasure too.

Since the fairy would do things even worse than that.

It seems like around 10 people were needed for them to get through the protector and gain the treasure without any casualties.

Which means they needed to at least hunt 2 protectors a day with

5 teams of 10 people.

If you take into account the time needed to rest after a hunt, 50 people had to hunt non-stop in order to kill all the protectors.

Since the dungeon with the protector they saw from the images the fairy projected did not seem easy at all.

At that moment a person in the very corner of the 50 shouted out loud.

“Let’s hunt by dividing into 5 teams of 10. One team can account for 2 protectors a day.”

Everyone turned towards him at these words.

‘Those guys are...’

All 50 of them weren’t that simple.

But these guys were eye-catching even with just a glance.

One of the two most dangerous households.

‘...A clan. And only 10?’

It wasn’t that they walked around with the words of ‘Clan’

written on their foreheads but there was a huge difference in the actions between clansmen and non-clansmen.

Because non-clansmen would constantly be stealing glances at each other while clansmen are only looking out.

The unique thing about these guys though was the fact that they only had a very small amount.

‘Only ten....’

A miserable size compared to other clans.

It was reasonable for them to not go to the second floor right away and start at the 1st floor and even participate in the treasure hunt with such size.

Though no one could understand why they only had 10.

‘They’re still dangerous.’

Suhan mumbled inwardly.

Since there is a clear difference between clansmen and non-clansmen even if their numbers are the same.

At that moment another voice was heard from the corner.

“I agree. 10 people will take care of 2 a day. This seems like the right choice. If you aren’t able to follow then compensate for it.”

One of the other two teams that caught the eyes.

They didn’t look like the clans here but something else caught the eyes.

They were all holding a precious-looking artifact.

‘...Did they kill off the rest in a 30 man room and come up.’

Their aura alone was mighty.

Whatever happened, as the 20 people who looked like the strongest of the 50 agreed, the others fussed around as they nodded their heads.

They didn’t like following those people’s orders but the fact that they would all die if they did not find the Treasure was right.

They needed to think about it after they find it.

Since the fight will be from that point on.

If they conflict with each other and don’t find the treasure then

it'll just simply be a massacre.

About 10 people got into teams and then disappeared in multiple directions.

And Hansoo also watched the people dispersing and then walked towards the dungeon of the Protector.

‘I will accomplish the hidden piece first.’

The hidden piece he had as the goal was <Detective King>.

The requirements were very simple.

<Kill 32 protectors by yourself and then collect the corresponding marbles which aren't the treasure.>

There were marbles behind the protector.

128 in total since there were 128 of them.

Only one of the marbles was a shining marble and the ones who didn't shine were normal marbles.

If you collect 32 of them then they will trade it for the Philosopher's stone.

Kangtae had accomplished this in the past.

Something he had gotten while collecting them just in case.

‘It’s easier to be alone in order to accomplish it in a short amount of time’

Though it was easy when said, the difficulty of the dungeon of the Protectors wasn’t that easy.

He will only be able to collect 32 if he releases the transformation and use his true body to progress quickly.

Hansoo quickly threw his body towards one of the dungeons of the protectors.

.....

<Another Protector has died! Congratulations!>

The people who had accomplished the dungeon made a tired expression as they heard the noise resonating throughout the island.

People cursed out loud.

“What is this. They don’t give out anything.... despite it being so

hard”

There were quite a bit of beasts on the way.

They had given quite a bit of runes and artifacts for the 10 people to share.

As if they were telling them to hunt them instead of going to the dungeons of the protectors.

But then they won't be able to finish the 2 dungeons the team needed to accomplish a day.

And that was the reason why everyone proceeded towards the dungeon even while they were smacking their lips.

They had some expectations actually.

So many runes and artifacts were dropped but the dungeon of the Protector was said to be even harder.

It was obvious that they expected an even greater amount of rewards.

But the result was only a huge amount of disappointment.

They had broken through the dungeon after a long time but the

amount of dropped runes and artifacts were minimal.

And they so were hard that it was hard for them to accomplish two a day if they wanted to do it without taking any injuries.

If this was the case then they could only focus on killing the dungeons of the protectors.

“Damm... but there’s nothing we can do. We all die if we don’t find the treasure.”

“Yeah true...”

If they were unlucky then the treasure will come out when they hunt the 128th protector.

If they aren’t able to find the treasure while leisuring about then they won’t even be able to get the reward.

They would just all die.

“Ugh. Let’s go.”

While they were complaining and spitting words out one at a time, one of the people walking in the front turned around and spoke.



“Can I say something?”

Everyone looked at the person standing in the front.

“Well, to introduce myself simply I am called Chulman. But the name isn’t important... there’s just something I want to tell you.”

As everyone’s eyes focused, Chulman opened his mouth:

“Let’s think. Even if we were to find this treasure could we take this to the altar safely? And is there a meaning even if we were to take it there?”

Everyone made a skeptical expression.

They didn’t speak out but they knew.

They were confident in themselves but two teams out of the five, who had gone a different way, were at a different level.

If they were to move about in teams of 10 and find the treasure and those guys decide to take them away forcibly then they would only get it stolen from them.

And the few hundreds meters of the area around the altar were barren so it wasn’t even possible to sneak up there.

And as the fairy spoke before, the news of the treasure being found will be spread all around .

Even if they wanted to exchange the treasure for rewards, they will only get suppressed by the people who would rush their way there.

Since they needed to go to the altar where the fairy is in order to exchange the treasure for the reward.

Or, they might have everything stolen even if they got there safely and exchanged the treasure for the rewards.

There was no rule saying that every artifact had to be distributed evenly even if they chose to exchange for 50 of them.

If they steal it all then nothing is left in their hands.

Chulman spoke out as he looked at the people mumbling about.

“Do you all understand? This is a tactic that can only be accomplished if we work together but if we stay like this as the weaker ones then we may all just die. Though it’s important to find the treasure, we must take into account of the aftermath after finding the treasure.”

They needed to go through three stages in order to survive in this place.

Obtain the treasure.

Get the treasure to the altar and exchange it for the reward.

Take the reward and walk out.

The requirements were already set.

<Battle Strength>

If your battle strength is weak then you would lose your head even before you got to the altar where the fairy was.

And even if you were able to get to the Altar safely, you won't be able to choose the number of the reward.

Since people would be charging at them in order to take the limited rewards from all around.

There's no way that those guys will let them go since they will just die if they don't acquire those.

In order for the people with low battle powers to survive, they needed to exchange it for 50 of Kurutan's Bludgeon to fit the number of people and spread it all around.

‘No... you can still die with that if you are unlucky.’

Since there was no guarantee that each person will get one of the 50 Kurutan’s Bludgeons.

If you are weak then you might just die from the acts of evil people.

Since they can steal it for fun and go out with it.

But if your battle power is sufficient?

There wasn’t even a need to look for the treasure.

‘Since they can just steal it from the guys who come to the altar in the center after finding it.’

The aftermath of them finding the treasure was more important for them to survive.

Chulman raised his spirits as he saw the people get shaken and continued to speak.

“Of course everyone needs to combine their strengths in order to find the treasure. But does everyone need to try to hard to find the treasure? It’s hard for us to get through two dungeons in a day but the teams we saw earlier can even clear 4 in a day. Though casualties may increase.”

Everyone nodded.

Since those people were at a different level from them.

It was possible for them to clear four in a day if they hurried.

Though casualties will happen one by one.

Chulman nodded as he spoke.

“Those guys will clear the protector’s dungeons much faster than us. What do you think those guys will do after they accomplish their quota?”

“Of course they will...”

Everyone expressions turned solemn.

They didn’t have any leisure but those strong guys had to leisure to even hunt.

Their gaps will increase even more.

“It isn’t the time for us to search fervently. We just need to pray that one of the two strongest households don’t find it fast. Since only then would they hurry and search for the treasure by

sacrificing bits of their strengths at a time. And during that time, we must get stronger. In order to prepare for the aftermath of them finding the treasure.”

They were weak.

It would just become even more dangerous for them if they find the treasure like this.

But if they were to do the following then the distance in the gap will become shorter which means that they will be able to ensure their own safety to some point even after they find the treasure.

“But... isn’t there a possibility for them to chase us down and vent their anger on us?”

Though the island was wide, they could still find each other if they set their minds to it.

Though they won’t meet each other while they fight, if there isn’t any announcements of dungeons being cleared then they will come and find them.

Chulman shook his head as he spoke.

“How would they know who did and who didn’t when there’s five teams.”

Everyone nodded.

If they lie and act normally then they would be able to get through it.

“And by the time they find out and come to us, we’ll have become quite formidable as well. If we clash then they also would get injuries and won’t be able to clear the dungeons of the protectors, would they be able to fight us in such a situation?”

Everyone’s expressions turned cold.

Correct.

It was not time for them to let their guards down.

The aftermath of finding the treasure was more important than actually finding it.

If they have weak battle powers then they won’t be able to escape their fate of their game being stolen after their hunt.

The point was that it didn’t matter who tried harder.

It was who is stronger.

The people who had heard Chulman’s words nodded with a

frozen expression and then changed their direction towards the hunting grounds from the direction to the dungeon.

Chulman also clenched his teeth as he advanced forward.

‘I must survive in order to find Suhee.’

He couldn’t let his life be in the hands of the strong.

There will be no point of shouting about for fairness when you didn’t have the strength to even ensure your own rights.

Chulman slowly walked forward with clenched teeth.

.....



Kudududuk

“Hooh.”

Hansoo stretched his body as he looked at the back of the protector that he had smashed.

‘It’s more convenient to move about alone as I thought’.

His battle power will decrease if he were to act with others because he won’t be able to release his transformation.

<Another protector has died! The treasure hasn’t been found but be strong!>

The fairy’s voice resonated all around as Hansoo touched the marble he had attained after killing the protector.

‘It’s a blank as I expected.’

A marble which did not give off light.

But this was actually more important for Hansoo than the actual treasure.

As Hansoo touched it, it got absorbed like a rune into his left wrist and turned into a symbol.

‘It’s the fourth one.’

If this pace was to continue then collecting 32 in 2 weeks wouldn’t be hard.

Since he will be able to get through about four in a day if he didn’t go overboard.

But on the other hand, it was hard for him to do more than four.

Since going overboard meant that the strength he had remaining to use the next day will decrease.

They might really not be able to find the treasure if the other’s don’t crush through the dungeons well.

‘Then it’ll be a massacre’.

One day had passed.

Logically speaking 14 fireworks should’ve been made combined with his since they had decided that they will do two per five teams for 10.

But the actual number was only 10.

Which meant that somebody didn't accomplish their quota.

And the time between each firework was getting longer and longer.

Which meant that they were getting lazier.

They are definitely being lazier and have more leisure since 10 was being filled up without them hunting for themselves.

'Hmm... these actions are obvious.'

This place would be very easy to clear as 50 people of a clan but getting massacred wasn't that hard when 50 different people with different thoughts and strengths gathered.

'It's time for me to move.'

Solving the situation in this place was actually quite simple.

It didn't matter whether there was an underling of the Dark Lord's or not.

He just needed to turn into his real self and crush them all.

He was more specialized in catching people than beasts anyway.

The beasts could take quite a hit but the people here will puke out blood just from the dagger he threw, because of their limited health.

There was no way for the people here to beat him who had the Seven Stripe Cape and the Dekrados Set.

Then he would tell them to kill the protectors of their quota.

Then he just needed to take the treasure to the altar, from whoever found it, and that'll be the end of it.

‘But... then the earring is a little bit regrettable.’

He hadn't transformed to kill off a few tadpoles.

And there was no problem even if he didn't release his transformation.

Since he had already found someone to act on his behalf a long time ago.

Hansoo disappeared after activating Arankal's Bracelet.

## Chapter 47 – Tower (6)

---

“These damnable bastards... it seems like they aren’t doing this properly...”

Lord, Gyungmi grinded her teeth.

One of the clansmen below sighed as he heard those words and spoke:

“Isn’t it easier if you just take them into the clan from the start. Why don’t you take clansmen around with you?”

Gyungmi frowned as she spoke:

“It’s already tedious for me to bring you guys along. No, this psychic power doesn’t fit me from the start. Goddamnit. Why did something like this appear.”

“...”

The clansmen shook their head as they saw Gyungmi say such things about her psychic power that others were dying of jealousy from.

“Do you know how shitty it feels when you gain a connection to a random person and then have him die? It might be different for somebody who isn’t close or something.”

“ ... ”

“And I hate the most the fact that I can tell somebody to fight instead of me in times of danger. The nine of you is too much already.”

“ ... ”

“Damn it. I’ll only recruit strong ones from now on.”

‘She’s really a different kind.’

They clicked their tongue while looking at Gyungmi.

But nodded their heads at the same time.

‘Well... with those battle powers...’.

It was ok for her to feel as if they were annoyances.

They didn’t know what the hell she had picked up below but she was really strong.

Gyungmi was a Lord but she definitely wasn’t like Cao Cao or Liu Bei.

She felt more like Lu Bu.

The clansmen here were strong but they would all get pummeled until they turned into rice cakes even if they were to all fight her.

‘It isn’t that her skills, runes or artifacts are out of the ordinary or something...’

Of course she was above average compared to ordinary adventures.

But Gyungmi’s battle power couldn’t be explained with just that.

Since she had mixed up everything above amazingly and melted it down to one battle style.

They wouldn’t be able to show one third the strength of Gyungmi even if they had the same things.

“But what are you going to do? They’re still trying to do the chicken game. And if they continue to hunt like that then they will really become formidable. The other dangerous 10 also get on my nerves as well.”

“Tsk. Damnable guys. We should’ve set the mood in the beginning...”

Gyungmi clicked her tongue.

Since she couldn't do anything about getting angry despite her understanding the reason behind it.

If this were to continue then they would need to go kill three to four protectors a day.

And this would only bring them harm.

If the others hunt and raise their strength fervently in that time period than the gap between them will become immeasurably closer.

‘My head hurts. There’s something that bothers me too...’

This is why even though she foresaw something like this would be happening, at the moment she brought her clan out fast as if she was fleeing from something.

At that moment, the air sliced apart as somebody came out of thin air.

Everyone flinched.

Since they didn't even realize that someone had come out.

“You bastard... who are you!”



The clansmen shouted coldly as they held up their blades.

Hansoo who had come out of thin air, and had the look of Chungjae, smiled as he spoke:

“Nothing much. I’m just here with a proposal.”

“Proposal?”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“It’s a really good proposal on your part too. You guys just need to listen to me. I’ll let all of you escape this island alive.”

Then Hansoo explained what he was going to make them do.

Things he would’ve done himself if he had the power.

One of the clansmen spoke quietly with a helpless expression:

‘Did he lose all notions of fear or something.’

It seemed like he was pretty talented.

Since they couldn’t spot his camouflage.

But it didn't seem like he could maintain that during a fight.

And it felt like he could kill one to two of them but that was his limit.

What would such a guy have as his basis for him to act about so?

'...is he trying to get a sneak attack?'

They had never seen somebody trying to act as a captain just by relying on a simple sneak attack from behind.

But Hansoo just smiled.

It would be simple if he were to just release his transformation and show them but then some trails will be left behind.

But there's still a simple solution without going to such an extent.

Since he had come here from the start because of that.

'Well. If it doesn't work then I'll stop the transformation for a moment.'

His goal was not being found out by the underling of the Dark

Mad Lord anyway.

And these guys are of the same clan so the chances of the Dark Mad Lord's forces being mixed in here is none.

“Not you. I'm talking to your Lord. Let's have a talk with me. The lady over there.”

Hansoo looked at Gyungmi, who was standing quietly behind the clansmen, as he spoke.

‘Sixth Sense stat. I don't know where she had attained such a valuable thing but she should be able to see it somewhat.’

He had understood somewhat since she had been looking all around her at the surroundings ever since he was here.

<Sixth Sense>

It was a different stat from perception, not part of the 8 general stats.

Perception increased the 5 senses one had but the sixth sense was basically the same as a psychic power.

It was something he had given up looking for because it was too hard to find in the tutorial area.

Gyungmi looked at Hansoo in cold sweat.

‘Fuck... that was the thing.’

Gyungmi grinded her teeth.

Since she finally understood why he felt the chill run down the spine since a while ago.

A sixth sense stat which she had attained at the beginning.

It raised a person’s battle power beyond the limits.

Since it allowed one to sense things others could not sense.

And something was moving about behind Hansoo’s back in her eyes.

‘To come up here with something like that... fuck.’

She knew instinctively.

That was just a shell.

There is something much more fearsome hiding beneath it.

She didn't know what that thing was but if that thing showed itself and decided to kill them all then... they will all die.

Gyungmi breathed in and out and then spoke:

“...Can't you just do it alone with such abilities?”

She didn't know what he was hiding but it was extremely dangerous.

With that much he didn't need them, he just needed to go out and sweep them all under him.

And just kill them if they didn't listen.

Hansoo smiled at those words.

“Everyone has circumstances. I need someone to fight instead of me.”

‘Since I can't get found out yet.’

Gyungmi sighed and then spoke to Hansoo:

“Even we can't beat all 40 of them. It seems like you won't be fighting. What are you planning?”

If such a thing was possible then they would've fought at the beginning already.

“What’s the problem? There are weaker ones roaming about in groups of ten. Beat up all the weaker ones separately and get them into your clan.”

“ ... ”

He hadn't acted out because of this until now.

Since it'll become more convenient if they spread out.

‘One day... should be enough for them to get separated enough.’

To leave a Lord in leisure behind to travel in groups of 10 separately.

Symbols were gained from the agreement of both sides but he had never seen anybody who had not agreed with a blade up against up throat before.

“I don't know what you don't like about it but put them into the clan for now. And do whatever you want with them afterwards. Though there's 10 of them who are a bit dangerous, I wonder if they'll act out if there's 40 of you guys.”

“ ... ”

‘...He’s a bit annoying, shall I have a go at him?’

But Gyungmi shook her head.

Her sixth sense had saved her too many times for her to do so.

And that sixth sense was warning her clearly.

To listen.

“... Let’s go.”

Everyone nodded as they headed somewhere.

Hansoo smiled as he saw this.

‘That’s done.’

This is easy for them to get massacred if all 50 are separated but at the time same it was easy to clear if all 50 combined.

They just needed to make the clan, kill the protectors in leisure and attain the treasure.

‘...I can see the ending coming around.’

If he gains the philosopher's stone here then he has gained everything necessary to go in the dungeon.

Then only one stage is left.

The two weeks will go by fast.

Hansoo laughed as he disappeared in order to kill the protectors as well.

.....

“It seems the time has come for us to separate.”

Gyungmi made a tired expression as she looked at the people around her.

Almost 50 people.

They were mostly her clansmen now.

‘...I’m tired.’

It was even more tiring because she was trying to not get any of them die due to that useless connection.



Though some weren't part of her clan.

'The four over there.'

Gyungmi looked at the four, who were of different quality, in the corner.

Lord couldn't give symbols to other lords.

And Lords could not give symbols to people who had already gained symbols from a different clan.

Which meant that if the giving of the symbol didn't work then it would mean that that person was a Lord or part of a clan.

And because of this, these four caught the eyes.

'Well there's nothing really special about them.'

<Our clan has 84 people but the room they entered had 80 as the limit so we could only separate from the Lord.>

It wasn't that they all believed their excuses.

But what was the point when they were going to separate anyway.

She just needed to take care of her own clan.

“Let’s all go our own ways.”

Gyungmi changed the treasure into 50 Kurutan’s Bludgeons, gave it to each and everyone one by one and then ordered them to suicide.

Crack.

“...uh?”

Gyungmi’s psychic power isn’t strong enough to order them to suicide.

Everyone else other than her original clansmen had their symbols broken as soon as she gave the order.

And at the same time they, who had escaped from the clan, all looked fiercely at each other but then ran towards the exist after giving up.

Since there was no need to fight after having guaranteed their safety.

‘Well. This is a good end from one point of view.’

Though things had progressed half forcibly, everyone had survived as the result.

Since they had repeated the hunt for Protectors of the Dungeons faithfully under the order of the Clan Lord.

As the people who were thinking this and that made their way to the exit a giant door in the space that trapped them opened with a rumbling noise.

And a slightly different view from before had appeared in front of them.

“... maze?”

Many separate paths had appeared in front of their eyes.

And the fairy appeared in front of their eyes.

“Everyone here has survived. Heehee. Congratulations. You will now get sent to the starting point of the third floor. There’s nothing hard, you just need to follow the path. If you follow the crossroads, you will arrive at one the of hundreds of starting points. You can group up and follow your friends who arrived earlier or go separately when you get there.”

Everyone shrugged their shoulders as they disappeared into the paths.

Though it wasn't like being moved into a room, it didn't really matter.

Gyungmi looked at Chungjae with a suspicious expression but then shook her head as she took her clansmen into one of the numerous paths.

‘Hmm... shall I go too.’

It didn't seem like the four there would move before he did.

Hansoo, who had the appearance of Chungjae, smirked as he walked towards the starting point.

And after a while he activated Arankal's Bracelet and hid himself completely.

Then he very carefully returned to the starting point.

As he expected these four, who had said they were part of the other clan, were standing in the same position despite the others leaving one by one.

‘When are they going to move. Hurry up and move.’

Hansoo looked at them with great patience.

And soon when everyone else had disappeared, they seemed to have received orders from somewhere as they started to ruthlessly go through the paths.

Hansoo smiled as he saw them.

‘Hurry and guide me. To your captain.’

Even if he found them painstakingly and then kill them off one by one, the Lord will slowly regenerate his strength as well.

There was only one solution to this tedious situation.

To cut off the Lord’s neck in a single strike.

But he had no way of knowing where this guy was.

1st and 2nd floor were impossible and the only possible third floor still had a few hundred starting points.

It was not possible to search through each and every one of them.

But at a single time, he had a single chance.

A chance which appears when the special structure of the tower and the dangers of the third floor combines.

<If I miss that time then it will really be hard to catch him. If that happens then I'll just gain everything we discussed and prepare first and then kill him at the very end after clearing the dungeon.>

If the Dark Mad Lord had arrived to the third floor, and had seen the environment of this place then he could only gather all of his clansmen to a single spot.

The third floor was the place where they let them taste the harsh reality of the Otherworld.

It was not somewhere where tricks worked.

Since his head was good he had probably realized that he had to gather his clansmen in order for him to act around in such a place.

And the people in front of him will guide him.

To the Dark Mad Lord who could be in one of the hundreds of starting points.

If Hansoo had revealed his identity here then that cautious guy would've split up all his clansmen to other places.

Since if that guy had seen the third floor, he would want to only use his own forces and prevent any possible mishaps from happening in order to get through the third floor...

But Hansoo himself had to meet him and that was where the earring came into play.

‘It’s the final stage.’

He had gained everything he needed with the philosopher’s stone being the last.

The only thing he needed now was some fancy gear and plenty of runes.

He would’ve actually had to run around the whole tower according to the original plan.

Since it’ll be hard for oneself to have a full setting of gear and runes.

But there was a way for him to solve it very simply.

Since the people who have been running around the whole tower for him will gather in a single place.

People who would have such an amount that even he wouldn’t be able to gather alone.

‘Dark Mad Lord... Let’s see your face, it’s been a while.’

And once he finishes them off then all the preparations are complete.

For entering the Final Dungeon.

The final stage of the preparation wasn't some beast.

It was the Dark Mad Lord himself.

‘I'll use all my strength.’

Because in that place, only he and they exist.

Since there was no way the Dark Mad Lord would let random people who started at the same place as him alive.

He could use all his strength since rumors won't be spreading anyway.

Hansoo slowly disappeared into the darkness as he followed the others.

.....

And then somebody appeared in the place where Hansoo disappeared.



“... You really want to follow?”

One of the clansmen looked at Gyungmi as they shook their head.

To pretend to go up the road in order to follow him.

‘And how the hell did she even find him. Is it that sixth sense thing...?’

Gyungmi smirked as she nodded:

“Aren’t you even bit curious? As to what kind of thoughts he has?”

“... Just with that alone?”

“Well. We’ll find out when we get there. And if the path we were following and this is the same anyway then there’s nothing bad about going this way.”

And then Gyungmi followed the pathway towards the place that the sixth sense was pointing to, where the dangerous aura was radiating from.

# Chapter 48 – Tower (7)

---

‘It’s been a while.’

Hansoo mumbled quietly as he watched the flaming environment around him.

The third floor which imitated the <Red Zone>.

They called it the Red Zone because it used red energy.

But there were other reasons as well.

An eternally blazing world that had received the punishment of the gods.

And that was why it was called the Red Zone.

‘Erviang... this was your world huh.’

He didn’t know back then.

Even right before the invasion of the Abyss.

‘We were just frogs in a well.’

But he, after getting through the Abyss, knew now.

How the Otherworld which was comprised of seven colored zones was structured.

If such a thing called a God existed then it was really a vicious thing. Humanity was a very lucky race if you take into account what happened to Erviang's race, who were space-time travelers.

Hansoo shook his head.

‘It’s not time to get emotional.’

This was just a fake which copied the Red Zone.

It didn’t even have half of the dangers.

‘Shall I go.’

This guy will probably be stuck at <The Cross>.

He just needed to end him there.

Hansoo continued his steps through the flaming landscape.

.....

“It’s amazing.”

Everyone who was advancing faithfully under the orders of Wongyung swirled their tongues around.

Everything in their surroundings was burning.

The strange-looking buildings which belonged to some other race were blazing and numerous beasts were moving between the buildings without end.

‘Damn... all of the area on the third floor shouldn’t be like this right?’

That was not even reasonable.

It wasn’t to the point where they were getting burned to death but the non-stop heat kept attacking their throats and lungs.

And the beasts that charged at them were so strong that even his clansmen were barely blocking them.

Due to the whole environment burning there wasn’t any water to drink either.

One of two things will happen at this rate.

Either die from the beasts or die from dehydration.

‘...The world outside the tutorial is always like this?’

The fairy had told them.

That the third floor was like a glimpse of the world outside of the tutorial.

And added something else too.

<Once you reach that point we don’t really interfere.>

At first he was really relieved.

Since even he wasn’t comfortable with the fairy who brought evil rules endlessly.

But he was slowly realizing something.

‘...It’s not like it’s not interfering but more like it doesn’t need to interfere?’

If it was such a harsh environment to the point where they didn’t need to interfere then they simply wouldn’t.

Since they will die by themselves.

Wongyung, who had been advancing through the dried up landscape, shook his head.

‘There’s no way.’

There was no way that they would leave them all to die.

Wongyung was confident.

The strongest power in all of the Tower was him.

If a power like his was suffering this much then all of the others might just die out.

There was no way that they would’ve set the difficulty so.

Kudududuk

‘First advance forward.’

Wongyung solidified his thoughts as he advanced.

And soon a giant Cross appeared in his view.

“...What is that?”

“Isn’t it pretty?”

The fairy, which had appeared without anyone noticing, babbled.

Wongyung slightly frowned at those words.

It was a disgusting-looking cross even at a single glance.

And on that cross, human faces were coming out and going back into it non-stop.

Like people who were trapped within a giant cloth.

And then Wongyung rubbed his eyes after seeing an extremely familiar face.

“....Huh?”

The fairy smiled as it spoke.

“Can you see some familiar faces?”

“...”

Wongyung ignored the fairy’s words as he inspected the cross after walking closer to it.

And then made a expression of fear.

“Is this cross...”

“Mmm... I don’t know what you’re thinking about but shall we say it’s right? Heehee. Correct! All the information of those who died in the tutorial are in there! Oh my. Two were just added.”

Wongyung slightly closed the gaps of his eyes.

“But what is the meaning of this?”

He knew that it was definitely disgusting.

But what did this mean to them.



“Reflect our actions while looking at the dead?”

The fairy shook its head.

“The cross will look very very pretty after you hear my words.”

“...?”

“That is the Cross of Reincarnation! You can revive someone of those who participated in the tutorial who had died!”

Wongyung made a expression of fright.

They did look like beings close to gods.

But for them to be able to effect those who had already died.

“What is this nonsense... Can you guys even control the dead?”

The fairy smirked.

“That’s a bit too hard at our level. It’s just a copy that we brought on the way here.”

“... a copy?”

“Yes. We made a copy of all of you when you came here and saved it within that cross. And that cross uses that as the base to create a copy.”

“ ... ”

While Wongyung’s eyes were flickering the fairy made a smile as if it knew that would happen and spoke.

“Though it’s a copy, their strength and memory will be the same as the real one before they came to this side. Woudln’t this be amazing if it’s a loved one? Heeheehee.”

“It can revive the dead?”

Wongyung’s hands trembled.

‘...Really?’

Wongyung’s memories rewinded at an extreme speed.

The reason why he had came to despise other Lords.

This was all because of that guy he had met in the start.

Actually there was somebody else who had manifested the power

of a Lord before Wongyung in the 1st tutorial area.

And that guy had taken control of his daughter with the symbol and played around with her then killed her by using her as a shield during a dangerous moment.

How much he had despaired over this.

He had created a much bigger power after he had manifested his power as a Lord.

Since his psychic power was much greater than that guy's.

And he thought after ripping that guy to shreds.

That the reason why he was given this psychic power was a sign from the heavens to rip apart all those other Lords.

And one more thing.

He needed a lot of strength.

Why?

<Since his son, who went missing 5 years before him, might be alive.>

He needed much more strength than he has now in order to find him.

Since his son would be much further ahead than him if he was alive.

He couldn't catch up the 5-year gap to his son with some average amount of power.

He basically needed strength to plow through and advance forward.

It didn't matter to him if his actions were something that would cause him to get cursed by others.

Since the ones who curse him aren't the ones who would find his son for him.

Everything was playing out very well.

But for such a thing to happen to him!

Wongyung touched the cross with trembling hands.

As soon as his hands touched it, thousands of people who had died in the tutorial appeared in front of his eyes.

And many of those who had died by his clans existed as well.

But that didn't matter.

Since his only interest was his daughter.

While he was flipping through the catalogue, his daughter Ahee came into his eyes.

“Ahh...ahhhhh.”

Wongyung shed tears of joy.

He could revive Ahee!

Without any memories of pain, with the body and memory before she had come here!

Though her body would be weak, that did not matter.

He just needed to protect her.

‘Thank you. God. Thank you.’

Wongyung asked the fairy in a hurry.

“How can I revive them?”

The fairy smirked as it spoke.

“Simple. Just put someone in here.”

The fairy pointed towards the bottom of the giant cross.

A deep hole that looked like a grave.

“What?”

“You need ingredients in order to make something new. Put someone else in for the person coming out. It’s pretty simple that way.”

Wongyung hurriedly looked around.

He just needed to put the weakest one in.

Then there will be no problems.

At his orders, a guy who had been panting from an injury slowly dragged his body and walked towards the hole beneath the cross.

While Wongyung was rejoicing at that sight, sounds of the fairy clicking its tongue were heard.

“Nono. Can’t do that. You can’t do that. You can’t use a clansman. It becomes too easy then. We didn’t want to see something like that. You can’t use tricks.”

“What!!!! What do you want!!!!”

Wongyung screamed out unknowingly.

The fairy smiled coyly as it spoke:

“It’s not that hard. You just need to put someone else who isn’t part of your clan in here. Then your daughter lives too. How good is it? Hehehehee. It’s really chaotic in other places about now but it’s a problem here because it’s all one clan. Ah. Another one added to the cross.”

Wongyung despaired at these words.

How would he find somebody in his deserted land.

Wongyung asked the fairy just in case.

“Damn... Is there another chance like this in the future?”

He didn’t believe that only they will be on the path from now on.

If they meet others then they could just catch them then revive Ahee after inserting them into the Cross they will find later.

The fairy shook its head.

“No. This is the end of the privilege. Chances don’t come that easily right? As we see it, it’s not fun when people have leisure. You need to be a bit of a crisis. If you leave after visiting this place once then you can’t use it again.”

“Goddaamitttt!”

Wongyung spat out a scream of despair.

They were already behind because they had to gather all their clansmen who were spread all around.

The people who had started off were probably going through some other path somewhere else.

And what would a person with some basic sense think when they see the view of the third floor.

Would they go around some roundabout way and group up with other people in some other starting point?

Or would they think to go through his hell-like place by themselves.



And they couldn't wait forever in this place.

Since they couldn't get anything to eat or drink in these blazing plains.

He couldn't send out his clansmen when he didn't know what could happen from now on.

But then Wongyung's expression turned cold.

'Maybe.'

He didn't know what was ahead but he had somewhat organized on the way here from the starting point.

If he send some clansmen to wait in the starting point then some random guys might pop out.

And then he just needed to catch them before they went into other paths.

At that moment one of his clansmen shouted loudly.

"Lord! Somebody is coming this way over there!"

"What?"

Wongyung opened his eyes wide and looked towards the starting point.

And he could see a person walking towards them from the starting point.

‘How could this be. Thank you. Oh god.’

Wongyung, who wasn’t even religious, prayed to god.

No, there was no way such a thing would happen if there was no god.

God had given him the power to find his son and a chance to revive his daughter.

If god isn’t looking after him then what was this?

Soon Wongyung’s mind which was filled with glee calmed down.

That guy couldn’t run away after seeing this place.

Definitely not.

He had to catch him no matter what and throw him under the grave.

Since that was the only way to save his daughter.

‘I don’t know who you are... but thank you.’

“Catch him!”

As soon as his order came down, his clansmen charged towards the man walking towards them from afar.

.....

Hansoo quietly mumbled inwardly as he looked at the people charging at him.

‘Dark Mad Lord. First rate Dark Lord.’

The sins he had caused were too many to list.

Of cause this was all a thing of the past.

His situation? He knew too well.

Since he had heard all of his screams of despair before he died.

He knew why he hated Lords, why he tried to increase his

strength crazily and how he had become a first rate Dark Lord.

He had to leave behind his daughter here because he couldn't find some other non-clansman here.

And he, who had been enraged by this, caused a massacre in the tutorial due to the urgent thoughts of him having to find his one remaining son.

He had done so until now but in greater amounts from this point onwards.

And he had caught up the gap of 5 years but went crazy after finding out that his son had died and then flipped the Otherworld upside down.

As if he was trying to relieve the rage against the world which had killed his son and daughter by venting it on the inhabitants of the world.

His circumstances were regrettable but it could not excuse him for the things he had done so far.

‘But you won't feel unfair from this. Since you will get to revive your daughter if you win here.’

He had come to the Dark Mad Lord and the Dark Mad Lord had come to kill him.

It wouldn't be bad for him.

Since if the Dark Mad Lord won in this fight, he would be able to use him as a sacrifice to revive his daughter.

That was all he needed.

And soon his Justice and Judgement of Dekrados exploded out with his body as the center.

# Chapter 49 – Three Gateways (1)

---

Kududududk

The chain scythe flew around with Hansoo as the center non-stop.

And at the same time the dagger ripped through the air.

“Kuuuhk!”

“Goddamnit!”

Wongyung grinded his teeth as he heard the screams of his clansmen that came from every direction.

‘Goddamnit... he’s too fast.’

He knew who he was up against after the fight began.

The guy who had messed up their plans as a whole at Central Island.

He wondered why the guy who he had thought went to a different island was here but decided that it didn’t matter.

Since if his skills were the same as when he saw him then, it wouldn’t be hard to catch him with his clansmen.

Why would he have set up the net on the path up from Central Island if he thought that a full frontal clash was not possible?

He had prepared it because he was confident in winning.

And the biggest reason.

That guy, for some reason, did not use any skills.

And that was why he thought that he could win in a head-on battle.

And their gears weren't even comparable to others, they also had increased their battle strength by consuming other adventurers climbing the tower.

Nothing much to say about their teamwork too.

But this was all a huge miscalculation.

‘Why did he go to a different island if he was that strong?’

There was nobody to stop them when their clan swung their sword.

Nothing much to say about the guys who were caught off guard since they worked from the dark.



But that was simply arrogance.

Thinking about it, it had only been two months since they got here.

It just didn't feel that short because they had experienced a lot.

No matter how many people they sliced apart for two months, they were still humans.

On the other hand, if there was a thing called a human butcher, he was sure that that guy was him.

It felt like he had gone through countless years of work where he killed people.

Keeping distance with his much higher stats as the basis.

Keeping an eye on the whole battlefield and moving in directions where he wouldn't get surrounded.

It had naturally turned into a structure where they all chased his back.

And then he would ruthlessly slice apart those who chase him with his chain scythe and his dagger.

It wasn't that his attacks were weak even if he threw them from afar.

There wasn't a single case where his attacks did not hit a fatal location.

An attack which flew into a spot of sure-kill.

And because they couldn't not defend, the gap they barely closed widened while they defended.

Their artifacts were unique and strong ones as well but his scythe and dagger were so strong that every time they clashed weapons, their weapons would break along with their bones.

‘Goddamnit...’

It was hard to hold him down even if they poured on skills because his resistances were high and every time they used a decisive skill, the skill would break as a light shone from his right hand.

‘Goddamnit... will we be able to catch him before his stamina runs out?’

But Wongyung didn't really see much hope.

The time when the most amount of stamina is consumed is when someone goes through attacks as well as defending actions.

But he was barely defending and only pouring out attacks.

He didn't know much but if his stamina was at the same level as his strength or perception then those movements won't stop until all of them got ripped apart.

Kudududk

“Uuaaaka!”

“Those with charging skills hold him down first!!”

There were a few who could stick close by him.

Clansmen who had charging skills.

Wongyung had regarded this skill very highly and had distributed this skill to his clansmen who had high defense and resistances.

They were basically charging warriors.

They had high defenses and resistances to go against their weapons and ripped the enemy apart after getting close to the enemy with their defensive artifacts.

He had 20 of these guys.

‘If we can just tie him down then we can kill him.’

It wasn't that blades did not work against him.

Since he was bleeding from the occasional blades that got to him.

Which means that they could kill him as long as they can surround him and hold him down.

‘Goddamnit... He would’ve died if he had come up through the portal.’

But these were meaningless complaints.

The only thing he could trust in was them.

Maybe it was due to the fact that he had raised them with great care but the charging warriors were going through the endless chain scythe and dagger and had gotten quite close to Hansoo.

“Die!”

Chwaaaaak

A blade was ruthlessly getting close to Hansoo.

But Hansoo already had every information about this guy in his head.

Though it was hard to read the rune stats of a leisurely guy, he could clearly read the stats of someone who was fighting with all their strength.

The images endlessly came one after another until the enemy's next movement was drawn in his head.

Hansoo followed those movements as he slashed at the side of that guy's sword with his dagger.

Kudududk

His strength was not average and Hansoo's hand, which held the dagger that deflected the sword, trembled as it started to bleed.

And the attack which Hansoo had deflected sliced into his own shoulder.

Even if you can completely dodge or defend against an attack, you shouldn't do so.

Since if you focus on defending or dodging the attacks of those who stick close to you, you will just get slowed down.

And then you will just get surrounded by the enemies who are charging at you.

‘Then you just die.’

Even if he allowed them to attack he could not let them close the gap.

Kudududk

The attack bore deep into his shoulder as it started to bleed.

But he backed off quickly even in such a situation and strongly pulled on the chain scythe.

‘And... I’m not really losing out either.’

“Kuuuhh...”

Hansoo held the chain scythe, which had cut through the guy’s artery, and swung the chain scythe all around him again as he started to repeat the tedious work.

Of course there were a few things he didn’t forget to do.

First, absorbing all the runes that were dropped as well as using the dropped artifacts for defense and offense.

Second, slashing the Justice of Dekrados from time to time at Wongyung while mid-battle.

His core was being a Lord.

And if Wongyung had any form of survival instinct, he will pull some forces towards him in order to defend against the daggers



that flew to him.

And of course when the clansmen who should be attacking fall back to defend him, he gets a bit of a breather.

‘...I guess I cannot let the clansmen live.’

The guys who were under orders charged in like zealots.

Wongyung was ordering his clansmen even more ruthlessly as his life was starting to get threatened.

So that they would bite if their arms were cut off and act as a meat shield if their necks were cut off.

He was also losing health as well.

There was no space for him to go easy.

‘Dark Mad Lord... Let’s stop here this time.’

Hansoo made a cold expression as he tore through the Dark Mad Lord’s clansmen at an intensified rate.

.....

“Goddamnit... goddamnit.”

Wongyung made a soulless expression at his massacred clansmen and then shouted at Hansoo while grinding his teeth.

“You bastard! What do you have against me to the point where you would go this far!”

He didn't know back then.

But he knew now.

That this guy was going after him ever since Central Island.

He didn't know how Hansoo had known of his existence but he was definitely moving around while targeting him.

And he could not understand this.

“You bitch! Why are you doing this to me when I haven't done anything wrong to you! Huh? We aren't like sworn enemies or something, why are you chasing me this far, what sin have I committed! Is it because I killed people? Huh? Is that it? Or because I didn't follow the rules that you spread around?”

He could've saved his daughter if he had a little more time.

And he could've found his missing son with this strength.

But all of this had been blocked off.

Because of this one guy.

And he could only think of one thing.

The uncanny rules that he heard from Guktae.

‘This damnable guy... what is he for him to set such rules at us?’

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

“I’m not killing you because you broke the rules.”

He wasn’t killing them because they broke the rules.

It didn’t make sense to apply these rules to those who didn’t want to be with him from the start.

This was the same thing as getting hold of an American and imposing Korean rules to them.

In these kind of cases, you could solve it by splitting up like Taesoon did in the past.

He also didn't have the leisure to chase them all down and kill them off because they broke the rules.

Setting up the rules is after uniting everyone.

It was a future plan and he had to find a different method to solve that.

How would he govern over all those people?

“Then why are you...”

Wongyung became absent-minded at the unexpected answer.

Hansoo muttered quietly.

‘You guys are just stepping stones.’

There were a few things that he needed to do in his plans.

If his plans were only uniting all of humanity, why would he have come?

Eres or Keldian would've come instead.

There were a few things he needed to accomplish in order to solve the <Prohibited Region> and this stood far above anything

else.

Even if he had to kill off everyone in the tutorial area in order to accomplish his set plans then he would've done so.

He didn't think that small sacrifices for bigger things were right but he didn't hesitate if it was needed.

But because they didn't want this, they had set up a plan which had the least amount of casualties.

But the thing was, even if they tried to reduce the amount of casualties there were occasions where casualties were needed to catch up to their difficult goals.

And because of this, they reduced the targets who would be sacrificed.

Deciding who had to die in order for them to get to the next stage.

The guys who would have no other choice than to die even if they left them alone.

Or those who had the possibility of causing the most amount of damage to humanity or committed the most sins, those who would have their death called for by others when they found out later.

This occasion of <Three Gateways> was like that too.

<No matter how much we calculate... you can't get to the level of clearing the dungeon just by hunting. Since that Dark Mad Lord exists we will use him. Don't go easy on him. Receiving orders? Doesn't matter. Does the number of people who die by his hands change?>

It hadn't been two months yet and the time that they had calculated at which he would go into the Final Dungeon still had a month left.

No, just like how Keldian said, it wouldn't be possible for him to get to the level of clearing the dungeon even if he was to hunt for a month.

And because of this he needed a stepping stone to get into the <Three Gateways> and these guys were just chosen to become those stepping stones.

In conclusion, he hadn't come here to give them judgement because they had broken the rules, they weren't dying because he was right and they were wrong.

‘Ah. Maybe that’s a bit too far.’

Since the number of people who have died in these guys' hands won't change.

“Don’t think about it too much. Isn’t it easier to think that you tried to kill me and we clashed because of that? Truthfully speaking, I think that’s enough of a reason.”

“...”

“You were just running towards your own goal and I the same. We just clashed while doing so and the one who got crushed was you this time. You have crushed others so well up to this point, why are you making an expression like you’re suffering an injustice?”

Wongyung made a lethargic expression at those words.

‘This guy is just like me.’

He had been fooled.

He had thought that when he tried to lead everyone in Central Island, that was his true character.

He thought that he was like a Hero who was advancing forward in the world which was collapsing.

But that wasn’t it.

That was just the image which he was holding up.

This was his true character.

He was just like himself.

Like how he could kill countless number of people in order to achieve his goals, that guy could also do that with no hesitation.

Except he was much thorough than himself.

Hansoo suddenly thought of Kangtae's words as he looked at Wongyung.

<Wow! If everything goes according to the plan then you would become an amazing hero!>

<...You don't become a hero by catching evil-doers.>

<Nono, Listen. I'm saying that you can become an amazing person of superiority. If you do things properly then wouldn't you look like an awesome leader from the outside? Girls will be falling all over you too. It should be me who goes.>

<...You definitely cannot go.>

Wongyung made a focusless expression but then sighed as he realized that this was the end.



Since his sanity had come back after his death got guaranteed.

‘Well. This might’ve been set already when I started killing people.’

He had constantly killed people as he got stronger.

With the sole reason of finding his son.

And at the same time he thought of this.

Because he was strong, he could treat others as sacrificial lambs.

And this world did not have any rules or society to stop that but rather encouraged him.

And this was the result of that.

‘I could eventually be stepped on or eaten by somebody else like this too.’

From a point of view this insecurity had pushed him farther than his desire to find his son.

‘It came much faster than I had thought.’

Wongyung sighed deeply as he spoke while looking at Hansoo:

“...You won’t save my daughter even if I asked you?”

He could only save his daughter if he were to put in a normal human being.

It didn’t seem like that guy would do something like that.

And when Hansoo shook his head as he expected, he sighed as he spoke his last words:

“If you find my son please look after him. Though it’s a little bit too much to ask when you are trying to kill me.”

Hansoo shook his head as he spoke at Wongyung who was explaining his son’s characteristics.

“There’s no need for that.”

“ ... ”

“But if my plans work out well his fate may be changed.”

“Goddamnit. What are you talking about untill the end...”

Then Hansoo’s dagger aggressively sliced past Wongyung’s neck.

Hansoo looked at the dead Dark Mad Lord with a complex look and then got up while shaking his head.

‘Just do some clean-up and move out.’

There wasn’t much time.

Hansoo looked around at the hundred plus corpses around him and then looked towards the starting location where he had come from.

.....

“Hnng.. Damn. When can we go...”.

Gyungmi, who had been standing at the starting point with her clansmen, grinded her teeth.

While they were chasing him, they were caught by him when he suddenly changed his path and rushed towards them.

The fact that they stuck too close because she was afraid of losing him was the mistake.

‘Damnit... did he expect one or two people to follow him from the start?’

As soon as Chungjae saw them he spoke out.

<Good. Kuhuuu. Set up a barricade here. So nobody else can go past here.>

<...Why should we?>

<I will forgive you for following me if you do that. Block them well.>

She had followed out of curiosity but that curiosity did not win over her fear.

Since it felt like an ‘Accident’ may happen if she didn’t listen.

It had been over half a day of waiting here.

‘Damn it. Should I just go?’

But before Gyungmi finished her thoughts, a blood-covered Chungjae was walking over from afar.

“What. What did you do?”

Hansoo, who had the appearance of Chungjae, looked over at Gyungmi with a cold expression and then nodded his head.

‘She really didn’t follow.’

If she had followed him to where he had fought then those traces couldn’t be hidden.

Since there would be traces of the soot that filled up the whole of the third floor.

‘Then... it’s ok.’

Since she wouldn’t be able to figure it out even if she went.

“It’s better to not know. You’ve done well so go on your way now.”

As soon as he finished those words, Chungjae disappeared into the paths.

And then Gyungmi narrowed her eyes.

‘...That’s towards the outskirts of the tower?’

Gyungmi made a strange expression but then shook her head.

She had been stuck here for too long anyway.

It seemed like he wanted to hide something but then it might

really become dangerous once she tried to pry into it.

‘...It doesn’t seem like he’s the type that would let the person who figured the thing he tried so hard to hide go.’

She was curious but she couldn’t not distinguish between fire and water.

If he had stopped them from following him it meant that he didn’t want to show them anything but if he were to chase them down while they pried into it...

‘I don’t even want to think about it. Stop thinking about it. Stop thinking about it.’

There were things that she needed to keep as a secret even if she knew about them.

Gyungmi took her clansmen as she proceeded forward at a very fast pace.

And after a while a giant cross could be seen.

Her sixth sense had told her instinctively.

That something happened here.

But her only clue was her sixth sense.

He had cleaned up things so well that nobody would've known that anything happened without the sixth sense.

‘Well. It’s nothing I need to know about.’

While Gyungmi was trying hard to suppress her curiosity, the fairy appeared in the sky again.

“Oh my. People came again. Then shall I start the explanation? About this cross right? Oh no. It increased by three more.”

Gyungmi made a suspicious expression as she looked at the fairy.

## Chapter 50 – Three Gateways (2)

---

Hansoo walked on the path and headed towards the outside.

His target was the entrance to another island.

The crossroad that lead towards the starting point of the third floor was connected to the end of the 2nd floor but it was also connected to other islands.

If you follow the paths then you will reach the tunnels that are connected to the other islands.

As he expected he saw a door that had light coming out from the gaps after a bit of walking and he saw a long bridge along with a giant island beyond it.

And when he walked outside he could see someone.

‘It’s a clansman of Taejin. Did Mihee ask a favor?’

Hansoo didn’t know the details but he knew more or less where Taejin would go.

Hansoo smirked as he spoke to the clansman:

“Did you form an alliance?”



The clansman nodded.

“Our Lord formed an alliance with that Mihee. They are together right now. That person called Yerin separated because she said she was going a different way.”

Hansoo just nodded.

“I just simply suggested a few things. Figure things out on your own.”

The clansman who had been messaging back and forth asked Hansoo:

“Mihee is asking. When you will come back if you go now?”

Hansoo pondered for a moment and then answered back.

“One month. If it’s fast.”

As he said it, only if he was fast.

He wasn’t sure how long it would take exactly.

‘I need to come out before the tutorial ends.’

If not then it'll really be the end.

It wasn't that they let them go to the next area just because the tutorial was finished.

If they can't make a <Ship> then they would all die.

The clansmen made a sour expression.

“...I guess you'll come near the end.”

50 days since they had come into the 2nd tutorial area.

After one month it'll be the stage which was the final part of the tutorial.

Hansoo laughed as he nodded.

“We might not even see each other.”

Taejin's clansman nodded and then exchanged messages with the Lord above and spoke:

“He says he'll be doing just fine so have a good trip.”

The clansman finished these words as he walked inside towards the crossroad.

Hansoo laughed slightly, warmed up his body and then prepared his Judgement and Justice Dekrados.

And then raised his head to look at the top of the tower, breathed in and out and stood at the outskirts of the tower.

‘...To think to do such a thing. The fact that he found it is amazing.’

Hansoo thought of one of the Final Brigade’s members, Ralph Lauren, as he shook his head.

Ralph Lauren, he had been dragged into the Otherworld while working as a professional rock climber.

The only thing Ralph Lauren, who had been charging through the tutorial with ease due to his strength, stamina and perseverance, thought of when he saw the tower.

<This world gave something amazing every time you accomplish something amazing. Wouldn’t there be something if you reach the top of this tower?>

Anybody could climb up from the inside, couldn’t they?

Ralph Lauren did not have such simple thoughts.

And after he had prepared inside the tower, he started to madly climb the outside of the tower starting from the second month and finally reached the top and got into the Final Dungeon, Three Gateways.

And had came out after barely breaking through the first gateway.

After not being able to even have an attempt at the second or third gateways.

<Phew. There indeed was information regarding the 2nd and 3rd gateways but... it seemed like it was written to tell me to not get killed. So I didn't go. I just came out after clearing the first one. The reward was good enough with that much.>

‘First I will go up.’

Hansoo stabbed the Justice of Dekrados once at a time into the tower as he slowly climbed up.

Justice and Judgement of Dekrados basically acted as mountain climbing gear as it helped him climb up to the top.

Stab the dagger and step on top of it.

Stab the next dagger in, grab it with the right hand, fasten yourself with the chain and then retrieve the dagger which you had stabbed in before.

The action was simple but due to it being repeated very quickly, Hansoo climbed up the tower at an extreme speed like a spider climbing up a wall.

Padududk

And at the same time something started flying towards Hansoo.

Kaaaaaak!

Hansoo looked at the disgusting looking birds which were flying towards him and then frowned.

It looked like a bird but had a human's face with a wide mouth that had razor sharp teeth.

These guys existed for those who climbed the outskirts of the tower instead of going up from the inside.

‘...Ralph Lauren. You were lucky.’

Ralph Lauren had started from the 4th floor when he climbed up so he had to deal with much less dangers.

But he didn't have enough time to go through the insides of the tower so he needed to climb up from below while going through all sorts of random beasts.

Since the time it would take to cross the Final Dungeon for him who needed to go through all 3 gateways would be longer than that of Ralph Lauren, who only went through one of the gateways.

The expected time of 1 month was just a prediction, it may even take longer.

‘Charge through.’

Charururuk

And soon the Judgement of Dekrados, which was tied around Hansoo's body, sliced through the air ruthlessly.

.....

“When the clansman comes we will head out.”

Taejin, who had finished communicating, spoke to Mihee.

Taejin, who had seen Mihee nod slightly, shouted loudly towards the surrounding people:

“Are you all ok?”

And everyone who was below the Cross nodded their head as they breathed in and out roughly.

A slight amount of regret was mixed in the eyes of the people who were gathered here.

Since that Cross was a chance to revive somebody they love.

Taejin had hesitated as well.



<Who will you kill to revive somebody? And even if you did revive someone else they will be in a state of a Tabula Rasa, are you even able to advance forward by working their share as well? I won't stop you from doing whatever you choose but you cannot if you want to be with us.>

And a few people who could not stand it instantly left the group.

Mihee did not stop those people.

Since if she had someone she loved. And this was the last chance to save them then even she wouldn't be able to stop herself.

And then Taejin looked at Mihee as he spoke:

“All the people here gathered after looking at you. Be the center properly.”

He had come here from Hansoo's suggestion but he would've left right away if he didn't like it.

It was the same for those who were here.

There was almost nobody left who had hopes of Hansoo joining back here.

‘He has so many things to do. Will we be able to see him before we get out?’

He actually wasn't a great leader or something.

Since he would go with them if they followed but will just leave them if they aren't able to follow.

And there weren't many people who were of the level where they could follow him.

As if Taejin's words gave her strength, Mihee smiled slightly as she shouted at the people around her:

“Prepare yourself. We will resume after 10 minutes.”

Hansoo was Hansoo and they had things they needed to do.

‘I will keep as many alive as I can.’

Mihee clenched her teeth.

That was the greatest resistance that she could do against this damnable world and the fairy.

Save as many people as you can on the way up.

And soon, about 200 people started to head towards a different area after getting through the third floor.

.....

‘It took a whole day just to come up here.’

Hansoo retrieved the dagger he had been standing on as he looked at the small door at the top of the tower.

A very real-like moon despite the fact that it was located a few thousands meters up on the top of a tower.

And only a door was floating in the air, there were no other buildings behind the door.

Hansoo breathed in and out as he opened the door.

Kachak

And soon he could see a dark area on the insides of the door.

‘It’s real huh.’

Hansoo, who was going against the rough wind, stepped into the door and then closed the door.

And then he looked around the darkness and then looked towards the weapons that were hung around his body.

7 double-edged swords and eight blades.

18 medium and small-sized swords and the Dekrados Set.

Seven Striped Cape and other defensive gear.

Nurmaha’s ring and eight smaller rings.

One necklace around his neck and a circlet.

These were all the best versions of their category which he could gain in the tutorial before the third floor.

And even the Demonic Jade Crystal as well as the Philosopher’s

stone that he gained at the treasure hunt.

Preparations were complete.

Hansoo touched his ear.

‘...As I expected... it’s very inefficient’

[Kang Hansoo] Strength (Colorless): 60.8%

Stamina (Colorless): 61.1%

Agility (Colorless): 66.7%

Perception (Colorless): 67.7%

Mana (Colorless): 58.7%

Magic (Colorless): 58.7%

Physical Resistance (Colorless): 58.7%

Magic Resistance (Colorless): 58.7%

The clansmen of the Dark Mad Lord were much stronger than other adventurers and there were over 150 of them.

But despite eating all of those he could only raise his stats by around 40%.

Even if it was inefficient, it was a number that could never be reached by simply hunting monsters.

The amount he had raised by staying here for 50 days was a mere 25%.

Even if he focused on hunting for the last month, he would've reached at most 50%.

Since he had to decrease the efficiency with the Rune Eater Snake and had to raise the Nurmaha's Ring as well.

‘Though it's a bit risky... I'm going in.’

His stats were good enough to go through the 2nd gateway of the 3 gateways so it was good enough.

The 1st gateway was hard but it was just the reward for those who had climbed up the tower.

According to Ralph Lauren's intel, the difficulty raised significantly starting from the 2nd gateway and the problem with the runes will be solved if one could clear the 2nd gateway.

‘It’s the start.’

Hansoo jumped down towards the inside.

.....

“These crazy times. Phew... they’re all very zealous. Just to save somebody they know. Right?”

Jimin sighed tiredly as she looked at the few tens of people they had forced to kneel beneath the Cross.

Yerin chuckled at Jimin’s words.

Since it would’ve been hard for her too if her clan wasn’t made of special forces.

Standing on the same side as Taejin in Central Island was a stroke of good fortune.

If not then she would’ve shared the fate of the nine dead Lords among the eleven of them.

“But why have you told us to suppress the non-clansmen? We have already reached the limit of how many we can have in the clan.”

Yerin laughed quietly as she spoke.

“Bigger sister has something she thought of. Let’s see...”

Yerin breathed in deeply as she shouted towards the clansmen.

“Bring nine of the non-clansmen people over there.”

“Pardon?”

Yerin pointed at the cross as she giggled.

“And let’s save these guys here.”

“Pardon?”

“These guys were Lords.”

And then Yerin pointed towards the nine people out of the countless in the Cross.

Nine Lords who had gone missing along with Guktae in Central Island.

She hadn’t known if they had died or not but it seemed like they did since their faces came up on the cross.



‘This is a jackpot.’

She didn’t know if the psychic powers would come back or not.

But according to the fairy’s words they will have the memory and physique of themselves before coming in here.

Which means the chances of them manifesting such things like the psychic powers were very high.

She couldn’t do anything about those she didn’t know but how could she let go of these people who had the chances of becoming a Lord.

“Uaaaak!”

“Aak!”

Yerin made a content smile as she looked at the nine people getting <Eaten> in the grave below the cross.

Even if she didn’t put them into the clan, what would they be able to do if she always looks after them with blades up against their backs.

And with this the amount she will be able to control will increase tenfold, to one thousand from one hundred.

‘Very good.’

A newcomer shouted towards Yerin at one of somebody in the cross while she looked at the nine Lords who were growing out of the ground.

“Oh yeah. Lord. This guy is probably a Lord too.”

“This guy?”

Yerin made a strange expression as she looked at the man who had just appeared in the Cross.

‘It means he just died.’

The clansman who had been speaking to Yerin nodded.

“Yes. I noticed him because I had come to the tower a bit earlier and I saw people move in a large group with this guy as the center... this guy is probably a Lord too. It seemed like he had quite a lot of people but... it seems like he died in the tower.”

It wasn't weird even for a Clan Lord to die since it was very dangerous.

Since the 3rd floor that they had gone through was that dangerous too.

There was a chance where the injured forces from the 2nd floor could die while crossing.

“Yeah? Then drag one more over here.”

And then another person was shoved into the grave as another man grew out of the ground.

Jimin made a content expression as she looked at the 10 male and female Lords in Total.

She asked the last guy who had come up because she wanted to know his name.

Since she knew everyone else's name but didn't know the new guy's.

“What is your name?”

The man made a confused expression and then muttered out his name.

“Wongyung... I'm called Wongyung. But where is this? I was clearly with Ahee in Myungdong...”

“Wongyung... Good.”

Yerin smiled contently again at the 10 people.

‘I hope we can meet more people from now on.’

If an empty space appears, you need to fill it up.

And that won’t be much of a problem.

Since there will still be plenty of people in the tower.

‘From now on... I’ll lead.’

Yerin laughed coldly.

# Chapter 51 – Red Zone (1)

---

Kuuuuuuuu.

<Sky Road>, the stage which held the second tutorial.

And the giant tower that was located above at the island at the top.

A large amount of water was rising up to the tower.

To be specific, all the islands were falling beneath the sea at a very fast rate.

It had already been a while since the water came up to the first floor of the tower and the slowly rising water seemed like it would go over the third floor soon.

Chiiiiizik.

The blazing third floor started to get flooded by the poisonous sea as all the flames started to get extinguished.

A situation where it won't be long until the whole tower would be submerged beneath the sea.

And a small door that was located at the top of this tower opened as somebody came out.

A man in a mess who was covered in blood.

“Goddamnit... for that thing to come out at the very end. It took way too long.”

Hansoo grinded his teeth.

There weren't any artifacts that weren't damaged either.

A few seemed to be in good condition but they all turned into dust that scattered as if they had a problem with them.

‘It seems I must renew them all’.

These artifacts couldn't be used in the Red Zone, where he will be soon, anyways.

And it wasn't really a waste if what he had gained was taken into account.

Hansoo, who threw out every artifact on his body other than the Nurmaha's Ring, estimated the time and then clicked his tongue.

‘...There's two hours left now.’

90th day.

2 hours before the tutorial ends.

After seeing the way the water was rising, everything would be submerged after two hours.

Most people would have already set off.

Hansoo jumped off as he looked below the tower and dug his hand onto the wall of the tower.

Kwadududuk.

The red, and not colorless, runes started to twist the laws of Hansoo's body and his hands, which had been strengthened by this, started to smash the walls.

And Hansoo kept that speed, from the rebound force of his action, constant as he rode down the tower.

Hooooooooong.

‘Go through from the 4th floor.’

The entrance which Ralph Lauren had come out from.

And the tower's topmost floor.

‘It’ll be a bit tight. To make the Ship.’

You needed the Ship prepared by the fairy in order to go from the Colorless Zone to the Red Zone.

Since this place would completely sink.

Hansoo ran towards the <Preparation Area> on the 4th floor as fast as he could.

.....

“Goddamnit! Those bitches from the Clan Alliance! For them to really leave us and go!”

Gumchan and the seven others grinded their teeth as they searched around the insides of the jungle.

‘Those crazy bastards... they leave even when they had room to spare?’

There wasn’t much resentment about the Ship made by the Free Alliance, which had set off 4 days ago, since they were the ones who chose not to get on but they didn’t know that the guys of the Clan Alliance would act like this.

And because of that they were searching around the jungle like



this.

“Hurry! We need to find the Kuron Parasite and get it over there!”

Kuron Parasite.

They had gathered all of the other materials for the Ship in the 2 days after the departure of the Clan Alliance but they didn't acquire the Kuron Parasite yet.

And the fairy would only make the Ship for them if they give the Kuron parasite to it.

But one of the people running spoke while making an anxious expression.

“Hey! But the Kuron Parasite is...”

Then Gumchan shouted as he grinded his teeth.

“Dammit! Then what! We can't make the Ship without that!”

Kuron Parasite.

There wasn't much about it.

It was so weak that it would die if you tapped it around a bit.

The problem was where they parasited on.

<Galapagon Crocodile>.

A 30m big giant crocodile that lived in the swamps of the inner parts of the wide 4th floor.

It had kindly been written in the catalogue for making the Ship by the fairy that it lived in the inside of the Galapagon Crocodile's mouth.

Since there were basic explanations about the Ship and the places to gather the material for it.

They had promised themselves that they would never come back here after seeing an adventurer, who was trying to get the material, get his leg torn off but for them to come back here like this.

‘Dammit... there’s nothing we can do.’

Gumchan grinded his teeth.

They had to make the Ship.

A few people, who had gotten anxious after the Clan Alliance left, cut off a few trees in the jungle and tried to get to the <Red Zone> by making a raft and getting onto the sea.

The result was misery in itself.

They had all died after getting infected from the waves of poison.

You could stay afloat for a while but if you sink then your whole body will melt.

The fairy giggled at that as if it was extremely funny and spoke.

<Oh my. I told you to bring the materials because of this. I didn't even tell you to make it. I said we'll give it to you if you get the materials. Though the Ship made by us looks a bit flimsy, it's the greatest consideration towards the comfort of the adventurer. There's... 39 hours left now.>

And everyone who had seen this started searching the <Preparation Area> all around the 4th floor.

Since they might really melt down if they aren't able to get the materials in time.

This was already 2 days ago.

And now there were probably less than 2 hours left.

The Free Alliance and the Clan Alliance each made a giant Ship that would still have space left after holding 2000 people.

They had become like this because they saw each of the 500 Free Alliance and the 600 Clan Alliance make a Ship to carry 2000 and had thought that they would take them and had leisurely hunted.

If they had faithfully prepared the Ship for a month then they wouldn't have fallen into such a dangerous situation.

'Dammit... We should've gotten the materials despite the dangers. Or we should have followed the Free Alliance.'

After a bit of running, he could see the shady swamp in the distance.

"...Why did they make such a large Ship if they weren't gonna take us with them."

He had run in a hurry but then he felt anxious again.

If the monsters they needed to kill in order to get the materials were easy then they would've done so already.

But as if it wasn't only him who had thought this, the footsteps of 6 others behind him were slowing down as well.

And at that moment a voice was heard above them.

“You aren’t going to kill it? Then I shall do it.”

“Uuk?”

When they looked up after getting shocked they could see a man running between the branches of the jungle.

And there was a very unique thing about him.

‘...He has nothing on his body?’

To have nothing on his body.

Unlike the third floor of the tutorial where everyone had been separated, the fourth floor was a large area where all the survivors could stay together.

Of course it was a huge area but they had seen a lot of different kinds of people due to the fact that the areas weren’t isolated.

And a few people out of the 2000 survivors caught the eye.

Like Park Gyungmi’s special force clan that was famous for being a small group of elites despite her being a Lord.

The incredibly strong guy with a strange mask.

But it was the first time he had someone run about without anything on their body.

‘No. He has a single ring on.’

They didn’t have any solutions but this guy was something else.

No, he didn’t even know how to deal with this because such a unique guy had suddenly popped out.

“Well yeah. Since there’s more than one of them.”

Even before they could do anything, the guy who had finished talking ran into the swamp.

They gazed blankly for a moment and then asked Gumchan.

“What are you going to do?”

Gumchan pondered for a moment and then opened his mouth.

“It seems like he’s going to fight, we should go and see the situation as we...”

Boooom!

Before he could finish his words, a dark golden light penetrated through the swamp along with a giant noise.

Kuuuuuaaaak!

And then a very loud scream that vibrated throughout the swamp exploded out.

Galapagon Crocodile's Scream.

When the surprised group ran over, they saw an unbelievable sight.

The giant crocodile had its skull crushed and the man was pulling out the Kuron Parasite from the insides of its mouth which he had split apart.

‘...the fuck. What did he crush it with? Skill?’

The thickness of his skull that they could see between the broken bones were over 50 cm thick and it seemed like it wasn't normal bones from the shininess.

But it had been broken apart like tofu.

The fourth floor was indeed very large but it wasn't so wide to the point where a rumor wouldn't get spread around.

If he was that strong than they should've at least heard about him at least once but they had never heard about him.

‘Is that him? He doesn’t have the chain scythe and dagger...’

And as they heard, that guy did not use any skills ever.

There was probably a reason why he couldn’t use it.

But that shining light was definitely the effect of a skill.

‘Dammit... I don’t know who he is. Did he gain something through a fortuitous encounter or something.’

While Gumchan was shocked, one of the people with Gumchan shouted out even before he could stop him,

“Hey! Wait a moment!”

“Hmm?”

When the guy turned around one of the people behind Gumchan shouted loudly.

“It seems like you don’t have a Ship either, how about going with us? We have everything but that parasite!”



Though they wanted to get a free ride only a single Kuron Parasite lived within each crocodile.

And he didn't know what that guy did but for him to have the strength to crush that giant crocodile with a single strike meant that opposing him in terms of strength was impossible.

The Galapagon Crocodile itself was burdensome, it didn't make any sense to go up against such a person who killed it with a single strike.

But there was no need to actually fight.

The Ship they could make with the materials they had and the Kuron Parasite could easily hold ten people.

It was enough for them seven and that one man to get on.

“Oh...!”

While Gumchan made a satisfied expression, a few people came through the swamp while gasping for air.

“What? You gained the Kuron Parasite?”

They were all gasping for air and had lights shining in their eyes.

They could only be anxious since they didn't make the Ship while the toxic water was rising by the minute.

They had gained all the easy materials in the two days after the Clan Alliance had left but there were more people who had been wandering around the swamp due to the fear of it than they had thought.

They had all gathered here as they heard the scream of the Galapagon Crocodile dying.

The man standing in the front shouted loudly at Hansoo.

“Hey! Did you kill it for those guys? Then help us kill it too!”

And then Gumchan shouted in confusion.

“What are you talking about! We didn't tell him to kill it but rather gave a proposal! Do you think we're trying to get a free ride? We're willing to give him all the other materials!”

Then the man standing in the very front smiled.

“Then that's even better. Does it really need to be you guys?”

“What?”

The man ignored Gumchan and then shouted at Hansoo.

“We have all the other materials as well! But our Ship is a 20 man Ship! We just couldn’t get the Ship because we didn’t have the parasite that the Galapagon Crocodile was guarding over! Isn’t it better for you guys to go to a bigger Ship?”

The man spoke with confidence.

As he saw it, the amateurs over there had only seven people.

The Ship they were preparing were probably a 10 man.

On the other hand they had 13 people and had a bit more leisure so the Ship they had prepared was a 20 man Ship of a slightly larger size.

Wouldn’t they be better.

Gumchan grinded his teeth at those words.

It was just as he said.

They looked at the Ships that were crossing the dangerous looking sea on the direction that the fairy had pointed to.

It wasn't an issue of people on board.

It was just that they would be safer the more materials they invested in order to get a bigger Ship from the fairy to travel much more safely.

The fact that a lot of people could get on was just a side effect.

But it wasn't only Gumchan who had become desperate at those words.

There really wasn't much time left anymore.

“You bastard! If you do that then we have the materials as well! Let's go with us!”

“With us!”

“Dammit! Then at least get one for us each! We're all going to die!”

‘Hmm...’

Hansoo watched the chaos around him as he shook his head and spoke.

“I don't need those materials.”

“...What?”

“I’ll be making a 500 man Ship. You guys use that by yourselves.”

‘...Isn’t this guy just a maniac. Making a 500 man Ship for himself?’

Yohan, who had been making the 20 man Ship, was speechless.

## Chapter 52 – Red Zone (2)

---

‘This bitch... is he saying that he’s going to gain all those materials in the remaining time?’

Yohan was speechless.

It wasn’t that you needed a large amount of materials for a big Ship.

Since though it was called materials, you didn’t make the ship with those materials.

Actually the materials felt more like currency for buying the Ship.

But of course it wasn’t easy just because it was like that.

The more expensive the Ship was, a core for which the difficulty of gaining rose exponentially was added into it.

The Kuron Parasite was the core ingredient for the ships with a capacity of 30 people or less.

The Ships which could hold over 30 people needed the Red Spotted Salamander’s heart and the 2000 man sized Ships which the large clans rode on needed the skull of the Volcanic Bear which there were only two of on all of the fourth floor.

The core item needed for the 500 man Ship was Nokrokrok Lizard's heart.

The two clans which weren't part of an alliance and had made this ship received quite a large amount of casualties while hunting this guy.

While Yohan was thinking random things, Hansoo shouted as he flew off.

“Don't worry. I'll let you guys ride on it.”

“...What?”

Hansoo smirked at the reply which seemed like that they had misheard.

Why would he let all 100 of them die after making the ship?

These guys couldn't make the ship during the remaining time.

“If you want to get on then go chop down some Arun Trees and get some Kelk's Mucus Sac. That's the fee for the ride. I'll see you at the entrance.”

“Hey! Hey! Hey wait over there!”

Yohan shouted out in a panic but Hansoo had already disappeared into the distance.

Everyone looked at each other as if they were guarding against each other but then started to speak out one at a time.

There were 2 choices.

To either gain the ride fee like that guy had said.

Or to make the ship and leave like that.

“What do we do?”

“Shall we... group up and fight?”

“We need at least five 20-man ships in order to have enough capacity for 100 people... we need at least 10 Kuron Parasites. We can't kill 10 of them in 2 hours.”

“Dammit....”

The fact that they had been gathered like had actually become the problem.

They could easily catch three or four since 100 people were



gathered like this.

But they couldn't make ships for all 100 people to get on with that.

There will be a bloody battle.

“...Goddamnit.”

Yohan frowned.

Could that guy really gain all the materials to make the 500 man ship?

Because then there was nothing much more to do.

Since they will be thankful to him too.

‘But if he said that to make us calm down...’

He may just make a 10 man ship and leave like that.

‘Then we won't simply die.’

If that happened then they will at least break his ship apart.

‘But why is he telling us to bring these?’

Kelk Mucus Sac and Arun Tree weren’t part of the necessary materials.

And the amount he had requested was quite a lot.

If you take into account of the hardness of the Arun Tree than all 100 people still needed to work hard after splitting up.

‘First I’ll move.’

Since it was rather cheap fee for a ride.

‘Please... let us thank you.’

Getting abandoned once was enough.

And soon everyone dispersed into numerous directions.

.....

Kuuuuuuuu

‘Nokrokrok Lizard.’

Hansoo flew around and then whipped at the lizard’s chin after making a tight tist.

Boooooom!

The Dark Golden light that had run up Hansoo’s arm gathered in his hands and then exploded. The lizard got hit in the head, tumbled for a while and then died.

Hansoo started to search around the corpse of the lizard.

‘Let’s see... I should take the part where the great arteries of the three hearts combine right?’

Three hearts.

Which was why they didn’t count.

The part where the arteries of the three hearts combined, which there was only one of, counted.

Hansoo took out the essence of the material and then moved his position to the where he had came in from the outside.

There were people gathering there with the Arun Trees and Kelk Mucus Sac along with anxious expressions.

“Let’s go.”

Everyone’s facial tone changed but made a slightly suspicious expression too.

They could only be sensitive since their lives were on the line.

And they couldn’t believe the fact that he had gained the materials for a 500 man Ship in such a short time.

“Did you really get them?”

Hansoo nodded as Yohan, who had been standing in the front, asked with a slightly suspicious expression.

“Hurry and get over here. There’s less than 30 minutes left now.”

Hansoo then walked towards the toxic waters that had filled up to the lower areas of the fourth floor and started to stack all the materials he had gained.

‘...How do things keep coming out from that small pouch? He killed all them within the two hours?’

The people made expressions of fear.

Numerous parts of different beast's corpses were coming out endlessly.

“Uuuuhh...”

While the people made scared expressions while watching the toxic waters which seemed like they could rise up at any moment, the fairy appeared in front of their eyes.

“Wow! Congratulations! You gathered all the materials! First I will Congratu...”

“Please hurry with the ship first!”

Somebody shouted loudly.

They had realized that they wouldn't die even if they talked like that to the fairy.

And the situation where the toxic waters may reach their feet at any time had made them even more anxious.

There were 30 minutes left but this was the time left for the whole fourth floor to get submerged.

If they were even 5 minutes late then the place they were standing at may all be submerged.

The fairy smiled as it spoke.

“Oh my. Sorry. You’re probably anxious. The ship you guys will ride on this...This! <The ship which successfully sailed the Ketil Sea>!”

As soon as the fairy’s words ended all the materials melted and disappeared.

And toxic waters starting boiling as a giant bubble appeared.

Right before the bubble seemed like it would blow up the sea split as a giant Ship appeared.

A Ship the size of a cruiseship.

While everyone was marveling at the high class looking ship, Yohan spat coldly at the fairy.

“You will control that? There isn’t anyone here who knows how to control a ship.”

It was hard enough to control a modern yacht alone, how hard would it be to control that giant Ship.

Since the only ship control they knew was a pirate captain shouting while spinning the steering wheel of a strange-looking ship. (\*PR Note: One Piece reference?)

The fairy just smiled at those words.

“Don’t worry. We will sail the ship for you guys as a service the first time so rest comfortably. Heehee. The estimated date of arrival is 3 days! If you leave it alone it will go to the Red Zone but if you want to change the direction then the controls are in the middle of the deck. The controls aren’t hard.”

Everybody sighed in relief.

They were able to barely escape 30 minutes before they were about to get submerged along with the whole island.

But Yohan frowned slightly.

‘...The first sail is free as service?’

And for them to allow them to turn direction.

Doesn’t that mean that there are going to be instances where they might have to change the direction of the ship?

While Yohan was making a rather dirty expression, Hansoo’s

voice was heard from above:

“What are you doing. Get on. Bring the Kelk Mucus Sacs and the wood.”

“Hnng?”



Chiiiik

“Uaaak! It got all the way up here!”

“Hurry and get on! Hurry!”

It wasn't that they were going to melt down right away but they will melt down if they were to be submerged.

As the toxic water started to melt the soles of their shoes, everyone flew their body up to the ship along with the mucus sacs and the wood in a hurry.

Even if they were weak, they were people with superhuman physiques in the normal world.

Getting onto a ship of this height was merely a joke.

And when all the people got onto the ship, the sails of the ship flapped back and forth as it started it move magically.

The giant ship then started to lead them towards the next area, the <Red Zone>.

.....

“Let's all introduce ourselves. I'm called Yohan. Thank you for

letting me on.”

Everyone gathered on the deck of the ship and started to introduce themselves.

Since no matter how much they liked or hated each other, they were on the same ship and be with each other for 3 days, or more.

And when it became Hansoo’s turn, everyone started focusing on him.

Since he was the person who got caught in the eye the most.

He didn’t have anything on.

He didn’t have any equipment on him.

But he was strong.

Hansoo spoke as he looked at them.

“I am called Kang Hansoo.”

Everyone nodded their heads.

And a few of the expressions brightened up.

If a strong guy was a crazy guy then it would be extremely dangerous.

They had gotten on the ship due to their anxious minds but if a guy this strong were to go crazy on a ship where they could not run away then it would become very troublesome.

But from the way he was acting he was one of the few people who were still sane.

Yohan nodded his head slightly on the inside.

‘So it was this guy...’

This guy was extremely famous.

Since he had stood out since Central Island.

But there was a question.

‘There hasn’t been anybody who has seen this guy in the Tower.’

Even if they went to different islands they were bound to meet on the 4th floor.

Since that was how it was structured.

But there wasn't anybody who had seen this guy prior to the 2 hours before the departure.

And because of this they had thought he died but for him to be alive.

‘Well. There is no need to make trouble.’

There was no need to create trouble when they were going to be together for 3 days.

As everyone's introduction's ended, everyone looked around the ship with comfortable expressions and spoke out.

“Anyways... are we going to rest like this for 3 days?”

Everyone made blissful expressions.

The three months of the tutorial was constant tensions and fighting.

They could only feel comfortable since they were allowed to rest for 3 days in a rather luxurious ship.

And as they went below the deck, they could see some delicious things as if they were services.

But Hansoo shook his head.

The fairy had told them.

That they don't really lay their hands on them once the tutorial ends.

But that was basically because there was they was no need to anymore.

'Tsk. I wanted to make a 2000 man ship originally.'

He wanted to make the biggest ship, and probably could've made it with leisure but his plans had been screwed because the difficulty of the third gate was higher than he had thought.

2 hours was far from enough time even for someone like him.

'Though the 500 man ship isn't bad...'

It wasn't that the amount of people the ship could carry was important but rather the defenses and durability of the ship increased as the size got bigger.

And because of this the people here had to do well.

‘They need to pay for their own food.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked towards the distant sea.

.....

“It’s enough to make a 30 man ship right? There’s no reason to make a giant ship right?”

One of the people who had been on the ship that was sailing towards the Red Zone shouted out loudly.

Everyone then chuckled as they nodded.

Their ship was basically a raft compared to the giant ship the alliances had sailed off on but if you take into account that the few hundred of them had run around for a whole month, this ship was much better in terms of efficiency.

‘As I thought... this is better than struggling to make a 100 man or 200 man ship.’

They didn’t really feel like they had spare room since 30 people were riding on a 30 man ship but this discomfort just needed to be held in when they were going to arrive in 3 days.

‘Though the free alliance guys asked us to go with them...’

Those guys were very annoying because they had a lot of things they set limits on.

And joining a clan was a bit unsettling due to the fact that his feelings would get changed by itself.

This was better even if they suffer a little bit.

“Let’s rest a bit for 3 days. Since we struggled hard until now.”

Everyone nodded their heads at these words.

How much had they suffered in order to create this.

They struggled a lot in by going into dangerous hunting grounds and hunting by themselves.

‘But this was still a smart decision.’

They laughed inwardly at the people who were still at the tower or have submerged under the waters.

How would they trust the alliance guys and wait for them.

Their lives were on the line.

Those guys had laughed at them when they were making the ship

but the ones who had survived in the end were them.

‘It sounds like the story of the ant and the cicada’. (\*PR Note: A Jean de la Fontaine fable)

And now they had to rest well with this as the reward.

Since the life on the place they will arrive at won't be comfortable.

‘Mountain Range of the World Tree... the name's really good though.’

While they were thinking of the name of the Red Zone that the fairy had told them, a fearsome sound came from the floor.

Kuzak.

Chew. Chew.

Kududuk.

Everyone made anxious expressions at the strange sounds as they rose up.

“Where's this coming from?”



“It’s below the ship...”

“I’ll go check.”

One person went below very carefully.

And then came back up while screaming.

“Fuck!! Some bastard is making holes on the bottom of the ship!”

“What!!”

Everybody freaked out as they bounced out of their seats.

How could swimming across 3 days worth of travel on a ship on this toxic waters be possible?

And they had clearly seen the people who tried to cross on rafts.

If this ship sinks then it’ll be a massacre.

Everyone madly ran down.

And then freaked out at the three-pronged spears coming up from below the ship.

Everyone run towards it while swinging their swords crazily at the sight of the toxic waters pouring in.

“Fuck, block it!”

“These bastards won’t come inside! This bitches just keep jabbing from the outside!”

“Goddamit! Somebody go into the sea and get them off while we block them from here!”

Everyone flinched at those words.

‘Jump into the toxic waters?’

They could fight to some degree.

Since their bodies didn’t melt right away even if they were toxic waters.

But the probability of death rose by tens of times.

‘Fuck... we should’ve made a bigger ship.’

Then the holes wouldn’t have been made this easily and they could’ve used long range skills to kill them off during that time.

“Damn it!”

“Ahhhk.”

Everyone made expressions of despair as they looked at the slowly sinking ship.

Almost 10 thousand tutorial areas.

All the ships that started from different tutorial areas, that numbered up to a few tens of thousands if they were all combined, had the same thing occurring to them at the same time.

## Chapter 53 – Red Zone (3)

---

Yohan made a satisfied expression at the distance sea from the deck of the ship.

‘It’s nice.’

100 people who consisted of 8 groups.

They went into deciding where they would stay on the ship for the next 3 days naturally.

A slight war of nerves had occurred since the good spots were limited even in the same ship.

But even if they were a mere 100 people there were still differences.

Him and his comrades were among the strongest of the 100 and because of this they gained the privilege to stay in the most comfortable part in the ship.

‘This is it. Very nice.’

Yohan, who had regained the superiority which he couldn’t have while the clan alliance guys were around, smiled in good spirits.

Though there was something that remained stuck on his mind.

‘I just can’t figure out what he is thinking.’

Yohan looked at Hansoo who was standing in the middle of the deck while looking at the distant sea.

This was a result that sprouted from Hansoo not acting out despite being the strongest person out of the 100.

He had let them on board but didn’t really care about them.

‘He’s the problem.’

Yohan pondered while looking at Hansoo and then nodded his head.

‘As I thought... there is a need to create a relation with that guy.’

Though he didn’t really know how long they’ll be together, if you say that they were going to be together for a while then there was nothing bad about having a good relation with that guy.

No, it was actually extremely good.

Since as long as he could show others that he was close to him, others will fall under them.

Though their current influence was a bit on the bigger side it was not that bigger than those of others nor was it perfect.

2 things were needed in order for them to solidify their influence.

They needed to slowly pull in the other groups and create a rather good relationship with Hansoo at the same time.

‘Well the two things aren’t much different anyway’.

Once he unites everyone from the other party then Hansoo won’t be able to ignore him anymore and vice versa, if he were to get close to Hansoo then everyone else will listen to his words more closely.

‘It seems like he’s young too... there isn’t a human in the world who doesn’t like to be well-treated.’

For that he needed to converse with him.

Since he needed to find out about Hansoo’s tastes.

‘It’ll be nice if he likes something like women or something.’

Right as Yohan got up from the deck and tried to walk towards where Hansoo was, a noise was heard from behind.

“....ave me!”

“Huh?”

Yohan frowned as he looked at the person shouting in the sea in the distance.

He couldn't see or hear clearly because it was too far but the sound got clearer as the ship approached more and more.

‘...who is it?’

“Dammit! Dammit! Save me! The ship passing by!”

“What? What’s going on?”

As the noise got louder and louder, everyone got out from their rest and then looked beyond the deck.

A familiar ship that was half sunk and destroyed.

People were shouting from above the giant ship that was smaller than the one they had but could still carry 50 people.

It seems like they have gotten stuck on a rock while running away after getting attacked.

They had stopped sinking because they were caught on top of the rock but it was clear what would happen to them if they stayed like that.

But they made a cold expression when they saw the people on the deck.

‘I remember.’

It was hard to forget.

Since they could remember the lines those guys had told them when they left them behind.

<You lazy bastards! You want us to let you on board when you were playing around while the others were working hard building the ship? Don't have any shame. Did you contribute a single piece for the construction of the ship? And where do you want us to use people like you.>

‘It seems the situation has changed.’

They could save them if they use the controls but there was no need to direct their ship into the area with the rocks.

And those guys were well organized as a group and strong too.

Once those guys come over on this ship then the balance will fall



towards those guys in an instead.

‘That wouldn’t do.’

Yohan laughed coldly and then shouted.

“Screw off! You bitches!”

“Uahahahaha!”

The other people started to laugh too.

Since the view of others suffering while they were in safety was very pleasing.

But while the people were laughing from this weirdly worked up situation, the ship started to tilt and turn.

“Huh? What is this?”

“Huhh?”

The people panicked as they looked at the center of the deck.

And Hansoo was turning the controls with a leisurely expression in that spot.

A few people grinded their teeth as they shouted.

“What! Why are you turning it!”

They could not look over those guys if they took into account of the despair they had felt when those guys left them behind.

But to go save them by turning the ship into an area where there might be rocks.

But Hansoo shook his head.

‘It’s better to have more on board.’

“We should save those we can. Be friendly with them.”

The others shouted at Hansoo’s words.

“Goddamit! Do you even know what’s over there! That’s a region of rocks!”

Being strong was being strong but is he even allowed to ignore them all and decide on his own just because he has the power.

Even if the ship was his, there were a hundred people on board so why would he take the path that lead to danger.

Yohan was flustered from a different reason.

‘What is that crazy guy even thinking.’

Yohan grinded his teeth.

He didn’t want to give up all 100 people and Hansoo.

No, this was just the start. He might be able to get bigger once he got to the Red Zone.

If he gets the 100 people and Hansoo around him with himself as the center, his influence will increase in size like a snowball.

But if that guy acts the way he wanted like that then he had to give up one of the two.

Since he can’t tie them together if they hate each other.

‘Damn. It is because he’s still childish.’

There was no point of having a lot of people if they couldn’t group up.

No, it was actually worse.

They had understood this in the tutorial stage already.

And it was hard for them 100 and the people over there to mix.

Since the enmity between them was big already.

Why did they have to carry such people as them.

‘It’s not good. It’s not good.’

Yohan shook his head inwardly but then walked towards Hansoo after fixing his impression.

“Why are you turning the ship? I’m not saying let’s not save the people but the inner parts of that place there is too dangerous. It’s all rocks. And why are you approaching them if we don’t even know what had turned them into such a mess? Are you trying to put 100 people in danger just to save 50 people?”

The people nodded their heads.

Though they had thoughts of leaving the 50 people to die because they didn’t like them but the biggest reason, and the reason they wouldn’t get hated for, was the thing Yohan had said.

Yohan continued his speech,

“I understand that you are strong, but I believe you wouldn’t be able to save us if the ship sinks right?”

Hansoo laughed and spoke.

“Are those two things the problem?”

Yohan felt a little off from looking at the laughing Hansoo but he nodded.

Though there were other reasons, it was a bit too embarrassing to speak out loud.

“Yeah. So we should...”

But even before he could finish his words, Hansoo turned the control after shrugging.

Everyone made expressions of satisfaction at that.

The fact that Hansoo hadn’t ignored their words felt better than the fact that they had gained safety.

It was the same for Yohan too.

‘Yeah. You aren’t something that lives alone, isn’t it good for the 100 of us to have a good relationship on the way.’

But there wasn't much reason why Hansoo had changed the controls again.

‘Well. They all got on anyway.’

Tuk

Tututuk

“These bitches. Repeat what you said before.”

Yohan frowned at the voices that came from the back of the deck.

“...goddamit.”

The 50 who had gotten on the ship by throwing parts of the ship on the water and creating a path were staring at the 100 people who were originally on the ship.

Though they were a few hundreds meters away, such a thing wasn't hard for them.

But Hansoo frowned.

“Don't be loud. It's coming soon.”

It was more advantageous the more people you had.

“What?”

Boooom!

Kududuk.



Ududud.

At the same time a noise of something getting destroyed and torn apart could be heard below.

At the same time the expressions of the 50 people who had gotten on the ship turned pale.

“Fuck... didn’t it follow other ships.”

“What? You guys know something?”

While Yohan frowned and asked the guys who had come over, Hansoo jumped on top of the railings and looked below.

‘It came.’

<Cursed Survivor>.

The things that blocked the path that lead from the tutorial area to the starting point of the Red Zone.

These guys couldn’t come out of the water.

Since they could only live in the water due to receiving the curse of the toxic waters.

They didn't really have a way of eating people from one look but the choice they made was very simple.

If they couldn't go hunting for people they just needed to pull the humans down.

These guys recklessly attacked the ships passing from the tutorial area to the Red Zone and created holes.

Then once the people sunk they would wait for the bodies to get marinated by the toxic waste and then consume them once they get soggy enough.

The fact that these guys who just got onto the ship had survived was due to them being on top of the rock.

The most threatening part about these guys was that they could not come out of the waters,

And from the human's point of view they had to go into the toxic waters to kill them so it would only be unattractive.

They wouldn't even had gotten scratches if it was the 2000 man ship but a 500 man ship will constantly receive holes if those guys attacked.

As he expected, the people who heard the noise below and went

down came back screaming.

“Goddam bastards! They’re putting holes on the floor!”

“Swing your sword or something at least!”

“Damn it! How do you want me to fight them if the toxic waters are pouring in!!!”

“At least cut off the trident”.

Yohan grinded his teeth within the chaos.

“Can we not even reach them...”

How were they going to attack the things below.

Even if they were to use long range attacks then it will still take forever if they wanted to get rid of the guys sticking by the ship as well.

And they couldn’t jump into the sea when they didn’t even know what was down there.

Though they could resist the toxic waters for a while with resistances and skills but it was still extremely dangerous.

And they were holding on quite well because it was the 500 man ship, if it was a smaller ship than it would've become a mess in a moment.

“Dammit! Those with Reinforce skills come here!”

They had to jump in and get them off somehow.

And the people with defensive skills such as Reinforce would survive in the waters and be able to fight .

Since Reinforce apart from raising the resistance, had also to a certain point the effect of blocking external matters.

But the people frowned as they backed off.

‘Dammit... I wouldn’t go in either.’

Yohan grinded his teeth.

He didn’t even know how strong the things below were.

And even if they were to get rid of the toxic waters, how would anyone jump into the dark seas where you can’t even see everywhere.

Most people were afraid of plunging into unknown depths.

Hansoo spoke as he looked at them:

“I don’t need you guys, so people with reinforce skills go down below and remove the tridents from them. Since the newcomers have all gotten on let’s go pay for the meal. People with skills fight them by sticking close to the railings.”

“What? Hey! What are you trying to do!!”

Yohan panicked as he looked at Hansoo.

The actions of Hansoo, who was stretching his body while looking at the water below from the railings, was quite obvious.

It means that he will go into the waters.

‘Is he insane?’

Yohan panicked.

That guy was not a guy who could die in such a lame way.

Though he was strong, there were still things called attributes.

This was an extremely unfavorable battlefield if one didn’t have a skill like a shield.

But Hansoo wasn't listening to Yohan's words already.

'Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement. Let's see how good it is.'

The reward he had gotten for clearing the third dungeon.

The legacies that no one had numbered because no one had found them yet.

<Zero Numbering>.

Two golden and dark lights surrounded Hansoo as if they were about to explode from his body and when his body could not be seen after getting shrouded in light he jumped into the water.

Kuaaaaaa!

And soon, with a loud explosive sound, a slab of meat of something and toxic waters skyrocketed from the side of the ship.

# Chapter 54 – Red Zone (4)

---

Chiiiiik.

Hansoo's body was covered in two different colors.

And the toxic waters from all around tried to get in and melt down Hansoo's body but the Red Runes endlessly sent mana into the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement which covered Hansoo's body.

‘Good. It should at least be this much.’

Otherwise the suffering he went through at the Three Gateways wouldn't have been worth it.

The reward for the Second Gateway was runes.

Killing the endless beasts and surviving until one gets to Red runes.

But that was basically the preparation for the Third Gateway.

If the First Gateway was a place prepared to reward the person finding it, the Third Gateway was a gateway for those who were truly worthy.

And the Third Gateway that had appeared in front of Hansoo

who had reached Red Runes.

<Fighting the strongest things that he had experienced until now.>

Even if it was something that hundreds of people fought together he still had to fight it alone.

Even if it was something that the had just glanced at, as long as the testee had experienced it then it will appear in front of them after getting adjusted to the Red rune level.

And the thing that had appeared in front of Hansoo.

<Demonic Dragon>.

A Dragon, the most well balanced existences.

They had a different origin from humans and were of a different grade as well.

And among those born as such that have chosen the path of the demon, the most twisted being.

Their power was something that couldn't even be explained with words.



Hansoo had seen it before when he had been traveling about in the deep parts of the Abyss.

And the humans who had seen it guarding the path on the way to the Crystal decided to invest 3 more years in order to go around by penetrating through the territory of two ruler races.

Since they had no confidence in winning at all.

Fighting two ruler races seemed better than fighting that thing.

And he was very shocked when such a thing had appeared at the Third Gateway in a weaker state.

Since he didn't know that the things he had seen in the past will come out in a weaker state or not.

‘I almost fainted.’

Even if they were all at the Red Runes stage, if the races were different then the different between each other was tremendous.

Though that thing had only been at 0.01% of the Red rune, Hansoo still had to put his life on the line and fight it.

And the skill that had come out after a desperate struggle.

<Demonic Dragon Reinforcement>.

Actually this name was merely something that he had given it temporarily.

Since the Zero Numbering artifacts were things that only existed within the fantasies of people.

The Numbering Series were the most outstanding things that the humans had found out and numbered.

Of course there were people who had made such thoughts as this.

<Wouldn't there be things that were far more outstanding than the numbering series that we haven't discovered yet?>

And these things were called Zero Numbering artifacts.

And in Hansoo's opinion the skill he had gained this time definitely had the qualifications for it.

'It's amazing.'

The number of runes within his body were jumping about crazily.

Hansoo who was estimating on him the effect of the toxic water

that was trying to burn his body, grabbed the neck of the Cursed Survivor that was charging at him as he nodded and then pulled out its spine.

Kududuk.

As the spine of the survivor who had the form of a merfolk was pulled out, the survivor was shredded into bits.

‘Seven. Good.’

Hansoo sent in the power of the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement within it and then threw it around in all directions.

Charururk.

The bone pieces which had a tremendous amount of force pierced through the waters and pierced into the necks of the merfolk shaped survivors who were fervently piercing holes on the bottom of the ship.

<!!!!!!!!!!>

He didn’t know what they were shouting because they were under water but their rage could be clearly felt.

They flapped their tails and started to charge at Hansoo in a crazed manner.

Hansoo just dodged their tridents and then swung his hands around and crushed their wrists.

Kudududk.

<!!!>

They screamed as they dropped their tridents.

Hansoo grabbed that trident with his right hand and penetrated the necks of those who had been charging at him in a straight line.

He then twisted his body to pull out the trident that was embedded in it's neck as he spread the spine that had come along with it all around like a projectile again.

<....>

The merfolk who had seen this all hesitated.

12 out of the 30 of them had been eradicated just like that.

And the attacks from above had been getting stronger and the work of putting holes on the ship was getting harder to do due to the swords that had been coming out from the inside.

If this continued then they would all get massacred before they could sink the ship.

<...>

They looked at each other and then retrieved the Trident as they started to retreat quickly.

‘Hmm. Trident. This is pretty useful.’

The durability of those guys were so good that it wouldn’t melt in the toxic waters.

Though the durability slowly decreased when in contact with air but it was good enough to use for 3 days.

Hansoo gathered all eight tridents that were sinking slowly as he swam to the bottom of the ship which they had put holes into.

And he quickly entered into the hole where the water was quickly pouring into.

Chwaaaaak.

“Hit its neck! It came in.”

Tuk.

“Uhuh. You should swing after checking first.”

“....uh?”

Those with Reinforcements, who had been attacking the tridents which were piercing the bottom of the ship, swung their swords out of reflex when something popped out but then made shocked expressions when they saw that it was a human.

Hansoo shook off all the toxic waters and then approached a corner of the basement of the ship.

Hansoo's hands flew about towards the Arun Trees.

Kudududk.

And soon a few planks that were a bit rough but still looked decent had been created.

Hansoo put that on the ground as he blocked the hole where the water was coming in from.

Though it had been blocked off by the wooden plank, the waters still came in because the holes were rather large.

Hansoo plugged it with the plank and then broke off the remaining Arun Tree bits into the shape of nails and then pushed it

in with his fingers.

The material of the ship was really hard but it wasn't so hard that the sharp Arun Tree shard couldn't pierce it.

When it had been blocked off to a certain degree, Hansoo squeezed the Kelk's Mucus sacs over it as he plugged in the gaps.

“...Hurry! Let's do it too!”

“Dammit. How did he push it in that easily. It won't go in!”

The people saw how Hansoo had done it and quickly retrieved the materials as they started to plug up the holes like Hansoo and nailed it.

They couldn't push it in with their fingers like Hansoo but they were able to fix it in place somewhat by using their weapons as hammers and smashing it down.

And then they squeezed the Kelk's mucus sacs over it to close the gaps.

“Dammit... it really stings.”

“Use some healing skills please. Anyways, what do we do with the water there...”

The people looked at the toxic waters that had come up to the point where it splashed about with a slightly uncomfortable expression.

Hansoo spoke as he climbed up.

“If you leave it alone it will evaporate. You will breathe in the evaporated gas if you’re in here so let’s all go up.”

It was ok above since the air dispersed it away but your health will decrease if you breathe it for prolonged amounts of time in an enclosed space.

“Uhuk.”

Everyone started to quickly head towards the deck at those words.

Since nobody wanted to breathe in the evaporated gas of the toxic waters.

Hansoo came up and breathed in deeply.

‘Though my health decreased slightly... this is rather amazing.’

There were people who were cautiously looking at the sea on the top of the ship.



The new 50 people and the original 100 people stared at the sea and then glared at each other after judging that the merfolk had all backed off.

Hansoo smirked as he spoke at that moment.

“Don’t fight over there and look out over there. You can see some good stuff.”

“...?”

Hansoo finished those words as he looked at the giant tree which he could see in the far distance.

A giant tree which was located beyond their goal, the red zone, which could be seen across the distance.

Hansoo looked at the dried up trunk of the giant tree that pierced the clouds as he mumbled inwardly.

‘Dead World Tree.’

The background and the foundation of the <World Tree Mountain Range> that they were going to work on from now.

And at that moment a loud shout was heard from the person who had been scouting at the tallest place on the ship.

“I can see the land! I can see the Red Zone!”

“What?”

People rushed towards the deck at those words.

And made expressions of joy.

“We arrived already?”

Yohan also made sounds of joy.

A land that rose above the sea could be seen in the distance.

‘Dammit. I don’t know what will come out but it’s better than this damnable sea.’

It was better to fight, thinking of fighting against the guys who only pierced with their tridents under the water stressed them to death.

Since they will get massacred before being able to see anything if the ship were to sink.

‘People have to live with their feet on land.’

But while they were sighing in relief the ship betrayed their

expectations.

“...uh?”

“We aren’t getting off there?”

The ship followed the path that the fairy had set as it spun around the land in front of them and continued to sail across the sea.

And everyone was disappointed as they saw this.

“...It was an island and not land.”

It looked like land but it seems like it wasn’t the destination.

‘...As I thought. They told us it took 3 days.’

The people spat out disappointed sighs as they looked at the vast sea to the back of the island.

But Yohan was looking at something else at that moment.

‘...is that possibly a root and not an island?’

Though it was covered with dirt, parts of the island which looked like wooden stumps could be seen.

As if a part of a giant root had come out of the ocean and a thin layer of dirt was covering it.

It just looked like an island since it was so huge.

Yohan made a sick expression after seeing that.

‘...Is it possibly the root of the giant tree over there? It spread out this far?’

The tree root which had the form of a half submerged island looked very similar to the giant tree trunk that was holding up the skies in the distance.

‘Well... if it’s a tree of that size...’

It seemed like the parts of the root that was above the water is merely a very thin root of the tree.

But he thought to himself that if it’s a tree of that size the root should at least be this much.

“Is this the good stuff you were talking about?”

Yohan, who had been looking at the island the ship had passed, asked Hansoo with a bitter expression.

It was clearly something which one could not see elsewhere easily.

Since trees of such a size which devoured the mountain ranges with it's roots and even had it spread above the seas couldn't been seen in the world where they come from even if they died and came back to life.

But Hansoo shook his head as he pointed towards something in the distance.

“That’s the highlight of the show.”

“What?”

Everyone looked at the direction Hansoo had pointed to.

A slightly different direction from the Red Zone they were heading to.

When the people focused their gazes and searched around, they could slowly see something.

‘...is that possibly alive?’

Something much larger than the tree trunk that they had mistaken for an island.

The tree root which looked like the island was giant but the thing they could see in the distance was at a different level.

Though they were extremely far away it still came into their eyes.

The part that was submerged below couldn't even be guessed but the back that was rising up from the waters was much larger than a decent island and the fin that was rising above it felt like they were looking at a extremely tall cliff.

The giant fin-like structure slowly moved across the sea and was heading towards the island they had come from.

Though it had movec slowly it was so big that the distance had been crossed in an instant.

And the thing with the giant fin screamed out as it opened its mouth.

Kuuuuuuuuuaaaaaaa

“Uaak! Uwaaak!”

“Fuck!”

It had only moved slightly but the whole sea shook.

And the creature that had moved bit apart the tree root as it started to devour it.

Pududududk. Udududk.

“Uwaaak!”

“Hold onto the ship tightly!”

As the root that had run below the ship started to get ripped up by its mouth, the ship started to rock and roll like a wave.

If it was a small ship then that simple rock and roll would’ve crushed it apart.

If they had been slightly slower at going past that place then they would’ve all died without being able to do anything.

While people were holding onto the ship with all their strength, Hansoo was also making an anxious expression.

Since though he had said it was a good view, that thing was definitely not something cute.

The ships that started off from the ten thousand tutorial areas will arrive on one of the thousands of roots that spread out from the dead World Tree according to the path that the fairy had set.

Since the only place to live within the toxic sea is above the dead root.

A structure where the people who started off from the tutorial would climb up from that location.

Though it was a root it was basically the size of a mountain range.

That was why it was called the <World Tree Mountain Range>.

And that thing constantly swam around the toxic sea and ate whenever a World Tree Root grew out.

<Calamity Fish>.

A fish of calamity.



The result of Genetic Biology of Demonic creatures of the natives of the <Elvenheim> that they created in order to defend their race from the harsh environment and one of the five calamities that dried the <World Tree> to death.

The place where the World tree had dried to death from the five calamities had simply turned into hell and <Elvenheim> had fallen down into ruin.

Since a tree which had its roots ripped apart could not live properly.

It had the ability to devour everything but then it wouldn't have anything to eat anymore so it as if it was farming, slowly going around and biting off the roots of the World Tree bit by bit.

A giant mutant that seemed like it was born to kill the World Tree.

The past he had seen it clearly.

That thing had devoured the root next to the Red Zone he had arrived in a mere three days.

And of course, there was nothing much to say about the fate of the newbies and the veterans who were standing on that root.

Hansoo, who had seen the giant beast fish which participating in killing a world, stabilized his mind as he turned the controls

towards the Calamity Fish which had devoured the tree root whole.

‘It’s now time for me to pay for my own meal’.

Kurururk.

The controls turned the ship aggressively under Hansoo’s hands.

Since that thing had just filled up its stomach it will slowly move towards next tree root that it will eat.

Towards a giant starting area root unlike the snack which it just had.

‘About 2 weeks...? I don’t know for sure but I don’t have much a lot of leisure.’

The thing he knew for sure was getting there and preparing to kill that thing.

Since that was one of the duties he had received.

<Remember. You must revive the World Tree.>

“Hey...hey! Fuck, what are you doing right now!”

“Hey! Heyeyeyey!”

The people looked at the direction of the ship and the direction of the giant beast and shouted at Hansoo in panic.

‘Is he insane right now?’

To follow such a thing when they have found it out of luck and could have dodged from it.

Even in such a situation, Yohan spoke to Hansoo:

“I don’t know what you are thinking but shouldn’t you head to such a dangerous place after agreeing with everyone else? I thank you for letting us aboard but you should at least listen to our opinions when we are on the same boat.”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

“I see, there are people who probably won’t agree with this.”

“Yeah. So let’s...”

“I shall let you get off now then.”

“?”

“I really need to go there so what do you want me to do. People who want to get off raise your hands.”

Hansoo stared at the surroundings sea as he spoke.

## Chapter 55 – Red Zone (5)

---

Kududududk.

A boat which was covered with wooden planks in numerous places had arrived at the location where a root could be seen.

‘End Root’.

The end part of the root where the World Tree’s root started at.

Though it was an end part of the root it was so big that it looked like a piece of land.

“We arrived.”

Hansoo spoke towards the people who had been jumping onto the burning tree root.

“Hey hey. Go with smiles. And don’t think about it too seriously. There’s still two weeks left. If you keep climbing up then you’ll have your safety guaranteed.”

“That’s really comforting. Seriously.”

They could still see the images of the movements of the thing that they followed on their boat that ripped apart the island-like tree root.

‘Dammit. I should get away fast.’

Yohan, who had yet to calm down his anger, looked at Hansoo coldly and then started to ponder.

‘...What do I do? Do I stick with him a little longer?’

Yohan glanced at Hansoo.

He has yet to push them away.

And as he heard it, this guy seemed to have a weird psychic power.

It would be helpful if he took him.

But Yohan shook his head as he looked at the 150 people who were glaring at Hansoo with eyes of resentment.

‘I don’t think we can go together with that guy.’

If they were to go along, it’ll be very comfortable for the time being.

Since he is definitely strong.

But he could not control him.

If that guy suddenly goes <Huh? I don't like everybody here? Time to kill.> then they could nothing about it.

He clearly figured this out from the earlier incident.

They had no way of talking back at his words, which told them to jump off.

And him going into the sea while covered in lights and crushing apart the merfolk solidified this even further.

‘...does he have no weakness?’

If he could control a guy like this properly then it'll be of great help.

And it seemed like he could figure it out if he traveled alongside him a bit longer.

But Yohan shook his head.

The valley has been dug way too deep to mediate between that guy and the 150 people behind him.

Nobody likes somebody who increases the chances of danger.

It was time to part ways.

‘The head of a snake... is better than a dragon’s tail.’ (\*PR Note: He enjoys being a big fish in a small pond, rather than a lackey to Hansoo the dragon)

Yohan, who had chosen the 150 people over Hansoo, looked at Hansoo and spoke:

“Let’s go our own ways. Since you and us don’t really seem to get along very well.”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

‘I’m a bit busy now too.’

Hansoo thought of his conversation with Keldian as he looked at the 150 people disappearing into the depths of the blazing roots and ruins.

<Well. You all probably know it but... there isn’t anyone who knows about the five calamities very well.>

The five calamities were basically like natural disasters for those who crossed the Red Zone.

It was not something designed to be killed but rather dodged or



endured.

And they didn't have the leisure to think about how to prevent the natural disasters.

Since in the Red Zone one didn't have enough leisure to think about such things.

One would spend time figuring out how to dodge a hurricane rather than how to get rid of it.

And even more so if there are imminent dangers around them such as tigers and murderers roaming around.

They had prepared with the knowledge of all the remaining humans but that was not enough.

<From the Red Zone onwards, it is wide and vast unlike in the tutorial. We can't prepare for everything even if it's us. Because of this you need to know about the Calamity Fish the best and find people who have experienced it and will help you.>

He had to think of how to act perfectly.

But for him to do so the situation and intel was not proper.

And because of this he had to find somebody who could fill this up with experience.

Like people trying to climb Mt. Everest that after they had completed their preparation, were still looking for a Sherpa on site.

Like an adventurer exploring the Amazon forest, even after getting a whole truck for preparations and plan for months, he would still look for a local guide.

A 3rd year adventurer who would try to hunt the Calamity Fish, something that no one else would even think of attempting.

She could be anywhere in this vast world since that woman had the ability to be anywhere whether it is the End root, Base root, Middle root or even the Trunk.

Of course one would be at that level if they spent 3 years in the Otherworld even if they had focused on hunting down the Calamity Fish.

‘Well. It’s normal for people to have gone up already.’

It actually seemed impossible to find her in 2 weeks but Hansoo knew a way to find her.

‘She should probably be at the cross right now?’

It wasn’t the Cross of revival.

Since such things only exist in the tutorial area.

But the fact that it was made to find somebody one missed was similar.

If you think of the reason why Camille Rowe was attempting the Calamity Fish hunting then it is obvious that she would be around the Cross at this moment.

Thousands of giant crosses that the Helper Clan had erected on every End root.

‘...it seems our direction is the same.’

Hansoo looked at the direction where Yohan had disappeared but then looked at his boat.

And then he jumped onto the boat and started to pull out all the planks that had been holding out the toxic waters.

Kurururururu.

And soon the boat that had been enduring the 3 days of sails made large noises as it sunk beneath the toxic sea.

Hansoo who had cleaned up everything moved his footsteps towards the direction where Yohan and the others had disappeared

to.

.....

“Dammit... though we’ve experienced it on the third floor of the tower it’s really hot.”

Yohan spat out curses.

The fire that had been set all around them without anything to burn was constantly blazing.

They had experienced this slightly on the Third Floor but back then they had hope that the Third Floor would end soon.

But now they had to constantly live in such a place.

‘...it seems that water would be the biggest issue. How do we get food?’

They had hunted the beasts and traveled while eating the meat and drinking their blood on the Third Floor.

But the beasts here were different.

<Spat. I don’t think I can eat this. Uhh.... my insides hurt.>

They had encountered many beasts on the way here already.

Though it was easy to catch them because 150 people had gathered but they could not eat it even if they tried.

‘Damm... this is a problem.’

But Yohan shook his head.

There was probably a way since they wouldn’t leave them to die just like that.

At that moment somebody next to Yohan shouted out loudly.

“Uhh! That! Isn’t that the cross?”

“What?”

At those words everyone’s eyes flipped.

The Cross.

The eyes of the people who couldn’t find the chance to throw the people next to them onto the hole because they were suppressed by alliances or the clans started to shine.

But Yohan shouted out loudly.

“Wait! Wait! The fairy had clearly told us! That there aren’t anymore revivals! Everyone calm down! If we fight here then we all die!”

Everyone made slightly disappointed expressions at those words.

“But let’s still have a look at it. It seems man-made.”

“...wouldn’t it be dangerous?”

One person asked carefully.

The Cross.

They did not know who made it but could guess why they had to some degree.

Since it’ll be hard for people who had experienced it in the tutorial to just pass by it.

It was in order to attract people that it copied that cross and was made of Steel.

‘...It’s so blunt that it’s even more confusing.’

But the answer to their worries was heard from above them and

among them.

“Don’t worry. Those who are careful are quite annoying. They need people to come to it. If they made the Cross then why not go over and have a look at it? You could finish it off after grouping up.”

“...uh?”

Everyone’s expression froze at the man who had appeared above the blazing ruins in an instant.

Since they didn’t know how he had made his entrance.

‘Did he run here from the Cross?’

While people were being cautious of him, the man counted their heads in an instant and then nodded.

“Let’s see 148 people. Quite nice. For such a number to come in a group without a Lord.”

“What do you want?”

It was clear to them that this guy was someone who had come earlier.

He looked stronger than them and there was also a something very different about him from the people of their tutorial area.

‘A foreigner... and he has no problem conversing with us.’

It seems like there wasn't any problem with them having different languages.

The blue-eyed man chuckled as he spoke.

“Don't be too impudent. We are hmm... I guess something like a savior in your words.”

“What?”

“You see the fairies don't come out from now on. So we act as some form of help.”

“...you are clearly an angel. You expect us to believe that?”

To help without anything in return.

How did this guy expect them to trust him.

The man shook his head at Yohan's words and spoke.

“There are always people like you. People who are very



suspicious. But remember. It's good to be suspicious but if that pisses others off then it'll be hard to live long."

"...what?"

"You just need to thank the people from my group from now on. There's no reason to follow us so just listen."

"...what?"

"Eres Valentine. She's the one who had created our <Helper> clan 20 years ago and had gone up."

"..."

"Let's see. After that is... a steady backbone of the clan, Kyle Cooper. Baek Jongsang. Arc Mariangt, these three. You don't need to know about the details."

'How would these guys meet three of the seven departed souls?'

The man who shook his head from side to side spoke again.

"And after this, give thanks to the other clansmen who prevent guys like you from getting killed..."

"...keep going."

The man laughed as he looked at the people's expressions turning darker.

‘What. Does we want to have a go at it?’

Actually even for him it'll be hard to win if everyone in front of his eyes charged at him.

If he was alone of course.

The man spoke for the last time.

“You should least thank our thirty thousand helpers running around in this shitty End root, though they were sponsored to do so.”

“...thirty thousand?”

The man smiled at Yohan who had replied to his words with a fearful expression.

‘Well. Though only six to seven people came to each root.’

But the man swapped these words back.

It was more convenient to suppress these guys with numbers

from the get go.

And in reality these guys, who had been making enraged expressions, prepared to pay attention with dispirited expressions after hearing about thirty thousand people.

‘They’re chicks. Chicks.’

This was a clear evidence that these guys were beginners.

Since those who had roamed around the Red Zone for a bit wouldn’t get scared at hearing the number thirty thousand but rather more at the names he had said prior to that.

‘Well. That’s why we exist.’

Whatever happened he needed to do everything he was tasked to do so these guys don’t just die off.

The man looked at Yohan as he spoke.

“There’s a few things I must give you... but there are a few pieces of advice. Listen carefully. These are things to prevent you from just getting killed off.”

“...speak.”

He didn't know what this guy and the other people were helping them for but there was nothing bad about intel.

The man continued to speak.

“The place where you guys are at is the End Root. This is the place where newly-hatched chicks roam around. And because of this it wouldn't really matter for you guys to argue here and there normally but...”

“...?”

The man looked around at the confused expressions and then spoke again.

“It's a quite harsh place so there are a lot of people with different circumstances. So theoretically some people, who have no reason to be here, come down all the way to the End Roots.”

He was speaking aloud in front of these guys but he was also only about at the level of Middle Root.

But those who are at the Base root or the Trunk, or even above that, sometimes come down to here, the End root.

“So the things you guys need to do is not to randomly quarrel with random people just because they move in small groups. If you don't want to get ripped apart. And it's even more dangerous to target somebody just because they're pretty.”

These people wouldn't usually touch the newly-hatched chicks at the End root due to a few unspoken rules but there was no one who would tell them to ignore getting aggravated.

The man who had finished speaking rested a bit and then looked around.

'Let's see... Camille Rowe. Where did this lady go.'

If they were going to experience it anyway. Wouldn't it be better for them to get the full experience.

And coincidentally Camille Rowe was nearby.

'These guys are pretty confident with their numbers... but they'll start to crawl on the floor once they see it.'

If those who were doing well in the tutorial think that they would do well here then it was a very big misunderstanding.

Once they were out here there were different rules and another power.

The tutorial was basically a place where they toned down the difficulty so they can prepare for the Otherworld and in a place like this where one can get stronger day by day, 1 or 2 years of difference was very big.

But at that moment Yohan had spoken towards that man.

“...didn’t you say that you wouldn’t touch beginners? That you would get killed if you do so?”

At those words the man who was searching for Camille Rowe nodded.

“That’s right.”

“...Then what’s that? As I know that guy is a beginner just like us.”

“Hnng?”

The moment the man looked at the direction where Yohan was pointing towards, a fierce shockwave and screams resonated throughout the blazing ruins.

Boooooom!

“Come at me! You bastard!”

“No seriously. What’s the problem? I’m telling you I’ll help you kill the Calamity Fish?”

“This bitch!”

The people who were watching the ruins being destroyed shrugged their shoulders and looked at the guy who said he was from the Helper Clan and the man made a helpless expression at the unexpected situation.

.....

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders after looking at Camille Rowe who was charging at him.

‘...It seems like they didn’t really tell me about her personality being nasty. Was the suggestion I gave her that unreasonable?’

It seems like there was a misunderstanding but if things were to go on like this then they needed a serious talk with each other.

‘Some preparations are needed... to talk seriously.’

Hansoo started to cover his body with Demonic Dragon Reinforcement in order to progress the talk.

# Chapter 56 – Calamity Fish Hunting (1)

---

Kuuuuuuuuu.

Camille Rowe mumbled quietly as she looked at something gigantic in the distance.

‘It’s coming this time too.’

The newcomers wouldn’t be able to see yet but her <Hawkeye> skill that was fitted for the perception stat at the Red Rune level 50% allowed her vision to see things extremely far away.

Camille, who had been shaking her head, looked at the things she had prepared so far.

‘Arukal’s Poison and Ketelan’s Sword. Miron Dagger and Waterproof sheet. And...’

Camille Rowe, who had been looking over the things she had prepared while grinding her teeth, sighed as she looked at the fins that could be seen in the distance.

‘...Could I really avenge them?’

She had been holding onto her life with the sheer determination to kill that thing for over 3 years.



But there only one thing she had gained from this.

Endless fatigue.

‘It’s tiring.’

It was basically larger than a mountain.

There was probably no other organism that fit the name of Fish of Calamity better than that.

She had went into and returned back alive from within its body over 13 times but this wasn’t because she got used to it.

It was because she had gotten blocked at a line which she could not cross.

It would be easier to break a rock using an egg.

It felt like she was digging a mountain with just a spoon.

And as she continued, the loneliness just amplified.

Since there wasn’t anyone who wanted to help her in her plan of hunting down the Calamity Fish.

‘If a really strong guy, or someone who actually wanted to do it

together existed...’

Camille, who had been making a tired expression, shook her head.

‘No. Nonono.’

If it was something that could be caught just like that then she would’ve done so already.

While Camille was shaking her head while clenching down onto her teeth, a voice calling her name could be heard.

“Camille Rowe. Right?”

“...!”

At those words Camille made a cold expression as she surrounded her body with Reinforcement and activated <Knight’s Golden Armament> skill which protected her from sudden attacks.

With this, she could defend her body against existences of the Trunk.

People who purposely searched her out are more dangerous than people whom you meet by chance.

Camille Rowe, who had held up the short dagger from her waist, held up spear up towards her back where the voice came from but then sighed instead.

‘It’s a newly-hatched chick.’

She felt stupid for getting tense from getting her name called.

She couldn’t figure it out from his looks but she still knew from one look.

Not having any artifacts was secondary, he didn’t have the <Juicer> which one needed in order to not starve in the <World Tree Mountain Range>.

Even if he lost it, if you take into account that the Helper clan always supplied you with it meant that this guy was a Chick that hadn’t even finished the helper’s instructions.

‘Anyways, how did he figure out my name?’

But Camille’s tension exploded again with the following sentence.

“There’s a few things I need to talk to you about the Calamity Fish. Let’s have a talk.”

Calamity Fish. And herself.

There was only one kind of people who would come find her if you take into account these two things.

“Are you perhaps a Quadratus?”

‘Damned guys... are they trying to disturb me again?’

<Quadratus>

People who worshipped the four dirty beasts that gnawed upon the World Tree along with the Calamity fish.

Of course they didn’t have a good relationship with her who tried to kill the Calamity Fish.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly at Camille’s words.

‘I remember... They thought there were only four of these.’

He would have thought so as well if he hadn’t heard the stories from the original inhabitants of this place, the Elvenheims.

Hansoo shook his head.

“I’m here because I have an interest in hunting the Calamity Fish. So I need your help.”

“ ... ”

Camille was flustered.

‘Does that thing really look that easy?’

The fact that he knew about the Calamity Fish meant that he had seen it on the way here.

There was nothing surprising about it.

Since it wasn't hard to see it as long as you don't get crushed by it.

Actually it was hard to miss something so big.

But to think of hunting it down after seeing it.

Camille started to get slightly pissed.

She had tried and tried and only increased her despair.

But this newly arrived Chick was talking about the Calamity fish as if it was going to the lake to fish.

And even asking her to help.

Camille breathed in and out deeply.

‘Yeah. Why am I trying to argue with a 1st year.’

Getting angry here was actually laughable.

“Leave.”

The moment Camille spat out a word and turned around, Hansoo opened his mouth.

“Don’t you have to save your sibling? If you hunt that thing then the chances of your sibling, who might come anytime, surviving increases by a large amount.”

“....This bastard. Where did you hear about that?”

“Mmm...”

‘Did I make a mistake?’

Hansoo scratched the back of head while watching Camille warming up her body.

‘I failed the Rapport. Kangtae this bastard...’

<Hey! It's simple! Just share a secret that only you two know!  
Then the female will loosen up her guard.>

“Wait. Let's talk about it. Talk.”

“Shut up!”

Boooooom!

.....

Boooooom!

Camille's short spear sliced their air.

<Orungen's Short Spear drenched in Poison>

Something which Camille had attained two months ago at the  
Base Root.

The hardness and sharpness had saved Camille from dangerous  
situations multiple times now.

Camille's short spear, which was filled up with <Great Fear  
Reinforcement> swung down at Hansoo.

She didn't really have thoughts of reinforcing the edge either.

Since she just wanted to beat him down despite being quite infuriated.

But her thoughts were completely different now.

Kududududuk.

‘...This bastard. He's a beginner?’

The flying spear met with his fist and got deflected to the side.

Camille looked at that scene with disbelief.

‘With a guy who doesn't have anything on i just... dammit. This is really embarrassing.’

A guy who didn't have anything on his body.

There was no beggar like this.

But she could guess to as why he didn't have any artifacts left.

‘...I can't even imagine what you need to go through in order to gain something like that.’



This guy was not a normal guy if you just take into account of the fact that he had attained that dark golden reinforcement without anything else.

You couldn't gain anything for free in the tutorial stage which meant that in order to attain something like that, he had gone into an equally tricky place.

All the artifacts that he had previously would've all been smashed apart.

Kugugugung.

'Dammit. He blocked it again.'

Camille grinded her teeth as she looked at her short spear which was just about to lose it's edge.

That Reinforcement's defense was so high to the point that he was blocking her spear's attacks with his bare skin and even dulling the edges of it.

'Dammit... the density of the Magic Force'

<Mana Reinforcement>

One of the three factors that determined the value of the

Reinforcement.

It amplified the durability of the weapon or armor that was covered with the reinforcement and as well as the destructive power.

For it to have such an amplification even when it was over bare skin.

She wouldn't really say anything if it was just that.

'How high is the amplification of the runes.' (\*PR Note: How much stats are improved by the reinforcement)

The second factor in determining the quality of the Reinforcement.

With just these two she could tell the quality of the Reinforcement this guy has is high beyond reason.

Since she had never even seen something like before.

Camille, who had been fiercely fighting with him, bit her lips.

She felt like dying from embarrassment due to the fact that she was fighting on par with a 1st year who didn't even have any artifacts but she had to acknowledge what she had to.

She could not win at this rate.

But she had a hidden card which could turn the situation.

‘With this much... if I use the special skill of my <Great Fear Reinforcement>...’

Camille thought up to this point and then pulled back her body instantly.

‘Hmm.’

Hansoo spoke to Camille who had made distance from him and was glaring at him.

“Are you done? You aren’t gonna keep going? Don’t you have more things to show me?”

Camille clenched her teeth as she spoke.

“You think I’m stupid? You didn’t even use the special skill.”

Three factors that determined the quality of the Reinforcement.

First. Amplification of Runes.

Second. Magic Force’s efficiency and power.

And third.

<Special Skill.>

Something which every Reinforcement had.

If you say that the true worth of a Reinforcement was determined by the third factor, the Special Skill, that you probably wouldn't be wrong.

The Blood Jade Reinforcement had the ability to use blood to create a very hard Magic Force and Beast Reinforcement could change parts of the user's body into that of a beast.

With such a Reinforcement, she didn't know what the special skill was but it was sure to be incredible, and he had yet to take it out.

'I feel like I'll die of embarrassment. Damn it.'

She acknowledged the fact that her battle strength was a bit weaker than the other 3rd years.

Since she focused on hunting the Calamity Fish while others were getting stronger.

But for her to lose to somebody who came from the tutorial area.

‘Okay. I accept the fact that you have a good hand.’

Actually her mind was more at ease after accepting it.

Since she just needed to think while ignoring the fact that he was a 1st year.

But that was that and this was this.

Camille, who had calmed down, looked at Hansoo as she spoke.

“You aren’t thinking of beating down the Calamity Fish with just that right?”

‘With just that trifling ability?’

She had thought that he didn’t really have anything but nothing changed even after she found out that he had something.

No, this was actually more infuriating.

Since the fact that he had come here to hunt the Calamity fish with just that battle power alone was quite absurd.

If you could beat that down with battle power then everyone would’ve charged at it and beaten it down already.

The amount of people who had been eaten by the Calamity fish over the past 20 years had reached tens of thousands.

But nobody had the thoughts of getting revenge against the Calamity Fish.

Since they saw what happened to those who challenged the Calamity Fish.

And those who had experienced it were just unlucky.

“If it was easy then why would I have come to you. I came because it’s hard. Help me. I have a plan anyways.”

He wouldn’t have come to Camille if that was something he could beat down with strength.

“ ... ”

Camille’s expression turned colder and colder.

“You really talk with ease. If you came to me thinking that I’ll be of help to you then you have a huge misconception. You think I have something great?”

It seems like he had heard something about her and come to find her but that was a huge misconception.

A person who tried hard to hunt the Calamity Fish.

Those were nice words.

But reality was that she was just a retard.

But Hansoo just shook his head.

“You have gone in and come out from the Calamity fish before. I just need that experience and the preparations you have made.”

Camille smirked at those words.

“Ha! I have indeed gone in and come out before. But I have done just that!”

Camille, who had taken a breather, opened her mouth with a cold expression.

‘I hope he gets lost after hearing this.’

It was tiring to go against him.

Camille opened her mouth resolutely.

“Listen well. You bastard. On the first challenge we left behind 27 people inside that thing. Only I came out. The only thing we gained was how the scales felt like.”

That thing had gulped down the tree root that her parents were on.

While she was away for just a moment the Root where her parents, whom had come with her and had lost an arm to save her and crossed the tutorial together with her, were had been devoured whole.

If Camille herself was a bit unluckier then she would've been eaten just like that too.

Of course Camille was filled up with rage and gathered 27 comrades in similar situations as her and proceeded with her plan.

The result was misery in itself.

But people in the Red zone weren't really surprised.

Since this was the estimated result.

They didn't even laugh at her.

Since nobody would laugh at a kid who lost after going against an adult.



Since it was an obvious thing.

“And then?”

“On the second attempt, I gathered 118 people who were filled up with greed and then went in. Though we did go in a bit deeper this time. And since two people had survived back it was a huge progress right?”

“...”

“From the third attempt nobody helped me so I climbed up and down as I prepared for it and attempted it 10 more times by myself. And I failed them all. What kind of help do you want from somebody like me? The only thing you have seen is the outer part of that thing. You presumptuous bastard? Huh? What do you know!”

She started out calmly but by the time she finished she was close to crying.

13 attempts.

She had searched the method to deal with it by researching its weakness and climbing up and down the Red zone endlessly.

And the only thing she had gained from this.

Defeat and despair.

And the method to run away.

She wasn't attempting for her parent's sake at this point.

She was lying to herself in her head but she already knew.

That it was impossible.

There was only one reason why she was still trying.

Since she thought that this was the most significant way to die in this damnable place.

Wouldn't dying here while avenging be better than getting killed by someone's blade or getting ripped apart by a beast on the way up.

'No. It's not even that.'

Camille wasn't even doing that properly.

If she really wanted to die while avenging her parents then she would've gone in much deeper and into more dangerous places.

But she was just a retard who couldn't even do that due to fear and was using her brother, who nobody knew of his arrival in this place, as an excuse and stayed alive.

And in result, she was spending her time while stuck in between her ambition to stay alive and her impossible revenge.

‘Goddamnit.’

Camille felt into a state of lethargy and lost her rage.

Since the words she had spat out in order to stimulate that guy had twisted her chest.

But Hansoo shrugged his shoulders as he looked at that Camille.

“You failed that because I wasn’t here. Don’t worry. I need you and I can kill the Calamity Fish if you help me.”

“...”

Camille made an expression of disbelief at his attitude of just saying what he wanted to say.

At the same time she felt like she was crazy.

Because she felt like she wanted to trust this crazy guy once.

Camille made a complicated expression as she looked at the guy who told her he needed her when everyone was ignoring her for doing such absurd things and was even telling her that he will fulfill her wish.

‘Dammit... I must’ve been really lonely. To get attracted by such random words.’

At this point she was getting quite curious.

To see what was his basis for his confidence.

No, there was something she was more curious of before that.

“Let me ask you one thing. Why are you trying to kill that?”

The artifact that would come out once you killed that thing.

Or revenge like herself.

Camille was curious about that.

As to why he wanted to kill the Calamity Fish.

When Camille, who had turned lethargic after pouring out her feelings, asked with a tired expression, Hansoo pondered for a

moment and then spoke out.

“Just... I want try saving about 1 billion people.”

“What?”

“No. Is it about 1.5 billion? The chances of your brother surviving will increase by a lot as well. Good right?”

“ ... ”

‘This guy isn’t some normal maniac.’

Camille made an expression of fear.

“If you agree then let’s start.”

Hansoo smiled.

.....

“Huh...”

The Helper clansman, who had been making an astonished expression at the fight with Camille Rowe, looked at Yohan and asked.

“He really came on the same boat as you? He’s really a newcomer?”

“Yes”

“Seriously ...”

The Helper Clansman made a expression of disbelief and then looked at the 150 people as he spoke.

“Never ever piss somebody off by trying to copy something like that. That’s an outlier.”

“...He can but we can’t? Though we are 150 people?”

The Helper Clansman smirked at Yohan’s words as he spoke.

“I wouldn’t stop you but I don’t really recommend it.”

‘Dammit...’

Yohan clenched his teeth at the clansman’s words and then glared at Hansoo with an expression full of annoyance.

# Chapter 57 – Calamity Fish Hunting (2)

---

“Are the arrangements complete now?”

One of the Helper clansmen who had been looking at the Sea above the 2184 Cross, which showed the number of the Cross, spoke as he loosened up his body as he saw that no more boats were coming down.

“We’re done somewhat. We gave the Juicers to Yohan’s guys earlier and gave them basic explanations as well. They’ll be fine from now on.”

The most busy time for them, the <Helper> clans, was now.

When the people of the tutorial come in, they had to give them basic notices and then spread out again.

And they needed to gather the basic information of every newcomer every year and organize it.

“How are the standards for the guys this time around?”

His comrade, who had been standing next to him, shrugged his shoulders at those words.

“You know how it is. That it increases a bit every year.”

“Them fairies. They’re only thorough in things like that.”

The man clicked his tongue.

The fairies set up the tutorial so that the people would survive even if they were dropped in the End Root here.

And because of that the standards of those who go through the Tutorial increase every year.

The reason was very simple.

Since the environment of the End Root gets harsher as time goes on.

‘Tsk. The number of survivors would increase greatly if the Calamity Fish didn’t exist.’

The location of where the newcomers drop is becoming closer towards the center of the World Tree since those guys keep gnawing down the tree roots.

If you take into account the fact that the level of the beasts increases the closer one gets to the giant World Tree it means that the difficulty of where newcomers land after the tutorial increases every year.

And since they needed to set the standards of the newcomers to



fit that, the difficulty of the tutorial increased and the survival rate decreased.

‘You need to stay on the boat longer as well.’

If that thing disappeared then an amazing number of people out of those who are dragged here would be saved.

Since the roots will grow back and the difficulty of the tutorial will get lowered to fit that.

It is said that the survival rate of the 1st tutorial was 55%, which was much higher than now, when there were a lot of tree roots left.

‘14% of the people had survived last year but it’s only about 11% this year... about 3 billion more would come over but for the survival rate to be like this...’

The amount that had crossed over the past 20 years was about 3.5 billion.

But the speed at which they were coming was increasing at a very rapid rate.

As if something was pulling their world.

Though the immediate survival rate had decreased the number of

newcomers had increased.

But at this rate, in about 5 to 6 years from now all of humanity would be dragged here and then all get massacred in the tutorial.

‘Damnit.’

The helper clansman made a bitter expression.

Since the chances of his family being part of those who would get massacred was very high.

If the difficulty of the tutorial gets reset because the Calamity Fish disappeared and the Roots grow back then the number of people will increase greatly but sadly the Calamity Fish was not something humans could deal with.

‘Well it seems like some strange guys are popping out due to the increased difficulty though.’

And the man stared at the guy standing in front of Camille Rowe in the distance.

A guy who had fought back and forth against Camille Rowe despite being a newcomer.

No, he didn’t even fight back and forth.

Since the newcomer seemed to be much more calm even to his eyes.

He didn't have any skills or artifacts.

But he was still at that level.

The rumors of this guy will get spread very fast.

‘Hmm. A scout might even come.’

The man who was standing atop of the cross mumbled inwardly as he looked at the guy walking towards him.

.....

Camille laughed absentmindedly at Hansoo's words.

“Damn it, whatever. It wouldn't be bad to fail for the 14th time anyways.”

She was going to make the attempt anyway.

What difference would it make to take this ambitious guy along with her.

Hansoo opened his eyes wide at Camille Rowe's words and then

looked at her.

“What are you saying. About failing. There’s no time.”

“...?”

“We are definitely succeeding. If you failed about 13 times then it’s about time to succeed once. You prepared to escape from it as well. Perfect.”

“...”

“Let’s go. There’s no time. There’s 13 days and 18 hours left.”

If you take into account that thing’s movement speed then it’ll arrive around then.

But that was basically the time limit.

It was better to prepare as soon as possible and kill it off in the distant sea.

Since the amount of casualties will explode upwards once that thing goes insane at the last moment.

Hansoo got up from his seat as he finished his words.

‘He’s really confident to the point of damnation. He really makes one fall for him goddamnit.’

Camille clicked her tongue and asked as she looked at Hansoo’s back.

“What are you going to do first?”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“I’m going to the Helper Clan first. I should at least visit.”

‘Since I need to receive the Juicer.’

He didn’t have any intel but the Juicer was a necessity in order to not starve to death.

Camille remembered what she had forgotten about at those words.

“Ah...”

‘Oh yeah, he was a beginner.’

She didn’t even think about that because his actions were so off.

‘Well okay. I have some things to do as well.’

Camille got up from her seat and then walked towards the Helper Clansmen who were guarding the Cross.

‘I really wish... I really wish my sibling hasn’t come yet.’

But sadly, the chances increased as time went on.

Since the number of people who had been coming here over the Tutorial had been increasing.

At this pace then all of the remaining people on earth will transfer over to the Otherworld in about 5 to 6 years.

That was the reason why the Seven Departed Souls and many others who had the qualifications to go up stayed at the Red zone to search around.

In order to find their family or precious people who could come at any time.

The reason why that Helper Clan was able to be maintained was very simple as well.

It was something born from the combined minds of those who wanted to stop the random deaths of their family or close people.

The Helper Clan was the place that the minds of those who didn’t

have the leisure to search for their family because of the harsh environment they're faced with but wanted to stop such things as death from happening supported.

Since they might be able to meet each other as long they are alive.

‘That person called Eres is amazing. How did she think of such a thing 20 years ago?’

Eres had gone up already but her clan had remained behind to keep accepting newcomers and were taking care of the newcomers constantly with the support of those in other Red Zones.

Of course in the most basic ways only.

Since nobody could take care of anything further than that.

They helped with the most basic survival tactics and preparations but surviving after fighting against a beast or other people was all up to themselves.

Camille greeted one of the Helper clansman after she arrived.

“It’s been a while. Can I check the catalogue? And take care of this newcomer.”

“You’re a VIP, of course. Let’s see...”

Then the clansman started to check the catalogue.

Usually they would only give basic warnings and the Juicer.

But for those who supported them a lot, there will be some more special services.

<Person Finder>.

If you give basic appearances or a name then the newcomers of the Helper Clansman spread about in thousands of End Roots will search the person asked by a VIP.

A personed searched by a VVIP with a stronger backing will be checked to see if he was at the tutorial or not. (\* PR Note: VVIP = Very Very Important Person?)

The Helper Clansman who had been searching around the catalogue shook his head.

“It doesn’t seem like they’re here on this side of the Roots. Though we can’t check up the tutorial with the amount you supported. I don’t know about the other Roots but all the intel will be gathered within two days so come find us then.”

The man completed those words and then went upwards.



With a few people behind him.

And Camille knew the identities of those people.

Those were the people who the VIP or the VVIP asked to find.

“Hoooh...”

She had confirmed that they weren't here but this was vexing in itself.

Since there was no way to know if they hadn't been dragged into the Otherworld or had died at the Tutorial.

But Camille shook her head.

‘Focus on the Calamity Fish.’

Finding her sibling was not something she could do anyway.

Camille spoke to Hansoo who had gathered the Juicer and a few other things.

“Okay. Let's hear your plan.”

Hansoo spoke with a very serious expression.

“Very simple. You will guide me and take me inside there. Then I will shove the hidden card I have prepared into a fatal location within its body.”

“ ... ”

‘Shall I beat him up?’

Camille sighed, shook her head and then spoke.

Well that was basically the basic summary of it.

Since you couldn’t kill it from the outside.

Though the problem was that he extremely simplified the process.

“Well. Okay. There’s a lot of things to be prepared. I’ve prepared the boat already, though it’s a 30 man boat.”

If that thing arrived at land and started to eat then there wouldn’t even be time to get inside it.

Since the heavens will be falling apart.

You needed to quietly approach it while it was swimming quietly

and then go inside its body.

Well of course, quiet is relative to what it would be.

Since huge tornadoes will be rushing around its body.

Hansoo shook his head.

“What are you going to do with a 30 man boat. Let’s go with mine.”

“What?”

“I’ve prepared a 500 man boat.”

“Hey! You crazy bastard... did you just leave that behind?”

Camille shouted in shock.

Why would he have done such a thing when there are so many people who desired boats.

Hansoo chuckled at those words.

“Don’t worry. I’ve hidden it well. Let’s go to the next subject.”

“ ... ”

While Camille was shaking her head, Hansoo checked the things Camille had prepared.

The only reason why he had come to find Camille.

Since she had already prepared the things which you could only gather at the Base Root or the Trunk.

There were a lot of things needed to be prepared before going into its body but a lot of time could be saved with just this much.

Camille smirked at that.

‘What would you know even if you saw it.’

Those things were things which you couldn’t even see during the tutorial stage.

At that moment Hansoo looked at Camille and asked:

“Did you prepare Apon’s Body Fluid? We need that.”

That was needed to create the <Hardening Fluid> which 127 Alchemists had researched and finally created with the information received from the Elvenheim he had met at the Abyss

as the basis.

“....You know about that?”

‘....Is he really a beginner?’

Being strong was being strong, it was a completely different problem from intel.

“I have a psychic power. Let’s ignore trifling things. There’s no time.”

“ ... ”

Hansoo answered simply and then started to go over the material thoroughly again.

Camille looked at that Hansoo.

‘...Does he have a trait like a Library?’

Trait. <Library>.

It supplied information about the things one didn’t know and once the level increases it will give basic information regarding what to do.

‘I thought he would have a battle-related trait... but for it to be the Library.’

She had thought that it was a battle-related trait because he was such a strong guy but the Library was a bit out of expectation.

‘Perhaps he has two traits?’

That might be possible since he hides so many things.

While Camille was thinking of this and that while looking at Hansoo, Hansoo, who had finished checking Camille’s preparations, laid down a decision.

‘We should spread out and search in order to save time.’

Camille had prepared quite well but this was not enough.

‘The first thing we need to make is the <Hardening Liquid.>.

<Hardening Liquid>

A liquid which the alchemists had researched in order to give a fatal wound after getting inside the Calamity Fish.

Other things might not be needed but this was a necessity.

“Let’s separate and move. Since there are a lot of things we need to get.”

Hansoo spoke out the things needed to Camille.

Materials which Hansoo didn’t know where they were but Camille Rowe, who had roamed around the Roots for 3 years, would definitely know.

Camille would definitely get them in time.

For the things which would be hard with Camille’s level to get, he had to go.

While Hansoo was making plans for the future, Camille nodded after checking the list that Hansoo had told her.

‘It’s clear this is a guy that has got something.’ (\*PR: he’s not just saying nonsense)

The 17 things he had told her were things she didn’t prepare because she wasn’t sure but were things that she had thought that might work at one point.

‘I’ll trust him once.’

Camille, who had finished her thoughts, quickly separated from Hansoo and started to head towards a different direction from

him.

.....

‘Though it’s a bit tight... I can get them all if there are no problems along the way.’

The only problem was the distance she had to travel and the many types of materials she had to collect. She knew the location of all 17 materials and it wasn’t hard for a 3rd year as herself because most of them were from beasts at the End Root.

While Camille was jumping with light movements a loud voice was heard from some place.

“Eyy. Camille. Your body is still amazing. It’ll really burst at that rate. There’s really a huge difference between westerners and easterners.”

She then turned her head towards the direction of the voice.

“Kang Gyesoo... you bastard.”

“Woah woah. Don’t glare at me like that. We have a rather unique relationship between us. We’ve gone in and come out from within the Calamity Fish together.”

“...I shouldn’t have taken in a bastard like you on the second



attempt.”

For someone who had barely held onto his life and come out from within the Calamity fish to become a Quadratus.

Camille grinded her teeth.

“I’m still using the relic I got from within the stomach very well. Kuhuu. I thank you. Since it’s all thanks to you. I’ve reached quite a high place thanks to that.”

Gyesoo then proceeded to swing around the sword on his hand.

A weird skill was applied onto the sword where the air which the sword had passed through shook.

“...Are you going to disturb me again?”

As Camille grinded her teeth Gyesoo laughed loudly.

“Uwahahahaha! What kind of misunderstanding do you have. If we really disturbed you seriously then you think you can even attempt at the Calamity Fish? If we did it properly then you would’ve died already. We just kept you alive because of old friendship.”

“What?”

As Camille was flustered Gyesoo giggled as he spoke.

“Disturbing you is more like... well we are followers so we just touched you a few times because we couldn’t leave somebody who tried to kill our god alone. But shouldn’t it be time for you to accept it? That is basically an agent of god. You’ve seen it too. The insides of the Calamity Fish.”

“...”

“Others don’t know but you and I know about it. I don’t understand why somebody who had seen something like that wouldn’t come into our Quadratus.”

“...So are you here to ask me to join your Quadratus again?”

Gyesoo shook his head at those words

“Nope. We aren’t really interested anymore.”

“What?”

“Isn’t it a bit shameless to ask for attention after 13 failures? It’s not even fun anymore.”

“...”

“I’m here because I have some business with that newcomer. Was he called Kang Hansoo?”

As Camille’s expressions froze, Gyesoo shook his hands as he spoke.

“Woah. Don’t glare at me like that. It’s not a bad proposition on his terms either. You see, a scout has come in from above.”

Camille looked at Gyesoo with a slight frown at those words.

## Chapter 58 – Calamity Fish Hunting (3)

---

Camille kept on looking at Gyesoo with a cold expression.

“Search him by yourself. You probably came with your underlings anyway. And what are you going to do with your trait if not for this.”

Gyesoo shrugged his shoulders at those words.

‘Well. It’s normal for her to not tell me.’

She was probably suspicious of what he was going to do.

And how delightful was Hansoo for Camille.

She had finally met someone who was going to be with her after so long.

She was pretending to be astute on the outside but she was probably rather excited on the inside.

Since Camille’s actions which he had seen for the past 3 years were pitiful and lonely.

‘Tsk. That’s a shame. If she told me then we can save some time finding him.’

Gyesoo shook his head.

He had come here with two objectives.

One was the tourism business.

The other was scouting.

He had been preparing the tourism business because the reaction was better than he expected.

He could find him quickly if he searched but everyone whom he had brought were preparing the tourism business so an empty gap would be created if he took someone out.

Scouting was something he was preparing here and there while doing his tourism business, why would he waste manpower in that?

‘There’s no other way. I guess I’ll run around a bit.’

His speciality, <Search>, allowed one to find the traces linking one person to another.

He had been able to find Camille because of this and will be able to find Hansoo as well.

It will take some time but it won't be hard.

“Well then. I shall take a stroll around a bit then. I'll see you later. I hope you succeed this time.”

Gyesoo, who had wished her luck when he basically knew that she would fail, disappeared.

Camille then looked towards the direction Hansoo had disappeared to and pondered.

‘Should I tell this to Hansoo?’

Gyesoo was a 3rd year just like her but stronger than her.

Since he had focused on getting strong unlike her and even had artifacts.

And the number of underlings wouldn't be small either.

But Camille just shook her head.

‘Damned bastard. You should at least tell me your destination.’

She didn't have any methods of finding him and if he couldn't even handle such a thing he didn't have the qualifications to go in

the Calamity Fish.

And it would be very tight for her to gather every material that he had asked her to within the time limit.

Which meant that she didn't even have time to deal with such things.

The moment she bickers with Quadratus she would not be able to gather the materials.

And he had told her.

<Don't worry about me and just focus on what I asked of you please.>

'I believe in you.'

Camille then quickly moved in order to gather the closest material to her, Apon's body fluid.

.....

Hansoo calculated the things he needed to gather and then nodded his head.

'The first thing I need to get is... the <Kukulja's Heart> which is

the core ingredient of the Hardening Liquid.>

The Hardening Liquid required 28 materials to be mixed with the exact ratio.

9 of the 28 had been already gathered by Camille and he had asked Camille to gather another 17 of them.

But he had to gather the remaining two.

<Nutritional Fluid> and <Kukulja's Heart>.

The other 26 ingredients acted like catalysts so a large amount wasn't needed but these two were ingredients that will act as the base.

A very large amount was needed even if they were going to pour it down a fatal location within the Calamity fish since it was that big.

Hansoo quickly rushed off into the distance.

Kukulja's Heart.

A material which could be gathered in <Kukulja's Spawning Pool> around the middle area of the End Root.



The Alchemists took into account of the fact that they won't have much time and had created Hardening Liquid with things one could acquire near the edge of the End Root, where the Calamity Fish would appear, but for him to get something like these...

The difficulty of this place was very high for it being within the End Root.

After a long run a giant lake came into view.

A humongous lake that could separate two End Roots.

Surprisingly, this giant lake was something that the Kukulja had dug out.

A lake which the Kukulja, which live in the toxic waters, had dug out from the bottom in order to mate in a place which was originally land.

Hansoo thought of the conversation he had with Keldian.

<Kukulja is a creature which is somewhere in the top of the food chain within the toxic sea but even this may become a snack to the Calamity Fish if it's unlucky. Though these guys had evolved to have a toxin within their heart to retaliate against the Calamity Fish but... it's a joke if you take into account of the size of the Calamity Fish.>

A toxin which didn't work against Humans but petrified a part of

the Calamity Fish.

And because of this the Kukulja's heart, which has a large amount of this toxin, was needed in the Hardening Liquid.

<...It works even though the effect is so miniscule?>

<That's why you have to gather a lot of them, turn them into a concentrated extract, amplify it using the other 27 ingredients and pour it onto the most fatal location within the Calamity Fish's body. Anyways, these guys fear the Calamity Fish so they dig the Root Part of the World Tree, make a lake and then create a spawning pool there. If you want to gather enough extracts for the amount you need, it wouldn't even be close to enough by searching around the sea. Go to that lake. And that lake is a warning line for how much the Calamity Fish would eat to a degree. The instinct of the Kukuljas are very amazing, they create the spawning pool right above the point where the Calamity Fish eats up to.>

<Why don't they go up higher to create them?>

It would be safer to make them higher up the Root if they were so scared of the Calamity Fish so why would they make it around the End Root area where it would be dangerous.

<You know how it is. There are another 5 Great Calamities under the Middle and Starting Roots. Even a Kukulja can't come over that.>

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then watched the swaying lake.

A giant weird looking fish which had the head of a bull and a human's arms and legs.

It was so big that each of them exceeded 2m in length.

But the surprising fact was that the thing he was looking at was an infant.

These guys grew up to 5m long in adulthood.

‘I’ll get them one at a time.’

Hansoo, who had seen thousands of them squirming around, poured the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement onto a decent scythe he had found on the way to here and then slowly walked into the toxic lake.

Splash

As soon as Hansoo came in, all of the Kukulja's within the lake raised their bull ears.

<!!!!!!!!!!>

And then started to madly rush towards the origin of the noise and vibration.

Though the food was still in a shallow place there was no problem.

Since they could advance while eating through the root.

Kakakakakak.

Thousands of teeth-baring fish gnawed onto the bottom of the lake as they charged at Hansoo.

Hansoo reinforced the scythe he was holding with Demonic Dragon Reinforcement and then slammed it down onto the center of the bull head.

Kududuk.

The Kukulja's skull had made a cracking sound and had split in

two but Hansoo made an unsatisfied expression.

‘Tsk. As I expected, it can’t handle the Reinforcement well.’

If the artifact was bad then it wouldn’t be able to withstand the power of the Reinforcement and would lose its durability fast.

Though it was a decent weapon which he had gained by hunting down some beasts on the way here it still wasn’t good enough.

Since the End Root was a neighbourhood designed for beginners and did not have anything hidden.

‘At least I should use it while I can.’

Hansoo pulled onto the scythe and threw its body onto the land as whole.

If he left it in the lake like this then everything including the heart will be chewed up by the other fish.

Creating the extract from the heart was a job after the hunt.

Kwadududk!

Paduduk!

And soon the thousands of fish baring their teeth got stimulated by the blood as they madly charged at Hansoo.

Kudududk.

Hansoo applied his Demonic Dragon Reinforcement onto the scythe and then crazily swung it here and there and pulled numerous fish out.

Chuchuchuk.

The thousands of fish charged up with incredible speed across the water and then used that momentum to crash into Hansoo and bite him with their teeth.

The corpses of Kukuljas were stacking outside the lake but Hansoo's body was equally gaining injuries.

And at the same time the scythe cracked as it couldn't handle the power of the Reinforcement anymore.

Chuchuchuk.

Hooooong.

A very large noise coming towards Hansoo was heard as he was preventing the scythe from getting destroyed by adjusting the strength of the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement.

Shguguguguk.

An attack which cut apart all the trees near the lake as it flew.

‘...Skill?’

Hansoo made a cold expression as he raised his scythe to block the incoming attack.

Chwuuk.

The scythe which was filled up with the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement blocked the flying attack but was crushed apart as the result.

Hansoo blocked off the single attack, jumped out of the lake and then looked towards the direction where the attack had come from.

And a guy was looking at him while smiling in that place.

“Woah. You blocked that.”

The man, who had sheathed his pulsating sword back into his waist, smiled at Hansoo as he spoke.

“Hello. I’m called Kang Gyesoo. Calm down, I’m not here to fight.”

“You aren’t here to fight huh...”

Gyesoo smiled and continued to speak after seeing Hansoo looked at the destroyed scythe and mumbled.

“That was just a test. If you couldn’t even block that well... you’d be useless. Well you pass first of all. Here’s a business card.”

Gyesoo then threw a whitish object at Hansoo.

“Having something like this makes me feel like I’m in the real world. It’s actually made by drying the Padro Larva. Though it’s a single use, it increases the regeneration speed on the area which you stick it onto so think of me when you use it.”

Hansoo shook his head while looking at the talkative man who had sent the attack with an intention to kill and then asked.

“Why have you come?”

He had consumed a large amount of his stamina from the fight with the Kukulja.

There was a need to go along with him for a while and regenerate his health.



Gyesoo spoke out.

“Simple. You’ve seen a lot of scouting before on T.V right? Like headhunters?”

“Hmm.”

“Well long story short I work at Quadratus... a group which is similar to a religion yeah?”

“That’s a really untrustworthy line.”

“Let’s skip over the small details. Anyways, it’s not easy following a god. You need a lot of money in Korea too right? It’s the same here. And we have a lot of different businesses in order to fill that up... and one of them is recruiting talented people and connecting them to clans above who don’t have spare manpower for places like these. And we receive a reward for that. Ah, and starting from here, we do have currency you know?.”

Gyesoo then rubbed his thumb and index finger.

When Hansoo didn’t reply, Gyesoo shrugged his shoulders as he continued to talk.

“It’s better to not decline. The person who set you in their eyes this time is a bit... dangerous. Following him is a win-win for you

and me.”

Gyesoo then started to get cold sweat.

The problem wasn't the guy in front of him.

It was because this job was something that he had received from a person from one of the six pillars who had come to participate in their sightseeing which they were preparing.

‘Goddamn gangsters.’

Six Pillars.

Six super sized clans who were fighting in the Trunk of the World Tree unlike them who were just playing around the Roots.

And one of them. <Lighthouse>.

Kalz Morenn, the captain of the shock troop left by the previous adventurer Keldian Magus, had told him.

<Make sure you bring that newcomer guy. I'll pay you well. If you fail then... Well please don't make me act out. I came here for a vacation.>

‘...If we aren't careful then we might die.’

But unlike what Gyesoo wanted, Hansoo just shook his head.

“I’ll decline.”

And at the same time Hansoo made a cold expression.

‘Tsk. So it turns out like this in the end.’

His objective was the Calamity Fish.

A collision with the Quadratus was inevitable for him since the path of attaining the Hardening Liquid intersected with them who were preparing the sightseeing business even though he wanted to dodge as many useless collisions possible.

‘Since it turned out like this already. End it quickly.’

He had already calculated such things as this.

As Hansoo prepared to fight, Gyesoo’s expression froze.

“You fucking bastard... being arrogant because you beat Camille?”

Camille was a monster-like existence to the newcomers but was quite a weakling to those who roam around the Trunk and the

Roots.

‘Tks. This is my fault huh.’

That guy was overestimating his worth since he had offered a scouting towards a new Chick.

He wanted to talk about it but seeing that it didn’t work he gathered all the energy within his body and then poured it into his relic, <Forgotten Sword>.

.....

“Huh. Look at that retard. Over there. To charge at a newcomer who bickers with him.”

Kalz Morenn mumbled while looking at Kang Gyesoo above the cruise ship which the Quadratus guys had prepared for sightseeing with the <Thousand Li Eye of the Man caught within Jealousy>.

## Chapter 59 – Calamity Fish Hunting (4)

---

‘I should change the name to package delivery instead of scouting.’

Gyesoo mumbled as he covered his entire body with various skills.

Though something like this had happened before it had never become a problem.

Since there was a very clear method.

If he beats him up a little and take him, Kalz Morenn will solve it all.

‘Tsk. You should’ve listened when we were talking about it.’

Gyesoo clicked his tongue and started to pour in his energy into the relic he was holding, <Forgotten Sword>.

Camille and him were both third years but were at different levels.

They were at similar levels when they came out from within the stomach of the Calamity Fish but while Camille was focusing on useless things such as hunting down the Calamity Fish, he had focused on getting stronger.

And the thing he had faith in.

<Forgotten Sword>.

The skill that was on this thing he had picked up within the stomach of the Calamity Fish, <Parallel Cut>, was a step above artifacts you could find in the Base Root or the Trunk in terms of strength.

A strong undulation came out from Gyesoo’s sword as it rushed towards Hansoo.

.....

Kalz Morenn frowned as thought of the last scene he had seen.

‘That retard, is it that hard to bring a newcomer over here.’

<Thousand Li Eye of the Man caught within Jealousy> allowed one to see the viewpoint of the pre-selected person for 3 seconds when their emotions change rapidly.

Though there were a lot of prerequisites, it was still a very useful skill since it allowed one to watch over somebody from a long distance.

And the last scene he had caught could only be seen in a way

where they were about to fight.

‘Tks. This is quite troublesome.’

Actually, it wasn’t bad to bring them after beating them up.

There wouldn’t be a procedure of struggling and bad feelings will just disappear once they receive the Symbol of the clan.

But the reason why they were scouting was because they didn’t have the leisure to give the newcomer the symbol.

They only give the symbol to those who are really strong and control the others with influence or money.

Though they were scouting him because he looked quite strong there wasn’t a chance for newcomers, who were quite lacking, to receive symbols.

At the end, it means that the clan has to go through another cumbersome procedure to use some dude that has hard feelings towards them.

But the most annoying thing was that there was a chance that the Gyesoo guy could get destroyed while fighting with the newcomer.

‘What is this when I came here for a vacation.’

He wanted to leave that useless guy to die but he was one of the supervisors of the sightseeing this time around.

He had come all the way here because he had heard that the sightseeing that the Quadratus guys operated was very good but if that guy were to die then wouldn't he not be able to see all those good sights.

‘Let's see.’

He was too lazy to act himself, if he told the nearby Quadratus people then they will act by themselves.

Kalz Morenn started to collect mana in his seat.

.....

Kyaaaaak!

A few men were being chased by hundreds of Dinosaur-shaped beasts.

The man, who had been standing in the very front out of the ones being chased, turned around as he shouted loudly.

“We're using <Conceal>!”



<Conceal>.

A very useful skill which you could get around the Middle Root.

It was different according to one's mastery but it allowed somebody to hide their presence.

Of course invisibility was part of this.

And soon the five people running disappeared as if they were erased.

Kyaak!

The beasts who were chasing screamed out in rage as the ones they were chasing disappeared.

But they remained and searched around the area as if they had no intentions of going back.

And the man sighed in relief as he saw this scene.

‘This is really dangerous... it’s almost deadly.’

<Gertas>

Raptor-shaped beasts who lived in herds on the Middle Root.

It greatly cared for its young to the point where the whole herd will chase them down to the ends of hell to avenge the dead.

Even if the one who had killed them crossed over the Middle Root area and into the Base Root.

After a few days of repetitive work, the path leading from the End Root to the Middle Root was filled with thousands of Gertas.

It was quite a grand sight but the one who had completed this, Cheng, just shook his head as if he was tired.

‘Kang Gyesoo, what is so hard for you bastard to bring a newcomer?’

He accepted the fact that that guy’s job was important.

The sightseeing that they were preparing was important as well but they could not ignore Kalz Morenn’s request.

But shouldn’t that guy have come after he had completed it?

There were a lot of things that still needed to be completed in order to prepare a proper tour.

They had to shove some more Gertas onto the paths, prepare the cruise ship a bit more and buy the silence of the Helper clan

members too.

‘We’re busy enough already.’

He didn’t like the way Gyesoo carried himself but he had to acknowledge Gyesoo’s ability.

No, to be precise it was more his sword than his ability.

The people in charge of the sightseeing who had come here were 11 in total including himself.

Though it was quite a number every missing person felt like a huge gap due to the large amount of work they each had to do.

At that moment a small bird flew in.

“...?”

A single blue bird which flew into where they were hiding precisely.

Though it had come with the full knowledge of where they were hiding they were still not surprised.

Kalz Morenn.

It was weirder for that guy to not know where they were at his level.

‘Anyways...to use the <Blue Carrier Pigeon> to that degree...’

<Blue Carrier Pigeon> was a skill which created a small bird using mana and a message.

It wasn’t hard to acquire and learn but using it well was extremely hard.

He knew it as well but if his comrades didn’t help it with the same skill, it was hard to relay it properly.

To make it arrive properly in a situation where the receiver wasn’t helping needed extreme control of mana but as he saw the bird which flew perfectly to their location, as if he was proving his position of the captain of the shock troop, he could only marvel.

Soon the blue bird, which had arrived in front of Cheng, blew up with a poof and relayed a message to them.

And he slightly frowned as he read the message inside it.

‘...Though it’s only a maybe.’

Cheng, who had thrown a <Blue Carrier Pigeon> towards the other supervisors who were busy breaking down ships, shouted

loudly.

“Stop temporarily! We pause our work here and move out.”

Kukulja Lake was right next to the path they were blocking.

It wouldn't take long for them to run over there.

Cheng, who had shouted loudly, took along the Quadratus followers under him as he started to run quickly.

.....

Ooooooong.

The <Forgotten Sword> absorbed mana as if it was about to explode.

The runes on the sword, which was devouring the mana, shone radiantly until it couldn't handle mana anymore then it poured out a skill as if it was exploding.

<Parallel Cut>

A skill which cut everything in the way of the blade into two with the mana undulations on the sword.

The amazing part about this skill was that it could cover both short and long distances.

It could spread far or wide depending on the user's thoughts and even compress down to the size of a single sword and cut a person in half.

And the way Gyesoo was using the blade currently was the latter.

Unlike before where it was spreading out like a wave, the <Parallel Cut> stuck onto Gyesoo's sword as it charged forward to cut apart the opponent in half.

An entirely different level from a Mana Reinforcement which was operated by a normal Reinforcement skill.

The Mana Reinforcement of a Reinforcement skill increased the durability and sharpness of a weapon greatly but it was inferior to an offensive skill which was focused on destruction.

And Hansoo knew this as well.

The Parallel Cut was a skill that was quite high up on the rankings out of the skills you could acquire in the Red Zone.

If that skill and the sharpness of the Relic combines and he tried to block it just with the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement then he will receive large injuries.

Gyesoo's furious movements started to get stacked inside Hansoo's head.

And soon a virtual Gyesoo had appeared in Hansoo's head and it showed his next moves.

Hansoo followed that as he moved his body slightly off from Gyesoo's attack parameter.

At that moment Gyesoo's eyes shone.

'He's caught'

Parallel Cut.

The control of the area of effect was according to how the user wanted it.

The extremely compressed skill exploded out the moment Hansoo dodged.

Out the people he had fought after gaining the sword, there were people stronger than him.

But those guys had also lost their necks after getting swept up by the exploding skill the moment they dropped their guard thinking they had dodged it.

‘Though you dodge quite well... you won’t be different from the others!’

While Gyesoo was making a content expression while looking at the skill that was sweeping up the surroundings like a wave something unexpected happened.

Ooong.

The ring on Hansoo’s hand absorbed mana aggressively and then struck back at his skill.

Pachang!

The moment Hansoo’s right hand and his skill collided a sound of something breaking was heard as the Parallel Cut, which was aggressively sweeping up the surroundings, got crushed apart.

Gyesoo questioned his eyes when he saw this.

‘Fuck. What is that?’

He had thought that it was something like a dispel but it wasn’t easy for a dispel to break apart his skill which had a high mana density.

No, there was no previous intel about Hansoo holding onto



something like this previously.

‘Camille Rowe. This bitch. Was she not even able to pull out all of this newcomer’s power?’

He had collected some intel regarding this guy before coming here.

Since there were people who had come with him on the same boat.

And within that intel there was information regarding his fight with Camille Rowe but there was nothing regarding that ring.

But Gyesoo realized that it wasn’t time for him to think about such things for a prolonged time.

‘Godamnit!’

Hansoo utilized the moment the skill was broken and was charging at him with a fearsome speed.

Gyesoo hurriedly tried to retrieve his sword but it was too late.

‘Damn. There’s not enough time to use Parallel cut again.’

Parallel Cut had high mana density and a lot of strength but it

took a bit of time to charge up.

Gyesoo hurriedly pulled up the power of his <Bronze Reinforcement> to its limit and used the special skill of the Bronze Reinforcement.

And Gyesoo's body instantly got dyed with a bluish tint.

<Bronze Jade>.

The skin turns like bronze as Physical and Magical resistances increase by a large amount as well as raising the regeneration speed of health by a large amount.

He didn't use it usually because it was a bit burdensome to use it with <Parallel Cut> due to its high mana usage but he didn't have any confidence after seeing the charging Hansoo's hand covered in dark gold lights.

Even if it was just his bare hands his intestines will be pulverized if he was hit by it.

At that time the ring on Hansoo's hand devoured mana again and then charged towards Gyesoo.

'Goddamnit. Really?'

But Hansoo disappointed Gyesoo's expectations.

Chwuuk

The moment the ring touched Gyesoo's skin, his skin which was tinted blue turned back to its original form.

And three of his defensive skills that covered his body got crushed apart like glass along with that.

Hansoo's punch then landed onto Gyesoo's stomach.

Toooong.

“Kuhuk!”

Gyesoo flew backwards as he felt his intestines being twisted and turned.

‘What is this nonsense... He can crush apart special skills along with normal skills!’

And his Reinforcement was a problem as well.

Though he had resistance and defensive artifacts but the Mana Reinforcement of that damnable Reinforcement skill was too powerful for them to be alright.

‘Damnit. Where did he get something like that.’

Reinforcement skills held quite a high value for being very common.

But if you were to think from a different angle, the Mana Reinforcement from the Reinforcement skill was inferior to the strength of an attacking skill and the resistances were inferior to defensive skills.

But that thing was beyond that level.

Gyesoo, who had mindlessly stood back upright while flying, was astonished at the sight of Hansoo who had caught up to him and was about to strike him again.

If this goes on then he will be beat up to death.

‘Dammit... if I knew it’d be like this then I would’ve prepared something like the feather.’

But where would he get something that expensive?

Gyesoo distanced himself from Hansoo with <Atel’s Jump> as he hurriedly shouted.

“Wait! I’m just doing his under a request! I’m a victim too! Damnit! Do you think a medium-sized clan like us can decline an order from above!”

Though he had shouted it out in panic, it was true to some degree.

What kind of strength would they have for them to decline the request of a captain of a shock troop of a huge clan.

“And you will really die if you don’t follow us!”

These words had two different meanings.

He might die under the hands of Kalz Morenn but he will also die if he remains on the End Root.

Hansoo, who had been charging towards Gyesoo, made a cold expression.

He knew.

Since he had heard about the Sightseeing business that these guys had started around now.

‘Crazy bastards.’

A business created for those above who had increased their strength but weren’t able to fulfill their twisted desire.

<Calamity Fish Feeding>.

Hansoo looked at Gyesoo with a cold expression as he thought of the tourists who came to see the event of thousands of newcomers, who would be trapped here by the Quadratus, getting eaten by the Calamity Fish.

## Chapter 60 – Calamity Fish Hunting (5)

---

“You bitch! I already told you everything I know!”

Gyesoo, who had already become a mess, looked at Hansoo who was trying to wield the <Forgotten Sword> that was stolen from him.

For him to try killing him after he had puked out everything he knew!

Gyesoo, after getting pushed back as far as he could get, shouted loudly as he looked at Hansoo.

“Yeah! You Bastard! Do you know who will come once I die! The Kalz Morenn I spoke of earlier will come!”

Gyesoo then pointed towards his forehead.

A small pink eye symbol.

It was the symbol of <Thousand Li Eye of the Man caught within Jealousy>.

“You don’t seem to know but he’s watching everything through this! If you kill me then he won’t stay still!”

Hansoo snorted inwardly.

When the Thousand Li Eye of the Man caught within Jealousy was activated once it could only see about 3 seconds.

And light pink meant that it had a low mastery level.

There was no way to watch over everything with that.

But Hansoo made a surprised expression.

“What! Goddamnit! Such a guy will chase me down!”

Gyesoo looked at him and then laughed.

“Kuhuhuhu. Yeah you bastard.”

‘Hurry and run away.’

Since he had done this much, he will not be able to kill him.

There was a large difference between beating him up without knowing and killing him even after telling him that there was somebody watching behind him.

Since that would mean that he would be completely ignoring Kalz Morenn.



And Kalz Morenn's personality was definitely not something that would let something like that pass by.

Puuk!

Gyesoo tumbled around from the shock of the back of his head getting smashed.

Hansoo had done this to make him pass out.

‘As I expected.’

Gyesoo laughed inwardly even while losing consciousness.

Since the fact that he had made him pass out meant that he feared Kalz Morenn to a degree.

That guy would probably run away as quickly as possible now.

Within the blurring sight, Hansoo was quickly moving towards the jungle.

‘Run away... I'll definitely kill you.’

Gyesoo's thoughts ended there as he passed out.

But unlike Gyesoo's thoughts, Hansoo stopped his movements

and then quickly came back.

‘Acting is tiring too.’

Hansoo looked at the passed out Gyesoo on the ground and then stared up into the sky.

Blue Carrier Pigeons, which were flying back and forth since a while ago.

‘Soon this guy’s comrades will come.’

According to the information Hansoo had heard from him, the 11 supervisors, including himself, and their subordinates summed up to about 100 people.

It was not a low amount of people at all.

And another troublesome aspect.

‘Hmm. Kalz Morenn...’

Hansoo muttered quietly.

Actually Hansoo didn’t know who this Kalz Morenn was.

Since he couldn’t remember him it seemed like this guy had died

before getting to the Indigo or Purple Zone.

One who could only snort around the Red Zone couldn't stay within Hansoo's memories.

‘There's so many things to remember already.’

There was only one important fact.

That he was the captain of the shock troop of Lighthouse.

That alone told him that he was a formidable fellow.

Since that spot was not something earned through poker.

He couldn't ignore the captain of the shock troop of Lighthouse.

Which meant that it was impossible to gather the materials while receiving the disruptions of those guys.

Hansoo looked at the passed out guy on the ground for a while and then stood up.

‘I should prepare a bit.’

The main point of the sightseeing business was quite simple.

Gather up the beasts, block up the paths leading out and sink all the ships.

If you do just these two things then the newcomers would not be able to leave at all.

They isolate the End Root like this and then go out onto the sea on the cruise ship and watch it devour the Root.

Of course the main show is watching the newcomers struggling above the Root.

There was no reason for backlash since the Helper clansmen would've pulled out the people needed by the VIPs or VVIPs.

‘First I must check which beasts have been gathered up.’

Hansoo lifted up the passed out guy and then hid him in the corner of the jungle.

Since he might be found before he came back.

He then went into the forest as he ruthlessly used Parallel Cut to chop apart the trees and advanced through the jungle.

The objective of Quadratus is blocking the newcomers from leaving the Root which the Calamity Fish will eat up.

They would've definitely gathered tons of beasts at each side of the Kukulja Lake, which acted as the boundary line.

Since they won't have to guard a large perimeter if they blocked along the Kukulja lake.

Kyaaaak!

Roars could be heard after a short trip through the jungle.

Gertas who were filled up with rage because they had lost their child couldn't get to stomp over the culprit.

'It was Gertas huh.'

He hadn't known which of the 13 beasts with herd-like natures they were but after checking them it was the Gertas.

'Good.'

Hansoo, who had personally confirmed the Gertas being near, quickly headed towards a different direction.

And then quickly started to harvest something in the forest.

'Daron Vine's Root... gathering some Amars.'

It would've been hard if he was bare-bodied but the <Forgotten Sword> was of great help.

‘Dumbass. That’s not how you use this.’

That guy had been using this by pouring mana into this and either exploding or compressing it to strengthen the sword but the true usage of the <Forgotten Sword> was not that.

Stretch.

As Hansoo poured in Mana, a free-formed blade grew out.

This was the true usage.

Something that the guy, who only knew how to blow it up or compress it, couldn’t use. A free-form blade that required the mana control to be extremely fine to the point where one can do both things simultaneously.

Hansoo swung that blade in all directions as he cut off the beasts’ necks and collected the needed ingredients.

The free-form sword of which the length and shape kept changing constantly aimed for the unguarded spots of the beasts.

‘Let’s see. I should need about 20 of them.’

Hansoo, who had squeezed out the incense pouch of 20 Amars along with a few other ingredients, approached the Gertas who were aggressively roaming around.

The Gertas charged at him but it was fruitless.

Chwak!

Hansoo was cautious to not get any of the blood on his body as he swung the free-form sword around.

The stretched out blade cut off the neck of the Gerta.

‘Done.’

Though it would be better if he had the blood of the baby it would take too much time for him to find the hidden baby.

Since the Quadratus guys will arrive soon.

Hansoo poured the blood on his free-form sword onto the prepared ingredients and then quickly put it into the <Selfish Wealthy man’s Food Jar> by his waist.

‘It’s troublesome if the scent gets spread.’

Hansoo quickly moved his body towards the passed out Gyesoo after he had completed his work.

He was still passed out.

And above that Gyesoo, a few Blue Carrier Pigeons were flying around.

They will arrive if they receive the help from the receiver but since they weren't receiving the help they didn't arrive.

But soon his comrades will arrive.

Hansoo quickly approached the mess of a guy.

A guy who had become bloodied from head to toe from the battle with him.

But the injuries were healing at a rate that could be seen with the naked eye.

If some more time passes and then he uses the regeneration rune, he'll probably be healed to the point he'll be able to move again.

Hansoo approached the passed out Gyesoo.

And then he quickly pulled out the mixture he had made, put it



into the split wound on his thigh and then quickly shut the wound.

It will take some time for the gap completely heal.

And he didn't have the time wait for that.

‘Let's see.’

Hansoo fumbled around his pockets as he pulled something out.

‘I'll return your business card.’

As Hansoo stuck the business card which was made of the Padro Larva's hide onto his thigh, the business card melted down as the wound on the thigh closed up.

Hansoo, who had made a satisfactory expression at the completely healed wound, nodded and disappeared into the jungle after clearing up his tracks.

Soon slashing sounds were heard as Cheng, one of the commanders, and his subordinates appeared.

Cheng made a dumbfounded expression as he looked at Gyesoo laid out on the floor.

‘This retard... he really lost?’

Cheng looked at Gyesoo as he was seriously pathetic but then just shook his head.

He wants to throw Gyesoo into the Kukulja lake after taking into account the fact that Gyesoo had worked so hard was still laid out like this but this guy was a bit special even out of the commanders.

Since he was a guy who had been inside the Calamity Fish.

“Let’s take this guy and go back!”

‘Damn it.’

He didn’t want to report this situation to Kalz Morenn...

He had to wake this guy up no matter what and make him report it himself.

All the aid was on the cruise ship anyway.

Cheng took Gyesoo and then quickly moved towards the cruise ship.

.....

“Hmm. When does it start.”

Kalz Morenn looked towards the distant sea with a content expression.

The Calamity Fish was still quite a distance away but if you take into account his great eyesight and the size of that thing, it wasn't hard to spot it.

‘The Quadratus guys are quite good.’

Getting a 2000 man boat was hard enough but these guys somehow managed to station it right next to the root.

‘Anyways. That's why there are so many tourists.’

If they had thought that it was dangerous from the start then the tourists wouldn't even have gathered.

And a 2000 man boat was at the level where it could withstand the waves created by the Calamity Fish.

But unlike Kalz Morenn, the newcomer standing next to him, Ailen, was making a rather bitter expression.

Kalz Morenn chuckled.

‘Look at this kid.’

He was a guy that he held dearly.

And that was why he had brought him along after paying the tourism fee.

Kalz Morenn knew the reason why he was making such an expression.

“It hasn’t been long since you came into our clan right?”

Ailen pondered for a moment and then answered.

“It has been about 27 days.”

“And when did you come to the Otherworld?”

Ailen shrugged his shoulders

“1 year. Since I came through the last year’s tutorial.”

Kalz Morenn smiled contently at those words.

Only strong people could come into Lighthouse, one of the six pillars.

But this guy had come into Lighthouse in 1 year and into the most dangerous Shock Troopers.

If you take into account the fact that most people in Lighthouse were 3rd and 4th years, then this guy’s talent was amazing.

And that was one of the reasons why he held him so dearly.

‘It’s probably because he’s still a 1st year...’

Such a thing like this would probably make him feel a little dirty.

To shove down huge groups of people into the stomach of the Calamity Fish and watching it.

Kalz Morenn spoke towards Ailen.

“You probably know by now... what do you think of every day while you live?”

Ailen shrugged his shoulders as he answered.

“Getting stronger.”

Kalz Morenn chuckled.

“Right? Surviving day by day isn’t your goal anymore right? Since you aren’t at that level anymore.”

“ ... ”

“I was like you around that level too. But... you start to think differently right before you go up.”

There’s nothing he should be scared of right now.

Since they, who ruled over the Red Zone, were really strong.

They had long been qualified to go up to the Orange Zone.

But there was only one reason why they had remained here.

<If we go up then we become the newcomers of that place.>

Of course they won't start off from the rock bottom.

Since there was still a gap from those who barely qualified to go up to the Orange Zone and them.

And they would probably be able to rise above others faster than them.

But that wasn't the important part.

<If I go up there then I cannot live like this anymore.>

There won't be people who would tremble at the sight of them and there might be people who he would have to run away from.

He had to struggle to get stronger again and go back into dangerous places.

“Do you know what comes up in your head at this point?”

“...What comes up in your head?”

“You start to get an idea that you have to rule as much as you get here and then go up.”

It was hard to remain in one place forever without going up due

to the World Tree's structure.

And when you become one of the clansmen of the Six Pillars, and the top within that clan, you start to get thoughts such as this.

<If we go up then we have to struggle to get stronger and to survive. Enjoy as much as you can before going up.>

But this wasn't easy either.

There was no way to fulfill the stomach.

Since the only thing to eat here were Nutritional Fluids.

There wasn't much need for sleep and one would get fed up with lust after a day or two.

He needed something more fun and intense.

Something to fulfill this desire of the ones who will go up soon and become tired again.

And the Quadratus Sightseeing was something created for people like this.

<Watch the fire across the river from a safe spot before you go. It's worth the sight. You have to take a look at the face of the Red



Zone, the Calamity Fish, before you go too.>

‘I look forward to it.’

It was quite a good sight to see dying people struggle.

That alone wouldn’t be enough but there were thousands of people and such a thing would become very grand once the Calamity Fish takes part in it.

According to the ones who had seen it before, this was really a good sight.

Shouldn’t he have a look at such a wondrous sight before going up.

At that moment he felt a presence approach him.

Then Kalz Morenn clicked his tongue after seeing what had come.

“Did you seriously lose?”

He had told the other Quadratus guys just in case but for him to really lose.

While Gyesoo was making an embarrassed face, Kalz Morenn

wrinkled his nose at the very faint scent.

A scent which normal humans could not smell and only he, who had learned <Aronan Chaser>, could detect.

And then he looked towards the origin of the scent.

Gyesoo’s thigh.

Kalz Morenn frowned his brows as he looked at Gyesoo with an incredibly fearsome expression.

“You retard...”

“Pardon?”

Gyesoo was shocked at the sudden bloodthirst rushing towards him and replied unconsciously.

.....

Kyaaaak!

A very faint scent breezed past the noses of the Gertas.

A scent which was created when the extremely agitated Gerta’s pheromones and blood were mixed.

It was clear what his scent meant.

That the killer of one of their kind had been covered with their blood.

The strong scent, which seemed like it was asking for revenge, was carried by the winds.

And it was amplified thousands of times.

Kyaaaak!

Thousands of Gertas which were roaming near the Kukulja Lake started to madly dash towards the origin of the scent.

And Hansoo laughed as he saw this sight.

He couldn't gain a large amount of time but this was enough for now.

'I should finish fast and go make some of that Nutritional Fluid. I wonder if that Gyesoo guy is alright.'

He didn't know who Kalz Morenn was but according to what he heard about his personality, it would be hard for him to ignore such a blunder like this.

Hansoo rushed out to complete the extract within the time that Gyesoo had kindly bestowed him.

# Chapter 61 – Calamity Fish Hunting (6)

---

‘Let’s see...’

Hansoo looked at the relic in his hands and then walked into the woods as he sliced a nearby Chehykle tree with the blade of the Forgotten sword.

And then sticky sap started pour out from it.

Hansoo got the small remaining amount of Amar’s Incense, mixed it with the sap and then spread it on the Forgotten sword until all of the surface was covered.

‘It’s done.’

Hansoo walked up to the lake and resumed his previous hunt after covering his whole sword.

Pagagagagak!

The heads of the fishes got crushed apart from the countless blade slashes as they died off.

Hansoo nodded as he saw the fishes charging at him.

‘At this level I can probably go and hunt the grown ones.’

It was an obvious fact that the adult ones had more of the extract within them than the baby ones.

If he hunted the adult ones then he could probably complete the extract in a shorter time.

The reason why he had not done so was because he had no way of getting through their thick skulls and scales but it was now more efficient to hunt the adult ones since he had obtained the Forgotten Sword.

‘The location of the adults is in the deeper part of the lake.’

He needed some preparations to go there.

Hansoo pulled out all of the extracts from the heart and then started to run along the lakeshore.

After a long while he could see a plant with its roots submerged in water.

A plant which lived by sucking onto the toxic water, <Ghweche>

Hansoo rushed onto the lotus like plant.

Tututuk.

He pulled out the Ghweche along with its roots, opened it and then retrieved a handful of seeds.

Hansoo then proceeded to collect the seeds of a few more Ghweche plants and then threw one into the water as a test.

Pushushushuk.

Surprisingly, the small seed didn't sink when it entered the water and instead started to madly swell up.

It swelled up by absorbing the water-soluble toxin which made the toxic waters toxic.

Hansoo got on top of the seed which had swelled up to the size of a human head.

It started to sink slowly once Hansoo got on top of it but as he got off the seed it came back up with its buoyancy.

‘Good.’

Hansoo then proceeded to create a bridge along the surface of the water towards the center of the lake where the adult fishes would be living.

At that moment a light shone in the distance behind Hansoo.

Hoooong.

At the same time very hot air rushed towards him.

Though the actual heat was weak, if you take into account the distance from him and the origin of the flame then that location would probably be similar to hell.

‘I should hurry a bit more. It’s still quite more amazing than I had thought.’

Hansoo quickly started to run towards the inner parts of the lake after checking his rear.

.....



Kuuuuuuuuuu

Tens of Gertas were laid out on the floor after becoming roasted by the dark red flame.

And Cheng and the other Quadratus members gulped as they saw this sight.

Though thousands of Gertas were running towards them, the man who had created the scene in front of them was much scarier.

Kalz Morenn, who had dark red flames swirling around his hand, looked at the Gertas he had roasted and then turned around as he spoke.

“Let’s hear it.”

“Pardon?”

“Let’s hear about how you are going to deal with this. I’ve gotten curious as to how and why you guys do your job like this.”

“... We will take care of it.”

Then a few people ran down as they launched off the cruise ship.

Ooonng.

The 2000 man cruise ship started to get further and further away from the land.

The Gertas who had run up roared in anger but they could only roam round the edge of the waters since they had no way of getting close to the cruise ship.

Kalz Morenn stood still for a moment and then opened his mouth again.

“Are you worrying about my safety right now? I’m asking as to how you are going to perform the sightseeing. If this goes on then all the newcomers will leak out. Can you guys block it all up?”

Gyesoo stumbled as he carried his injured body and walked out.

“I’ll solve it. If I run around the Kukulja lake and lead those things then the newcomers will see that and...”

Kududuk.

“Aaakk!”

Gyesoo screamed as Kalz Morenn’s hand suddenly dug into his thigh.

Kalz Morenn ignored his screams as he dug his thigh out and

then pulled out a soggy reddish mixture.

Kyaaak!

As the mixture came out from his body the Gertas started to get even more agitated.

Kalz Moren threw that towards the Quadratus and then spoke.

“This guy is the guide, he can’t die. Take this and spread it along the roads.”

“...Understood.”

The Quadratus felt cold sweats run down their backs as they looked at the shore where the Gertas were going crazy.

They had to carry this around and then spread it along the roads.

Though they can bring back the Gertas onto the roads if they spread this but carrying this around meant that they had to keep all of those Gertas on their tails.

They couldn’t even imagine the number of people who would die during this process.

‘Damnit. It got screwed up real dirty.’

Cheng looked at Gyesoo with a resentful expression.

But he could only go.

If not then he would probably die in the hands of Kalz Morenn instead of the Gertas.

It seemed like that Kalz Morenn, who was full of anticipation, started to feel worse and worse as the plans got screwed up.

‘If we can settle the matter for now with this then it’ll be good.’

But Kalz Morenn destroyed Cheng’s anticipation.

“And what are you going to do about that Hansoo fellow.”

“ ... ”

“Take responsibility and bring him over. I really want to see his face now.”

“Understood.”

Cheng clenched his teeth and then shouted.

“Plug up the roads first! Then... find that guy with the lake as the main location!”

A guy who had set them up like this wouldn't have hidden.

‘He said he was going to kill the Calamity Fish right.’

Since that guy was doing something in the Kukulja lake then he wouldn't be able to leave far until that was accomplished.

Kalz Morenn then looked at Gyesoo with a cold expression.

“You will talk to me for a bit. About what you failed.”

“Uuuuu...”

Gyesoo made a expression filled with fear from those terrifying eyes.

.....

Kudududuk.

Hansoo stabbed the Kukulja's skull and then quickly stabbed into the heart, pulled the heart out and then threw it into the Selfish Wealthy man's Food Jar.

The efficiency fell in comparison to squeezing it out on land but he didn't have the confidence to drag them onto land.

Shhkung.

'I've still almost collected it all.'

The <Selfish Wealthy man's Food Jar> by his waist had almost been filled up due to him hunting for almost two days straight.

But there was still a problem.

'...My stamina is too spent.'

The place where he could get the Nutritional Liquid was a bit far away from the Kukulja's Lake.

His stomach was completely empty after fighting for two days straight without any nutriment.

Slashing the sword once was getting hard.

Kadududuk!

The Kukulja noticed Hansoo getting weaker as they rushed towards him even more crazily.

At that moment something cut through the toxic waters and flew towards him while making pagagak sounds.

An arrow filled with the power of a skill.

‘It’s a skill of the targeting type.’

Hansoo compressed the free-form blade and then swung it.

Boom!

He had deflected the arrow but the injuries that had barely healed ripped open, due to him straining the muscles of his whole body , and spread around as the Kukuljas who smelled this started to thrash around more aggressively.

A person who looked like a commander of the Quadratus was looking towards him by the lakeshore and was preparing a skill.

‘It seems they have stopped the fire for now.’

Actually, the two days he had gained were quite a lot.

Though it would’ve been nicer to have a bit more, it happened already.

He had to solve this situation.

‘I don’t have the strength to have a prolonged battle.’

He was hungry, was lacking in stamina due to the long fight he had and was losing blood as well.

And Kukuljas were rushing towards him crazily from below.

But he still had to complete the extract.

‘I’ll get rid of the guys who follow me.’

Hansoo stepped onto the heads of the crazily rushing Kukuljas as he started to run towards the other side of the lake very quickly.

And Cheng grinded his teeth as he saw this.

“Shoot out restraining skills so he won’t run away and chase him!”

The other commanders made a bitter expression at this.

“You want to go in there?”

The bridge trick that Hansoo had done wasn’t hard for them.



And hunting down a tired person was an easy task for them.

But even with all this it was still a bit burdensome for them to go into the lake which was swarming with Kukuljas.

Cheng shouted at those words.

“The conditions are still the same! And don’t you know that it’ll become more tiresome if you don’t catch him while he’s that tired? And say we don’t catch him here... what are you going to report then?”

If he runs away to the other side of the lake then it really becomes hard to catch him.

Since the Kukulja lake was as big as the vast End Root.

If he hid in the jungle then things become really tiresome.

Everyone gulped at those words.

If they miss the chance to catch him while he’s tired then they have to meet Kalz Morenn.

They could still clearly remember the scene where Kalz Morenn dipped Gyesoo into the sea and pulled him back out like Shabu Shabu as he asked him about his responsibilities.

<Uwaaaaaak!>

<If you guys want to take a half-body bath in the toxic waters like this then you can continue to idle about. Hurry and get along.>

Gyesoo had only stopped at a half-body bath in the toxic waters because he had the experience of the insides of the Calamity Fish.

If they fail then they might take on a full body bath instead of a half-body bath.

‘Fucker. We aren’t even below that guy!’

But such a lame excuse did not work in this world where the differences in power were clear.

Since they had signed the contract to bring that guy back it was likely that they will suffer if they were to even discuss about it.

The commanders, who were grinding their teeth, and the other Quadratus floated on pieces of wood or Ghweche seeds as they quickly pursued Hansoo.

‘You bitch. I’ve almost caught you! I’ll vent all my anger on you!’

Unlike them, who were running with not many obstructions, their target with a bloody body was being attacked by the Kukuljas.

At that moment, Hansoo suddenly stepped onto the Kukulja as he jumped up into the air.

“...huh?”

A formless energy flowed into the sword on his hand as it instantly turned into a whip.

“Block it!”

At those words the people who had been running activated their skills to guard their fatal spots and focused on regaining their balance.

Pik.

Pipipik.

‘...Mmm?’

Cheng made a confused expression at the whip that had swept around them.

The glamorous attack just swept around their limbs as if it wasn’t targeting their fatal spots from the beginning.

It was extremely sharp so their flesh was cut but it wasn’t in fatal

locations.

Cheng smirked as he saw this.

‘Did he perhaps think that we will run away from fear when we got injured?’

Bleeding actually did make things a bit more burdensome.

Since Kukuljas will charge onto them if they bled.

But Hansoo was bleeding much more than them anyway and this amount of injury would heal up before a minute was up.

But the moment Cheng and the other Quadratus tried to rush in enthusiastically, something unexpected occurred.

Chwuuuuk.

The injuries got wider and wider as a large amount of blood started to flow out.

“Uuk! What is this!”

“Heal! Use the healing rune!”

“Dammit! It won’t close up!”

Blood was pouring out from the injury made by the whip.

And the Kukuljas, who had smelled the blood that had been spilt on the waters, rushed at them madly.

Pududududk.

“Waak! Damnit!”

‘What is this nonsense!’

Cheng screamed inwardly in puzzlement as he struck at the Kukuljas charging at him.

He was sure that such an option wasn’t on Gyesoo’s sword.

Hansoo made a cold expression at the top of the lake which had become chaos itself.

‘Now our situations are a bit more equal.’

<Hemorrhage>

The second power the <Nurmaha’s Ring> had unlocked after it evolved into a Red Artifact.

Once you were hit by the attack filled with the strange power of Nurmaha then the injury will not heal while the power lingered on the injury and instead cause a large amount of blood to pour out.

A top rated skill which was fatal towards the guys who trust in their healing skills and fight recklessly.

He had been saving it because the mana usage was very large but this was the perfect time for it.

‘But this isn’t quite enough.’

He was still bleeding as well and the Kukuljas were charging at him and them without distinguishing between them.

It had just become even.

And the fight was better the more unfair it was.

Hansoo ripped off the sap that was covering the blade with his hands.

Then the scent of the Forgotten Sword, which had been hidden beneath the strong Amar scent, started to permeate all around.

The Kukuljas who had smelled this flinched in surprise as they crazily tried to distance themselves away from Hansoo.

They could only be scared.

Since this scent was that of the fearful predator that ate them as snacks.

Pudududuk Pudududuk.

As the scent which could be smelled from hundreds of meters away under water spread, the Kukuljas made a huge riot in order to get away from Hansoo.

And Hansoo used this timing to throw the seeds to create the bridge as he got out to the lakeshore.

Then he looked at the relic on his hand.

This was an object that had been kept within the Calamity Fish for a very long time.

Its scent could only be strong.

He couldn't hunt properly if the Kukuljas ran away so he had hidden this scent but this was the most effective way in order to escape like this.

“Ahhhhk!”

“Kuaaaaak!”

‘They won’t be able to come out.’

That place was dangerous even for him.

Since the fear of the predator that had appeared for a moment had increased their vicious instincts a step further.

Hansoo, who had been looking at the Kukuljas who were gathering onto the center of the lake in a crazy manner, hid the scent of the Forgotten sword again as he completed the Kukulja extract.

Hansoo sighed as he looked at the mess his body had turned into.

He had predicted that it wouldn’t be easy but it was extremely tiring.

There was a huge difference between the beasts of the Red Zone and the people of the Tutorial.

‘Keldian. I might kick your ass if I see you again.’

Hansoo, who had been thinking of Keldian who had set up a strict schedule for him, thought of the next objective.



Nutritional fluid.

The reason why the wide World Tree Mountain Range became an area of dispute.

And one of the other reasons why he had to heal this World Tree.

‘If I collect that then it’ll be the end.’

Hansoo looked at the Kukulja heart extract which he had filled half of the pouch with and then started to gather the Ghweche seeds.

And soon Hansoo gathered a few thousand Ghweche seeds and quickly rushed towards the location where the Nutritional fluid flowed, the <Exterior>.

## Chapter 62 – Calamity Fish Hunting (7)

---

Kalz Morenn clicked his tongue.

‘The Blue Carrier Pigeons have not been flying back for a while’.

This meant that everyone who had gone off had failed.

‘I can’t leave this to them anymore.’

He thought that he would be able to find that guy using Gyesoo’s trait pretty quickly but it seems that there was a lot of restrictions that made it so that he could not find the person he found earlier for a whole month.

‘Well. He probably never thought of losing to a newcomer in the first place anyway.’

Ailen asked with a slightly confused expression while looking at Kalz Morenn warming up his body.

“...You said you weren’t going to move because you came for vacation right?”

Kalz Morenn smiled.

“I came here to enjoy. I feel like that guy will make this fun for me. It’s been a while since I found somebody who offended me like

this.”

There’s no satisfaction in smashing down timid people.

Wringing those who offended you was truly fun and satisfying.

“I’m going. You watch for those who run away towards the plains above the Kukulja Lake.”

Kalz Morenn left those final words as he quickly disappeared from the top of the boat.

.....

Hansoo thought about his next objective as he erased his tracks.

Since he had collected the Kukulja Heart Extract it was now time for him to go to the next stage.

‘I need to supplement it with Nutritional Fluid.’

One of the the two core ingredients of the Hardening Liquid.

Hansoo took out the Juicer he received from the Helper clansman and then ran towards the End Root between the sea and the Kukulja lake.

In this place, if you ignore the few special cases within the World Tree Area, it was impossible to satisfy one's hunger and thirst without the Juicer.

Hansoo could finally see a greenish part on the center of some blazing ruins that resembled a vein after a long run on top of the tree root.

‘Found it. The Exterior.’

The Root of World Tree was largely divided into the Exterior and the Interior.

The Interior absorbed the toxic waters from the Roots and then sent it to the Trunk which acted as the main part of the tree.

And the Exterior supplied nutrition to all of the World Tree by purifying the toxic waters into the Nutritional Fluid.

The Exterior, which was made of tens of thousands of strands, spread out from the deepest parts of the World Tree Roots and even to the outside.

And the only place where the survivors of this place, which was always burning, could find liquid and food was that World Tree Exterior's Nutritional Fluid.

A large amount of people were using all their strengths and using the Juicer like the Helper clansman had told them.

But of course there was a problem.

‘Barely any comes out.’

“Dammit! What is this! It barely comes out!”

“Uuu. What will this amount do to anyone!”

This machine, which had a few skills applied onto it, pulled out the Nutritional Fluid once one takes it and puts it onto the Exterior.

But if not much of the Nutritional Fluid flowed through the Exterior then what would the Juicer do even if it had extremely good specs.

As if the Exterior was symbolizing the dried up World Tree, a very small amount of Nutritional Fluids were running through it.

‘I need to find a thicker Exterior.’

He had to scratch off quite a large amount of Nutritional Fluids for the Hardening Liquid.

It wasn’t hard to find a thicker Exterior.

Since if you follow the Exterior up, you will find a thicker Exterior where the other Exteriors met up.

But there were people on the thicker Exterior already.

‘We meet again.’

Hansoo shrugged as he looked at the 150 people gathered.

Yohan and the others were driving out the other people approaching the Exterior as they were filling up their Nutritional Fluid Containers.

“Get lost!”

“Don’t come close! We will use this place first!”

The people who were driven out cried out in rage.

“You damned bastards! If you suck it all up then what do you want us to do!”

Yohan smirked as he laughed.

“If you feel wronged then go up higher than us and suck it up there.”

“...Fuckers.”

The people cursed quietly.

Who didn't know about that.

But the higher they go the stronger the beasts and people get.

Of course it was more dangerous to go higher.

So people realized it at once.

That they had to get stronger no matter what and then keep climbing up.

If they keep sucking out the Nutritional Fluid in the Exterior above then the people below will barely be able to taste the Nutritional Fluid.

Which means that they had to persevere to get the Nutritional Fluid no matter what, get stronger and then drink from the Exterior above where there is more Nutritional Fluid.

Hansoo shook his head as he saw this scene.

‘How could there be unity if things go like this.’

It was basically the same as fighting for water during a drought.

Actually the fight to take over the Nutritional Fluid was even more intense above.

‘And this is why I must revive the World Tree even more.’

It was impossible to unite people when the amount of food was limited.

It was already not enough but if the people who will be sent in next year are taken into account then it will really be insufficient.

They will all starve like the Communism of the old days and then all die of starvation.

Unity was a job that was after revival of the World Tree.

‘Well. It’s not to the point where they will starve to death yet.’

Which means that it wasn’t time for him to care yet.

Hansoo landed in front of Yohan who was driving off the other people.

And as soon as Yohan saw Hansoo, his expression scrunched up.



Then he shouted loudly.

“Kang Hansoo! Where did you hide the boat!”

“Mmm?”

Yohan loudly shouted.

“We can’t go up higher! There are beasts swarming up above!”

There was a reason why Yohan and his crew were staying a bit below the Lake.

They had seen the Calamity Fish on the way.

And because of this they tried to climb up as fast as possible as soon as the instructions of the Helper clansman ended.

But they gave up as soon as they saw the beasts blocking their way.

Since thousands of beasts were swarming around.

The lake was even worse.

And they were raising their strengths by collecting the Nutritional Fluid like this and hunting weak beasts because they

could not die like this.

But if they had a boat then everything would be solved.

“Give us the boat. You don’t need it. We will leave on the boat.”

They had rushed back to find the boat after seeing that the road was blocked but they could not find it as if this guy had hidden it.

Hansoo shook his head at Yohan words.

He had to ride on that to hunt the Calamity Fish.

“Persevere well here. Don’t think about going up.”

“...what?”

“I’m going to kill that Calamity Fish so. I need to use the boat there.”

“ ... ”

‘He’s really insane.’

He had heard something like this when this guy was fighting that Camille woman.

‘You want us to believe such nonsense? Just say you don’t want to give us the boat instead.’

Yohan grinded his teeth.

Hansoo chuckled as he looked at that Yohan.

Since he could guess what he was thinking.

‘Don’t do that.’

If he had let these guys off in a different place then it would’ve taken a lot longer.

He could understand Yohan’s intentions so he just shrugged and didn’t really say much more.

Since he had long gotten used to people telling him to put down the luggage after he had saved them too.

While Yohan was grinding his teeth, Hansoo leisurely went up to the Exterior and then plugged the pointy part of the Juicer.

Chuuuuuuk.

And then the Juicer activated as it pulled out the Nutritional

Fluid a drop at a time.

Hansoo then drank the Nutritional Fluid that came out from the Juicer.

‘Hooh. Much better.’

Though the World Tree had dried up, it was still the World Tree.

He had just drank just a few drops of the water of life that was provided through the Exterior but it already started to fill up Hansoo’s whole body with nutrients.

The slowed down healing speed from the lack of nutrition quickly came back to normal as the Nutritional Fluid swirled around his body.

‘Since I quenched my thirst it’s time to move.’

Hansoo got up his seat.

The amount he needed to gather was not possible to be gathered here anyway.

There were two reasons why he had come to the Exterior on the bottom.

To replenish his spent stamina and to use it as the starting point to go to a bigger one.

Even more so since this thing went up and down through the underground.

“Don’t piss people off randomly and just stay here for a bit.”

The time was getting saved due to him having earned quite a nice weapon.

He would be able to set off towards the Calamity Fish in just a little while.

Hansoo ended with those words as he followed the Exterior into a corner of the jungle.

Yohan looked at that Hansoo with a cold expression.

‘I need to find the hidden boat.’

The reason why that guy could be so laid back was because he had the boat.

Since he could leave at any time.

Yohan had to find the boat.

‘But how?’

That guy was so cautious to the point where he was constantly erasing his tracks as he moved.

And the dangerous jungle.

It would be hard to chase.

But Yohan suddenly had a strange thought.

‘Was something over there?’

If you follow the way he had come from the lake was there.

A guy of that level would’ve already been to such a place and came back but for him to only come out now.

‘Is something over there?’

There was a possibility.

Since that guy had a strange psychic power.

Then the reason why he had driven the boat to this dangerous

place could be explained.

‘Killing the Calamity Fish. That’s definitely a lie... Is he trying to gain something here and then escape with the boat?’

And the fact that he had told them to stay here was even more suspicious.

Yohan cautiously gathered up a few people and shared his thoughts.

A few of them actually made a doubtful expression but then they agreed with Yohan’s thoughts of having a look as they created a search team to follow the path Hansoo had come from.

And soon they arrived at the lake which was quite familiar to them.

The lake of the monsters which had thrown them into despair.

But there was a person who had gotten there before them.

‘...Who is that?’

There was a man who was meticulously searching around the lake in Yohan’s sight.

The foreign looking man searched around the root but once he saw them he ignored them as if he lost his joy and started to focus onto the work he was doing.

‘Damnit. They’re all the same.’

Yohan, whose pride had actually taken quite a toll due to Hansoo, had actually gotten pissed at the attitude of the man ignoring them but couldn’t really say anything back because that man looked dangerous at just a simple glance.

Even without the Helper clansman’s warning he could still feel the strange bloodthirsty aura radiating from that man.

Yohan decided to ignore that man just like how he had done to them and spoke to the surrounding people.

“Since it looks dangerous let’s back off for now and then look for Hansoo’s tracks when that man leaves.”

Yohan did not realize that this was a fatal mistake.

The ears of the man, who had been ignoring Yohan and his crew, trembled as he yelled out roughly.

“Hey you over there! You know Hansoo?”

‘Shit!’



Everyone was shocked at the sudden shout of the man.

They didn't know who he was but they didn't want to get mixed up with such a dangerous person.

Yohan tensed up but then thought that he didn't have anything to lose as he broadened his chest and tried to speak.

“We do but then what are yo...”

Puuuk!

“Kuuhuuuk!”

The broadened chest had to be folded back immediately.

Yohan looked at the man who had appeared in front of him in an instant and had smashed him on his stomach with a pained expression.

‘What... did I even do wrong?’

Kalz Morenn looked at that Yohan as he spoke.

“You bastard. Dare to look at my eyes when you're just a mere newcomer. You want to die.”

“Kuhuuuk...”

‘Damnit. With just that as the reason...’

It felt like his whole intestines were tangling up from just one kick.

At the same time Yohan realized why the Helper clansman told them to not piss off the people who had come in the previous year.

Since the explosive movements that were combined with skills were hard even for their eyes to follow.

“Good. It was hard enough to look for his tracks anyways, you guys will help me a bit.”

He was about to explode from annoyance because that guy had hidden his tracks so well but for these guys to get caught.

‘Kuhuu. He probably knew that someone was going to chase him but it seems like he didn’t expect something like this.’

Kalz Morenn looked at the chicks with a cold expression.

.....

“You got off here?”

“Yes.”

“Good.”

Kalz Morenn estimated which way that guy would've gone.

He didn't know why Hansoo was running around the jungle but he probably knew that there were going to be pursuers.

‘There's no way that he'd hide his tracks otherwise.’

Then there was only one choice that guy would make.

<Escape Route>

Running away from him when Gyesoo hadn't even told him about himself was an impossible thing.

It was impossible to run towards the wide open plain above the Kukulja lake because he had told Ailen to guard that area.

The only escape route then was the sea.

If he went near the boat and then waited then he would be able to catch him for sure.

‘If not then I can just break apart the the boat first. Since I can kill him slowly once he can’t run away anymore.’

Though Hansoo had hidden it, it wasn’t hard to find the traces of the boat with a skill once they reach the place where they had gotten off.

Yohan, who had been looking at Kalz Morenn with a fearful expression, spoke.

“Anyways... will you really give us the boat? Once you find it?”

Kalz Morenn looked at Yohan with an amused expression.

‘These guys. Do they not have a very good relationship?’

From what he heard, they would’ve all died if not for this Hansoo guy but they were cooperating extremely well.

He was going to twist the necks of a few people if they didn’t comply but he felt awkward to do so when they cooperated so well.

‘Well. It’s better for me.’

Kalz smiled contently as he spoke.

“Of course. You guys take the boat.”

He was going to destroy it anyway for the tour but this was the time to give hope.

They would cooperate better if there was a chance for survival.

As if those words gave Yohan strength, he steadily headed towards the location where they had gotten off the boat.

And then he spoke towards Kalz:

“It’s here.”

“Let’s see...”

Kalz Morenn’s skill, <Aronan’s Chaser>, activated.

Since the fairy’s boats weren’t hard to find due to their particularities.

‘Tsk. It’d be nice to find Hansoo with this.’

But there were too many different scents mixed in the last battlefield for that.

But soon the confident face of Kalz Morenn scrunched up.

“...This guy and that guy. Why are they all retarded.”

The location where the Aronan's Chaser pointed to.

He could feel the traces of the boat a few hundreds meters deep under the sea.

But how would Hansoo pull that up.

The 500 man boat's weight was not something a human can pull up.

Even if the amount of their muscles increased, there was still a limit with a human's body mass.

Where would he find a rope to pull that up while withstanding the toxic waters.

‘These retards... he didn't hide it, it just sunk.’

This meant that Hansoo guy had gained a boat somewhere else already.

A boat that the Quadratus guys had not smashed yet.

‘Quadratus and these guys. They're really extremely frustrating.’

The important fact was that he had wasted time because these guys.

Catching him would become much harder due to this slight change.

Since when it came to pursuing someone the difference between a few hours and half a day was the difference between heaven and earth.

“These bitches...”

“Huuuuak!”

The thing that he needed the most currently was somebody to vent his anger on.

The dark red flames started to float around Kalz Morenn as if they were reacting to his rage.

.....

‘Hmm. Good.’

Hansoo, who had sliced apart the beasts in the Exterior located deep within the jungle and was pulling out the Nutritional Fluid with the juicer, nodded at the smooth process.

There was no need to share it because it was an Exterior located in a dangerous place and he was also gaining runes steadily even while chopping apart the beasts.

‘It seems like the work will finish faster than my expectation. Anyways, I thought that Kalz Morenn guy would chase me but I seem to be wrong. Did he lose his way somewhere.’

But Hansoo just shrugged his shoulders.

‘I wonder why my luck is so good. It’s good anyway. Once the materials Camille Rowe finds get mixed in then it’ll be completed.’

Hansoo, who had been sucking the Nutritional Fluid out from the Exterior, quickly moved towards the next Exterior.



# Chapter 63 – Galadriang’s Relic (1)

---

Kwarurururu.

Kalz Morenn was standing within the blazing jungle.

“Hooh. This rat of a bastard...”

Boooom!

Five days.

He had searched around this area, looking for Hansoo, for five days.

He wouldn’t have been this mad if there weren’t any traces in the first place.

But the most annoying thing was that there were very faint traces of him left behind.

Sometimes a faint scent could be smelled and sometimes the traces of the Forgotten Sword he had stolen from Gyesoo were left behind.

This made him even madder.

Since he was just tailing his back even if he was chasing with all his might.

‘Goddamnit...’

It would’ve been easier if he had brought some of his subordinates here but he had come here for a vacation.

But then he’d rather commit suicide than receive Ailen’s help.

Since he’d lose face.

Then Gyesoo spoke cautiously towards Kalz Morenn.

“How about... catching Camille Rowe?”

“Camille Rowe?”

Kalz Morenn slightly frowned as he heard this.

This was something that Gyesoo had been suggesting for a while.

Since Hansoo’s main goal was the Calamity Fish, he would naturally be dragged in if you catch his comrade.

But there was a reason why Kalz Morenn had not done this yet.

‘Damn it. Not being able to catch a single newcomer is enough face lost but for me to take people hostage?’

If Amil Stadan, from one of the Six Pillars <Hecarim>, heard this then he will laugh at him while holding onto his stomach.

No, he would become a public object of ridicule to the clans of the twelve roots.

But his rage was currently exceeding his pride.

There were instances in his plan where he would not be able to catch a guy for 5 days.

‘Well if I take care of things well.... There won’t be rumors.’

Kalz Morenn asked Gyesoo.

“How do you want to do it? You told me you couldn’t use your trait yet.”

Gyesoo laughed.

“Hansoo might erase his tracks but why would she. She would not think that someone will be chasing her.”

“Hooh.”

“Since we almost finished the sightseeing preparation, we’ll separate to find her and then send a Blue Carrier Pigeon once we do.”

Kalz Morenn made a satisfied expression as he nodded.

“You be careful. You are the main actor of the 2nd part of the tour. Remember why I take care of you so well.”

“...I know very well.”

“You guys find Camille according to your plans. I shall continue searching for Hansoo.”

If he gave up like this then his pride would be damaged.

Camille was a last resort.

‘I will catch him before that.’

Gyesoo nodded as he saw Kalz Morenn grind his teeth and send Blue Carrier Pigeons in every direction.

.....

“Hooh.”

Hansoo looked at his food jar container.

A container that was full of the Nutritional Fluid and the Kukulja heart extract.

‘I’ve almost collected all of the materials for the Hardening Fluid too.’

Since he had some time left until Camille would finish gathering all the materials, he had gathered a few extra materials that he would use on the boat.

As he saw flames exploding from place to place, it seemed like that Kalz Morenn had been enraged to no extent.

‘It is pretty annoying.’

But it seemed like that Kalz Morenn wasn’t that talented despite being the captain of the shock troopers.

If Kalz had raised his chaser skill then it would have been harder to hide his tracks.

‘Let’s have a peek.’

Hansoo adjusted the shape of the formless energy of the Forgotten Sword so that light would be diffracted.

It wasn't that hard. He just needed to change the thickness a little bit.

He then proceeded to apply mud onto his face as he started to look over the cruise ship in the distance along with his transformed sword that acted like monoculars.

He knew of the cruise ship's location due to the heat that had come off during the Gertas incident.

In order to not get caught within their eyes he had to stay this far back to look over them discreetly.

Hansoo frowned after looking over the location of where the Blue Carrier Pigeons were flying and Kalz Morenn's movements.

‘Look at these guys. They changed the target.’

He didn't think that Kalz would've done such a thing due to his pride of being the captain of the shocktroopers of Lighthouse but it seems that his rage had overcome his pride.

‘Let's move.’

He had collected all the materials anyway.

The time had come for him to reunite with Camille.

‘Let’s see... she would be around the Erum Mines or Kukuru burrows by now.’

A dumb person wouldn’t know but Camille was rather smart so she would choose the most efficient route.

Which meant that she had to be in one of these two.

‘I have to find Camille before them.’

Otherwise it’ll become troublesome.

‘First I’ll go to Kukuru burrows.’

Hansoo carefully got out of his seat and quickly headed off somewhere.

.....

Kaaaaaak!

Camille madly slashed her short spear towards the Erums running towards her.

Hoooong.

The short spear endlessly slashed through the air.

The respiratory holes of the Erums, who had the shape of a beetle, were sliced apart as they dropped down.

Kwadududk.

Camille split the stomach of the Erum, took out the secreting gland and then squeezed the liquid into a small bottle.

‘I collected it all.’

Camille cracked the joints on her body.

She had collected all of 14 ingredients out of the 17 ingredients Hansoo had asked.

‘My progress is faster than I expected, it seems like I’ll finish in about a day.’

Camille started to head out of the mine after looking at the bottle of liquid.

But at the same time she could feel somebody coming into the mine with her acute battle senses.



Camille tensed up and focused.

Erum Mines were quite difficult for newcomers.

Which meant that whoever came here was not a newcomer.

But she sighed as she recognized the footsteps and breath and climbed up.

“You’re here. Why are you here already though? I haven’t collected it all.”

Hansoo shrugged at Camille’s words and spoke.

“The situation changed a little. Some annoying guys seem to have gotten on our tail.”

“Annoying guys?”

Camille made a confused expression.

If this guy, who didn’t recognize how high the sky was, thought of somebody as annoying then that person would be far beyond that.

“Who is it?”

“Kalz Morenn.”

“...What did you just say?”

“Kalz Morenn. He seems to be the captain of the shock troopers of Lighthouse.”

“What the hell have you done while you’ve been away from me!”

Camille shouted with a flustered expression.

She was a third year too but Kalz Morenn was at a different level.

If she fought him then she’d just melt down without being able to do anything.

‘No, why is such a guy on the End Root?’

But there was only one important fact.

That those guys will chase them.

Camille made an expression full of despair and then spoke towards Hansoo.

“Let’s start up the boat. There’s no time.”

She hadn’t gathered all the ingredients but if they waited here and then encountered Kalz Morenn then they would both die.

No matter how strong this guy was he could not go against Kalz Morenn.

“Did you gather all the materials?”

Camille shook her head at Hansoo’s words.

“Not the Kukuru Scales, Mixblood Fairy Breath and Arantal Lights.”

Hansoo started to pull some things out of his pockets after hearing Camille’s words and spoke:

“It’s Kukuru Scales. I’ve gotten it on the way here. Focus on getting the other two for me.”

“...What are you going to do?”

Hansoo looked at Camille and spoke.

“I’m going to buy some time while you gather the materials.”

Not a single material could be left out.

Since an unstable Hardening Liquid will be made.

“Let’s meet at this location after you gather the materials. I will bring the boat there.”

Hansoo then told her the place they would meet up at.

Camille looked at Hansoo with a worried expression and asked.

“Isn’t it better to collect the materials quickly with me?”

Hansoo shook his head at these words.

He had seen it on the way here.

The net had been closed up much more than he had anticipated.

At this rate they would be caught by the time they gather the materials and get to the boat.

One person had to buy some time.

‘There’s no need to lead the others astray.’

He just needed to get Kalz Morenn distracted.

Since Camille could handle the rest.

Hansoo then thought of Kalz Morenn.

He had left traces around wide open spaces on purpose while running away.

Very faintly.

Only so that one could find them if they had a chaser skill.

He had left olfactory traces sometimes and other times he left temperature related traces or footsteps.

And he saw Kalz Morenn chasing him from afar with the transformed sword and then checked his reaction.

The result was clear.

‘The chaser skill he had learned... is a type of scent chaser.’

That guy was chasing his direction with the changes of scent.

Hansoo thought up to this point as he ripped a piece of his clothing off, ripped it to shreds and smeared blood onto it.

He then held onto it tight with his hands as he spoke to Camille.

“I’ll leave it to you.”

Hansoo ended with those words as he quickly started to run towards the jungle and Camille looked at Hansoo with a complicated expression but then also ran off to gather the materials.

.....

‘...Mmm?’

Kalz Morenn frowned at Hansoo’s scent which had suddenly gotten stronger.

‘He had hidden so well up to this point, why is this?’

Kalz Morenn deducted the reason after a brief thought.

The answer had come out.

‘He has been watching me.’

The reason why Hansoo had shown himself was clear.

Since it was after they started chasing after Camille Rowe.

‘If I knew that he would come out like this then I would’ve done this sooner.’

Kalz Morenn didn’t actually have a lot of expectations against that Camille girl.

Since he hadn’t thought that Hansoo was a person who would jump out because of one hostage.

He had told Gyesoo to do this because he was so fed up but for such a thing to happen.

‘I’ll gladly kill you.’

Kalz Morenn laughed maniacally as he chased the traces.

The traces were very clear unlike the ones so far.

He had thought that these were traces to lure him in but such a thing could be clearly seen.

All his senses and the skill were telling him clearly.

That Hansoo had just gotten past this area.

Kalz Morenn made a cold expression after chasing these traces for a long time.

‘If he set up a trap then...’

Hansoo might not even be at the end of this chase since he was much more formidable than he had expected.

If that happened then he was really going to find that Camille and rip her to shreds.

Hansoo might be different but she can't run away from him.

It would be quite a nice target to vent his anger on since it seemed like Hansoo valued her greatly to come out like this.

‘I should tell the guys to find Camille first.’

Kalz Morenn flinched momentarily while he was just about to send a Blue Carrier Pigeon to tell them to keep chasing Camille's traces.

And then he changed the message of the Pigeon as he saw somebody standing in the distance.

<Stop chasing that Camille girl, come here and close the net.>



Kalz Morenn walked towards Hansoo who was standing with a leisurely expression by the Kukulja Lake after sending the Blue Carrier Pigeons.

“I really wanted to meet you. Friend. I would’ve been really disappointed if I wasn’t able to meet you this time along.”

Hansoo chuckled towards that Kalz Morenn.

“I could only help you since you could not find me after all that. I even left hints.”

Though the hints had not been left behind to help him but saying this was enough to stimulate him.

And as expected, veins appeared on Kalz Morenn’s forehead as soon as he heard Hansoo’s words.

Because everything from having to run after a one single newbie to worrying to get disturbed for the sightseeing and faking a hostage wielding replayed in his memory.

‘This fucking son of a bitch...’

But soon after, Kalz Moreen took a deep breath in and out.

This guy was a fish that was already caught.

‘Even if you have a boat that you left somewhere... I won’t allow you to get over there.’

As long as one comes into his sight, they can’t escape by running.

He just needed to catch him and slowly smash him apart.

“You brat. Let’s see if you can still say that while you’re getting burnt.”

As Kalz Morenn approached him with flames surrounding his body, Hansoo threw the Ghweche seeds in his pocket onto the lake as he ran away on the lake.

And then he sliced his thigh.

Then blood started to pour out as it spread out in the Kukulja Lake.

Pududadadak.

The Kukuljas were madly rushing towards him since he had covered the sword again.

Kalz Morenn flinched at this and then mocked him.

“What are you trying to do? Are you trying to hold on over

there?”

Others might be different but he wasn't scared away from going towards the lake from the fear of getting bit by Kukuljas.

He just needed to burn them all.

Kalz Morenn stopped atop the Kukulja's bodies as he madly started to run atop on the lake.

Everytime Kalz Morenn stepped on the Kukulja's head, their skulls were crushed like tofu.

Hansoo looked at Kalz Morenn and then laughed.

Of course he couldn't lead him astray and then get to the boat on top of the water.

That guy was clearly much stronger than him.

Since he was on a different level from Gyesoo or the other Quadratus guys.

But there was no need to go atop of the water.

The breeding lake was something that the Kukuljas, who originally lived on the sea, had dug out.

The underground passage here is connected to the sea.

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then looked at the artifact on Kalz Morenn's neck rapaciously.

<Ahol's Breath>

'If he has something like that then he would definitely follow me right?'

"Keep my item safe."

Hansoo smiled at Kalz Morenn, who had the survival-type artifact that was extremely hard to acquire, as he jumped down towards the lake where the Kukuljas were swarming in.

"This crazy bastard..."

Kalz Morenn grinded his teeth as he saw this.

## Chapter 64 – Galadriang's Relic (2)

---

Kururururk.

Hansoo ripped off the covering on his Forgotten Sword as soon as he sunk into the water.

Kuaaaaaak.

Then all the Kukuljas, who had been chasing him from the scent of the blood, were frightened as they ran away in all directions.

And in the place they had run to, there was another target.

But Hansoo didn't care for such a thing as he started to swim away madly.

If that guy was someone who he could kill with the Kukuljas then he would've done so above the lake.

Boooom!

And as he expected, an intense heat wave exploded out from above the lake.

<!!!!!!>

Tens of Kukuljas were roasted in an instant.

The power of that attack could be estimated to a degree from the fact that the ones underwater had become like that.

Hansoo, who had covered himself with the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement, extended out the Magic Force of the reinforcement and then created it into the shape of the webbed feet of a duck.

He then flapped his arms and legs and quickly started to head downwards.

Deeper and deeper.

So that the attacks above the water wouldn't reach him.

Then soon the toxic water that Hansoo was swimming through started to boil.

'He's following.'

He knew even without looking.

Since the heat was slowly approaching towards Hansoo.

Hansoo stabbed the wooden pipe he had prepared into the <Selfish Wealthy man's Food Jar>.

Chuuuuuuk

Then the air he had gathered previously started to come into Hansoo through his mouth.

He had to breathe.

‘Tsk. It’d be nice if I had a survival type skill.’

Survival type skills, or artifacts with survival type skills applied onto made it easier to adjust to extreme environments.

They just were extremely hard to acquire.

Hansoo thought of the artifact on the neck of Kalz.

<Ahol’s Breath.>

An artifact that boosted the survivability of one when they are underwater or about to faint.

If he has that thing then he can breathe under the waters.

‘Follow well.’

Hansoo breathed air as he searched for the path.

‘There should be traces around here...’

Finding the exit was easy.

Since the location where the adult fishes, and not the baby ones, are swimming meant that it was closer to the sea.

And Hansoo had already looked over that location while creating the Kukulja Heart Extract.

If you follow the traces of the adult Kululjas then the path leading to the sea would come out.

Kwaaaaaaa.

At that moment an extreme amount of heat was directed towards Hansoo.

Kurururu.

Hansoo frowned at the intent of the heat that was trying to boil him alive.

Since he felt the Magic Force of the Demonic Dragon Reinforcement being taken off in chunks.



‘It would’ve been dangerous if I fought him above the water.’

The only reason why this was possible was because he was being chased under the water.

Otherwise his skin would’ve been cooked red in an instant.

Hansoo didn’t slow down his swimming speed as he swung the formless whip behind him.

The waves that were transmitted through the liquid told Hansoo numerous things.

He could guess the guy’s location to a degree without looking back.

No, the flapping of the Kukuljas surrounding him told the exact location of that guy.

Paaat.

The formless whip with the <Hemorrhage> power applied to it flew backwards.

Booom!

The Magic Force of the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement

collided with his skill and created a huge force wave.

Thankfully, the reinforced whip was able to penetrate Kalz's Magic Force and skills and succeeded in creating a very minute injury.

‘Thankfully it's a Reinforcement of the Inferno type.’

Inferno type Reinforcement's offensive powers were extremely high in comparison to other reinforcements but their defenses were a bit lacking.

And as if Kalz's skills were the same as that, his defensive skill masteries were a bit low and were of lower quality.

Pasasak.

The <Hemorrhage> applied to his injury started to madly course through the injury and started to widen it.

And as the injury got wider, blood started to pour out and the Kukuljas who smelled the blood under the water started to madly rush towards him.

Kuduk.

Kalz Moren clenched his teeth while swimming and then gathered a large amount of the power of Reinforcement on this

hands.

Then he singed his injury.

Chiiik.

Blood squirmed around as it tried to come out but there was no way to since he had forcefully signed the injury and closed it up.

The power of the hemorrhage tried to constantly widen the injury but Kalz Morenn smashed the skulls of the Kukuljas swarming towards him as he pulled out the pieces of bone, used them as needles as he stabbed them in between his injuries and then singed it again.

Hansoo clicked his tongue as he looked at that sight.

‘That’s one tough guy.’

Doing such a thing meant that he had no intentions of going back up.

The will that wanted to catch him no matter what.

Kalz Morenn, who had closed the injury to an extent, stepped on the Kukuljas rushing towards him as he tried to get closer to Hansoo.

‘Shall I give him a few more presents.’

Hansoo pulled out a few Ghweche seeds from his pouch as he stabbed them through with his whip.

Like a skewer.

And before the seeds could puff up he swung the whip and threw them towards Kalz Morenn who was trying to approach him.

This time, he applied <Power Destruction> instead of <Hemorrhage>.

Since it was a bit hard to use them both at the same time.

It was too inefficient and too mana-costly to use both Power Destruction and Hemorrhage when his attack wasn't a direct attack.

Koooong.

Kalz Morenn clenched his teeth as he saw the whip flying towards him again.

He had to block it no matter what.

It'll become very troublesome if he were to keep getting injured

by that vicious object.

Kurururu.

Kalz Morenn brought his defensive skill to the limit as he poured the flame of the Magic Force towards the whip.

If the Magic Force of the attack was the same as before then it will melt against his flame.

But Kalz Morenn was shocked at that actually happened.

Shrururuk.

The flame of the Magic Force disappeared as if it was erased.

Hansoo's whip had become weaker as if it was also affected by the skill but it was still flying towards him.

Soon the whip broke through his defensive skill like it was glass and then penetrated his body.

Pushushuk.

‘Goddamnit! What the hell is this!’

Did he have to get stabbed through like this constantly!

But Kalz Morenn, who had been hit by the whip with a nervous expression, suddenly made an evil smile.

‘Ah I see. It seems that he can’t use both skills at the same time.’

The whip that was weakened from his skill and attack was weak enough for him to tough it out with his resistances.

As long as that damned Hemorrhage didn’t come at him then an attack of that level wouldn’t be able to threaten him.

But even before Kalz could finish his thoughts, something started to puff up between his armors like underneath his arms.

‘Uuk?’

Kalz Moren was flustered momentarily at his body that started to rise up suddenly.

Then he grinded his teeth as he found out the identity of the object that was making him rise up.

‘Ghweche Seeds. This damned bastard... he prepared things like this as well?’

And for him to be able to store this underwater meant that he had already done some things to the seed.

Which meant that Hansoo had led him under the water after he had already planned the underwater as the stage they would have the fight.

‘Kuuuuk.’

Kalz Morenn glared at Hansoo after ripping off the Ghweche balloons.

The distance between them that he had closed had been returned to what it was before due to him having risen for a moment.

And the Kukuljas were weirdly not approaching Hansoo and were only madly charging against him.

‘If I catch him... I can kill him if I catch him!’

This was clear no matter what tricks Hansoo had up his sleeves.

‘You Bitch. I’m going to keep chasing you!’

He felt like he would really go crazy if he backed off here.

But the thing that made him mad was a different emotion.

‘Afraid? I’m afraid of this guy? A newcomer?’

It wasn't that Hansoo himself was scary.

‘Fuck... I don't know what else he has prepared.’

Hansoo had led him towards the Lake and had completed the preparation to fight him in it.

Which meant that Hansoo had already estimated that he would follow him and as well as the fact that he would jump under the water.

This meant that Kalz was running around in the palm of Hansoo's hands.

And Hansoo was not afraid of Kalz at all.

Which meant that Hansoo was confident enough to either run away from him or even kill him if he were to follow him till the end.

‘I cannot agree on this!’

Kalz Morenn quickly went up to the surface of the water and then started to run atop of it. (\*TL : IT'S JESUS)

‘Move quickly on top of the water, get above him and then catch up by diving down!’



This was just a lake and there was a limit to its depth.

Since he had found out his direction and movements, he would be able to chase him much faster if he were to chase from above.

But Kalz Morenn frowned after running for a bit.

“Fuck...”

A giant mountain that was blocking his path.

A mountain was standing between the lake and the sea.

‘I’m going in’.

If he were to climb over the mountain then he might lose him on the entrance of the underwater passage that could be anywhere.

But Kalz Morenn flinched the moment he tried to jump into the underwater passage.

Since he felt that something was different.

Then his expression crunched up as he felt the area around his neck.

“This son of a bitch!!!!”

Kalz Morenn screamed out in rage after getting his <Ahol’s Breath>, which as almost as precious as the <Feather>, stolen from him but he could not go down to the dark underground of the lake.

Since going through the underwater passage, which he didn’t know the length of, while not being able to breathe was almost the same as committing suicide.

Kalz Morenn’s expression, which was covered by rage and agitation, started to get colder and scarier.

And soon Kalz Morenn started to quickly run on top of the water as if he had determined on something.

.....

“Huuoop!”

Hanso who stucked his head out of the sea surface after getting out of the lake, took a deep breath and then looked around his surroundings.

‘Let’s see. Though he might be pissed off quite a bit... he won’t be able to chase.’

He was quite a distance away from the boat.

Hansoo quickly ran along the shore and then jumped into the sea after arriving at the spot where he had sunk the boat.

Plonk.

‘It’s nice.’

Hansoo made a content expression as he put on the Ahol Breath’s that he had stolen with the whip onto his neck.

His reaction speed and movements will increase greatly from this.

A human could die no matter how high their runes were if they didn’t have the necessary elements but this thing filled up that spot.

‘There isn’t much difficulty in breathing.’

Hansoo threw away the pipe and then continued downwards.

Bubble bubble.

After a while the large boat that he had sunk could be seen.

An enormous boat that was not possible to raise with the abilities

of a human.

But there was a way.

Pongpong.

Hansoo filled up all the passages that led towards the deck with the Arun Wood planks.

And then he poured all the Ghweche seeds within his pockets out.

Rumble.

The Ghweche seeds that were released inside the boat started to suck up the boats at an extreme speed.

Puaaaaaaak.

The volumes of the seeds started to increase very rapidly.

Hansoo retrieved the Arun Wood planks and Kelk mucus sacs and then quickly came outside the boat.

Bubble bubble bubble.

The toxic waters that filled the boat started to pour out of the

holes after getting pushed back by the puffed up Ghweche seeds.

And soon the area below the deck was filled with tens of thousands of Ghweche balloons.

Kududududuk.

The boat that had sunk deep within the sea started to make large noises as it started to rise up.

Hansoo quickly got onto the rising boat and grabbed onto the controls.

Then the boat started to turn under Hansoo's controls even while underwater.

This was pretty simple since it was a boat with the fairy's magic applied to it.

'Since there might be people around, I'll raise it after I get a bit far away.'

The 500 man boat moved quite a distance while rising up to the surface and by the time it had come above the surface it was quite a distance away from the shore.

Hansoo fixed below the boat with the Arun Wood and Kelk Mucus Sacs, shrugged his shoulders and, pulled a few Ghweche

Balloons to control the buoyancy of the boat and then started head towards the location where he told Camille that he would meet her.

‘Time to go catch it.’

The preparations were complete.

‘He will have to follow right? After getting robbed by a newcomer like this?’

Hansoo laughed coldly as he thought of the Cruise ship that was somewhere in the distance.

.....

Gyesoo made a shocked expression after seeing the mess Kalz Morenn had become when he came back.

Did he turn like this while going against that newcomer?

‘What is this. He was mocking me for it.’

Smirks tried to rise up from within but Gyesoo quickly maintained his expression.

The moment he does this then he will get burnt to death.

Though Kalz Morenn didn't seem like he was that agitated, Gyesoo knew instinctively.

That the Kalz Morenn whose pride has been damaged greatly was the most dangerous.

Kalz Morenn looked at Gyesoo and the Quadratus as he spoke.

“Let's go to the Calamity Fish.”

“Pardon? That's only after the Calamity Fish arrives here and eats the roots...”

Gyesoo made a confused expression.

There were 2 stages to the Calamity Fish tour.

The 1st stage where they watch the Calamity Fish gobble up the root.

The 2nd stage where they proceed inside the Calamity Fish up to a safe distance and then look around its insides.

‘Well. That's not really the goal of the tour to be exact.’

The reason why Gyesoo was still alive and why so many strong

people were gathered was because of the 2nd stage of the tour.

But Kalz Morenn spoke with a cold expression.

“No. We’re going now. I’ll take care of it. Let’s go. I’ll convince the other sightseers. Since they will be quite fed up by now.”

“ ... ”

Gyesoo and the Quadratus could not say anything due to Kalz Morenn saying this with an expression that told them that he will rip them apart if they were to disagree.

.....

“Hmm...”

Camille stared at the distant sea from the promised location.

‘...He’ll bring the ship to this location?’

Camille thought of the last words Hansoo had said during their conversation.

<This might be the end of traveling with you.>

<What? You said you’ll need me as a guide though?>



The insides of the Calamity Fish were quite complex due to many organs being tangled up with another.

Her guidance was needed to proceed on the safe and easy routes.

Hansoo replied to those words.

<I need your guidance to go on the safe routes but it seems like I'll be able to get on the quickest path if I'm lucky. Then your guidance won't be necessary. Thank you for your help until now but stay here. It'll be hard to travel while protecting you.>

‘What is he thinking of.’

Camille thought of the second attempt that she had with Gyesoo.

When they almost died because they made a wrong turn after going in without knowing anything.

That path was indeed very fast but also very dangerous.

‘Did he find someone to help him somewhere? It'll still be very dangerous though.’

Camille looked into the distant sea with a bitter expression.

# Chapter 65 – Galadriang’s Relic (3)

---

“It seems like you got quite angry.”

Kalz Morenn’s expression slightly changed at the mocking words of the person next to him.

‘Tsk. Goddamnit.’

There was nothing he could do.

It might be different for the Quadratus guys but it was a bit hard for him to do whatever he pleased against the sightseers here.

Everyone here were at least the clansmen of the twelve roots.

They might be weaker than him but they have cards up their sleeves.

And he couldn’t really say anything since he was the one who suggested this.

This will probably last as a debt.

He would need to pay the debt off no matter what it took.

‘Damned bastards. They said the 2nd part was more important

than the 1st part as well...'

The 2nd part, where they explore the insides of the Calamity Fish, was much more meaningful than the 1st part.

The clansmen would not have come here without any plans.

A captain of the shock troopers from one of the clans of the Twelve Roots looked at Kalz Morenn and spoke while laughing.

"Anyways, it seems we can see it now. Big ships are indeed better. They're faster too."

"..."

Kalz Morenn did not reply and instead looked at the 500 man ship in the distance.

Though that guy had started out first the ships made by the fairy were faster if they were larger.

"Shall we try throwing some spears since it's a bit boring? We need something to enjoy instead of the 1st part of the sightseeing."

He then proceeded to lift up few tens of giant spears and the people, including Kalz Morenn, made cynical laughs.

.....

Kuuuuuuuuu

Hansoo, who had created the Hardening Liquid using all the materials and had stored it within the <Selfish Wealthy man's Food Jar>, stared at the giant wall that he had arrived at.

A huge body that seemed like a wall.

Unlike before, when it only had its fins up above the surface, it had floated up to the point where one could see its sides.

As well as the breathing hole on the side of it.

‘With this you can tell that it's not just a fish.’

A huge hole on the side that was usually closed tight with muscles but opened when it came above the surface.

The breathing hole was small in comparison to its whole body but it was still huge enough for the 500 man ship to go through.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly as he looked at the breathing hole on the side of its body.

‘I have to go in through this place right.’

Camille had told him before he left.

<At first I almost died because I went in without knowing anything. The breathing hole is still dangerous but not as much as the mouth.>

Camille made a bitter expression as she spoke.

Since she had gained a huge loss because the lack of this single intel.

The ones who live in the breathing hole are dangerous but the mouth which the Calamity Fish breathes in and out of has tornadoes and huge waves crashing upon it.

At that time something flew over at an extreme speed along with a very loud noise from behind.

Kwaaaaa!

A single spear that had an extreme amount of force.

As if numerous skills were integrated into it, the spear was traveling across the distance of over a kilometer with a large amount of force.

It seemed like it was going to puncture right through the ship.

But Hansoo didn't deflect the spear that targeted the ship and

just dodged it.

Kudududuk.

As if the 3m long spear was proving that travelling over 1 kilometer of distance and still hitting the target wasn't pure luck, it put a hole right through the deck and even into the bottom of the ship.

Kururururu.

The toxic water started to enter through the hole on the bottom.

Papapang.

A few Ghweche balloons burst and caused the ship to sink a little bit but this problem would be solved if he shoved a few seeds down below.

But Hansoo just left the ship that was sinking bit by bit.

He just focused on advancing forward into the breathing hole.

'It'll be troublesome to earn suspicions by getting it to float again.'

Hansoo looked towards the cruise ship from the top of the ship

which was sinking slowly but was still advancing forwards.

No matter how strong somebody was, it was hard to throw a spear that could travel this huge distance.

The spear that Hansoo had just seen had six skills applied to it.

And they would've used a few more skills to shoot it over here as well.

Kalz Morenn did not have such skills as these.

'If he had them then he would've used them already.'

Which meant that the people on that cruise ship decided to go along with Kalz Morenn.

Boom! Boom!

Spears were flying in repeatedly.

The mast broke off and the decks were smashed apart.

During that time the giant cruise ship proved the fact that it wasn't slow just because it was large and slowly closed the gap towards Hansoo.



It seemed at a glance that there were over 200 people aboard.

Kalz Morenn alone was troublesome.

But Hansoo laughed.

Since it was better the more there was.

Hansoo shoved the information of the skills of each person into his head as much as he could.

The information of artifacts at the same time as well.

‘It’ll still be troublesome if they catch up though. I’ll make you a bit busy.’

It’ll be troublesome once they got on.

He needed to make some distance.

Hansoo took out something from his pockets.

‘It’ll be bad for me if it got released too fast. I’ll cover it a bit with the mucus....’

Hansoo covered something with Kikinon’s mucus sacs, which melted quite well in toxic waters, and then threw it into the sea.

Kururururu.

The mucus started to sink into the toxic waters while melting slowly.

Hansoo left behind the thing that was sinking behind the ship as he proceeded into the breathing hole.

And as soon as he entered the crossroads inside the breathing hole he abruptly changed direction as he moved towards a location that couldn't be seen from the outside.

‘I've arrived fine for now. The thing I do after this is important...’

Hansoo made a small torch out of the materials he had brought and then started to light the Ghweche balloons which he pulled out from the lower parts of the ship.

Tong Totong.

As he got the fire near a Balloon that was full of gas, the seed exploded in the air as it disappeared without a trace and the smoke was swept up by the storm-like wind swirling inside the breathing hole.

As the balloons that filled up the ship started to disappear,

Hansoo's ship started to sink quickly towards the deep underwater passages below the breathing hole.

.....

“Tsk. He got in first.”

Kalz Morenn made a regretful expression as he looked at the ship that went in first.

‘Chase.’

The speed of that guy's ship was slowing down.

If they chase at this pace then they'll be able to catch him fast.

At that time something crashed into the side of their ship.

Boom!

“Uuuk?”

Kwaaaaaaa.

Kalz Morenn made an annoyed expression at the unexpected crash as he ran towards the side of the ship and looked down.

‘It’s hard to clearly sense below the toxic waters. Annoying.’

The toxic waters had some weird substances mixed into it and as such it was extremely hard to see and sense what was coming towards them.

Kalz Morenn grinded his teeth after looking down at the sea from the side of the ship.

“Kraken? Why is this coming out here?”

Kalz Morenn and the other tourists made annoyed expressions as they started to pour down a storm of skills downwards.

Kraken.

Though it was only a terrifying monster in the movies, the problem was that the way it looked, the size of its body and its abilities were similar to that of the movie.

But everyone here were at the level of heroes who beat up those beasts in those movies and beyond.

Kwadududuk.

Kudududuk.

After dealing with it madly for a moment, it had already got lost from the sight of the ship.

As Gyesoo told them, the structure inside was quite complicated so it'll be hard to catch him once he escapes through the crossroads in the breathing hole.

‘He wouldn’t have been able to get far since the ship was sinking bit by bit.’

Kalz Morenn grinded his teeth as he chased that guy’s ship and then proceeded into the breathing hole.

“We’ll keep chasing...”

“Wait. Wait a moment. Mister Kalz Morenn.”

One of the other tourists spoke out after looking at the excited Kalz Morenn.

“We need to keep our agreement. We played chase on the way because our paths were the same as that brat but we do not want to waste time. We aren’t all here to play right?”

“...Damnable bastard.”

Kalz Morenn frowned but he could not really say anything back

because those words weren't wrong.

Kalz Morenn breathed in and out.

His anger had calmed down a bit on the way here.

His vacation ended here.

He had to accomplish his mission here.

And in the current situation they had no way of knowing which way Hansoo had gone out of the countless crossroads.

Though they might be able to find him if they chased but there was no reason for them to waste their time and help.

'I had to catch him before he got into the breathing hole... I'll kill you after we get out.'

Gyesoo took a glance at Kalz Morenn as he kept manipulating the controls of the ship.

Kyaaaaak!

The parasites, who lived and bred in the breathing hole, screamed and assaulted the people as they jumped down.

But the tourists simply ripped them apart or burned them off as if they were nuisances.

Gyesoo frowned after thinking of what had happened before.

‘We struggled that hard...’

After passing through numerous crossroads a much more different road than the ones so far appeared.

Gyesoo looked towards the people who were mumbling about and then spoke cautiously.

“Is it really fine? It’s really dangerous.”

Once they go left from here, various organs including the Lungs of the Calamity Fish would appear.

Though Parasites such as the ones just now existed there too and the roads were complicated, it was still very easy in comparison to that of the other side.

On the other hand, if they go right from here then the stomach comes out.

‘No... Can you even call that a stomach?’

Gyesoo shook his head.

The 118 of them who were with Camille had accidentally entered that place.

And only two of them survived and escaped it.

Kalz Morenn mocked them.

“Are you comparing us to you and the others? Go in.”

The other tourists laughed out loudly as well.

At the same time their expressions were full of excitement.

‘So the treasure vault is in there huh...’

The Sword that the Gyesoo guy was holding on.

<Relic>.

That was the reason why the people here had gathered.

For the forgotten artifacts that would be inside Calamity Fish.

That guy had told them that he barely managed to kill a few



specters on the outskirts while dealing with them, and had brought out the sword of the thing that looked like a common soldier.

But it was still that amazing.

Wouldn't they be able to gain much better things.

Squirm Squirm.

As they turned into the right crossroad, a large hole that was covered in muscles could be seen.

The giant muscle door that seemed like a mouth from one angle and like an anal sphincter from another expanded and contracted in size but its original size was so big that their giant ship could still go through it even when it contracted.

“Hmmm...”

The tourists gulped their saliva.

A dark curtain swayed between the muscle door.

“Then... I shall go in.”

Gyesoo lead the ship towards the dark curtain skillfully.

Chaaaaak.

The people frowned at the feeling of the strange material passing through their skin but their words could not leave their mouths after seeing the scene in front of their eyes.

“Huh...”

The strange space that existed within the Calamity Fish was much larger and wider than the Calamity Fish itself.

Especially the marble that seemed like it was burning that was stuck somewhere up high in the distance.

A single giant marble was letting out a white light from high above the sky as it lit up every corner of the space.

The space that the light shone onto had numerous rubbles of a crushed city and ripped tree roots covering it.

The sea below was so deep that the bottom could not be seen and above that billions of tons of city debris were stacked on top of each other to create a giant land.

It felt like they were gazing upon a humongous trash island.

‘City? No, it seems like it almost ate up a country... who was

living here?’

The people spoke out in gloom.

“...This wasn’t just an organism.”

There was no way a normal organism could have an space such as this inside them.

They were wondering what the strange feeling they had felt when they went through the dark curtain was but it seemed like it was a feeling that they crossed over to another space.

In the distance, tens of kilometers away, something opened as light poured in.

It seemed like the Calamity Fish started to drink up.

The people spoke out in gloom as they saw the waterfall-like water, rubble that rushed back and forth and the corpses of various beasts.

“It seems like we can’t go out towards that direction.”

The people made a slightly nervous expression but just shook their heads.

‘Well. If we get in trouble then we can just run out through the hole we came in on the ship.’

Hadn’t Gyesoo run away like that as well.

‘Though it might be a bit dangerous...’

Would they have come here without a plan?

They had all come because there was a method despite the dangers.

They had even brought the <Feather> with them.

Which meant their clans had cared about this that much.

“Land the ship!”

Kudududuk.

Soon the ship made grinding noises as it landed on the giant trash stacks.

“Don’t get too far ahead and let’s deal with the outskirts first! Don’t do any daring things that far exceed your skill level! We have to be careful!”

They shouted loudly but were nervous as well.

Then they started to slowly get off the ship.

.....

‘They should’ve arrived around now.’

Hansoo, who had arrived at a crossroad from the direction opposite to that of Gyesoo’s party, calculated the time as he prepared to move.

If he were to move now then he will arrive at the right time.

‘Though I’m thankful that you guys are fighting against Galadriang’s army... you should try a bit harder if you are doing it anyways.’

The army of <Galadriang>, one of the five great tiger generals\* of Elvenheim who had failed in the process of killing the Calamity Fish, had been cursed to roam in here for eternity.

And they were guys Hansoo had to get through in order to smash apart the core.

Scratching around the outskirts was not enough.

Those guys needed to fight a bit more desperately.

Hansoo poured in the Ghweche seeds into the bottom of the sunken ship.

‘Shall I go play with some fire.’

Soon the ship started to float up slowly and Hansoo controlled the ship like a submarine and headed towards the dark curtain that was connected to its stomach.

## Chapter 66 – Galadriang’s Relic (4)

---

Kudududuk.

<....>

<...!!!>

Strange looking soldiers were heading towards the tourists who had set up camp with the ship as the center.

Soldiers with strange helmets and armor.

One thing was clear, that they were not human.

They looked more like the elves from storybooks.

Though they had the look of a ghoul due to their skin having been pickled in toxic waters and their whole body being a mess.

“Damnit! Why did these things get killed in such an extreme location!”

Hundreds of soldiers from the spectre army were charging towards them while swinging their blades.

Kalz Morenn sent out explosive flames in all directions.

Boom!

The flames of <Scarlet Jade Orb> exploded out as the bodies of the spectres were shredded apart.

Splash.

But the shredded pieces of the corpses that were scattered around the toxic waters started to squirm as they began to slowly piece themselves back together.

Kalz Morenn frowned as he looked at this scene.

“Fuck...”

Unlike the curses that came out of his mouth, Kalz Morenn’s wasn’t feeling that bad.

Since it wasn’t labor without a prize.

“Let’s see...”

Kalz Morenn walked over happily and held up the axe the spectre was holding.

Hururuk.



The axe that was covered in the mana reinforcement of <Scarlet Jade Orb> blazed up as it created an intense red edge.

Chwaaak!

Kalz Morenn swung the axe in a wide arc and the spectres who were charging at him were dismembered into pieces.

Kalz Morenn made a content expression after looking at that scene.

Since the guys who were difficult for him to smash apart with his Scarlet Jade Orb were getting cut apart.

‘If I take a bunch of these and arm them... the overall power of the whole clan will rise incredibly.’

Of course the other clansmen here would take some for their own clans but he couldn’t do anything about them.

He could not fight with these guys unless he wants to start up a war.

That was a problem to be solved after getting out.

‘The ones charging at me first!’

Kalz Morenn then dismembered the ones who were charging at him and started to take the weapons of the ones he had skills.

And the other clansmen were doing the same thing also.

They started to madly take the Relics with greedy hands.

Though their numbers were only a mere 200, these guys were strong people who stood out in the Red Zone.

Though the army with hundreds of spectres were strong and seemed immortal, those things were quite lacking to obstruct them.

But Gyesoo grew nervous and then shouted out.

“You need to fight a bit more quietly! If you make loud noises then they’ll all gather here!”

Then the captain of the shock troopers of the sixth Root shouted.

“I don’t think it’ll be much of a nuisance even if all of these guys come over here? Hahahaha!”

Gyesoo frowned.

‘Damn... I told them that these guys were just small-fries.’

The cause of the massacre of their 118 people were not these guys.

Since they were quite excited when fighting these guys as well.

But Gyesoo shook his head.

The current situation was indeed much different from before.

Since these guys were strong to the point where they couldn't be compared to him.

Though these guys were scary, he was quite at ease having them in a strange space like this.

‘Well. We can just run away on the ship if it becomes different.’

His mind was at ease when he looked at the giant cruise ship.

He had never heard of a case where a 2000 man cruise ship got smashed apart.

Though making that thing was hard, it was something that guaranteed their safety above the sea.

But at that moment Gyesoo frowned.

‘...Huh?’

There were bubbles sprouting up from behind the cruise ship.

And then sounds of waters clashing were heard as something started to slowly come above the surface.

Gyesoo frowned after he saw this.

‘...ship?’

That was Hansoo’s disappeared ship.

By the time Gyesoo figured out the identity of the ship clearly, Hansoo’s 500 man ship had long gotten near their cruise ship.

They couldn’t really do anything about it anyways.

The ship which had hid its presence under the toxic waters had gotten close way too long ago.

But Gyesoo didn’t panic and instead a corner of his mouth curled up.

‘I wondered where you had hidden to... Is this the hidden card you had up your sleeve?’

Gyesoo laughed because he was flabbergasted.

The other clansmen had taken a glance at the ship as well but there wasn't anyone who ran over to do anything about it.

Of course it was hard to stop a ship that was coming in with that much force and they didn't really have spare leisure due to the fight but the main reason they ignored it was because they thought that the charging ship wasn't that big of a deal.

Boooooom!

And soon the 500 man ship crashed into the 2000 man ship.

Crack.

The side of the 2000 man cruise ship got pushed in with the sounds of wood breaking.

But that was it.

It had been pushed in a bit on the side but it wouldn't be a problem to ride on it.

On the other hand the 500 man ship had its whole front part smashed apart.

Gyesoo laughed after looking at this.

‘This is the expected outcome.’

The difference of durability between 500 man and 2000 man ships was very large.

And maybe it was due to the fact it came while submerged in water but it was quite slow as well.

How could something like that smash apart the cruise ship.

At that time something flew into the 500 man ship.

‘...What is that? A torch?’

The torch that had been thrown from somewhere in the toxic sea spun in the air as it flew into the bottom part of the ship.

Booooooom!

A humongous explosion occurred as it swallowed up both the 500 man and 2000 man ships.

.....

Boooooom!

Hansoo gazed at the exploded ship in the distance.

Tens of thousands of Ghweche balloons that were filled with toxic gases.

It might've been different under water but when tens of thousands of it exploded above the surface, a huge explosive force was generated.

Kwadududuk.

As the sound and the smoke from the explosion faded away, the result of the explosion was shown.

Chuuuk.

The 500 man ship had disappeared into dust and the giant cruise ship had the huge portion of the side, where the 500 man ship was, blown apart.

It was quite amazing that the giant cruise ship hadn't been cut in half from that explosion but the fact that it could not be used anymore was the same as if it was cut in half.

And as if the magic on the cruise ship had been dispelled, the ship that had been giving off a faint amount of light was now the same

as a piece of wood that was covered in soot.

“Goddamit!”

“Hey! Keep the formation! Don’t panic! We’re getting pushed back!”

Chaotic voices could be heard from the distance.

Hansoo laughed as he heard this.

‘One of them is done now.’

There was no way that these cautious guys would’ve come here with just this.

<Feather>

A piece of the countless leaves that had once covered the vast branches of the World Tree that was extremely hard to acquire now.

If one uses this then they’ll be able to escape along with a few people around them no matter where they were.

Even if the space was distorted.



The power of the World Tree was that great.

But there was one thing that these guys didn't know about.

The Elvenheim army that had become spectres after getting trapped within the stomach of the Calamity Fish.

The time period of when the Elvenheim was fighting against the 5 Great Calamities was said to be a time period where there were countless amounts of leaves on the World Tree.

Each person would have at least three to four for emergencies.

And unlike the small piece of leaf today which had a lot of restrictions on movement and the amount of people they can take, the ones they had back then could take one anywhere they wanted in the World Tree because it was a whole piece.

Were the Elvenheim dumb enough to get caught within the Calamity Fish?

The 5 Great Calamities were creatures that were born after taking into account the Elvenheim.

‘They’ll need to fight a bit harder now.’

But then he needed to do one other thing.

Since they won't struggle with all their strength if there is a hole to run away to.

Hansoo slowly swam towards the muscle door that was covered by the dark curtain.

‘Since it was hard to make I should use it properly.’

Hansoo saluted towards the future alchemists who had created this recipe with all their brainpower as he applied the Hardening Liquid onto his sword and started to madly swing it towards the muscle door.

.....

“This doesn't feel right. Let's get out.”

The small number of people who had come from the seventh Root nodded as they gathered in one place.

And one of them very cautiously pulled out something from their pockets.

A miraculous piece of leaf that was almost dried up but still had some life remaining.

It was named the <Feather> because it allowed one to move around freely.

The man clenched the fist with the feather inside it.

Crackle.

The moment the leaf was destroyed a strange power surrounded them.

“Hooh. It’s alright though. We made profit since we gathered up almost 30 Relics.”

“Let’s go get some girls after we get out. There will be quite a lot of pretty ones out of the newcomers. The ones who lived in the Otherverse are too overbearing that taking them... huh?”

“Huh? Huuhh?”

The guys who were chatting with relaxed expressions suddenly made confused expressions.

A green light had covered them up.

Which meant that the Feather had activated properly.

They should not still be here.

But the scene in front of them had remained the same.

“Huh? Why isn’t a working?”

“Damnit! What is this!”

Ther other people, who had similar thoughts as them, were making noises of panic from all around.

Kalz Morenn grinded his teeth then ran up to Gyesoo and growled at him after grabbing hold of his neck.

“Ignore everything else for now. What do we do?”

“Kuuukuhh.. Pardon?”

“How do we get out of this damned place!”

“Kuhuk... you just need to swim towards the entrance we came through... and wait until the Calamity Fish gets near land and then escape like that!”

Kalz Morenn’s rage diminished a little after hearing those words.

‘As I expected.’

If they stay here then they will all die.

The situation is much graver than before.

Since the spectre army was madly charging at them after hearing the explosion.

But their survival chance will increase by a large amount if they go through the dark curtain and then escape from the Calamity Fish once it nears land.

From what he heard it seems like the army over there could not get through the dark curtain.

If they do this then there wasn't even a need to swim over to land.

“Keep up the formation and continue fighting! Head towards the dark curtain!”

The dark curtain was quite a distance away but they could throw planks on the water and cross it.

‘Damn... They’re really strong.’

Stronger and stronger ones were coming as if the ones before were jokes.

At that moment the dark curtain thrashed back and forth.

To be precise, the gigantic muscle door that went around the dark curtain squirmed.

Kuuuuuungg!

And at that moment a strange vibration was felt along with a scream-like noise.

At that moment the muscles furiously contracted as the hole disappeared instantly.

“Fuck... what is this?”

The people fell in panic.

The hole they were going to escape through had disappeared.

And the spectres which were armed from head to toe were walking towards them.

If there weren't any unexpected events then they would've felt good for the gear they'll receive after killing these guys but the situation was completely different.

They had to now continuously fight those things without any escape routes.

They would've tried to sustain it on a boat if they had one but it has already been quite a while since that boat had been smashed apart.

“Let's hurry and find a different exit... damnit!”

Kalz Morenn, who was shouting loudly at the people nearby, quickly backed off at the feeling of something ripping through the air and flying towards him.

At the same time he activated every single skill he had along with the secret skill of the Scarlet Jade Orb, Scarlet Jade, and poured them onto the attack flying towards him.

Boooooom!

“Kuhuk...”

Kalz Morenn stared at the thing that had smashed through his mana reinforcement and even his Red Jade and given him a deep wound with an expression of disbelief.

For a captain of the shock troopers of lighthouse to be wounded like this from a casual swing.

“You are the captain huh.”

Kalz Morenn grinded his teeth while looking at the huge spectre

knight that had run over to them, which it had done so after hearing the loud noise of the explosion, and had swung the strange looking sword .

.....

Hansoo, who had been submerged under water using Ahol's Breath, stared at Galadriang's Army that started to gather up.

He had to smash apart the heart in order to kill the Calamity Fish.

The path on the way to the <Heart> would be easy if Camille were to lead him but the there are numerous unknown factors on the way.

But on the other hand, if he were to break the sun-like marble in the sky, the <Core>, and get to the Heart after weakening the Calamity Fish, the work at the Heart would be much easier.

But there was something he needed to kill in order to smash that Core.

The thing that Kalz Morenn was fighting currently.

The pride of Elvenheim who tried to smash apart the core and kill the Calamity Fish but had instead gotten cursed and trapped within this place.



He was fighting with Kalz Morenn and the others but the moment one attacks the core then it'll quickly run over and start attacking them.

‘I have to turn that thing into a mess before I continue.’

He couldn't kill it since it was immortal within this place but he just needed to buy time to break the core apart.

If he succeeded then the rewards, other than the Calamity Fish, were great.

Unlike the common Forgotten Sword, the weapon Galadriang had in his hand was not a normal weapon.

A relic for which all of the Alchemists of Elvenheim had combined all their efforts in order to create.

It will make his next objective much easier.

‘I should move now too.’

He wasn't quite satisfied yet.

He needed to be much more diligent in order to make sure that not a single unexpected event happens.

Hansoo glanced back and forth between the clansmen and the army of Galadriang who were pushing each other back and forth and then started to swim.

# Chapter 67 – Galadriang’s Relic (5)

---

Hansoo mumbled quietly towards a different curtain in the distance.

‘There is only one hole for these guys to escape through.’

There were numerous holes like the ones they had come through around the stomach of the Calamity Fish.

But in this huge space, they had to cross an enormous amount of land in order to get to a different hole.

If the other guys wanted to get out of here then they’ll aim for that hole in the distance without doubt.

‘I’m going to go wait for them.’

Hansoo made bubbling noise as he swam down below the surface of the water.

.....

Kudududuk.

‘Damnit.’

Lark, one of the clansmen from the Seventh Root, grinded his teeth.

50 strong people, including Kalz Morenn, were gathered in the distance and were barely holding back the spectre knight.

‘Fuck... We can’t beat something like that.’

Every time that knight swung its strange sword, the air split apart as the bodies of the people who were fighting him got cut apart.

Though they could hold him back for now, their injuries were slowly increasing in magnitude as time went on.

This was quite obvious actually.

How could they beat these guys who kept on coming back alive.

And another big problem.

The spectre soldiers and generals were slowly gathering towards them.

The ones who were roaming around this vast land were quickly charging towards them.

Others might not know but Lark, who was a captain of the shock troopers, knew.

Countless number of spectres were heading into the range in which he could sense up to.

They could hold back for now but they'll eventually be crushed by numbers if this went on.

They had to look for a chance.

But at that moment a chance appeared.

Boooom!

The spectre knight and generals around it flew back along with a huge explosion.

It seems like Kalz Morenn and the people around him had done something.

Thanks to them the attention of the spectre soldiers and generals which they were fighting against had been redirected towards the location of the explosion.

‘This is it!’

When Lark hinted with his eyes, a group of people poured every bit of skills they had as they ran away between the debris.

“Those sons of bitches!”

“Stop!”

Angry voices were heard behind them but Lark ignored it.

They had no reason to die with everyone over there.

‘Kuhuhuhu. Just hold onto that monster well over there.’

The location he would run towards had been set up already.

‘There were definitely other holes.’

He looked around the surroundings as soon as he came in.

Since his skill, <Soaring Hawk’s Eye>, allowed one to observe extreme distances.

And another entrance had come into his vision while he was using this.

‘Yeah. There’s no way that only a single hole exists in this giant creature.’

They started run on the shore where they were least likely to get surrounded on.

And he sighed in relief.

‘If we go on like this than we can survive.’

Though spectres continued to block their way but the faster ones had already run off to the battlefield so the remaining spectres were soldiers who were quite slow.

Though it was hard to go through them since there were quite vast in numbers and their injuries were increasing because of this but it seemed like that all 14 of them will be able to safely reach the hole at this pace.

And the thing that helped their escape.

‘It’s really quite nice.’

They smiled as they looked at the relics in their hands.

Every time they swung the weapons the air split apart and armors smashed into pieces.

Of course the spectres had these weapons as well but the weapon will change depending on the user.

They were much stronger than the spectre soldiers.

After a long time of running while smashing and killing, they had already approached the exit.

They just needed to cross the sea between the dark curtain and the debris now.

And that was a very simple thing to do.

“Let’s cross by throwing on some planks! Captain!”

While the others were full of glee, Lark, who was the captain of the shock troopers of the seventh root, flinched momentarily.

He then stopped everyone and then pointed towards a direction.

Everyone flinched momentarily but then understood Lark’s meaning as they started to pour skills towards the direction he pointed.

Boooooooooom!

Though they were still tired, their skills were still very mighty due to their power levels being the top of those in the Red zone and the eight explosive and long range skills endlessly smashed apart the location Lark pointed towards.



Then something came out from between the debris which had turned into dust.

And Lark, who had been watching this, chuckled.

“It was you. You bitch.”

“Woah, your personality isn’t really the best is it. Attacking without a warning.”

“You crazy bastard. Think of what you’ve done.”

That guy had smashed their ship.

And then he had closed up the muscle door somehow.

The reason why people were getting massacred over there and the reason why they had run away even in the middle of a life-threatening danger was all because of the things that this guy had done.

‘Wait.’

Lark stopped after thinking to this point.

If this guy had come here before them then he can close the dark

curtain over there also.

Since a guy who had closed it once could probably do it again.

“You bastard. What are you thinking of.”

Lark was a person who could not bear his curiosity.

The reason why he had asked to go in here was because he was curious about the insides of the Calamity Fish.

Lark stopped the attacks of everyone and then asked Hansoo.

But then Hansoo just shrugged his shoulders.

“Why do you need to know that. Come at me.”

Lark chuckled at these words.

‘Is this guy crazy.’

They were indeed weaker than Kalz Morenn.

But there was a reason why Kalz Morenn had to handle them carefully.

They were weaker than Kalz Morenn but they had 14 people and were equipped with Relics.

They were in a mess because they were running away from spectres but if that guy's level was exactly as he heard from Kalz Morenn then they shouldn't bicker around like this.

Lark erased the smile from his hands and then just charged at Hansoo after enveloping his whole body with skills.

There was no need to drag time in this place,

‘Clean him up before the spectres get here and then leave.’

The <Elf Fire> in Lark's hands smashed onto Hansoo.

Booom!

The Elf Fire made a huge noise as it lit up the surrounding area on fire.

But Lark couldn't laugh after hitting Hansoo.

No, he was actually frightened at something that was clenching onto his wrist very tightly.

Kudududk.

“Uuuk! Uwaaak!”

“Captain!”

The clansmen, who were leisurely jogging towards their captain, heard Lark’s scream and then dashed over..

A voice came from within the smoke towards them.

“I’m showing this to you guys first. Because I can’t use it at any time... due to a lot of limitations.”

A light flashed from within the smoke created by the Elf Fire

.....

Boooom!

“Die! You bastard!”

Kalz Morenn smashed the spectre knight that was running towards him into bits.

Crack.

Though his right arm had flown off from the spectre knight's attack, he had been able to smash it to bits.

But Kalz Morenn's expression was still very grim.

“Uwaaaa! Goddamnit!”

Kalz Morenn screamed out in despair after seeing the spectres charging at him from all directions.

During the time when he was dealing with the spectre knight, a large amount of the spectre soldiers and captains had surrounded them.

And the other clansmen who had seen Lark and his men run away started to steal glances as they started to run towards that direction too.

‘Goddamnit! It's all because I had to deal with a thing like that!’

Wouldn't Kalz Morenn have wanted to get out of here as well.

But the 50 people in front of him, and himself, could not escape.

Since the moment you turn your back to escape the spectre knight's sword would cut you into two.

‘Fuck. Anyways. We still killed it!’

Kalz Morenn trampled onto the pieces of the Spectre Knight as if he was venting out his anger on them.

The pieces were squirming as they were slowly gathering back into one.

‘Damn. This isn’t the time for this.’

Kalz Morenn organized his thoughts.

He had to run away at this moment when the spectre knight couldn’t get him.

A sword came into Kalz Morenn’s view as he spat on the ground.

The strange looking sword that the spectre knight had been using.

‘I should take that.’

“Damnit! Let’s get out everyone!”

The thirty of them who had turned into a mess grinded their teeth as they ran.

There was only one thing they wanted at this moment.

‘Damnit... I hope the ones who ran run away cleared the road properly.’

They wanted to rip apart the ones who had ran away ahead of them but they also wanted them to have left his place safely.

Since there would be hope for them as well if the others had escaped.

If the other guys had failed then the chances of them dying was also very high.

“Urhup!”

“Clear the road! Keep applying heals!”

The surviving thiry smashed apart the spectres as they struggled intensely.

It seems that Kalz Morenn’s battle was so intense to the point that it attracted every spectre around this area.

‘Damn. It seems like everyone would just die here no matter how many they have.’

Kalz Morenn was actually curious.

To as if taking control of the Calamity Fish from the inside was possible if they were able to come in like this.

There were a few people who had left behind legendary achievements in the Red Zone.

He had wondered if it would be possible with the power of his and theirs combined but he realized that it was impossible after seeing this.

How could they kill the Calamity Fish if they didn't even know what to do in order to kill it and had to fight this zombie army in the process of doing so.

Kalz Morenn madly poured mana into his sword as he slashed apart the spectre army.

After a while of crazily smashing through the road, the surroundings had cleared up a bit.

Kalz Morenn sighed in relief.

Since he could start to see the dark curtain in the distance.

“Just run a bit more! We can live!”



The people heard Kalz Morenn's shouts as they started to swing the sword in all directions.

But the people who were running could only stop and watch.

Corpses that were spread everywhere.

And the relics that were dropped.

A familiar face was sitting on top of those.

"Kang Hansoo... You bitch."

"It seems like I'm the villain when I appear at a time like this... But what can I do. I gotta do what I've gotta do."

"Pahah."

Kalz Morenn smirked.

It hasn't even been long since this guy had run away from him, did this guy lose all concept of fear?

He had become a mess but the gap between them was not something that could be closed with just that and he had also gained a new weapon.

‘Yeah. There’s no need for words.’

Kalz Morenn, who was about to rush in after pouring strength onto the sword in his left hand, flinched momentarily.

Hansoo had a slightly different aura from when he had seen him at the lake.

‘...Is it because he ate the runes?’

If he killed all the guys ahead and ate their runes then that amount would be monstrous.

But Kalz Morenn shook his head.

‘That’s not the important part.’

He was blocking their path when the spectres were chasing behind them.

Even if the one standing in front of him wasn’t Hansoo but was one of the 7 departed souls who wore a Hansoo mask, he had to kill them anyway so why did he need to think about it.

‘Damnit. I’ve got burnt too hard back then from this guy.’

“Huaaap!”

Kalz Morenn poured in mana into the sword and then swung it at Hansoo.

He then covered his whole body with the <Scarlet Jade> and then stretched the formless blade of the newly gained sword and stabbed Hansoo in the heart.

Kudududk.

‘Ha. I worried for nothing.’

Kalz Morenn smirked as he saw his sword penetrate that guy’s heart.

Though there was a sensation of something getting in the way at the edge of his hand but the sword he had obtained was of such a good quality to the point where it just went right through the thing in the way and stabbed into his heart as if it was tofu.

But Kalz Morenn’s thoughts stopped there.

Kudududuk.

Since Hansoo smashed his heart.

“It seems like the scales get penetrated right through. The relic really is well made. Anyways, thanks for the delivery.”

“Kuuuuuuhh...”

His consciousness started to quickly fade away after his heart was crushed.

As long as you are human you will die if your heart gets crushed.

No matter how high your runes are or what kind of skills you have.

And because of this Kalz Morenn could not understand.

‘...I smashed his heart, how is he alive.’

That guy looked way too fine for having his heart crushed.

No, it actually seemed like that he had shown him his own heart in order to pull him in.

Then he realized what the strange feeling that had gotten in his way was.

He had felt this before.

He had felt this a long time ago, when he was against the Demon race on the central island.

As the sword that was stabbed onto his heart got pulled out, he could see three hearts.

‘Racial Metamorphosis... Damnable bastard. Your reinforcement is horrid enough, you also have a bitch like special skill.’

Kalz Morenn’s consciousness faded away with that.

Hansoo then looked towards the sun-like marble in the sky.

‘Clear everything here before the time is up and then get to the core.’

He then jumped towards the thirty fatigued people.

# Chapter 68 – Cataclysm (1)

---

Reinforcements were basically imitations.

Something that helped a human imitate something stronger than them.

There were reinforcements created from imitating beastmen and there were reinforcement which imitated an intense flame like the Scarlet Jade Orb.

Some were created after imitating a tiger and some were created to imitate lightning.

Of course there were exceptions but most were like that.

Because of this the special skills were basically <A strong point of the thing you want to imitate> and due to this the main point of the special skills were set.

Becoming the exact thing that you want to become.

And Hansoo's speciality was related to this.

If he learns a skill then he receives the intentions and experiences of the creator or the user of that skill and assimilates it.

He can understand the skill better than anyone, increase the

mastery of the skill quickly and become closer than anyone else to the one who has mastered it before.

And the result in which such specialty and special skill combined to create.

<Racial Metamorphosis>

Booom!

“Kuwaaaaak!”

A clansman flew into the distance after getting his whole body crushed by Hansoo’s kick.

“Damned bastard! Die!”

Another clansman charged towards Hansoo after covering themselves with skills from head to toe.

‘Damned monster!’

They had all been killed by that guy.

‘Damnit. When did this get tangled up like this!’

They had thought that they could just watch the newcomers die

and take back the relics but for something like this to happen.

Keeerik.

Hansoo's reinforcement had been cut apart but they could not get through the scales.

Tough scales that showed higher defenses than armors.

But the clansmen did not give up.

Since they weren't alone.

Kwaaaaaaa!

A clansman who had charged him from behind shoved a greatsword into the location where he had cut apart with his dagger.

Crack.

A crack had appeared on the translucent scales.

And at the same time a rough noise was heard as the greatsword got shoved in towards Hansoo's chest.

Kudududuk.



But only that far.

The greatsword could not smash apart the ribs by the chest.

A clansman who saw this was shocked.

‘No way!’

No matter how high a person’s resistance is there is still a limit to the durability of human’s bones.

But that bone was so hard that the blade of the greatsword could not even leave a scratch on them.

Kudududuk!

Of course there was no need worry further.

The moment the formless sword in Hansoo’s hand flew across the air the bodies of the two closest people to Hansoo had been cut in half.

“Kuuuhh....”

The two people made groans as they fell, Hansoo looked at these guys and then looked at his body which was full of injuries.

The injuries were healing at an extremely fast speed.

He looked like a human from the outside but the insides were totally different.

A completely different muscle structure, heart and bones comprised of his body.

Unlike humans who would die from getting hit by a sword, the dragon race had barely no weaknesses and had high health so they survived in much harsher conditions than humans.

And because of this they were stronger by at least a few times even if they had the same amount of runes.

Actually there aren't any races who are weaker than the humans in battle.

And especially for those races who had skills made after them because humans wanted to imitate them.

‘But it’s still a bit burdensome.’

He knew the moment he learnt it.

That he couldn't use it all day and all night due to the low amount of masteries.

The difference between the Demon Dragon's and a human's body was still too great.

‘Time will solve everything I guess.’

Charururuk.

Hansoo, who had glanced at the extremely thin and transparent layer of scales on him, gathered up the runes on the ground and then collected the most useful artifacts out of the ones dropped on the ground.

He would gain the attention of everyone if he were to walk around with these things hanging off his body but he could just hide them with a cape.

‘This isn't the time to worry about other people's eyes.’

He could just throw them away if they become nuisances.

For the moment he needed to focus on increasing his battle power.

Since the biggest hurdle has yet to come.

Hansoo threw away the <Forgotten Sword> he had been using until now and then touched the <Galadriang's Relic> on his waist.

‘My runes are now at... around 35%’

If you think about how people take usually 3 years to raise the runes’ level to the next rank, then he had raised all at once to the amount he should have gotten after a year of hunting.

It would be much easier for him to get around from now on.

Kwaruruk.

Hansoo glanced at the spectres charging at him but then looked up towards the core up in the sky.

Hansoo started to quickly run before the spectres arrived on him.

Towards the tallest and closest location to the core which was stacked high with trash and debris.

He needed to charge through while Galadriang was dead and was struggling to get back.

After climbing up the mountain the Core was in his view.

The identity of the Core which was shining like the sun was revealed.

A humongous eye.

The eye, which looked quite small on the way, was bigger than the 2000 man ship.

The eye, which was giving off light in all directions, blinked as it stared at Hansoo.

‘I have to finish everything within 30 minutes.’

This was not something he could turn on and off at any moment.

Otherwise he would’ve used it already.

He had to smash the Core and crush the Heart before his transformation ended.

Hansoo, who had jumped towards the sun-like core, started to raise the tension of his body.

Since the Elvenheims hadn’t been killed and turned into spectres because of no reason.

Though there was still a quite a bit of distance there was no problem.

‘Footholds will come down.’

Hansoo then stretched the formless blade of his sword and slashed at the sky.

At that moment a change occurred.

From the dark curtain that the eye was attached to, tentacles started to pour out viciously.

Kadudududk.

Tens of thousands of tentacles.

Kudududuk.

The attack Hansoo made had cut off hundreds of tentacles but it couldn't reach the core as it dispersed.

This was the defensive system that protected the insides of the Calamity Fish.

There was nothing that protected the outer parts of the Calamity Fish.

Since it had no predators.

But as the inside is huge, the protection system for the inside was

very well built.

The tentacles that swim through the veins of the Calamity Fish will come out from the corners of the body if they deem an invader to be harmful to stop them.

Like a white-blood cell in humans.

If he had gone to the heart using a different direction then he would've still had to deal with these things.

That might be more dangerous for him who had a limit to the time of his transformation.

‘Well. This place isn’t really safe either.’

Here, the core, one of the main part of the body, there was dozens and hundreds of times more tentacles than in other parts of the body.

And the heart has even more.

‘I need to finish it quickly.’

The amount of tentacles that were surroundings his body were much more in numbers than the ones he could see with his eyes.

Though he had about 30 minutes left for his transformation Hansoo calculated that he had about 15 minutes instead.

He had to smash the core and crush the heart within this time period.

If not then he will just get shredded apart by the Tentacles that roam around the veins.

No, he wouldn't really be shredded apart.

He will just become like the spectres below.

He will become a calamity greater than Galadriang and then be reborn as a sturdy shield that will protect the Calamity Fish.

Chwarururuk!

Hansoo spread the Hardening Liquid onto his whole body and then applied them onto his blade.

He then proceeded to swing in all directions.

Chwarururuk.

His body, which had turned like a Demonic Dragon's, endlessly supplied Galadriang's Relic with mana.



His Magic Force spread into hundreds of strands due to the Relic, took a bit of the hardening liquids and then attacked the tentacles.

Kadududuk.

The tentacles screamed and squirmed as they were scratched from the formless blades.

Then they turned like stones as they fell to the ground.

The Hardening Liquid, which was made from the combined efforts of the Alchemists, was like a fatal poison to them.

Though it had been created with the Kukulja extract as the basis but the effect could not even be compared to it.

Hansoo madly slashed his sword as he proceeded forward by stepping onto the tentacles.

Kududuk.

The scales on his whole body got shredded off and his limbs repeated the process of getting broken and healing back.

There were a few occasions where he almost fell down when the tentacles that acted as footholds disappeared but there were simply too many tentacles coming at him.

Hansoo stepped atop the petrified tentacles as he continued to proceed towards the Core.

Chururuk.

After slashing continuously, the giant eye had come close enough to him to the point where it was within his range.

‘I’ve arrived!’

The eye glared at Hansoo as if it wanted to shred him apart but there was nothing it could do.

Since its only job was to create and maintain this space.

Kwaduduk.

A tentacle which flew in from afar broke through his ribs and then crushed his heart.

Hansoo could see the Eye smile.

But Hansoo also laughed towards the eye.

‘Laugh as much as you want.’

Chukunk!

Hansoo, who had cut apart the tentacle which had penetrated through his heart, stepped on top of it as he jumped over.

Then he used all the strength in his body and stabbed the eyeball.

.....

“You brats! What are you doing! Grab onto the tree!”

Camille Rowe frowned as she looked at the people running around on the ground.

On the waist of the newcomers an extremely tough looking rope was tied onto them.

One of the newcomers who were tying on the rope that were tied onto the trees spoke out in dissatisfaction.

“Damnit! Shouldn’t we be finding a ship during this time to run away! Or combine our strengths to get through the Gertas! You told us that you would save us but what is this?”

Everyone nodded at these words.

The giant fish had got close enough to the point where they could

see it themselves.

What kind of crazy act was this when such a thing was coming to eat them up.

Camille spoke as she thought of Hansoo.

‘He said to just smack them if they didn’t listen right.’

This was something she excelled at even if Hansoo hadn’t told her about it.

Especially towards the newcomers who didn’t realize their situation.

Kwaduk.

“Kuaak!”

“You bastard. I said to leave if you were going to leave right? Why do you keep asking me to clear the road for you?”

“Kuhuwuu...”

The guy who had made strange groaning noises just started to roll on the floor while grabbing ahold of his stomach.

The people glanced at that Camille and then quietly fastened themselves onto the Tree.

The newcomers, who had linked their body onto the thousands of thick woods in the jungle and to each other, looked towards the distant sea with a worried expression.

Actually Camille was worried also.

Since they would all die like this if that guy failed.

At that time something happened.

Guuuuuuunggg!

A scream which was filled with pain resonated throughout the atmosphere.

The people trembled in fear but Camille smiled in joy.

‘I don’t know what he did but he gave a hit!’

But soon Camille realized why Hansoo had told her to hold onto the tree.

The Calamity Fish, which had a expression of pain, started to throw up things.

Endlessly.

Camille knew what those things were.

Since she had seen them before.

‘Those are... the debris within the stomach?’

The huge amount of debris that poured out from its mouth dropped onto the sea as it created a huge tsunami.

Camille shouted widely.

“Hold on!!!”

And then the huge tsunami that was created in the distant sea swept onto the Root they were standing on.

.....

Kyaaaaak!

Black Blood was pouring out of the giant Core.

As the Core got damaged the huge space that was being sustained

by the core started to tremble.

At the same time the space shrunk down as the debris within it endlessly started to stab the insides of the Calamity Fish.

Kwaaaaaaaaa.

‘But this won’t kill it.’

Though it was struggling in pain it will start to heal again once it pukes out everything.

The Core required the most amount of energy so it was located nearby the Heart and received blood from the biggest artery in its body.

‘Let’s end this.’

If he were to go through this then he will reach the Heart.

Hansoo clenched his teeth as he jumped into the large artery which the blood was pouring out from.

# Chapter 69 – Cataclysm (2)

---

Kugugugugugugu.

The sea around the Root was in chaos.

Mikael Christopher, the patriarch of Lighthouse, one of the Six Pillar clans, made an expression of disbelief while looking at this.

“...It’s the first time I hear of the Calamity Fish thrashing about in 20 years.”

The Tsunami created by the Calamity Fish was sweeping through all directions.

The other adventurers of the Red Zone would be making similar expressions as well.

Since the fact that the thing that made such a thing thrash about did something close to pushing away a hurricane or a tsunami with their hand.

It meant that something affected an existence that humans could not fathom to deal with.

‘What the hell happened inside its stomach...’

Christopher looked towards the distant sea with a calm



expression.

.....

Kugugugugu.

The artery trembled crazily.

The poison that was flowing inside the artery was fatal in itself but surprisingly the perfectly balanced body of the Dragon Race withstood the poison while constantly pushing it back out.

Hansoo made exclamations inwardly.

‘As I expected.’

Then he thought to himself.

That a Human’s body was truly feeble.

The fact that they had survived in the Abyss for 50 years with such a body was almost a miracle.

No, even if it wasn’t just physical there were still many other things they lacked in.

If you look at the fertility rate of the Kakilas then each person

had to kill at least ten thousand to fit the numbers and their ability to work together was nothing in comparison to the Repron Race who shared the same experience and feelings with each other.

They might not be at the level of Dragons or Demons but there wasn't a single race weaker than the humans.

‘That’s why I’ve gotta do well.’

Hansoo, who had been thinking, clenched his teeth while looking at the tentacles rushing up to him.

<Altering> was something he would do starting from the Orange Zone.

He just needed to focus on the tasks of the Red Zone for now.

Kudududuk. Uudududuk.

Hansoo sliced apart the tentacles without stopping and at the same time poured out the hardening liquid in his pouch endlessly.

The Hardening Liquid started to quickly flow out into the torrent-like artery like a small paper boat caught in rapid waters.

Kyaaaaak!

The tentacles which touched the Hardening Liquid screamed as they squirmed their entire body.

The tens of thousands of tentacles which were charging towards him all turned into stones as soon as they touched the blood of the Calamity Fish which contained the Hardening Liquid as they got crushed as they fell on top of other pieces of tentacles and then turned into dust.

Chwaaaaak.

Even during this the tentacles acted as if they couldn't leave the invader alone and constantly stabbed into Hansoo's body.

Kiriririk.

The dragon's scales and bones were madly pummeled by the Tentacles as they started to crack.

“Kuuk!”

Hansoo clenched his teeth at the pain that was pummeling through his entire body.

Then he madly used up the Regeneration Runes he had stolen from the guys earlier.

‘Damn... This is the bad part of my abilities going up.’

The Regeneration Runes are something that was set on a human's level so it could not catch up to the increased health of the Demonic Dragon race.

One of the two hearts that had been crushed had regenerated but the heart that was crushed from the tentacle earlier had received a curse and was not regenerating.

But it was better to swing the sword one more time during the time he would complain.

Hansoo ruthlessly swung around the Galadriang's Relic as he cut up the Artery.

Hansoo, who had been rushing down at an extreme speed, caught his balance while clenching his teeth after looking at the distant light.

‘I’ve arrived!’

The fact that there was light meant that he had almost arrived at the <Divine Stone Fragment> which was inside the heart.

But that light was quickly covered up.

By the huge amount of tentacles which had gathered inside the heart.

‘Damned bastard. How does he not get a heart attack by having things like this in his arteries.’

The size of the heart befit the size of the Calamity Fish as it was big as a couple sports stadiums combined.

And hundreds of thousands of Tentacles were squirming around in this wide space.

The heart had prepared for the worst during the time the Core was getting attacked.

‘Damn. There’s more than I expected.’

He was scared for a moment.

To the point where he thought of retreating for a moment.

The tentacles gathered were showing off an oppressive aura.

But Hansoo clenched down onto his teeth.

‘Bullshit!’

Once he retreats then he will have to continue to retreat.

If he were to get scared and retreat to prepare himself again then he will have to continue to go backwards.

The few days he had spent preparing for this was regrettable already.

When would he climb up if he were to retreat here.

Every second was precious and the faster he moved, the higher the chances of winning as well as enabling him to save more people.

‘Let’s go.’

The tentacles started to rush up to Hansoo who was getting pushed towards them from the blood.

It was like hundreds of thousands of herrings charging to catch one measly anchovy.

Hansoo looked at these things and then opened up the pouch by his waist to the full.

This wasn’t the time to save things.

There wouldn’t even be a chance to use this if he failed here.

Soon the Hardening Liquid that he had prepared resonated with the earthquake-like beat of the heart as it spread out quickly.

Kyaaaak!

The tentacles quickly started to turn into stone.

The tentacles turned into stone after touching the larger amount of Hardening Liquid in comparison to the amount before and broke apart.

And Hansoo constantly searched for the direction where the Light was coming from during this time.

‘Divine... Divine Stone Fragment!’

A power plant which supplied all the energy throughout its whole body.

Logically speaking, how could such a large organism maintain its body by consuming things.

This thing didn’t even digest the things it ate.

It just stored them within the stomach that was maintained by the Core.

This thing wasn't born to eat something and use the thing it ate.

It was a creature born to just devour everything.

And the power plant which allowed such an abnormal organism to keep living.

<Divine Stone>

The thing which acted as the foundation of the World Tree but had now broken into numerous fragments, hid within a part of the Five Calamities and acted as the origin of the energy which allowed them to live on.

Something could be seen giving off light in the center of the Heart.

The thing which was lighting up the entire heart despite being covered up by tens of thousands of ligaments, tubes and mucus.

'Found it!'

The Divine Stone Fragment was within that thing.

Hansoo withstood the attacks of the tentacles as he charged towards the strange cocoon that shrouded the Divine Stone.



Kwadududk.

Then he madly started to rip apart tens of meters of cocoon which held the Divine Stone within.

‘This damned parasite!’

The Divine Stone was not something that was created to supply these guys with energy.

But they were draining that energy and using it to eat up the World Tree.

The Ligaments and Mucus were so tough and sticky to the point that the Galadriang’s Relic, which could cut anything, had to cut multiple times in order for him to proceed forward.

Hansoo’s remaining two hearts madly pumped blood into his whole body.

If the powers of his Magic Force had not multiplied a few times from his transformation into a Demonic Dragoneer or the tentacles had not been swept up by the Hardening Liquid then his whole body would’ve been crushed apart.

But even then Hansoo’s whole body was getting crushed bit by bit from the tentacles stabbing his whole body.

Kudududuk.

At that moment one of the hearts, which Hansoo had painstakingly regenerated, got smashed.

‘Kwaaaak!’

The amount of remaining hearts were now one.

Hansoo felt strength draining out of his whole body but then smashed apart the Cocoon crazily while clenching his teeth and dodging as many attacks as possible.

‘Bastards. Let’s see if you can still fight after your battery runs out!’

The Core, tentacles and the Calamity Fish all moved around with the energy from the Divine Stone as their basis.

The Divine Stone was that mighty.

On the other hand, these guys cannot continue to maintain this humongous body once the Divine Stone was pulled out.

About the moment when his left arm was destroyed to the point where it couldn’t act as a limb anymore, the Cocoon Hansoo was slashing at made shredding noises as it ripped apart.

Soon a light that looked like small sun stabbed down onto Hansoo's body.

‘Kwuuuu...’

As the Cocoon got destroyed and lost its usage, all the energy from the Divine Stone didn't get absorbed onto the Calamity Fish and instead burned Hansoo's entire body.

Hansoo focused all of the magic force within his body onto defense and then ruthlessly smashed down onto the ligaments of the cocoon surrounding the Divine Stone.

Once. Twice.

As he continued to smash down onto the Cocoon, the ligaments started to get cut apart one by one.

Tiing!

And suddenly.

The Divine Stone fell out from the Cocoon and then started to quickly sink onto the torrent of the heart.

‘Nope!’

Hansoo quickly tied the Divine Stone, which was the size of his head, with the Cocoons Mucus that he had cut off.

After covering it up until it was the size of his whole body the light started to fade.

‘It might even be due to the fact that the Calamity Fish’s stimulation which was applied to draw out the power disappeared...’

Anyways, Hansoo quickly stored the Divine Stone into his pouch.

Though the Divine Stone was indeed a stone, it was still something that the Elvenheims had created.

It seemed like it could be stored within the pouch.

The moment Hansoo pulled out the Divine Stone, the beat of the giant heart slowed down noticeably.

Kuuuuuunggg.

At the same time the tentacles slowed down considerably.

Since they couldn’t handle the huge amount of work after the Divine Stone, which supplied them with energy like a sun, disappeared.

But as if the remaining ones were trying to pour out the remaining bits of their rage, they squeezed out all of their remaining strength as they started to stab down onto Hansoo.

Pupupupul.

‘Kuhuk!.’

Hansoo groaned out loudly from the attacks which smashed onto his whole body.

The attacks had become much more fierce since the Hardening Liquid had dispersed quite a bit.

But he could not leave yet.

His goal was the Calamity Fish.

But at the same time killing the other ones.

He had killed the Calamity Fish but there was something he needed to get for the guys after.

‘Calamity Fish’s offspring!’

Though the Calamity Fish was a fish in name, it was closer to a mammal like a whale.

And surprisingly the offspring was placed in the heart to mature.

It would complete its maturing in the heart where there were plenty of energy from the Divine Stone.

‘Where is it!’

Hansoo was getting hit all over his body and cut up the tentacles as he searched for the offsprings.

And soon he was able to find it.

The offspring of the Calamity Fish which tried to run away somewhere by the arteries of the heart.

Though it was a baby, it was so huge that it was larger than whales.

‘Where are you going. You need to give me your heart.’

Hansoo madly swam as he chased it.

It would be impossible to beat an aquatic creature within the blood but that thing’s speed had slowed down quite a bit as if it had taken a gulp of the Hardening Liquid.

Hansoo rushed up to it and then stabbed his sword onto the back.

The offspring thrashed back and forth as it started to smash its body onto the walls of the artery.

‘Kuuuuuk!’

It’s size was a lethal weapon.

Hansoo spat out groans as he got crushed between the offspring and the artery wall.

But his hands and sword continuously slashed apart its body.

At the same time the tentacles which had followed them squeezed out the last bits of their strengths as they smashed Hansoo.

Hansoo clenched onto his teeth and then continued to reach deeper into the body of the offspring.

Kuuuuuung!

The Calamity Fish’s offspring made a cry of despair but it could not do anything against an invader within its own body.

Hansoo shoved his way into its body and then started to cut up

the heart.

To be precise, the most important seed of the heart.

Even if it was just a seed it was still as big as his head.

Hansoo cut it up and then breathed out heavily.

He had forgotten to breathe because he was fighting so hard.

‘It’s done!’

Since he had acquired the most important material to create the poison with, it was now time to escape.

Hansoo stored the heart he had cut up and then started to madly swim.

But at that time an attack flew up and then smashed Hansoo’s one remaining heart.

Puuuuk!

Hansoo couldn’t even scream out and instead exhaled roughly.

When he turned around he could see a few strands of tentacles turning stiff like a rock.



A final attack squeezed out from last bits of its strength after getting its energy supply cut off.

The curse had been lifted since the Calamity Fish had died so the hearts started to regenerate but all three of his hearts were currently injured to the point where they could not function properly.

‘Damnit... It needs to heal enough before my transformation ends.’

Hansoo gazed at the half smashed heart that was barely working as he started to slowly lose consciousness while clenching his teeth.

Soon Hansoo’s body swept down on the rapid torrents as he quickly disappeared into a corner of the Calamity Fish.

# Chapter 70 – Cataclysm (3)

---

“Hey. Hey.”

Smack smack.

“Kuuuuuu....”

Hansoo clutched his head and then got up after feeling somebody slapping his cheeks.

It felt like his whole body was getting smashed apart.

His transformation had long disappeared.

‘But it seems like I regenerated quite a bit since I’m alive.’

Hansoo quickly regained his senses as he checked the person urgently calling for him

‘Is it an ally? Or is it Camille?’

Though he didn’t know who it was but it didn’t seem like he was being restrained or was trapped somewhere.

‘Were they just looking over me the whole time?’

Since it seemed like they left his unconscious body alone it seemed like they didn't have enmity.

But Hansoo's expression quickly turned fearsome as he verified the thing which was slapping his cheeks.

The fairy smiled while looking at Hansoo.

"Eyy. Why are you doing that with our relationship. Heehee."

"...What made you to come out all the way out to the Red Zone?"

The fairy smiled brightly.

"We really usually don't come out but... this isn't some everyday event right?"

The fairy then looked at the surroundings.

The huge Calamity Fish which had turned into a corpse under Hansoo's hands.

The fairy spoke with an expression of admiration.

"Well you know very well. That we make sure to give rewards. But we didn't really think that somebody could kill this so we don't have any runes or artifacts... we don't really have anything

prepared.”

“ ... ”

“But then it’ll be too sad for our precious friend who struggled this hard right? So we came to give you a small gift.”

Then the fairy looked at Hansoo as it smiled in glee.

Hansoo looked at the Fairy as he spoke.

“Strange. It wouldn’t really be fun for you guys if I were to get stronger.”

The fairy clapped at those words.

“So we pondered for quite a while! As to how mister Hansoo would struggle more and fight more desperately. Then we came into a conclusion.”

“What is it?”

The fairy smiled as it spoke.

“Do you want to receive them one by one? Or do you want to receive them all at once?”

“...?”

Then the Fairy pulled out one of the skills it had brought along.

Hansoo’s eyes trembled after seeing this.

‘Solo Numbering’

Solo Numbering skill number 8.

<Lord of the Dead>.

It was different depending on the mastery of the skill but it was an extremely fearsome skill which allowed one to raise the ones who they had killed into spectres and allowed the usage of the special skill, <Death>, during the day.

An amazing skill which fit the title of Solo Numbering.

He then realized what the fairy meant when it asked him about receiving them one by one or all at once.

“If you want to receive the reward for killing the Calamity Fish then I’ll give this to you right now. And everytime you kill one more then I’ll give you a skill at a similar level as this.”

“ ... ”

“But on the other hand, if you deny this now and fail to kill even one of them then you won’t get anything. It’ll be harder too. But if you were to kill them all.... Then you know right? That we calculate the reward according to the struggle perfectly right?”

Hansoo knew what it was implying.

And it probably knew also.

As to what his answer was.

“I’ll see you later.”

“As I expected, I like you because you don’t disappoint us Heehee. Be strong!”

Hansoo shook his head as he looked at the disappearing fairy.

Though it seems like he had made his decision on a whim he actually thought about it a lot.

Since the upcoming road he would need to take would be very harsh.

If everything rolls out according to his plan and stronger and more influential people learn of the knowledge he knew as the future information slowly got released, the invasion of the Abyss

will hasten as well.

His path was basically a fight against time during which the chances of the invasion of the Abyss being faster than the 5 years of the past was likely.

Whether the invasion of the Abyss is faster.

Or him getting from the Red Zone to the Violet Zone and waiting for the invasion after finishing his preparation.

The previous choice would put him at a disadvantage and his plans had been set for the latter choice anyways.

Doing well until the Indigo Zone but not being able to finish the preparations on the Violet Zone due to the invasion being faster than expectations... This was not succeeding.

It was just failure.

The amount of time given was a bit too tight for him to proceed safely and prepare perfectly.

If you exclude unexpected events then it meant you needed to reduce as much outside influences and run as fast as possible.

<Which means that we need to run until our soles get sweaty right! Hahahaha! Wow this is much more tedious the more I think

about it. I suddenly don't want to go back to the past.>

Kangtae's words suddenly rose up in his head.

Anyways, since this is the situation, every skill like that would give Hansoo a great amount of strength.

But Hansoo chose the latter choice.

Since he wasn't finished after just clearing the Red Zone.

It would be harder on him during the Red Zone but if he succeeds then the reward would be tremendous.

He would have much more freedom in the Orange Zone.

'They didn't even have rewards for the Calamity Fish in the plan of the Red Zone anyways.'

No one had killed the Calamity Fish before.

How could he just plan with a notion of <They'll give something good> here.

One always needed to take account of the worst case scenario when making plans.



‘It’s all done then.’

Hansoo got rid of the thoughts of the fairy from his head and then checked his body status.

He didn’t know how long it had been since he fainted.

He needed to check his current situation quickly and then move out.

‘Please... Please be here.’

Hansoo started to check his belongings.

Other things were ok but he could not lose 2 things.

The Divine Stone Fragment was important but the Relic which acted as the <Key> was also important.

‘Hoo. You did good. My unconscious self.’

After opening his pouch he could see the Divine Stone firmly encased within the cocoon and the heart which he had pulled out from the offspring of the Calamity Fish was there as well.

And he was firmly holding onto the Galadriang’s Relic with his hand.

It seems his energy lasted even while he was unconscious.

His heart was fully recovered as well.

‘This is good enough.’

Hansoo sighed in relief and then gazed at the Divine Stone Fragment.

A fragment which was letting off a blinding white light.

Though it was pretty calm now, it would start to pour out a frightful amount of energy once it gets stimulated.

Like it had been inside the Calamity Fish.

‘My overall power level has gotten quite better also.’

Hansoo, who had been staring at the amount of runes that had risen and the Galadriang’s Relic, made a just-in-case like expression as he opened the pouch again.

‘Since I don’t know what will happen.’

Hansoo then very carefully started to scratch the Divine Stone Fragment.

Though it was extremely hard, the fact that it was a fragment meant that it was a piece which had been broken off already.

When Hansoo carefully stimulated the cracks in various parts of the Divine Stone Fragment, a small piece dropped off.

An extremely small piece, a fragment which wasn't even the size of one grain of rice.

It was extremely small in comparison to the head-sized Divine Stone Fragment but Hansoo carefully picked it off, covered it with the cocoon and put it back into the pouch.

‘I don't want to use it but... I should prepare it for emergencies.’

Hansoo created a few more and then thought of the next stage.

‘The next guy should be <Devouring and Vomiting Root>... It should start to move soon. I can't calculate since I don't know how much time has passed...’

The reason why their territories were set was because they didn't have a good relationship with each other.

There was one World Tree they wanted to eat but many had jumped onto it.

Since the Calamity Fish has died, the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> will start to move seriously.

‘I need to collect many more Gehwche seeds before the Root starts moving.’

This time, tens of thousands would not be enough.

He basically needed to gather hundreds of thousands of them.

‘I’ll go to the Gehwche Colony. I hope no more than 3 days have passed.’

But from the fully recovered heart, it seems like quite a long time had passed.

Hansoo quickly ran outside.

.....

In the location a bit off from the Root where it was originally a sea.

Now it had become land from the corpse of the Calamity Fish and the debris it had thrown up and many people were roaming around in his place while digging around the debris.

“Find it quickly!”

“This is our side! Lighthouse is that side! Why are you coming all the way here after negotiating it!”

“Uwahahaha! I found it! This is amazing!”

Oooooong.

The people who had divided up the areas and were now searching for the Relics of the spectres, who had now turned into dust, found them and then swung them in air with a content expression.

Of course there were people who had gears better than the Relics.

But a Relic which allowed for various different attacks and had an edge on every part of the weapon would be of great help.

There was nothing much to say about the people who had worse weapons than the relics.

And because of this the high-ranking clansmen of the Six Great Pillars, The Twelve Root were madly searching around his giant trash island.

Part of them searched the inside of the Calamity Fish and part of them searched outside the corpse endlessly.

But Michael Christopher, the patriarch of Lighthouse, made a dissatisfied expression.

“How is there no reward for catching this humongous thing?”

Liu Hong, who was the newly appointed captain of the shock troopers, nodded at those words.

“I don’t know why but it didn’t spit out any runes. And it seemed like there were two extremely important looking areas but one had been crushed already and someone had already taken something out from the part that looked like the heart.”

“Hmm...”

‘Tsk. There’s no way to know what happened inside either.’

There weren’t any messages or Blue Carrier Pigeons.

He had searched around just in case something was blocked off or hidden but there was a limited amount of intel he could acquire from the already dead Calamity Fish.

Liu Hong spoke towards Christopher.

“Anyways, everyone’s nerves are getting on edge more and more. It has been quite a while since they had all gathered in one place like this so...”

“Damn.”

There was quite a large amount of Relics.

But the just because there was a large amount of Relics did not mean that they would all get them equally.

And due to this the clansmen were edgier and edgier.

“Any other reports?”

“One of the Seven Departed Souls is heading this way.”

“...Didn’t they die yet? I thought that they all died around the Branch since they weren’t seen for quite a while.”

Michael Christopher frowned.

Even he, who did not fear anything, could only feel pressured by these guys.

Christopher frowned as he spoke.

“Tell them to prevent as many collisions as possible. Since it’s dangerous.”

“Yes.”

He didn't know how the power struggle was going to play out from this incident.

He needed to maintain as much of his forces as possible during this period when everyone was edgy.

Losing Kalz Morenn was a huge loss already.

He could not lose any more than this.

‘Anyways where is that guy?’

Kalz Morenn had reported to him before he went in.

That there was a dumbass going in with the Calamity Fish as the target.

But he knew now.

That guy was not a dumbass.

The giant corpse of the Calamity Fish in the distance proved this.

Rumors about this guy will spread across all of the Red Zone.



‘I hope I can find him.’

But Christopher didn’t have many expectations.

They hadn’t finished their search in the Calamity Fish because it was so big but it had already been 3 days since the Calamity Fish died.

The fact that the guy had not appeared yet meant that he had died.

Even if he was alive, why would he stay in a place like this.

At that time, when he wasn’t really expecting anything more, one of his underlings shouted out.

“They say they’ve found him!”

“Huh? He’s still here after three days?”

Christopher made a happy smile.

.....

Dududududu.

A deep part of the World Tree Root.

Something that was huge and had the shape of a Root, and was sucking onto the toxins rising up towards the Trunk through the Interior, stopped suddenly.

<...>

It should be able to feel the vibrations made from the bastard who lives in the sea as it chews onto the World Tree roots.

Since there was no way to not know about the vibrations that occur when it starts eating.

But even after a long period of time the vibrations were not happening

<...>

The Root-shaped creature started to get curious.

There was no need to suck on the toxins of the World Tree if that thing didn't exist.

Since it could just go directly to the sea and suck it out.

Soon the Root, or even Snake-like, looking creature opened its

huge mouth, let go of the World Tree Root it was biting into and then started to dig down into the ground.

Towards the toxic sea which was the territory of his rival.

# Chapter 71 – Incursion (1)

---

“What shall we do? If we move with haste then there is a possibility to create friction with other clans.”

Michael pondered at the words of Liu Hong, the captain of the shock troopers.

It had already been 4 years since he had come into the Otherworld.

He had gone through a lot in the Otherworld.

He had trampled on those who tried to kill him and used the people who would benefit him no matter how.

He didn't know whether his actions were correct or wrong but after a while of doing similar actions, he had felt that he could get some form of sensation.

Whether he needed a person or not.

Whether a person was somebody he could approach or not.

A sensation came to him.

‘I think that if I get rid of the poison then there will be some very sweet meat.’

He won't be easy.

Like how a pufferfish becomes an extremely tasteful material once one gets rid of the toxins, Kang Hansoo will puke out a lot of things like how a strong monster dropped a lot of things.

“Get him. I'm also curious as to what he gained inside there too.”

Liu Hong nodded at those words.

That guy had pulled something out from the Heart.

That was likely the reward for killing the Calamity Fish.

No, even without that. That guy was the sole survivor that knew of its insides.

He was somebody they needed to catch due to many different reasons.

“Catch him before you clash with the other Clans.”

Liu Hong stopped while sending out the Blue Carrier Pigeons in all directions and the spoke while laughing.

“It's not likely that we won't be able to catch him before he gets

to a different clan's territory.”

They had come down with 5 teams of shock troopers consisting of 12 people each and 10 search teams of 20 people each since it was quite an important event for them.

They couldn't take a lot of people in order to maintain the power up above on the Pillar but other clans were like that too.

One single search team could destroy most normal people.

And one of those search teams had tailed Hansoo and others were quickly heading towards the location where the Blue Carrier Pigeons pointed them to.

‘What could have changed in a week.’

They had said that he was quite strong for a newcomer.

Since he was strong enough to beat back Kalz Morenn.

But they didn't believe that they won't be able to catch him.

Though that guy had killed the Calamity Fish, if such a thing could be killed with strength then that guy wouldn't have run away from Kalz Morenn in the first place.

Even if that guy had gained something amazing not much would change.

‘I should still go.’

Liu Hong quickly moved as he sent the Blue Carrier Pigeons towards the leaders of the shock trooper teams and search teams.

.....

Boom!

‘Hu-uk!’

Kugan, a member of one of the search teams who were following him, grinded his teeth and backed off as he felt his defense skill get chopped off.

‘Goddamnit.’

Though they were just a part of the search team, they were still clansmen of Lighthouse.

They could fight somebody from the shock troopers of the Twelve Roots one on one.

They had equipped themselves with survival-related skills since

there were a lot of dangerous situations.

But every time that crazy sword cut through the air, their skills were getting smashed apart despite being tens of meters away.

“Goddamit! Close the surrounding net!”

And the moment you got scratched by that guy’s sword your blood would pour out.

The search area for Hecate, an enemy clan, was around here.

And they couldn’t leave behind the injured in such a place.

Because they had to take the injured with them the speed at which they were closing the net was slowing down.

And what hurt his pride even more was the fact that the guy over there wasn’t running away despite knowing that he was being chased.

‘That bastard, is he looking down us?’

That guy was constantly disappearing and appearing around the Kukulja lake even whilst swinging his sword.

‘Let’s see how long you can run for.’



The Blue Carrier Pigeons should arrive by now.

Which meant that everyone will gather towards here.

Once more search teams get here and the shock troopers get here then it'll be the end for this guy no matter how talented he was.

Hansoo, who had been running around the Kukulja lake and collecting the Gehwche seeds, clicked his tongue at the guys charging towards him.

‘Annoying pests.’

An information which Hansoo had acquired on the way out.

‘For 3 days to have passed.’

He needed to collect Gehwche seeds in order to go into the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> but it seemed like he won't be able to collect the amount he needed at this rate.

There were tens of thousands of lily flowers which had the Gehwche seeds floating around the top of the lake next to him but it was very difficult due to the guys behind him sticking by so closely.

Hansoo shook his head after watching the guys chasing him from

behind.

‘There’s no time to collect them all. If you like me so much then... I should fulfill your wishes.’

Hansoo stopped running around the Kukulja lake and pulled something out from his pouch.

The heart of the offspring of the Calamity Fish which he had acquired before.

And the core part of it, the Seed.

Because even the heart of the baby Calamity Fish was so big, the core part was still the size of his head after cutting it out.

Hansoo cut out a palm sized piece from that thing.

He then shook off the people pursuing him a little bit then started to madly run around the Lake and collected materials.

‘Arumkal’s Scent Sac... I collected Essence of Aron just now I need Gon’s Horn.’

<This is a bit dangerous but it’s a method for when you can’t collect all the seeds in time. Only use it during emergencies.>

‘Awaking after 3 days of being unconscious is an emergency.’

Hansoo swung his sword backwards a few times and then quickly started to head towards the Gon’s Habitat near the lake.

Kwaaaaaaaaaaa!

At that moment something popped out from the ground and attacked Hansoo.

The Gon, which had the shape of a lizard with three horns, suddenly popped out from the ground and then tried to bite Hansoo with its giant jaw.

Though it had a slow movement speed, it moved under the ground and then ambushed somebody above the ground with lightning speed and crunched them with their jaw.

Hansoo flinched after seeing the Gon that had popped out.

‘...Three?’

The End Root here was not a place where a Three Horned Gon came out on.

It was at most Two Horned.

Three Horned was a much bigger version that came out much farther above the Middle Root.

And because of this, Hansoo knew immediately.

‘It’s almost here.’

The fact that something that should’ve been above is down here meant that the Devouring and Vomiting Root was steadily heading towards their direction.

Hansoo condensed formless sword that he had elongated earlier and then stabbed it between its jaw and the cervical where it wasn’t covered with bones.

Kwaduduk.

The formless sword which had gone in between the gap spread out inside the neck and then cut off all the blood flow and nerves.

Kuduk.

Hansoo, who had turned it powerless in an instant, cut off its horns and then frowned slightly.

‘If it’s a Three Horned one then the effect might be a bit stronger than I expected...’

But this wasn't the time to worry about such things.

Hansoo crushed the piece of Calamity Fish offspring's heart, turned it into paste and then quickly mixed on the newly attained Gon's Horn and other materials.

The mixture in Hansoo's hands quickly turned black as time passed by.

But unlike its color, it started to pour out a very pleasing scent in all directions.

And Hansoo, who was smelling this strong scent, quickly threw it into the pool.

The moment the mixture in Hansoo's dropped down into the waters, it disappeared very quickly.

At that time something flew towards his head at an extreme speed.

'<Sword of Light>. A skill like this...'

Hansoo frowned at the sword that was slashing down towards him from the skies and then slashed his own sword as he split the translucent sword in the sky in two.

Kudududuk.

At the same time Hansoo jumped into the Gehwche Habitat near the Kukulja lake.

Hansoo, who had been standing around tens of thousands of lily-like flowers, spoke towards the people coming down one by one.

“Why are you chasing me so hard. We won’t see each other in the future anyway.”

Somebody else answered this question.

“That’s not something you decide. I have a lot of questions.”

Michael, who had arrived along with Liu Hong as his guard, laughed as he looked at Hansoo in the distance.

There really wasn’t a need to come but he had come all the way here because he was curious.

‘If you killed the Calamity Fish then that’s enough to make me come see you.’

There wasn’t just one or two things he was curious about.

How he had killed the Calamity Fish.

How he had survived the insides of the Calamity Fish.

What he had obtained after killing that giant thing.

And most importantly.

<Is there a possibility to kill the other Four Calamities>

If you could kill the other Four Calamities or even know their fatal weaknesses then the Red Zone's governing style will change completely.

‘It's also not bad to engrave my name before I go up.’

Michael laughed as he finished his thoughts.

“Why are you trying to do something that hard by yourself. It'll be so much easier if we help you. You can kill the others ones right too?”

Of course the killer of the thing would change if he were to act together with Hansoo and the reward ratio will be slightly, or even largely, changed but it would be a win-win for both.

Good for him and good for that guy.

‘He will say there is.’

Because there wouldn't be a need to keep him alive otherwise.

Rumors had been spread already.

That Lighthouse had received a large amount of damage from one newcomer like a bunch of retards.

Of course members of other clans had followed in too but the single fact that Kalz Morenn lead them was a disgrace on its own.

If that guy didn't know how to deal with the other Calamities then it would be much better to just take the thing that guy obtained from inside the Calamity Fish and then kill him.

At that time a very faint vibration could be felt from beneath the earth.



Kududududu

“...?”

‘Did the structure of the Root get weaker from the tsunami that the Calamity Fish made?’

If not then there wouldn’t be such a thing like an earthquake occurring around this location.

While the people were making confused expressions and tried to activated their Searching Skills, Hansoo answered Michael’s question.

“Of course I can kill the other ones.”

“!”

“I was just about to go there. Since you’re going to help me I thank you. Let’s go together then.”

Boooooom!

At that moment the surface broke apart something rose up above the surface of the Kukulja Lake.

A gigantic root that looked like a tree root from one glance but

was moving in a way that a plant could not.

The tens of split up mouths on the end of the root along with thousands of teeth that were the size of a man constantly opened and closed as they ate up the toxic waters.

Michael frowned intensely after seeing this.

“...Devil’s Mouth? Why is this here?”

<Devil’s Mouth>

It was a thing located within the deepest parts of the dungeon within the World Tree Root.

The thing that was estimated to be part of the <Devouring and Vomiting Root>.

Actually, nobody knew what the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> looked like.

Since there wasn’t a single story of somebody surviving after entering that mouth.

The skin of that crappy looking root was so tough that nobody had been able to damage it so far.

Since nobody had been able to see its true body, one of the Four Calamities was better known as <Devil's Mouth> instead of <Devouring and Vomiting Root>.

But it was usually quietly sucking the World Tree's toxic waters, why did it come all the way out here.

And he had never heard of that thing thrashing about madly like that.

“Uwaaaak!”

“Uaak! Go up and dodge it!”

“Damnit! How do you want me to dodge this!”

The mouth of the root that was extended from the ground was tens of meters in diameter alone.

Multiple tens of these were rising up from below.

Michael quickly sent messages to the Search Teams that he had previously ordered to search other locations.

Then he frowned intensely.

‘Damnit. Other places aren't like this, why is it like this here!’

The root that popped out was drinking onto the toxic waters of the Kukulja lake as if it was thirsty and the waters of the giant Kukulja Lake was disappearing at a rapid pace as if a stopper below the bathtub had been removed.

But the problem was that the surrounding terrain was getting destroyed and they were getting sucked into the mouth at a rapid pace.

How could they dodge properly when the ground beneath them was falling apart.

Hundreds of clansmen who had come around here were getting sucked into the mouth below.

Hansoo laughed coldly as he saw this.

‘It arrived earlier than I expected. Good.’

The Root and the Mouth which had rushed in after getting lured from the scent of the Calamity Fish’s offspring was drinking up the Toxic Waters while the large amount of Gehwches and their seeds were getting carried along in there with the water.

Though everything had proceeded according to his plan but it was more dangerous because of this.

Hansoo tensed up his whole body.

<Devouring and Vomiting Root>

A thing that steals the Toxic Waters that flows through the Interior of the World Tree Root.

Since it drinks up the Toxic Waters of the World Tree, which acts as a purifier and turns the Toxic waters into Nutritional Fluid, that alone makes the amount of Nutritional Fluid dry up.

But the reason why that thing was called a Calamity was not just because that mouth acted as a tool for sucking in the toxic waters.

It was a thing that puked out all the beasts that were born from the <Main Body> deep inside the earth into the area of the World Tree through its mouth.

It was dual structure root.

Unlike the <Outside Mouth> which was for drinking, the Inside Mouth was a passage which constantly vomited out beasts.

And he had to go in because of this.

So he could get to the Main Body.

‘Let’s go.’

Hansoo breathed in and out deeply as he saw the beasts popping out from within the mouth, clenched his teeth and then jumped downwards.

# Chapter 72 – Incursion (2)

---

Kyaaaaaak!

Hansoo shook his head even while jumping down as he saw the huge amount of beasts in the inner parts of the mouth.

That was just the start.

‘There’s going to be more of them from now on.’

The Calamity Fish and Devouring and Vomiting Root had similarities and differences.

The similarity was that they were both impossible to kill from the outside.

Their main habitat was either the deep parts of the ocean or deep within the earth inside the World Tree’s Root where it was hard for humans to reach.

The outer skin was so tough to the point that a human injuring it was almost impossible and even if one did manage to damage it, if you take account of the fact that you need to count their giant size in kilometers then any plans from the outside was futile.

And he had to attack it from the inside because of this.

The Calamity Fish had left the inner defenses to the tentacles but the Devouring and Vomiting Root didn't really have a need to create a defensive system due to its peculiar trait.

The beasts, who were created from the <Plant>, would endlessly charge out through the tunnel.

Even if they made their way through while killing the beasts, they'll still be trampled by the other ones who would continue to charge.

‘This is why I gotta solve that before I go.’

The outer mouth was endlessly sucking in the Toxic Waters with a powerful suction strength and the beasts of the inner mouth were roaring in glee as if they were waiting for food to be dropped.

Hansoo stepped atop the teeth that were on the outer parts of the inner mouth as he bought a bit of time.

‘Well. There's a few guys copying me.’

Hansoo shook his head towards the few clansmen who he could see in the distance.

It'll all be in vain.

Once all the surface around here gets crushed and the Demon



Mouth completely fills this place up, those guys will be given two choices.

To either drown by going into the Outer Mouth where the toxic waters were going into.

Or to go into the Inner Mouth before the entrance closes and fight with the beasts.

Once these things close their mouths then they'll all get swallowed even if they're bouncing atop the teeth.

‘A moment is more than enough.’

Hansoo, who jumped in place a single time, pulled something out from his pouch.

A small Divine Stone Fragment which was the size of a rice grain.

Hansoo took a glance at the Divine Stone Fragment and then scooped up a bit of the baby's heart from his pouch.

‘I need to use it a bit at a time.’

He needed to use the heart as the poison to catch the third guy of the Pillar.

Hansoo, who had scooped up a small amount of the heart, tied the Divine Stone Fragment and the baby's heart piece together and then threw it into the mouth where the toxic waters were getting sucked into.

Plop.

Soon the fragment swept down the waters as it disappeared into the outer tunnel.

Kugugugugugugu.

Once it had almost drank up all of the waters in the Kukulja lake, it started to slowly close its mouth.

Though it would rise back up because it was connected to the sea but those things had drunk so viciously that it had almost dried up.

Though it was wide, it wasn't very deep so it could not quench their thirst.

Kuuuuuuuuu

Hansoo landed on the inner tunnel as he saw the mouth close.

Kyaaa!

A large amount of beasts had already set up camp there.

‘Well. This is just the starting point.’

Maybe because they were located in the outermost Root but the difficulty of the beasts were not high.

Of course they will continue to gather up to him if he were to continue to fight back and forth here.

‘Get through them quickly.’

Hansoo extended the blade of his sword and then swung it in all directions.

Chhguguguguk.

Kyaaaaaa!

The Gertas dropped artifacts and runes in all directions as they

got cut in halves.

Kyaaaaa!

Hansoo endlessly picked up the things that were dropped as he continued forward.

This guy's Root was quite similar to the World Tree.

As you went further and further up, the smaller roots would combine into each other as they become bigger.

And of course stronger beasts appeared the higher you went.

Hansoo held onto the Galadriang's Relic, <Judgement>, and quickly headed upwards.

At that moment a sound of things getting slashed apart could be heard approaching him.

Kudududuk.

Ududuk.

'It's about time we meet.'

They had separated into different mouths.

Of course they would meet as they head upwards while killing the beasts since the roots combined.

A person who was walking while swinging a giant sword and slashing the beasts apart could be seen in the distance.

‘A bit below Kalz Morenn? Is he the new captain of the shock troopers?’

And he could see somebody walking next to him with a cold expression in protection.

‘He’s the captain of Lighthouse huh. Is that guy Michael?’

Hansoo suddenly thought of Keldian’s show off.

<There’s probably a clan I made there. It’s pretty good for something I made in a year. Be nice to them. If it’s then, it should be... the 7th Patriarch. It was a brat called Michael... he had quite a bit of grievances so be nice to him. It seems he had quite a harsh life once I heard his story after he climbed up.>

Seeing that he hadn’t died and was collecting the forces proved that his skills were quite good.

‘Well. I’ll try. Keldian.’

It would've been different if they hadn't crossed roads in the first place but since it has become like this, it was better to have a good relationship.

Since they're now on the same boat.

It was some extra people who weren't part of his plan but it wouldn't hurt since they wanted to help.

'Anyways this is unexpected. I thought the Clan Lord would have escaped.'

Hansoo greeted the captain of the shock troopers who had an expression that wanted to send over a skill at any moment.

"Isn't it much better seeing me in a place like this?"

"...What are you thinking?"

Michael answered Hansoo's question instead of the captain of the shock troopers.

Since he could not figure out what Hansoo was thinking of.

'No. I can't even tell if he's a newcomer or not.'

At first he was befuddled, then he was enraged and then he was

curious.

The reason why he had rated this Hansoo guy in front of him highly was partially because of his battle prowess but mainly due to his unknown intelligence.

Since he had heard that this Hansoo guy had prepared everything perfectly in order to kill the Calamity Fish.

And had successfully done so.

But coming in here without any preparations was not part of his plan.

He might've understood it if that guy had actually tackled through them, escaped this place with some unknown method and left them behind to fight while buying some time.

But for him to come into the mouth with them?

‘Does he have the confidence to escape this at any time?’

Michael shook his head.

The first thing they had done earlier was pouring attacks at it trying to penetrate through this thing's skin.

But it was for naught.

The skin was so hard that the attacks didn't even work properly and when they made a decent sized hole, the toxic waters that this thing had drunk rushed in at a rapid pace.

Even if they did go through it, they'll just get swept by.

They thought of escaping while this guy opened its mouth to drink the toxic waters but gave that idea up once they heard the outside clansmen's message.

Since the people who had been sucked inside the Root were doing the same thing.

And the message said that no one had come out.

If the whole clan was to use up all their forces, a few people including himself would be able to get out but he didn't want to get out this way.

And that was why he had come to find this guy.

With hopes of him having some plans.

Hansoo laughed as he saw that Michael.



“Didn’t you say you wanted to kill this thing? I’ve done this to fulfill your wish.”

“...With just these numbers? We’ll get trampled on the way there.”

Michael made a helpless expression.

They only had about 150 people including all of the Search Teams and the Shock Troopers.

Of course these guys were the elites of the elites in the Red Zone.

But if it could be solved with just this then why would it be called a Calamity.

They will all get crushed apart by the ones coming down on the way up.

Hansoo shook his head at Michael’s words.

“It’ll be easier to do it now.”

With those words, a very faint vibration could be felt from far away.

.....

An extremely large underground cavity.

A large factory shaped building was located near below the World Tree.

Something that seemed like a relic of a highly intelligent race, a building that seemed like the product of modern technology was now covered with unknown mucus and suspicious looking roots.

Like symbolizing the Elvenheim who had lost and gone extinct.

But surprisingly, the <Plant> which was a core part of the Elvenheim was still maintaining its function despite being covered in numerous strange things.

Kiiiiiiiiiiiiik.

And in the hundreds of millions of Cultivating Containers within the Plant, things were constantly getting produced.

Though they weren't being used properly under what the Elvenheims wanted.

<!!!!!!>

The main body of the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> who had spread his Devil's Mouth in all direction with the plant under his

full control made a joyous sound.

Since he could feel his mouths penetrating through the earth and having reached the sea.

Sucking the toxic waters of the World Tree was quite a lot but sucking it directly from the sea was completely different in terms of quantity.

The toxic water that had multiplied a few times in quantity was constantly getting transferred to it.

The Main body then got those toxic waters and then focused on his main job.

<!!!!!!>

It took a part of it and used it to fill its stomach.

Then it poured the remaining toxic waters into the <Plant> which he had infected.

Soon the Divine Stone Fragment which was embedded within the core of the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> made a blinding light as it started to pour out an amazing amount of energy.

Kurururururuk.

A huge amount of energy and toxic waters were being supplied to the Plant.

<!!!!>

The Plant, which was able to send out beasts all around the World Tree Mountain Range despite having a lack of energy and toxic waters, shined brightly in red with the plentiful amount of toxic waters and energy as if it could now work to its fullest and started up.

Chiiiiik.

The Plant, which was the result of Elvenheim's alchemy, started to create a huge amount of beasts according to the saved DNA information.

In numbered many many times larger than usual.

Kurururuk.

The main body happily stimulated the fragment more as it sucked in the toxic waters more fervently.

Kiiiiik.

The beasts who woke up from the Cultivating Containers inside the Plant made confused expressions but then made vicious roars

as they spread out through the Root's tunnels.

So they could fulfill their objectives.

Kwarururu.

Inside that Plant, millions of Ghweche seeds were endlessly pouring in while sucking in the nearby toxic waters.

By the time the arrived balloons gathered around a certain location inside, the divine stone fragment that Hansoo had mixed in and sent up was almost about to explode.

Since though it was dead, the baby heart piece had constantly stimulated the fragment to give off energy.

Soon the fragment which had reached its limit started to pour out a huge amount of energy in all directions.

Chiiiiik.

The moment the extremely bright light, which had the ability to scorch Hansoo through his Reinforcement before, touched the surrounding toxic waters, the waters turned into vapor instantly.

And the toxic vapor that had remained after caught on fire.

Then an explosive chain reaction happened.

Boomboom!

The gas lit on fire and the explosion from the gas blew up the nearby balloons.

The toxic waters evaporated from the explosion and then more gasses came out.

<!!!!!!!!!!!!!!>

The main body which was fully immersed in controlling the Devil’s mouth in order to suck in the Toxic Waters looked at the Plant which had turned into a sea of flames and roared out in rage.

.....

Crunch.

The people flinched as they saw the tunnel of the Root shrink suddenly.

Since it felt like the Root had been enraged.

Hansoo nodded as he saw this.

‘It blew up properly.’

Of course killing the main body with such an explosion was just in his dreams.

Since the main body was not weak like that.

But that plant would’ve been destroyed to the point where it would not be able to function temporarily.

According to the information he had received from the Elvenheim he had met in the Abyss, the durability of the Plant was not that high.

Since their race didn’t have any enemies during the time they ruled this world.

‘We have to move while the Plant is stopped.’

The Plant which was condensed from the technology of the Elvenheim was sadly made too well.

It would recover after a while and then completely focus on creating beasts.

They had to tackle through during the time when the new supply of beasts had been cut off and get to the Main Body.

“Let’s go.”

Michael looked at Hansoo with an expression full of suspicion.

‘...What did he do? Does he know what’s at the end of this Root?’

From the way he was speaking it seemed like his plans had succeeded.

Michael did not understand this.

No one knew what the main body of the Devil’s Mouth was or what would come out at the end of this tunnel.

But how did Hansoo know of it to set up such a plan?

Many thoughts flashed by Michael’s head but the conclusion came out rather quickly.

‘I just need to focus on getting out of this place.’

As long as that guy was not suicidal he would’ve prepared a method of surviving.

If not, then they’ll blame him for that when the time comes .

“Let’s go. Prepare your formations. Shock Troopers stand in the



front.”

Since Hansoo was doing his part, he needed to do his own part.

If he were to fight with that guy because of his pride and make Hansoo lead them onto a strange path then they'll only receive damage.

Hansoo nodded while looking at Michael who started to control his clan.

‘You made a wise decision.’

He didn't want to fight a bloodbath with these guys here either.

Every grain of battle power was precious.

Hansoo quickly stored the small Divine Stone Fragment that he had made for emergencies as he quickly moved his footsteps.

‘Collect two Relics that are here on the way there.’

The Relics of two of the Five Great Tiger Generals who had died after coming in here in order to retrieve the Plant.

With those he would have three in total including the Galadriang's Relic he had.

If that were to happen then he wouldn't need to think much anymore.

Since he would be able to use the Relics properly then.

Hansoo started to proceed head on.

# Chapter 73 – Incursion (3)

---

Chugagagak.

Michael shouted urgently while looking at the beasts charging at them.

“Single Column! Shock Troopers divide into 2 teams! Use <Akal’s Castle Wall> at the same time! Search Teams focus on attacking the legs!”

The things that were running towards them were the <Black Cow>.

A gigantic Cow of 15 meters that could be found in the deep parts of the dungeon around the Base Root.

These things, which came out as a mini boss in the Base Root’s Dungeon, were just roaming around in this location like unfenced cows.

‘Damnit. It’s a problem when it’s too wide. For such things to roam around with no restrictions!’

The Root they were constantly climbing on had reached 200 meters in diameter already so such large cows did not have any problems roaming around.

Kuuuuuu!

There were only 9 of them charging at them.

But it seemed like a giant Tsunami had blocked the passageway and was charging at them.

At that moment a single strand of shining line swept past their ankles.

Chujujuk.

Kouuuuu!

The ankles were still over 1m in thickness but the formless blade which had cut through their ankles cut over half of it off.

Of course they couldn't maintain their heavy weight when over half of their ankles had been cut off.

Kuwuwuwu!

Three of the giant cows that were charging lost their balance and toppled over.

Kudududuk!.

And because of this the other cows that were charging penetrated the sides of these toppled Cows with their horns.

“Attack!”

The clansmen of Lighthouse didn't miss out on the opportunity as they charged and started to cut up the ankles first.

Since their weakness was the ankles that were a bit too thin to support their giant body.

The relics they had obtained inside the stomach of the Calamity Fish was of great help.

Michael, who had been looking at his Clansmen finishing off the cows, looked at Hansoo and asked.

“Is that the final reward you gained from inside the Calamity Fish?”

He could only ask.

Since it looked like even the Seven Departed Souls wouldn't have such a weapon like that.

There weren't many other functions.

It wasn't like the sword of Baek Jongsang obtained at the branch, the <Tower of Departed Souls>, which had the ability to float around one's body and protect them or like the sword of his captain of shock trooper Liu Hong, <Silver Curtain>, which had skills mounted on it.

But instead it solely focused on its role as a sword.

One could change the length and shape any way they wanted to they could cut anywhere and once you shortened the length and compressed it down, it would get so sharp that nothing wouldn't be able to be cut.

Even before this, the <Red Scale Ogre> that their clansmen could barely crush after a huge amount of assaults had been smashed apart by a single slash of his sword.

Though it was an injury of a finger's length it was still enough.

The sword which had been inserted through that hole increased in length as it destroyed the insides of its body.

It looked similar to the relics they had obtained but there were very large differences between their might and effectiveness.

Hansoo, who was absorbing runes corresponding to his contribution, nodded at Michael's words.

“Well. It's something like that.”

There weren't any rewards for killing the calamities like the Calamity Fish.

But as Hansoo thought, the relics he could obtain on the way were quite close to the final reward.

‘Even more so once I collect more of them. Anyways, my stats are...’

Hansoo checked for the first time in a while.

[Kang Hansoo]

Strength (Red): 33.2%

Stamina (Red): 31.5%

Agility (Red): 35.3%

Perception (Red): 33.9%

Mana (Red): 35.1%

Magic (Red): 36.5%

Physical Resistance (Red): 31.1%

Magic Resistance (Red): 36.4%

<Skill>

-Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement (Mastery: 3.5%)

'Good. I wish it increased above 5% quickly.'

Strong monsters were constantly popping out.

An amazing hunting ground.

And the level of the people he was with was quite high so their hunting speed was very fast.

Unlike the Colorless Zone, all eight different runes dropped in similar proportions so he didn't really need to take care of his runes as all of them rose steadily.

His mastery was increasing quite fast as well.

High level skills took an enormous amount of time to increase their mastery.

If you take into account that a skill like Demonic Dragon's



Reinforcement usually takes about 5 years for a normal person to master then Hansoo's pace was extremely fast.

‘If I go with these guys then... Would I be able to skip on using the Racial Metamorphosis once?’

Hansoo stared at Michael.

Racial metamorphosis was a skill which put extreme amounts of strain on the user's body.

It was quite hard for him to use it because it hadn't been long since he started to use it.

And because of this, Hansoo's plan was to hunt around under the ground, wait for the Racial Metamorphosis to cool down and then move out.

Since the difference of battle strength between turning the special skill on and not using it was too big.

On the other hand, if these guys performed well then he didn't need to waste time and could just go through the <Central Heart> right now.

Michael looked at Hansoo staring at him and opened his mouth.

“Do you really not have any thoughts of coming into our clan?

We can really give you the greatest treatment. It seems like your gear is quite lacking other than your sword. We can fit you with the top quality ones.”

Hansoo chuckled.

Since all his defensive items had been destroyed from getting attacked by the tentacles while he was killing the Calamity Fish.

How could a mere defensive item remain unbroken when it was getting attacked by things that a Dragon’s Body couldn’t even handle.

‘Well. I can solve that in here.’

Hansoo looked at Michael and replied.

“Let’s first focus on staying friendly in here.”

Michael made an expression full of regret at Hansoo’s words.

‘I really don’t know what this guy is. Seriously.’

He had thought that he had seen quite a vast amount of types of people.

Though all their action patterns were similar.

They would struggle to stay alive, struggle to get stronger then try to use whatever they gain in the middle however they can.

But someone like this was the first.

‘Tsk. Observe him for now.’

Those who hide their intentions would definitely attack their backs.

Even those who show their intentions do it so, the ones who hide them were worse.

Because of this, he had sent messages all around as soon as he met this guy and told them to find out more about this guy.

Since the information he had was not satisfying enough.

If this guy was someone he couldn't trust then he could not get on the same boat as him.

No, it wasn't that he couldn't get on the same boat as him but rather that he had to kick that guy out.

But thankfully, a lot of people knew his name as he had stood out greatly since the Tutorial.

According to the combined intel of those who had met this guy, this guy wasn't a bad person to keep as a teammate.

No, it wasn't that it was bad but rather very good.

'It's really regrettable...'

It was really regrettable.

To the point of making him anxious if he didn't come to him.

But Michael's thoughts did not last long.

Since the surrounding environment started to change quickly.

Kududududuk.

Udududuk.

A vicious sound of the Root getting squeezed down could be heard.

As the giant root which had the size of a 100 meters in diameter made noises like muscles getting squeezed, the people's expressions naturally turned grim.

And in their view, a large area could be seen.

Though the tunnel made of the root had been quite wide until now, if those things had the shape of a tunnel then the space in the distance was basically a humongous sports field.

A single heart was located in the center of the giant space where tens of different tunnels were leading to.

The repulsive looking heart which had eyes and a mouth attached onto it, constantly pumped up and down as it supplied the nearby tree roots with the nutrition they needed to move.

Of course such things didn't come into their eyes.

“...Do we have to get through that thing?”

Tens of thousands of soldiers who were located around the heart.

They had seen it before.

The strange race who they had seen while they were searching around the Calamity Fish.

If there was a difference then these guys did not look like zombies and were rather quite full of vigor.

Though their eyes dazed out.

These things which were gazing into the distance, creaked their body and turned towards them as they got closer to them.

Hansoo looked at that thing and then spoke towards Michael.

“You definitely cannot die.”

If they die here then the heart will swallow the dead person.

Then that Heart will use the genes of the one it had swallowed and revive it in the plant.

Like the army in front of their eyes.

They had to penetrate this while the function of the Plant was still down.

Michael shook his head at those words.

“Damnit. Even if you tell us not to die how can we against that...”

Their numbers were vastly different from the start.

And their equipment was similar to theirs.

Which meant that there wasn't much room for profit.

It seemed like the strength of every individual was higher on their side but it didn't matter in front of numbers.

Hansoo breathed in and out.

Since those words were correct.

Their current situation was quite lacking in order to beat two of the Five Great Tiger Generals who were standing mightily in the center.

'I'll use it here.'

It was a bit burdensome to fight with the human's body while the Racial Metamorphosis was still on cooldown due to him not having all the Relics yet but if the others fight well then it was still doable.

"Everyone focus on your mana control."

Michael replied at the sudden words of Hansoo.

"What are you going to do?"

Hansoo breathed in and out at those words.

“I should use what I’ve gained.”

He only said this but what he had obtained after killing the Calamity Fish was a lot.

Hansoo then pulled out a very small Divine Stone fragment of the size of a rice grain.

Then he very carefully lifted it near the Galadriang’s Relic in his hands.

Surprisingly, the Divine Stone Fragment which had been placed on the edge of the sword didn’t fall off and instead floated near the handle of the sword.

As if it was saying that it was its original position.

‘Since I’m not the only one using it I should float a few more.’

Hansoo breathed in and out, broke a few more fragments and then quickly closed the pouch where the giant Divine Stone Fragment was in.



Keeeeeeeiiing

The fragments which were floating around the Relic started to pour out an extremely bright light.

Like back when it was providing a huge amount of energy inside the Calamity Fish's heart.

The Divine Stone Fragment didn't stop there as it started to slowly pour out a huge amount of energy.

Kudududududuk.

“Uh...Uhhuh?”

“Uuk?”

All the clansmen of Lighthouse, who were gathered in a group with Michael as the center, were shocked at the sudden powerful mana storm that poured out.

Then the blades of their sword started to react to the mana storm.

And then a bright blade started to cover the Relics they were holding onto.

A bright blade which had the destruction capability that was dimensions apart from the blade on their formless sword earlier.

If the formless sword's blade was like a calm surface of water then the bright blade on their sword was like a blazing flame.

“Focus on control!”

The clansmen instinctively knew that the Relic in their hands could control this energy.

Once they focused all of their mental power, the blazing blade that seemed like it was about to sweep over its surroundings started to change into a single strand of condensed blade.

Oooooong.

“What is going to happen...”

Michael was marveling at the weapons in his and his clansmen's hands but Hansoo's situation wasn't that great.

‘Kuu... It's killing me.’

The situation of those who had to control a strand of mana that had branched out and him who had to control the main part of the mana was completely different.

The energy of the Divine Stone Fragment was jumping around as if it was about to explode in all directions.

Though the size of the fragment was small, he only had a single relic in the current situation where he couldn't get help from the World Tree.

Controlling this huge amount of energy with a feeble human's body felt like all of his blood vessels were about to blow apart.

It was like trying to make a crazy horse run forward without a saddle and a whip.

‘But... I still have to do it!’

Hansoo used the Galadriang's Relic in his hand as he constantly controlled the surrounding manawave as he also condensed energy into his sword.

Kwajajajak.

Soon, like lightning striking down onto his sword, a bright golden blade appeared on the edge of <Galadriang's Relic> in Hansoo's hands.

Geeeeeeeeing.

‘Hoo... Hooo. Much better now.’

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the blazing blades on the relics of him and the clansmen.

The final defensive system that the Elvenheims tried to complete using the Divine Stone Fragment, World Tree and the Relics.

<Mana Resonance Wave>

This was the original use for the Relic.

‘Though the Elvenheims didn’t even get to use it.’

They were the first ones to be able to see its might.

There wasn’t much room for leisure.

All the mana vessels in his body were squeaking.

He had to finish this before his mana vessels turned into a mess.

Hansoo charged forward.

# Chapter 74 – Incursion (4)

---

“Uahahahaha!”

Liu Hong laughed out loudly as he aggressively swung the bright blade in his hands.

Kwaaaaaaa.

A bright blade light from Liu Hong’s hand chopped the charging army apart like a wave.

Wajajajak.

‘It’s amazing!’

The artifact he had was something that wouldn’t stand out anywhere he went but the bright blade in his hand was on a different dimension.

‘Wouldn’t I be able to cut the Root with this strength?’

A destructive force that felt like it could penetrate the thick skin of the Root that previously made him give up could be felt in his hand.

‘If it’s this much then... I think we can go out of the Root without many casualties!’

Even if the zombie-like things in front of his eyes were strong, and even if they had relics in their hands they would die once they were cut into pieces as long as they were lifeforms.

And the sword in his hand was strong enough to slice apart those things without any problems.

He just needed to take care of these guys, cut apart the root and then go outside.

But Liu Hong realized that the situation wasn't as good as he thought as he swung his sword.

.....

Kudududuk.

Hansoo swung Galadriang's Relic.

The golden magic force from the Relic, which had received a large amount of energy from the Divine Stone Fragment, rushed towards the Elvenheims charging towards him.

Kaduduk.

The Elvenheims tried to defend against that attack with the relics in their hands.

But the golden magic force cut through their weapons and then cut their body into two as well.

‘Damn.’

Though he had succeeded, it was not a satisfactory result.

Hansoo clicked his tongue inwardly.

He wanted to split apart six of them with a single attack.

But only four had died under the attack.

The other two quickly moved out of the attack range while the four defended against the attack.

‘Maybe it’s due to their bodies still being normal but their movements are different.’

Though these guys didn’t revive like the spectres inside the Calamity Fish’s stomach, they were much stronger since their bodies were normal.

There were tens of thousands of these things.

Those things were making sharp movements as they constantly

pushed Hansoo and the clansmen of Lighthouse back.

“Damnit! Their recovery speeds are too fast! They heal back even if you cut off their limbs!”

“Cut off their life in one strike! They don’t seem immortal”

“Damnit! Didn’t these guys die yet? Where’s the energy coming from!”

Similar shouts were being heard from all around.

Even if their limbs were cut off from being attacked, these things just reattached the arm and charged again after healing up.

Once you get cut apart and then heal the materials inside the body that were stored should run out but they were constantly healing as if such a limit didn’t exist.

They would fall if you cut off their necks but it meant that it was an army that wouldn’t falter unless you cut their necks off or crush their hearts.

The Lighthouse clansmen were holding them back well because their teamwork was great and they were used to fighting with each other but if things continued at this pace then they will get trampled.



Since the Elvenheims were staying very energetic unlike humans who would get tired.

If they didn't have the Mana Resonance Wave then they would've been trampled already.

Hansoo looked towards the giant object that two large Elvenheims were protecting.

‘As I thought, I have to crush that central heart.’

The giant central pumping heart had a similar role to the core of the Calamity Fish.

Since it was inefficient to sustain such a huge body with a single heart, that object pumped nutritional fluid with the energy of the Divine Stone Fragment infused within it towards every corner of the body.

That thing's nutritional fluid was constantly being supplied to the Elvenheim soldiers through the floor of the root.

As long as that heart was pumping the Elvenheims will not cease to attack the clans.

‘Let's go.’

Hansoo spoke towards Michael who was standing next to him.

“I’m gonna split away and then fight. Maintain the formation as well as possible and stay alive.”

Michael clenched his teeth and then nodded.

Though they can maintain themselves, they wouldn’t be able to push forward at this pace.

They needed something that would turn the tide.

‘Damnit. I don’t know what you know but... I wish you success.’

Hansoo left Michael and then pushed his Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement to the max as he lifted his body towards the air.

At that moment something rapidly flew towards Hansoo.

Kudududuk.

Hansoo aggressively swung his blade as he blocked the thing that was flying towards him.

A single marble.

A marble the size of a human’s fist smashed into Hansoo’s sword as they created a huge shockwave.

Surprisingly, the golden blade which could cut apart the Elvenheims could not get through the marble as the marble made grinding noises and tried to push Hansoo back.

‘Nope.’

Hansoo condensed his mana reinforcement further, stepped on the head of an Elvenheim charging towards him and used that acceleration to push back the marble.

Crack.

Then a crack occurred on the marble.

As the crack appeared in the marble the marble ceased attacking Hansoo as it went back to its owner.

Towards one of the two Elvenheims that were guarding the heart.

Then the seven marbles that were spinning around the body of the Elvenheim made a bright light as they started to fly towards Hansoo at an incredible speed.

At the same time the other member of the Five Great Tiger Generals activated the bracelet on his arm.

Oooong.

Instantly a translucent armor appeared all over the Great Tiger General with the bracelet.

The two Great Tiger Generals who had armed themselves with two relics started to make a loud noise as they charged towards Hansoo.

Boomboomboomboom.

As the two, who were much larger than other Elvenheims, started to run towards him, it felt like the whole root was quaking.

And Fabien, the Great Tiger General with the translucent armor, smashed at Hansoo.

Boom!

Hansoo slashed the mana blade created from the Divine Stone Fragment aggressively towards the translucent armor but the armor resonated as it deflected Hansoo's attack.

Kududuk.

The relics that Hansoo and Fabien were using were originally Elvenheim's.

Though they didn't have the Mana Resonance Wave, they were still using them to their fullest potential.

‘And these guys are also constantly receiving energy through the central heart.’

Keeriririrk.

But as if the armor could not withstand the energy supplied from the Divine Stone Fragment, Hansoo's golden blade slowly dug into the translucent armor.

At that time something flew towards Hansoo while making loud noises.

‘Ekidrang's Relic.’

Two of the seven marbles around Ekidrang remained back to defend the body, four of them aimed towards the fatal spots all over Hansoo's body and the remaining one rushed towards the wrist which held Galadriang's relic.

Hansoo frowned as he quickly retrieved his sword that was slashing down onto Fabien's armor.

At the same time he activated the <Power Destruction> on Nurmaha's ring on his right hand.

Keeriririk.

Nurmaha's ring, which was supplied with a much larger amount of mana than before exploded with a red light.

Hansoo then changed the sword, which was infused with both red and golden light, like a whip and then lashed the air.

Padududuk.

The energy which was on the five of the marbles that were flying towards him disappeared from the Power Destruction.

Crack.

The marbles made crackling sound as cracks appeared.

But the marble which had withstood the attack pushed in and then smashed into Hansoo's body.

Puuk!

'Ku-huk!'

He had dodged four but he couldn't dodge the remaining one after losing his balance.

Since Ekidrang's Relic was too fast for that.

Hansoo breathed out roughly from the pain that ran throughout his body.

At that moment Fabien, who had been pushed back from Hansoo's attack, trusted his armor as he charged towards Hansoo.

Boomboomboomboom.

'Damnit...'

It felt like his mana veins were burning up.

It was too burdensome to use the Galadriang's Relic as well as Nurmaha's ring at the same time.

But if he didn't use both then he wouldn't be able to stop the guy charging towards him like a bear.

Hansoo quickly backed off as he applied the Power Destruction onto the golden blade and then slashed at Fabien's armor.

Craackk!

The armor made breaking sounds as a crack appeared.

The golden blade went through that crack.

Then it changed its form quickly as it started to grind up the insides of Fabien.

Kigigigigik.

At that time the bracelet on Fabien's wrist shined as the armor shrunk down.

The armor which had shrunk down to barely cover Fabien's skin did its best to resist the golden blade attack from Galadriang's sword and Hansoo's sword shone brighter as it tried to cut off Fabien's life.

Pachichik.

The Divine Stone Fragment supplied energy to the point as if it was going to explode.

The golden blade blazed up as it started to crush down the translucent armor.

The central heart constantly supplied energy but it could not compare to the energy from the Divine Stone Fragment.

At that moment a bright light exploded out as a huge crack appeared on Fabien's armor and a limb was cut off.



‘I need to finish him now!’

Even if the armor was regenerating from the energy that was supplied, there were still loose ends.

The moment Hansoo tried to swing his golden blade to cut off the neck, a large soundwave was heard.

Kwaaaaaaa!

‘Goddamnit!’

He would be able to cut off that guy’s neck if he swung his sword but then his whole body would get crushed by the marble flying towards him to assassinate him.

Since his body wasn’t a Demonic Dragoneer’s.

Hansoo dodged Ekidrang’s Marble flying towards him as he jumped back.

Shururuk.

In that short instant the armor quickly regenerated the crack from the constant energy supply as Fabien’s right arm reattached from the Nutritional Fluid supplied through the ground by the Central heart.

Hansoo clenched his teeth as he saw this scene.

‘He’s not even a lizard.’

If this were to continue then there would be no end.

The body which did not go through the Racial Metamorphosis was getting destroyed from within from the wave-like mana as two Great Tiger Generals armed with two relics and backed up with the energy supply from the Central heart were charging towards him.

He tried to get through the two Great Tiger Generals first and smash the heart while the Clan was holding the others back but their cooperation was much more annoying than he had expected.

‘Even if I gain some damage... Smash the heart.’

Hansoo looked at the pumping central heart in the distance which was the size of a small building, clenched his teeth and then rushed out.

.....

Oooong.

The Plant, which was slowly and very minutely regenerating.

At that moment the <Devouring and Vomiting Root>'s main body, which was doing it's best to regenerate the Plant, frowned.

Since the plentiful amount of Divine Stone Fragment's energy seemed very lacking suddenly.

Though it had been pouring all the energy from the fragment into the Plant but fixing things was not its strong point.

While it was using up the energy extremely inefficiently, a great forcewave was felt from the root in the distance.

An existence that was using the energy much more efficiently than him though it was much less.

<.....>

The main body started to focus in order to sense and learn the flow of that energy.

# Chapter 75 – Plant (1)

---

Kudududuk.

Ekidriang's Relic flew towards Hansoo who was running while stepping on top of heads like a meteor.

Kugugugugu.

Hansoo rapidly swung his sword as he aimed the golden blade towards the marble.

Craack.

The blazing sword cut the relic in two.

But Hansoo quickly lowered his head as he dodged the relic.

Since the relic that had been cut in two rushed up and tried to smash his head.

‘Smart guy. It purposely loosened the Mana Wall.’

It had gotten rid of the Mana Wall so it would be cut more easily and then tried to hit Hansoo with the speed.

And as soon as that guy failed it was looking for another chance.

The marble that had been cut in two had long regenerated.

Ekidrang looked for another chance as he aggressively pushed in.

‘If you do that then the story changes.’

Hansoo carefully looked at the marble that was flying towards him.

And the moment the marble almost reached him, he put away his sword.

At the same time he stepped on the marble flying towards him and poured in a large amount of strength.

Boom~

‘Kuhuk.’

The pain felt like his leg bones were breaking.

Which meant that it wasn’t quite enough to break his legs.

If it was covered with mana then they would’ve been smashed apart but that thing had disabled the Mana Wall.

Hansoo poured more strength into his thigh while stepping on the marble.

Tududuk.

At the same time Hansoo's body quickly rushed towards the Heart.

Booom!

The marbles constantly chased Hansoo the flying Hansoo and tried to assault his body but Hansoo barely dodged those attacks as he reached out with Galadriang's Relic.

Kwadududuk.

A sensation that he had felt like dissecting the cocoon inside the heart of the Calamity Fish could be felt on the edge of the sword.

Such a hard and large amount of Muscles, Mucus and Ligaments were covering the Central heart.

A situation where he had to dissect a building that was similar to a bomb shelter.

But the relic that was in Hansoo's hand and the relic that was reborn from borrowing the energy from the Divine Stone Fragment was completely different in terms of strength.

The heart instantly split apart from the golden blade while making ripping noises.

<!!!!!!>

At the same time the heart that was pumping at a regular rate started to pump madly as it was agitated.

The problem was that it wasn't the only thing that was agitated.

The surrounding Elvenheim army also started to change according to the heartbeat.

Tudududuk.

Muscles swelled up and the eye, that was out of focused, focused in.

The ear that was hanging down but had been slightly raised due to the battle now rose up as if it was trying to pierce the heavens.

And the two Great Tiger Generals who had been leading the Elvenheims were the same.

Fabien's body, which was already massive, covered his whole body which had been enlarged a step further with Mana Walls as he charged towards Hansoo.

Hansoo, who had been fervently slicing apart the heart, felt Fabien's fist cutting through the air behind him but he did not dodge it.

Actually he just allowed the attack after tensing up all the muscles on his body.

Kudududuk.

‘Hu-up!’

Hansoo felt his conscious shaking from the fist that felt like it was trying to drive into his body.

The relic Fabien had was focused on defense unlike Galadriang's Sword but once the powerful armor combined with his great physical ability, his body basically became a weapon in itself.

But Hansoo received Fabien's attack and then straightened his senses.

He did not die.

Though his side had been ripped off, that guy had gotten very close.

‘I can't dissect the Heart with this guy alive!’



Hansoo then started to concentrate all of the golden light on the blade.

The mana that was spreading in all directions from the Relic and the Divine Stone Fragment started to gather onto his blade.

“Huh? The mana reinforcement got weaker?”

“Is that Hansoo guy okay?”

The people who had been fighting momentarily flinched when the mana wave suddenly turned weak.

At that time Hansoo, who had gathered as much mana which was spreading through the Mana Resonance Wave as much as he could, slashed down the golden blade towards Fabien.

Since it felt like his body was going to explode if he gathered more.

Chuwaaaaa!

<!!!!>

The mana blade that Hansoo had swung cut towards the charging Fabien's neck.

Kagagagak.

Though the armor surrounding Fabien's neck was strong, it was not as strong as the attack Hansoo risked his life for.

Crack.

A red line appeared on Fabien's neck.

But Hansoo frowned.

‘It regenerated that too?’

Most Elvenheims stopped their movements when you cut off their necks.

But Fabien's neck was healing while the armor held the necks in place despite him having cut off his neck.

‘It turns a lifeform into a monster.’

Boooom!

As Hansoo was about to move his body in order to end Fabien completely, seven marbles charged at him from the distance at an incredible speed.

Ekidrang had sent out all the marbles, including the ones protecting his body, after getting nervous from seeing Fabien becoming immobile.

Hansoo clicked his tongue and then jumped into the heart he was slashing apart.

Then he madly started to slash his sword in all directions.

Chaaaaak!

Ekidrang's Relic followed Hansoo into the heart and tried to rip Hansoo apart but it could not move like before

Since the delicate structures might also get destroyed in the process of smashing Hansoo.

The heart was as big as a small building but it was not big enough for Ekidrang's marbles, which flew like comets, to act freely.

Hansoo madly dodged and got hit by the marbles as he started to dig out the insides of the heart.

<!!!!>

The heart filled with more rage as it tried to control more of the Elvenheims to come towards the heart but it was not enough.

The hole Hansoo had made on the hole was not really big.

Though he was grinding things up inside, it was not big enough for countless Elvenheims to come in.

<!!!!....>

The heart slowly lost its strength as it got destroyed step by step from the inside.

Then a change occurred.

“These guys became incredibly slow! Create some distance!”

“They don’t heal anymore! We don’t need to fight them head on! Just assault them from afar!”

As the energy supply from the heart stopped, the regeneration speed slowed down as well as their movement speeds.

Hansoo finished off the heart and then quickly ran outside.

Then he dashed towards Fabien who had almost finished regenerating.

Chwaaak!

Fabien tried to resist but he couldn't move since he needed a greater amount of energy than the others.

Hansoo's sword cut off his wrist.

At the same time the relic that was on his wrist fell off as well.

The wrist had stronger protection from the armor than the other parts but it couldn't be sustained after the energy supply had been cut off.

Hansoo quickly changed the form of the sword as he brought the bracelet that was on the wrist to himself.

Then he quickly put it on.

Hoooong!

The mana that was blazing inside Hansoo as if it wanted to explode quickly calmed down.

His control over the Divine Stone Fragment had increased much more as the relics increased to two.

Like insisting that the control didn't merely multiply by two by having two relics, the powerful mana storm quickly calmed down under Hansoo's control.

‘Hooh.’

Hansoo sighed in relief as he saw his mana veins quickly calming down.

The amount of mana that would be used up would be twice the amount if he were to control both.

He would be able to supply more mana since having two relics allowed him to control the Divine Stone Fragment with much more ease.

‘It’s amazing.’

Hansoo mumbled inwardly as he saw the mana blade that blew up to the point where it was about to explode.

It was like his when he had only gathered two.

He couldn’t even imagine what he would be able to do if he were to collect all 5 relics and attain the complete <Administrator>’s powers.

Hansoo, who had been looking at the mana that had been pouring all over his body, looked at Ekidrang in the distance having a hard time controlling the 7 beads and then quickly charged towards him.

.....

“Hoo-ok... Hooook.”

Michael looked at the surrounding clansmen as he breathed in and out harshly.

Though they were all gasping for air from the battle, the battle ended very quickly despite them struggling until now.

Since the Elvenheim had all lost their strength and fallen down the moment the heart was crushed.

And one more thing.

Michael looked at his sword that was shining much brighter than before.

‘A lot more mana is being supplied than before.’

Michael then looked towards the origin of the cause.

Seven marbles floating around him, a new bracelet and the sword he previously had.

He, who had obtained many new things, was a lot different from

before.

The sensation of him pushing his limits could not be felt as the energy that was being sent their way was greatly amplified.

And around his body, larger fragment pieces than the ones before were floating around his body.

‘...He reminds be of a Pylon.’

Memories of a game he used to play a long time ago, Starcraft, came back to him.

Michael looked at Hansoo and asked.

“What are you going to do now?”

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“You’ve been to dungeons many time. It’s the same.”

The Plant has shut down.

Though a few remaining beasts would still be around and the difficulty of them would still be high but it really wouldn’t be that burdensome since he would be able to control the Divine Stone Fragment with the three relics.



‘It’s working out better than I expected.’

At that time the captain of the shock troopers who was standing next to Michael approached him and whispered something in his ears.

It seems like he had seen something with a skill.

Michael’s expression turned grim as he heard this.

“Didn’t you say that the beasts won’t come out anymore?”

“Mmm?”

When Hansoo made a confused expression, Michael spoke with a frozen expression.

“I checked with the skill because we had gotten closer but... There’s no need for words. Just see it for yourself.”

Michael then transferred the image from the skill of the captain of the search team, <Moon’s Chaser>, to Hansoo.

The image of the view the captain of the search him had seen could be seen on the mirror that he was holding.

A building that had remnants of an explosion but still had a decent look.

And the beasts that were slowly being recreated inside it.

Though all the Cultivation Containers weren't working as if it wasn't fully healed but from one look one could tell that strong things were being produced.

And the speed was getting faster as well.

'Damnit... Those are things that appear at the end of the dungeon of the Base Root.'

Michael muttered inwardly.

Though the Five Calamities were strong, they were plenty of other monstrous things other than them.

And such things were slowly being produced from the Plant.

While Michael was making a grim expression, Hansoo also frowned slightly.

'The Fairy shouldn't have intervened.'

It shouldn't have known that he had come to the past.

And if it was going to intervene then it would've done so in the beginning.

Since he wouldn't even have been able to come back to the past if they had intervened at the Crystal in his past life.

‘Did the main body sense and learn the Mana Wave?’

That was highly likely.

“Don't we need to escape?”

Hansoo shook his head at Michael's words

Though it was a giant beast that looked like it didn't have much in its brains, it was not stupid.

It would constantly watch and learn.

You would not be able to make it fall into the same trap twice.

He would need to prepare for the Plant even more next time and there would be no way to penetrate through the beasts if the Plant wasn't shut down.

‘But... There's no need to face them all.’

There was no actual need to fight.

He needed to buy time since he had obtained the Relic.

“Can you hold onto your breath for a bit?”

“What?”

The moment Michael replied Hansoo pushed the power of the Relic in his hand to the limit.

Then he slashed at the root around them.

Booom!

The line of light that had been strengthened from the Divine Stone Fragment made a hole in the tunnel surrounding them just like that.

Then toxic waters started to pour out from those locations.

The Outer Tunnel that sucked in the toxic waters.

“If we ride this then we’ll get there in an instant.”

“Huh.”

Michael looked at the tube full of the toxic water that was headed towards an unknown location and made a bitter expression.

Then he thought to himself.

‘Do we need to take such risks to help that guy?’

But Michael just shook his head.

They wouldn’t be able to get out from here only by relying on their own strength, without the relics that guy was holding.

And that guy didn’t have any thoughts of leaving before he ended this so they had to see the end no matter what happened to them.

‘Damn it. I’ve been caught badly.’

It had been a long time since he felt the pain of seeing blood once you provoked a dangerous fellow to the bones.

Michael clenched his teeth and started moving.

.....

The main body was lost in thoughts as it was learning the mana

wave that it had sensed inside the Root.

A power that a strange guy had shown.

It wasn't enough to deal with that guy with the beasts it had now.

<.....>

It needed a different method.

Though it was creating beasts for defense but the power it held now was equal to their creator who had created test subjects like them.

It knew instinctively.

Why the guy at the sea had gotten quiet.

It didn't know what would happen once that guy were to charge in like this.

The main body stopped the regeneration of the plant momentarily as it started to focus the energy into a different location.

To create the clone, <Alpha>, that it hadn't created up until now because it felt scruples to do so.

## Chapter 76 – Plant (2)

---

Kwagagagagaga.

A bit over a hundred people clenched their teeth within the aggressively rushing toxic waters.

‘Damnit. It’s really rough.’

Though the inner tunnel that they were moving in was large but the outer tunnel that was sucking in the toxic waters was even larger.

The people, who felt like they would get swept off from the rapid waters of the river, held onto their hands tight in order to not lose each other.

‘We might just die if we lose each other!’

These people activated all sorts of skills to survive and used the strength that had reached the red stage to hold onto each other tight.

And in between them the 7 marbles were constantly roaming around, held them in place and prevented them from crashing into the walls by slightly changing the directions.

‘Damnit. I’m not sure if we are going to all die or not.’

While Michael was cursing out in his mind, a light could be seen in the distance.

A light that started from the end point of the giant tunnel.

‘We’ve arrived.’

Hansoo controlled the marbles, Ekidrang’s Relic, to burst out and quickly approached the wall.

If they were to get swept into the Plant then they would just all melt from the Plant’s processes.

He had to make a hole to escape before then.

Keeeeeiing.

The golden blade in Hansoo’s hand exploded aggressively.

Hansoo stabbed the blade that had been extended into tens of meters into the wall.

Kagagagagak.

‘Ho-oop.’



It felt like the flesh in his hands was about to explode.

The blade that was created from Galadriang's Relic was strong but the tunnel near the Main Body was much thicker and tougher than in the beginning and the current was extremely strong.

Hansoo tightly clenched onto Galadriang's Relic in order to not lose it due to the current as he activated Ekidrang's Relic to hold himself in place.

Kiiigigigigik.

Hansoo's efforts weren't in vain as his velocity quickly slowed down despite being in the water.

And in the spot that Hansoo had gone past, a cut of tens of meters had been left behind.

<!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!!>

The <Devouring and Vomiting Root> that had gained quite a large injury screamed out in pain.

Since it would be impossible for even something like it to not feel any pain once the root that acted as a vein had been scratched like that.

At that moment an enormously large explosion occurred behind

him.

Michael and his clansmen, who had been behind Hansoo, had used all their strength to send out skills.

Though it was hard for over a hundred people to activate skills at the same time but they did it in a single try as they sent out a powerful attack towards a direction.

They used the reaction force from that to push themselves out of the toxic waters as they were driven towards the outside of the Root.

Kwaaaaa.

“Kuhuh....Cough.”

“Huaa... Huaaaa.”

Though the Root circulating the toxic waters had been floating tens of meters in the sky, there wasn't anybody who would die by falling from such a height.

The people who came out from the toxic waters landed on the ground and then grinded their teeth as they caught their breath.

“Goddamit. Never again.”

But unlike those clansmen, Michael instead quickly looked at his surroundings

A wide open area.

Two different kinds of roots could be seen above them.

The giant root of the World Tree that they were familiar with.

And the root they came out from, that was stuck beneath the World Tree Root like a parasite.

Their gazes naturally fell towards the location where the root extended to.

And the thing that was located at the end.

“It’s huge...”

Beneath the location of the World Tree Root, a gigantic structure was located.

Though they had checked it with a skill previously, seeing it in front of their eyes like this was much much different.

“For something like this to be under the World Tree...”

At the same time the other thing could only come into their eyes.

A giant lifeform that was surrounding that giant structure.

Beasts were slowly crawling out from all around that lifeform that seemed like the main body of the root they were on until now.

Hansoo started to prepare the mana inside his body after seeing this.

The objective was the same as before.

He had to pull out the Divine Stone Fragment before the Plant fully recovered.

“Get through it quickly. Stick behind me well.”

“Goddamnit. Even if you say it...”

Michael grinded his teeth as he saw the beasts swarming towards them from the distance.

At that time the relics that were around Hansoo flew up like a storm and smashed the life form's head.

Boom!

The Relic which had devoured a large amount of energy from the Divine Stone Fragments smashed apart the life form's head and then returned next to Hansoo.

“It’s not that bad. I told you I’ll fulfill your wishes for you. To kill this thing.”

“...I shouldn’t make wishes so quickly from now on.”

The atheist Michael found God who he hasn’t searched for in 2 years again in his mind as he prepared the formation of his troops while looking at the charging beasts.

.....

Kudududuk.

The man who had raised himself out from the Cultivation Liquid looked at his surroundings.

A man who had the form of an Elvenheim.

But unlike a normal Elvenheim, he had a strange aura coming off of him.

<!!!!...!>

At that exact moment a voice was transferred into his head from above.

To go out and get rid of the intruders.

The man looked upwards.

The thing that was extending huge roots in all directions.

That thing was definitely within his memories.

‘Devouring and Vomiting Root... that was something I gave power too.’

And because of this the man started to feel angry.

How dare such a thing give him orders.

The main body of <Devouring and Vomiting Root> blinked its eyes as if the man’s actions made it uncomfortable.

<...>

Even that guy was a clone that was created with the Creator’s cells as the basis, its abilities couldn’t even compare to him.

But for such a thing to act with such insolence.

The thing that made it worse was that he couldn't give orders to it because it was created with the Creator's cells as the basis.

The Devouring and Vomitting Root had created the clone in time but it didn't know how he would act since he wasn't bound to its orders.

There was a reason why it hadn't made it until now.

<.....>

“ ... ”

While the two were getting on each other's nerves, the one who spoke first was the man.

“You have... the key to the <Arsenal> here right? Give it to me.”

One of the two treasures of Elvenheim. <Arsenal.>

According to the cloned man's memory he had given it to this guy to store.

<.....>

“I gave the position to control the plant to you back then. I know

it's here.”

<....>

As the Devouring and Vomiting Root kept giving off dissatisfied feelings the man grinded his teeth.

“This dumbass. I need that thing to block the guy outside. Hurry and give it to me.”

The man was realizing the fact that the outside situation wasn't great.

It seems like the plant wasn't working properly because it received some kind of damage..

It meant the situation was bad enough to the point where it couldn't focus on healing back the Plant and had to constantly squeeze beasts out.

And the beasts created didn't seem like they had the upper hand either.

Since large screams of beasts were being heard outside along with loud booms.

‘How could this be... These guys are danger level 12. They came to kill it?’



The most dangerous beast created from the Plant was level 7.

But on the other hand the others including the Calamity Fish were level 12.

Level 12 was dangerous enough to threaten a whole race to extinction.

And had done so already.

The man frowned as if he was flustered.

Then the main body, which was constantly detecting the outside information with a root that acted as an antenna, started to open its octopus-like beak from within its body as if it couldn't hold it back anymore.

Kugugugugugu.

As the giant mouth that was hundreds of meters in diameter opened, hundreds of tentacle-like roots reached down.

And in the spots where the two roots had extended from, two objects were located there.

One was the Divine Stone Fragment that shone brightly as it supplied the main body with the energy it needed.

The other was a strange looking key the size of a finger.

The main body used one of the hundreds of roots as a hand as it pulled the silvery key up.

Then it stretched it down to the man below and gave it to him.

“Hmm. Good. Anyways, this insolent bastard...”

The man spun the key on his hand and then coldly laughed as he looked at the Divine Stone Fragment above him.

<....>

While the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> made a strange noise as if it didn't feel good after seeing the man's smile, the man stabbed the key into the air above him and then spun it leftward.

.....

Boom!

Hansoo blocked one of the countless roots flying towards him with Ekidrang's Relic.

Charararak.

Though tens of roots were flying towards him, he could estimate the movements of some.

Hansoo blocked off the root as he thought inwardly.

‘As I thought. The defensive system is weaker than the Calamity Fish.’

The thin roots of the Devouring and Vomiting Root looked like the tentacles inside the Calamity Fish at a simple glance but the difference in power was great.

Though there was still a very big problem left.

There was a reason why the defensive system was so weak.

It was weak because it wasn’t needed.

Guuoooo!

An ogre that was the size of a three story building smashed down onto the ground with a bludgeon that reached tens of meters.

Boooooom!

A huge vibration ran out in all directions as the ground wavered

up and down.

The seven marbles were busy blocking off the roots reaching down from the sky.

He had to face it directly.

A golden light reached out long from Hansoo's blade.

Booom!

Hansoo attacked the bludgeon that was flying around in all directions.

Shukunk.

The bludgeon was cut off and landed at a different location.

Kuuuuuuu

The giant ogre made a flustered expression and then made a vicious expression and tried to swing its bludgeon again as if it was trying to smash the ants in front of its eyes.

Though it didn't really matter much.

Churrrrk

By the time Hansoo finished swinging his sword, the bludgeon and the ogre's neck, which were in the area of the swing of the sword, had long been cut off.

Kuwuhh...

It then fell down to the ground.

Michael, who was fighting in the distance, saw that beast, focused and then shouted out loud.

“We can win! We're almost there!”

Then they looked towards the thing that was shining brightly in the distance.

A bright light that was guiding them like a lighthouse.

The same thing as what Hansoo was holding onto.

‘We win if we pull that thing out huh.’

Hansoo had told them.

The thing that was supplying the giant body with energy was that thing.

Everything will be solved if they get there and pull it out.

At that moment Michael flinched.

‘Then the Plant will stop working?’

Then what would the other adventures hunt to get stronger with.

But at that moment a change occurred.

Kuwaaaaa!

“Huh?”

A huge shockwave was created from somewhere inside where the Divine Stone Fragment was shining along with a loud exploding noise.

And not long after that sound was heard, the lights of the Plant started to turn off.

At the same time the hundreds of thin roots that were attacking them constantly shrugged down as they lost their strength.

‘This...’

Hansoo frowned.

He had seen this before.

At the Calamity Fish’s heart.

It meant that somebody had pulled the Divine Stone Fragment from inside the Devouring and Vomiting Root.

‘Who?’

At that moment a voice was transferred into his mind.

<Shall we see each other’s face after leaving those trashes behind? I want to know who you are and how you are using the key so adequately.>

‘Key? He knows the name?’

To call the relic the key.

Of course the original name of the relic was The Five Keys, so <Key> was correct.

But there shouldn’t be anyone but him who knew this here.



Since the only people who called it that were the Elvenheim, and only the high rankers at that.

“Stay here.”

“Huh? Hey?”

Hansoo left Michael’s shouts behind him as he moved forward.

## Chapter 77 – Plant (3)

---

‘First time seeing these guys. How are their skills?’

The Clone, Alpha, mumbled as he looked at the people in the distance.

There were around 150 people.

Though it was the first time he saw that race, it didn’t really matter much.

The important part was their power.

Alpha laid down a conclusion after looking at the mana wave and the fight.

That the strongest person over there was around level 6.

But they were probably at around level 6.5 due to the leaked weapons from <Thousand Soldier Armors>, the Arsenal.

Others were distributed around level 4 and 5.

‘They’re just bugs.’

Alpha stopped caring about them.

Then his gaze turned to the guy he had called.

‘That guy that’s running to me... He should be around danger level 9?’

He would probably be around level 6 without the relics.

But he had the relics of Galadriang, Ekidrang and Fabien of the Five Great Tiger Generals.

He would be around level 9 since he was efficiently supplying and using the Divine Stone Fragments.

The might of the relics was that great.

‘He’s really fascinating.’

Not everyone could use it like that.

Even if one was to obtain both the relic and the divine stone fragment, they needed a huge amount of minute mana control in order for their bodies to not blow up.

‘As if he had been using mana for decades.’

Just from the mana control he seemed equal to himself.

If you take into account who the original of the clone is then the fact that the guy over there was similar to him was something amazing.

But Alpha shook his head.

‘...Something’s missing. He has more.’

To kill the Calamity Fish with just that.

Impossible.

Killing the Calamity Fish from the outside was of course impossible and even if someone were to act inside its body like this it would still not be possible.

Since the inner defenses of the Calamity Fish were at least at level 10.

And somehow he had fried the Plant as well.

‘Shall we see his hidden cards then.’

The king’s treasure that acted as the Arsenal that would arm his soldiers, the <Thousand Soldier Armors>.

There wouldn't any problems though he could only use one of the five different kinds of weapons.

Since there were enough gears in there to to arm millions of soldiers.

'I guess I'll need to borrow the powers of the Divine Stone Fragment.'

Alpha raised the key in his hand, Thousand Soldier Armors, and made a motion of stabbing it in the air and turning it right.

.....

Hansoo moved quickly as he went towards the center of the <Devouring and Vomiting Root> where the Divine Stone Fragment should be.

At that moment a large amount of things started to pour down on Hansoo.

'This bastard... Playing around after telling me he wanted to see me.'

Even if that guy had set up a plan, he still had to advance if he didn't want to miss the Divine Stone Fragment.

Hansoo poured all the energy from the surrounding Divine Stone

Fragments into Fabien’s relic.

Ooooong

A tremendous amount of marbles started to smash at the formless armor created around his body.

Huge in numbers but, smaller in size than Ekidrang's, the marbles surrounded Hansoo and madly started to tear him apart.

Hansoo urgently checked his surroundings while Fabien's formless armor was getting shredded.

‘Main body. I need to find the main body.’

At that moment something came into Hansoo's view.

A blurry image could be seen among the silvery clouds.

Hansoo aggressively swung Galadriang's blade towards the distant location.

Craack

The Divine Stone Fragment supplied a huge amount of energy.

The moment the golden light extended away from the sword, the marbles in the air moved and started to block the blade.



Kigigigigik

Though as each individual marble was weaker than Ekidrang's they were crushed the moment they made contact, but as tens of thousands of these blocked the path of the golden light, the light eventually lost its strength and disappeared.

‘Tsk.’

He had expected this.

Hansoo, who had foreseen that it wouldn't end simply like this, increased the mana in his body and tried to quickly charge through.

Since he needed to crush his opponent before his body would get shredded apart by the silvery cloud's attacks.

‘If all fails... Use the Mana Code!’

But the cloud that seemed like it was about to attack Hansoo any moment, just calmly floated around the air after attacking and defending once.

As if it saw everything it needed to see.

‘Was it a test or something?’

As Hansoo walked past the silvery marble cloud, a single Elvenheim was waiting for Hansoo.

The man greeted him as soon as he saw Hansoo.

“Hello. It wasn’t much, I just called you over because I got interested.”

The man was looking at him with a laid back expression as if he had gotten relaxed even further than before.

Hansoo realized the man’s identity as soon as he saw him.

He had heard a lot of things from the Elvenheims he had met in the Abyss.

Of course he had also heard about the <Fallen One> who caused the Calamities to appear in this world.

It was clear that he was a clone since there was no way that guy would be here.

‘Devouring and Vomiting Root... It seems that it was surprised.’

It would of course have the genetic information of their creator, the Fallen One.

But to clone that kind of guy even if it could have guessed more or less things would turn like this.

‘That’s why you get cleaned out.’

Hansoo coldly gazed at the Clone who was spinning the key around.

The Clone had a giant Divine Stone Fragment on his right hand and a small key on his left hand.

Hansoo mumbled inwardly after looking at that.

‘To control the Divine Stone Fragment to that extent without the relics...’

He knew because he was also using the Divine Stone Fragment and the relics.

He understood how well that guy was controlling the Divine Stone Fragment.

Of course that guy wasn’t pulling out all the energy from the Divine Stone Fragment but if you take into account the amount of energy the fragment has then that much was still fearsome.

That guy was expertly pulling out a large amount of energy and

pouring it towards a certain location.

And Hansoo knew where that large amount of energy was being poured into.

The huge number of marbles floating behind him.

Though they were smaller than the Ekidrang's Relic Hansoo had, they numbered in tens of thousands.

Hansoo frowned as he saw the floating marbles and the Divine Stone Fragment in the Clone's hands.

‘...Is that the Arsenal I have heard about?’

Marbles like Ekidrang's Relics were constantly being released from the open space behind the Clone.

That's the <Seven Star Marbles> that armed ordinary soldiers.

Since it was an amount that could arm millions of people, the number was tremendous.

‘And as I remember... The Arsenal was seized before they could even arm the soldiers.’

The <Forgotten Sword> that Galadriang, Fabien and Ekidrang's

army had were distributed to everyone but things like <Seven Star Marbles> or <Formless Armor> were all stored within the Arsenal if it was not during a time of war.

The reason why the Elvenheim had lost against the war against Calamity Fish was that their Arsenal had been seized before the soldiers could get armed with the other four gears in exception to the sword.

‘I don’t even know what he has has belief in.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts as he looked at the Clone.

“What are you thinking?”

Why would the guy who had attained the Divine Stone Fragment call him over.

The Clone smiled as he spoke.

“What else. I need to now finish what I was doing. Though you won’t know about it.”

The Alpha looked at the relics floating around Hansoo after he finished speaking.

He was not stupid.

He knew that he was just a clone.

But that did not matter.

His objective could be completed as long as his ability and memory was the same.

‘And I need that thing for this.’

He would be able to create a foundation with those things, the second Divine Stone Fragment he had and the key, <Thousand Soldier Armors>, in his hand.

“I’m just wondering if you could just give me the things you have? I was just born so I don’t really want to fight.”

Hansoo didn’t even reply as he started to rotate the mana within his body.

And Alpha smirked after seeing this as if he had expected this outcome already and flicked the key in his hand which caused a larger amount of marbles than before to start pouring towards Hansoo’s body.

Kududududu

‘It’s a power that could even crush level 10s.’

The strength he had seen earlier was level 9.

This much was enough to erase him without a trace.

Alpha, while pouring in the mana wave created from the Divine Stone Fragment towards the countless marbles, sent in the special mana code ordering to attack Hansoo using the key in his hand.

The reason why <Thousand Soldier Armors> was the king’s treasure.

Normal soldiers could use the five different kinds of gears like the Formless Armor and the Seven Star Marbles from the Arsenal only when the King allows them to.

If the five keys that the Five Great Generals had, the <Key>, signified the might of the World Tree then the key that the king had, <Thousand Soldier Armors>, had powers over the miniature versions of the Five Relics.

If the Thousand Soldier Armors didn’t allow the five gears to work then they would all stop working.

The reason why he didn’t care about the bugs in the distance

with the relics was because of this.

Since he could stop them at his will.

At that moment the Clone freaked out.

Kiriririrk.

“Uuk?”

Something was quickly invading through the Seven Star Marbles that were being controlled with his Mana Wave..

To be precise the marbles that were controlled by his mana waves were lost from his command and started to tilt as soon as they entered the mana wave created from the Relic and the fragments.

And of course once the silvery marbles got weaker, Hansoo swung the golden sword light as he charged at him.

The Clone spat out loudly unintentionally because he was so flustered.

“What the hell! How do you know the Mana Code!”

The Mana Code that was only inscribed on the Thousand Soldier Armors that ruled over the Five Gears was flowing from Hansoo’s



mana wave as it was destroying the mana flow within the Seven Star Mables.

And because of his he could not control them properly.

Hansoo, who had heard the scream-like shout, thought of the conversation he had with the Elvenheims he had met at the Abyss.

<If you find the Arsenal that we failed to retrieve then... Pour in your mana like so. Then you will be able to pull out the gears from inside it and be able to put it on other people.>

‘Didn’t know that I’ll get to use it like this.’

He didn’t really expect much since the Elvenheims didn’t know about the location of the Arsenal either.

But to find it like this.

‘So all of this comes into my possession if I cut off your neck right?’

Then his future plans would become much easier.

He would’ve been smashed apart if he didn’t know the code but it wasn’t hard to approach him once he knew the code.

Hansoo, who had been smiling coldly, looked at the clone who had entered his range and slashed down the golden sword.

Kwarararak

The golden blade cut through the air as it accelerated towards the Clone.

At this moment the Clone gnashed his teeth, stabbed the key onto the air again and then spun it the other way.

If one spun it rightwards then the Arsenal's space will get opened and a large amount of gears will pour out.

But when he turned it leftwards, something different happened.

Charururuk

The moment the key spun in mid-air, all the surrounding air was flipped inside out as it created a silvery ripple.

This ripple started from the Clone's hand which held onto the key, started to climb up the clone's arm and then covered his whole body.

Boooom!

The golden blade smashed down onto the silver armor but it was so tough to the point where not even a scratch was created.

Hansoo freaked out once he saw the extremely familiar form of the armor.

“Uk! Weapon Eater!”

Weapon Eater.

Solo Numbering 6.

An invincible armor that grew by eating up gears.

Hansoo was shocked from the appearance of an armor that could be found in the upper zones.

‘The complete piece was here! The complete piece of Weapon Eater!’

Artifacts were mostly just copies of things that existed somewhere in some world.

Since it was just something that was resupplied as a reward from the fairy.

The reason why numerous items of the same kind could exist was this.

And since the location where the copy of Weapon Eater was found was not here, this meant that the thing over there is the original.

Though he had heard about the key form of the Arsenal and the fact that a special armor of the King was hidden in it but he didn’t know that the armor was the Weapon Eater’s original version.

‘Another reason came up for me to kill him.’

Hansoo’s eyes shone at the unexpected find.

# Chapter 78 – Racial War (1)

---

Boom!

Hansoo started to madly smash down the armor in front of his eyes.

The clone stared at the attacks pouring at him and then started to grind his teeth.

‘Damn it. It’s really annoying.’

The Thousand Soldier Armor could only be strong.

It was obvious.

Since it was an armor made to protect the king.

Being protected by the Thousand Soldier Armor and commanding the soldiers armed with the gears inside the Thousand Soldier Armor.

Though the armor was fitting to be the King’s treasure, it was impossible for him to beat that guy with this current body during this situation where he didn’t have any soldiers and the Seven Star Marbles were being negated from the mana code.

‘This won’t do. I need to get out.’

The Clone grinded his teeth.

That guy over there was not in a rush.

Though the Armor was protecting him for now, he will get pummeled to death eventually.

He could not die in such a place.

‘I cannot fail.’

He didn’t even know where or what his original was doing.

But from what he had seen, it seemed like he had failed his objectives in this place.

Since something like this wouldn’t have had happened if he was alive.

‘I cannot die here... for the 1.6 billion of my people who are waiting for my success.’

He had come over to this world with only his soul because of this.

And because of this he had fought against all of the Elvenheims here by himself.

For the survival of his race.

‘I will end it all.’

The Clone clenched his teeth.

‘Dammit... Though I don’t want to give up Thousand Soldier Armor...’

The Clone Shouted.

“Succession of the Thousand Soldier Armor!”

As soon as those words ended the armor that was surrounding the Clone started to disassemble at an extreme speed.

Then it followed the golden blade light that was smashing at him and stretched towards Hansoo.

The silvery scales quickly moved onto Hansoo’s body from the Clone’s body.

And soon Hansoo’s body was completely covered with the King’s Armor, Thousand Soldier Armor.



Kudududuk

Hanso tried to move but the silvery armor became a prison and did not let Hansoo move.

Power Succession.

A stage during when the Thousand Soldier Armor checks the owner for their qualifications for the Armor.

He had attained the power over the Thousand Soldier Armor like this through the same process.

The equipped person will go through the test for the qualifications to become the owner of the Thousand Soldier Armor while being inside it.

Though seven out of ten people will usually die in that dangerous process but he didn't think that Hansoo will fail at all.

Kiriririk

The Clone quickly turned his head as he saw the Armor squeaking already.

If that guy equips the Armor then his battle power will rise up to around level 10.

Though he won't be at level 12 like the Calamity Fish and reach the disaster level but he will be strong enough to go against a whole castle and its inhabitants.

If a hundred came at him then all hundred of them will be killed.

‘Escape through teleportation.’

Since the Devouring and Vomiting Root had stopped its movements it was now possible to teleport.

Even if he was a clone and did not have the leaf of the World Tree, it would still be possible for a single body to teleport with the cells in his body.

‘I guess... I won't be able to take the Divine Stone Fragment.’

The Clone frowned.

The Divine Stone Fragment had a lock casted on it to prevent teleportation through the World Tree to prevent theft.

It was obvious, since it'll be a disaster if some crazy person were to charge in and teleport away with the Divine Stone Fragment.

The Clone madly dashed upwards.

He had thought of putting the Divine Stone Fragment back inside the Devouring and Vomiting Root but he might get caught if he were to do that.

The Clone, which had ran past the main body of the Devouring and Vomiting Root, laid his hands on the World Tree Root that was located above it.

Kiiiiiiiieeng

The World Tree Root, which was gaining back some of its original color after the Devouring and Vomiting Root had disappeared, activated in reaction to the Clone's body.

‘I shall see you later.’

The Clone grinded his teeth as he saw the guy finishing off the succession.

He and that guy were not compatible.

It seemed like that guy was collecting Relics and Divine Stone Fragments.

He needed the Relics and the Divine Stone Fragments that guy had for his race.

‘Damn it. How did the original body fail.’

The only remaining memories left were himself giving the genetic information to the Devouring and Vomiting Root.

He had no way of knowing what the Original had done after that.

Since the World Tree had dried up and the Elvenheim had been

destroyed, it seemed like his objective was almost complete.

But why wasn't there a single sight of his own race.

‘First... I will go to the flower.’

Then the clone's body completely disappeared.

Soon the silvery armor that was making squeaking noises and was pressing down onto Hansoo's body as if it was trying to crush it had stopped.

Then it quickly disassembled and started to collect within his hand.

Then a small silver key appeared in Hansoo's hand.

Hansoo quickly checked his surroundings in order to get an idea of his current situation.

‘Tsk. It ran away.’

Since he had left behind the Divine Stone Fragment, it seemed like he had escaped through teleportation.

Since there was no way he would not take that thing if he was going to run.

Kirurururk

Hansoo stabbed the key onto the air and then spun it rightwards.

Then a black hole appeared in the air.

When he focused, all the surrounding Seven Star Marbles all started to get sucked into the hole.

‘I don’t think I can even use it to attack.’

It was burdensome to sustain the Mana Wave alone.

There was no way for him to use the Seven Star Marbles to attack like the Clone when a simple retrieving order hurt his head so much.

The reason why the Clone was able to use these things to attack was because he was made of the cells of a very special person.

It was better for him to just send that focus onto his Relics and fighting with those.

Hansoo Organized his thoughts and then spun the key leftwards.

Kiriririrk

Then silvery scales instantly covered all of Hansoo's body.

One of the two King's Treasures.

Thousand Soldier Armor.

Maybe it was due to the others being replicas, the features were similar to the Weapon Eater he knew.

It would grow by eating up gears.

It would get harder and harder and change its color once enough has been devoured and turn into an artifact of zones above.

It would evolve once it ate thousands and thousands of gears.

It only ate the good materials from those gears and then creates an armor that fit the user's body.

Of course it showed off a much higher hardness and mana conductivity compared to other armors.

And a special ability of the Thousand Soldier Armor.

Hansoo took out the forgotten sword from the Arsenal and then lightly swung it towards his body.



Kagagagak

As soon as he swung the sword the surface of the armor changed.

To a form that was suitable to resist the attack.

Toong

‘As I expected.’

It would show an increased defense against weapons it had eaten or ones similar to it.

It seemed like it had eaten the forgotten sword before since it already had resistance against it.

An armor that was faithful to its job as armor.

Though there weren't many more extra skills but it was to Hansoo's liking because of this.

‘I don't think I need to feed it more.’

As it seemed, the Thousand Soldier Armor had already evolved to the peak of the Red stage.

It would actually be more troublesome if it evolved further.

Since his runes were still Red.

Hansoo stopped hitting the armor and then thought of the plan from now.

The next plan was to kill the third Calamity.

There was only one thing he needed to do at the Root here.

‘First I need to weaken the Ouroboros.’

<Ouroboros>

The Third Calamity that was so huge that it tied itself around the World Tree Trunk.

He needed a bit preparation to go against that giant snake.

‘First the poison.’

Hansoo quickly ran towards the lower parts of the World Tree Root.

As the two Calamities who sucked onto its toxic waters disappeared, the World Tree was draining a much higher amount of toxic waters that couldn't even be compared to the amount before.

Kwarruruuru

Hansoo gathered the surrounding corpses and quickly started to assemble them.

Since there was a huge amount of corpses around the Plant due to the battle.

Hansoo, who had combined this and that, mixed in the baby's heart he gained before and created a black liquid.

Then he chopped up the World Tree Root with Galadriang's Relic.

Shuguguk

Hansoo poured in the liquid in his hands after seeing the flow of the toxic waters heading towards the Trunk on the inner parts.

‘That’s completed.’

The assembled poison that had flowed wasn’t that poisonous by itself.

But once it touches the toxic waters then it would react and change into something fatal towards the Ouroboros.

There wasn’t much time left until this poison will enter into the stomach of the Ouroboros who would be sucking out the toxic waters with his fangs biting into the inner Trunk parts.

Hundreds of thousands of tons of toxic waters will be turned into something fatal and enter it’s stomach.

‘Though this isn’t even close to enough.’

Actually he had planned to do as much as he did up to this point.

But it seemed like he would need to change his plans from this point on.

Since something unexpected happened.

‘A Clone huh.’

Hansoo frowned.

Though that guy was a Clone he would still have a lot of powers since it had the cells of the Original.

He had known as soon as he saw him running away through teleportation.

‘I don’t know what kind of tricks he will use.’

The only thing he had heard from the Elvenheim was that the Fallen One had tried to use the Calamities to turn the World Tree into a mess and force the Elvenheim into extinction.

The Elvenheims didn’t know either, as to why their King had suddenly gone mad and tried to massacre them all.

‘Tsk. There’s a limit.’

Elvenheims and Humans both, they were both races that had failed and roamed around the Abyss.

Those who lost because they didn’t know something and because

they did lack something

Of course there was no way for them to know everything about that world.

His job was to run while filling up those lacking gaps.

‘Though I guess I know one thing.’

He had no way of knowing what kind of thoughts he had and what he would do.

He also didn’t know how much of a difference in power the Clone had to the Original.

But the actions of the Clone was clear.

It had targeted the Relic in his hands.

Which meant that the Clone needed the Relic in his hands for his objective and would definitely come find him.

‘I don’t know if his appearance made things easier or harder.’

He had gained a lot from that guy’s appearance.

With The Thousand Soldier Armor, Three Relics and the Divine

Stone Fragments then he would be easily be able to get through the defense system of the Calamity Fish that he had barely passed through after pouring in the poison.

He was a level stronger overall than when he used Racial Metamorphosis.

He had also attained the Arsenal and the gears within it was a huge profit.

But he didn't know how and when the guy, who clearly had evil intentions towards him, will affect him.

‘I guess I should look around a bit then.’

If that guy were to use some tricks then a clue will pop up somehow.

‘I guess I need to receive some help. Anyways, how will they react.’

People will row the same directions when they were on the same boat but the story changes once the boat arrives.

Hansoo collected the Divine Stone Fragment and then quickly moved towards Michael who was loitering in the distance.

.....



Top of the World Tree.

Though it had dried up, it still soared above the clouds.

A single flower had bloomed at the top of this.

Though it seemed small in comparison to the giant World Tree but this pink flower easily reached over 1km in size.

And a man was standing on the edge the World Tree where the flower was attached onto.

The Clone who had run away using Teleportation.

But the Clone was making quite a troubled expression.

“...Entrance is not allowed?”

The living area that was only allowed to kings, <Flower>, was covered with tens of thousands of petals as if it wasn't going to let anyone enter.

Though it looked beautiful from a point of view, it was a construct made from a huge amount of energy.

If somebody who isn't granted access touches it then they will

ignite on fire and then burn away.

There were only two people who could freely enter this place.

King.

And the Administrator who had collected the five keys and had the qualifications to ask for the Throne.

Even the Five Great Tiger Generals could not enter this place without the King allowing them so.

And the Clone was confident because of this.

Since his body was made of the Original's cell who was the King.

But for him to not be able to enter.

If he hadn't stopped because he felt ominous in the middle then he would've burned off in an instant.

'Damnit... What happened.'

He had believed that memories were useless but when a situation like this happened he could only regret the blank memories.

There was only one way now.

‘I have to collect all the keys.’

The Three Relics that guy had.

He had to kill that guy in order to collect them all.

And he needed power to do that.

A power that wasn't consisting of tricks but rather strong enough to crush that guy whole in an instant.

‘Teleportation... is going to be a bit hard right now.’

There was too much strain on the body since it had teleported without the leaves and only through his power.

But he did not have the time to wait for the cooldown.

‘Go to Ouroboros.’

The Clone started to quickly run down the World Tree.

And the Clone thought on the way down.

Though he had no memories but reality showed him.

His race was not here.

The original body had clearly failed.

‘The failed original does not have the qualifications anymore. I shall... Receive that name now.’

The Clone then thought of the original owner of his body and memories.

The person who had been called the Last King of Elvenheim in this world.

<Aruntelheim>

No, there was no need to use that name anymore.

A name from much before then.

The name before he had crossed over with his race’s hopes and had been born in Elvenheim during the time when his race, <Akaron>, was going extinct due to a great disaster.

<Tekilon>

‘Now... I am Tekilon.’

Tekilon started to go down even quicker after completing his thoughts.

In order to gain the power of Ouroboros, the giant snake that would have coiled around the pillar.

# Chapter 79 – Racial War (2)

---

“What is floating around like this...”

Camille Rowe, who had been walking around the seaside, made a fatigued expression.

The shore in the distance was already in chaos.

“Hey! Don’t rush in! We aren’t lacking nutritional fluids anymore!”

“The Roots grew a bit more! Let’s go to the wreckage!”

There was chaos everywhere.

Maybe it was because the Calamity Fish had died but the World Tree was growing at a pace that was visible to the eye and somehow the Nutritional Fluids were more abundant.

‘If the Roots grow at this pace then we might really be able to save billions. But what’s the point. You dumbass. You are the one who needs to survive.’

It had been days since she had searched around these Roots after the Calamity Fish had died.

But she could not find that Hansoo guy no matter what.

And even more since she had to dodge the clansmen of the six pillars.

‘Damnit. I need to know whether you’re alive or not.’

She had even used her precious wish card that she had been saving just to find that guy.

<Thank you for saving me. There isn’t a reward for anything but... Call me once when you really need me. I shall help you then. Oh, except killing the Calamity Fish. That’s a bit too much even for me...>

At that moment a woman flew down from the air and then landed next to Camille.

Kwaaaaa!

A vibration that rang throughout the ground resonated.

But Camille made an extremely welcoming expression, looked at the woman who landed, Sofía, and then asked.

“It took you a while. Did you find him?”

Sofía shook her head at those words.

“I searched all around here according to your wishes but he’s not here. He doesn’t even get caught in my trait either.”

Camille clenched her teeth as she looked at Sofía.

‘If Sofía can’t find him then I really can’t find him...’

Trait, <Library>.

It gave information about the things one didn’t know and also gave simple information as to what to do.

A trait that really stood out in this world where information became strength and power.

Sofía also made a fed up expression as she spoke.

“This is a first for me too... Usually there’s only two different scenarios where they don’t show up when I want to find them.”

Camille clenched her teeth at those words.

Since she knew about it somewhat.

If Sofía thinks of something she wanted than a location or a direction will show up.



But there were only 2 cases where it won't come out.

A location where it was too dangerous for Sofía.

Or nonexistence.

‘Did he really...’

But sadly there wasn't any places in the Red Zone where Sofía's strength was not enough.

Since Sofía was a strong person who was above the standards.

Which means the likelihood of the second case was high.

While Camille was making a worried expression, Sofía's eyes suddenly brightened up.

“Huh? The location comes up.”

“Hmm?”

“Why does it suddenly come out?”

Sofía made a confused expression.

Since she was able to find Hansoo's location that Camille had asked for suddenly.

Anyways, she would be able to find him now.

“Let's go!”

“Hu-uk!”

Camille was shocked at Sofía who had aggressively hugged her but she couldn't even retaliate.

And soon Sofía, who was holding onto Camille, aggressively launched off from the ground.

Kwaaaaaang.

Soon Sofía who was holding onto Camille disappeared to the distant Base Root while giving off a loud noise.

.....

‘It's completely dead.’

Hansoo stopped on the way down and then approached the Devouring and Vomiting Root that had completely stopped

working.

Since it could not maintain its huge body once the Divine Stone Fragment was extracted.

Hansoo went inside the body and then cut up a certain section.

‘This is it.’

An Organ the size of Hansoo’s head that was located deep within the Core of the main body.

This was the Core Memory Drive Organ that had all the genetic information of the beasts within it.

Hansoo quickly moved towards Michael after taking the Memory Drive Organ.

It was much easier to receive the help of the Clan in order to find out information about the changes around the World Tree.

Since the influence of Lighthouse, one of the Six Great Pillars, had reached every corner.

It was just that 150 of them had fallen here but there was around ten thousand and around 40 sub-clans.

They would be able to find it out immediately no matter what the Clan tried to do.

Kuuoooong

Michael made a bitter expression as he looked at Hansoo who had fitted himself with a brand new armor.

An Armor that didn't seem simple at a single glance.

‘Where does this guy keep picking up all these things?’

He started to understand why this guy had denied his offer around this point.

The moment Hansoo looked at that Michael and tried to explain his situation a loud shockwave resonated from the World Tree Root above.

Kugugugu

To the point where the noise made that far above resonated to them who were underground.

The vibrations became bigger and bigger then something penetrated the wall of the underground area and came down.

Booom!

“Kuuu.... What is this.”

While Michael was frowning, something walked out from the dust.

“Woah. Michael. It’s been a while. It has been 6 months since we last saw each other right?”

At those words Michael grinded his teeth.

“Sofía...”

‘Goddamnit.’

Michael frowned.

He had gained the intel before he had been swallowed up by the Devil's Mouth.

That one of the Seven Departed Souls was roaming around this place.

‘Why did it have to be that damned bitch.’

While Michael grinded his teeth, Sofía put down the dizzy Camille and then looked around at her surroundings.

‘Is that guy Hansoo.’

She knew instantly.

Since he was the only one here she had not seen before.

The others were people she had collided with once or twice when she went up against Michael in the past.

Sofía looked at Hansoo and then opened her trait, the Library.

‘Let's see.’

<Kang Hansoo>.

-1st Year Adventurer.

-Owned Skill: 1.

-Average Rune Amount: 39.4%

Though it didn't really show up in front of her like this but it came down to this once she organized the things that came up in her head.

It seemed almost like hacking but his limits were clear as well.

It wasn't that clear but she could guess her opponent to a degree using her experiences so far.

And Sofía frowned because of this.

‘...He killed the Calamity Fish with this?’

And it seemed like he had killed the main body of the Devil's Mouth as well.

‘No way.’

The fact that he was very lacking was enough.

A first year who only had one skill with runes less than 50%.



Though it was amazing for a 1st year but that was just relative in the end.

If he was compared to the rest of the Red Zone then he couldn't even reach the middle.

‘How did he kill it with that level...’

And if he did kill it, what level would he reach once he filled up all his runes.

‘I need to see the level of the Artifact...’

Right as Sofía was about to check Hansoo with more detail, Hansoo looked at Sofía and spoke out.

“Try focusing on something else other than me.”

“What?”

At that moment something came into Sofía's head.

Sofía's expressions froze at the sudden strange feeling that had come into her head.

This strong sensation that her trait was transmitting to her.

Danger.

And only really big danger at that.

‘Something’s coming down... From up?’

Sofía felt the slight vibrations along the World Tree as she looked at the hole she had made on the way in high up in the World Tree Root.

.....

Kurururururu

A humongous snake was coiled around the World Tree.

Ouroboros.

The easiest Calamity to confirm with the eyes unlike the others.

Actually this guy didn't really directly hurt humans.

There was only one thing it did.

It drank the Toxic Waters supplied to the World Tree after biting around the Pillar in the middle with its head that was larger than a small island.

Of course the people below will starve since that thing would drain the toxic waters that was going to be turned into Nutritional Fluids by the World Tree but they stayed like that.

Since they didn't want to even imagine the case where that thing would get pissed and come down.

An existence that they were thankful for staying still.

At the same time that thing was one of the few methods for the people living at the Roots to reach the Branch safely.

Since it was very hard even for adventures of the Red Zone to climb up to the Branch that reached over the clouds without getting tired.

But they could reach their destinations with much more ease by stepping atop the body which coiled around the tree and had its tail around the ground.

So a lot of people stepped on its body and headed towards the Branch but there was still a location they never got close to.

Head.

This thing will ruthlessly attack once they get near the head that was drinking the toxic waters.

But there was a person who had reached the head.

The Clone, who had now found his name to be Tekilon, entered through one of the countless gaps between the Scales.

The Ouroboros was also growing a huge number of parasites within its body for defensive purposes but they moved aside after looking at Tekilon.

Kugugugugu

Tekilon, who had arrived inside the head, places his hand on the central nervous system as he quickly tapped into the Ouroboros using his power.

Kuuuuuuuuuu

Though the Ouroboros was slightly guarded against the strange creature that had invaded its

head but it didn't act rashly.

Since it was quite confused.

The guy felt like his creator but was different from the creator in some ways.

That difference was making the Ouroboros hesitate. At that moment a command flew into his head.

<This is for you. Close every hole in the body including the mouth. So that nobody can come in.>

The Ouroboros screamed out in dissatisfaction at those commands.

Kurururururu

It was eating.

For the thing to disturb him eating when he didn't even seem like a complete creator.

Then the Creator-like creature who had seen the reaction of Ouroboros made a new command instead.

<... Then just close all the pores in the body except the Mouth.>

Kirururuk

That wouldn't be a problem.

The Ouroboros covered its whole body with its steel-plate-like scales.

Tekilon clicked his tongue as he saw the reaction of Ouroboros.

'Damnit. I set the instinct of wanting food too strong on this guy. It'll take a while.'

Tekilon slowly invaded it so he wouldn't irritate it.

Since this thing could go crazy if he tried to get it under his command from the get-go.

Quite a large amount of time was needed to him to fill up his greed for food.

'I don't have time.'

Tekilon clenched his teeth.

He didn't know how much time had past between his last and current memory.



He wanted to go down with Ouroboros and crush them when he thought of his race who would've died and will continue to die while he bought time.

Anyways, he didn't need to care about the people who had landed here unlike the Elvenheim who took a bit of effort.

But Tekilon was breathing in and out alone.

'2 weeks. I can control it after 2 weeks. I will take this guy and go down in 2 weeks.'

He wouldn't be able to come in and set up a trap since all the pores were closed and if he were to get frustrated and then attack then Ouroboros will smash him apart.

'There's no need to hurry.'

He was used to waiting.

Since there were memories he had suppressed during the time he was born as the Elvenheim and until he finished all his preparations after becoming king.

And because he had held onto it for a long time and prepared for it, he was able to attack the Elvenheims when they weren't suspecting and could go against the army of the Five Great Tiger generals who rushed in to stop the crazy king and the Calamities.

Tekilon put his hands on the central nervous system of the Ouroboros who was busy eating as he gave the strongest order he could give.

Though it was hard to make it stop eating and go down since it had a large liking for toxic waters but everything else wasn't that hard.

‘I guess I need to open it for a moment.’

Tekilon gave his orders as soon as he finished his decision.

.....

“Hooh. It’s really high.”

One of the Hecate Clansmen spoke out after seeing the scene that could be seen below her feet as she was climbing up the Pillar on Ouroboros.

The toxic sea that was spread far and wide endlessly.

And the wide World Tree Mountain Range that was on top of it.

Though it had dried up, the sheer size of it covered over it and showing quite a spectacle.

The woman, Chwee, who had been climbing up with the man, Ben, who was applauding the scene spoke as she laughed.

“Better artifacts come out if you go up a bit more from here. Be strong a bit longer. We need to gear ourselves anyway since we’ll be going over to the next zone soon.”

Ben replied at these words.

“Like the Seven Departed Souls?”

Chwee slightly frowned as she nodded.

Seven Departed Souls.

People who had filled up the requirements to go up and had grown strong to the point where they would threaten all of the Six Great Pillars by themselves and had not gone up for some reason.

If you average out of the years the Seven Departed Souls stayed within the Red Zone then it was 11.

People who had gotten stronger and stronger by staying in the Red Zone for almost around 11 years.

Actually there were some 1st years.

People who had come to this world with Eres or Keldian who had left behind a legend.

Which meant that they had stayed in the Red Zone for 20 years alone.

And because of this they were called Departed Souls.

They would usually call those people seniles but they were too afraid to.

‘They aren’t right in their heads.’

Chwee blessed her thoughts as she spoke while smiling.

“Yeah. Where do you think the Seven Departed Souls have gotten those Rare artifacts from?

Kuhuhu. They say we might be able to obtain the feather if we’re lucky.”

“Wow. Then there are more reasons to go up then.”

He didn’t even want the top class artifacts that the Seven Departed Souls had.

They would be able to equip themselves with gear a full tier up once they gained a single feather.

Ben started to quickly walk upwards as if those words energized him.

At that moment a strange sound was heard from somewhere.

Kidududududuk.

“Huh?”

Ben, who was quite sensitive enough to the point of working as a member of the Search team of the Hecate Clan, quickly looked around.

The surface of the Ouroboros, which was covered with scales that were few meters long, was shaking up and down.

Then something started to crawl out from between the scales.

Ben was shocked once he saw this.

“Uaaaak! Parasites!”

The things the people, who entered Ouroboros without knowing the dangers through the Scales, met first.

“Damnit! Run!”

Ben and Chwee looked at the giant parasites that reached over 4m in height as they started to madly run atop of Ouroboros.

Billions of grasshopper-shaped parasites crawled out as they started to attack.

# Chapter 80 – Racial War (3)

---

Kururururu

Michael clenched his teeth as he received the messages and carrier pigeons that were flowing in madly from all around.

“Is there a possibility that you killing that... Has some relationship with the reason why the parasites of Ouroboros have gone crazy?”

There was chaos going on the Roots above.

Since they said that a huge amount of parasites that could be clearly seen from below were crawling out of the body of Ouroboros and marching down.

Billions of them when they weren't even weak.

And there was only one reason why the Ouroboros who had been quiet for 20 years was like that.

Hansoo nodded at those words.

‘I wondered where he went... It seems like he went to connect to Ouroboros.’

Actually the situation which worried him wasn't the parasites but rather him just bringing down the Snake.



Since then it will become so dangerous to the point where it wouldn't even be comparable to the parasites.

‘But since he isn't doing so... It seems that it'll take some time. Anyways, I don't think I can do anything inside of it then.’

According to his original plan, he was going to feed poison to the Ouroboros and slowly grind it up from the inside.

But there was no way the Clone will sit and watch him rampaging inside it.

Which meant that it was a full frontal battle.

‘Time is important then.’

The longer it took for him to come down the better.

There was no way for him to know when he will come down usually but there was an amazing alternative method in front of him.

There weren't many people with the trait Library who hadn't gotten strong.

Intelligence and information were the strongest weapon of all.

Since there was a huge difference between knowing and not knowing the direction even for simple things.

And the woman in front of him actually proved this.

‘It’s been a while. Sofía Vargera.’

Hansoo laughed quietly in his mind.

Sofía Vargera.

One of the final 100 of the human race who had been running towards the Crystal in the distant past.

Of course she was quite close with him too.

‘Well. We can talk things out later.’

He needed intel at this moment.

Hansoo spoke towards Sofía.

“How long do you think it’ll take? Until that thing comes down?”

“What?!”

Michael freaked out at those words.

There was no way that he asked about the parasites coming down.

Since they could check with their own eyes.

Which meant that something else was coming down and there was only one other existence that could trouble this guy.

For the Ouroboros to come down when the parasites were dangerous enough.

Sofía squinted her eyes as she looked at Hansoo.

‘...How did he know? That I would know?’

Exactly a few days. It wasn’t something like this.

But the danger she felt on the skin was increasing and if she calculated with this new sensation then something big will happen in 14 days or 16 days at the latest.

Since there was no way that the parasites will take 14 days to come down so there’s only one other way.

The abnormal Ouroboros will be coming down.

‘Oh god. Something big has happened.’

Sofía clenched her teeth.

For something like this to happen when keeping the seal alone was busy enough.

Hansoo looked towards Sofía and then asked again.

“How long does it take? I need to know that in order to set up a plan properly.”

“ ... ”

The one who was actually in chaos from Hansoo’s attitude was Camille.

Since Sofía was also known for being extremely bad-tempered.

‘Uwaa...’

“Two weeks.”

But Sofía replied obediently unlike Camille’s expectations.

She was too busy calculating what will happen once that thing came down.

‘First contact the leader. Then...’

Her mind was too occupied for her to have the will to squabble with him.

But the problem rose from a different location.

“The Ouroboros is coming down in only 2 weeks?”

Michael clenched his teeth.

He then made his decision instantly.

‘Escape.’

Michael then opened his mouth.

“We’ll leave then. Since there won’t be much time.”

Camille, who had been listening, shouted out in confusion.

“What are you saying? We’ll all die if we don’t fight.”

If something like that came down then there won't be a hole to escape.

What was he thinking.

Michael gazed at Camille and then spoke out.

“If there wasn't an escape route then probably. But that's not the case.”

Sofía also frowned at Michael's words.

This was why she hated the clansmen.

Since they grouped up by themselves and backed off during important moments.

“You crazy bastards. Are you all going to go over?”

Camille frowned at those words.

Since she finally understood what Michael's words of not needing to fight meant.

She had forgotten from shock.

That there wasn't only the Red Zone in the Other World.

‘Damn it... The passage opens soon.’

Camille looked towards the Trunk of the World Tree.

.....

The Hecarim clan, one of the Six Pillars like the Lighthouse.

Jukma, the clan lord, looked at one of the giant trunks behind his main camp.

The Six Pillars weren't something metaphorical.

The giant trunk of the world tree split up into six thick paths when it got close to the surface.

The six split up World Tree Stems dropped down horizontally until the land, split up into 12 roots and then continued to spread along the surface.

And this was why they were Six Pillars and twelve base roots.

Because of this, the six pillars was the best place to give out nutritional fluids to everyone within the clan.

Since it was the start of where the World Tree spread the nutritional fluid from.

And only the strongest six clans could stay here because of this.

‘Well. I don’t know why they don’t place it in a more comfortable location.’

But the foodline not being severed was one of the most important factors.

Jukma gazed contently at the giant trunk which fed the entire clan and then looked over at the lake in the distance behind the trunk.

Lake.

A huge lake that was between the six huge trunks.

It wasn’t made of toxic waters either.

But then it also wasn’t made of nutritional fluids.

The people called this lake the <Mirror>.

A man walked towards Jukma who was staring at the lake.



“What shall we do?”

Amil Stadan who acted as the spear of the Hecarim Clan, calmly asked as he heard the madly rushing news from the outside.

It had been 3 years since they had been here.

But there was not a single time where something like this had happened.

‘... Billions of parasites huh.’

It wasn’t a number that made him think of a loss.

The number was definitely threatening but the path they could take to come down was limited to the body of Ouroboros and the strength of the Six Pillars, Twelve Roots and other clans was formidable as well.

Which meant that if the Six Pillars, Twelve Roots and higher clans were gathered then it would be possible to withstand it despite receiving large amounts of damage.

‘If we group up that is.’

Jukma opened his mouth after finishing his thoughts.

“We’ve enjoyed as much as we needed right?”

Amil Stadan pondered for a moment and then nodded.

1 year where he had crazily struggled to survive after coming to this world.

1 year where he had madly ran to get stronger so he can go up.

6 months of finally finding some leisure and enjoying this and that while watching others struggle.

Though he had only rested for 6 months out of 3 years, he had no problem with this.

Resting for 6 months was a long time.

Jukma laughed as he spoke.

“They all prepared quite a few artifacts right? In Orange.”

“Correct.”

Their runes were currently Red.

The runes that came out from the World Tree Mountain Ranges were only Red.

But sometimes an Orange Artifact that they couldn't even use dropped around the Branches.

‘The Fairies are quite kind.’

Though they can't use it here, it will become much easier for them if they got a good artifact here for the next zone.

Since a good weapon was the core of a strong battle power.

Jukma listened to Amil Stadan's report of being ready and then laughed coldly as he spoke.

“Then let's go over. Slowly.”

He had fun as much as he should have.

He was pondering whether to go up but for a big event like this to happen.

Such an event was basically giving him the final push.

Then Jukma looked over to the Lake, <Mirror>.

They couldn't eat or drink it.

There was only one use for the lake.

A passage to get to the next Zone.

“Get ready. The remaining ones... Well they’ll do well on their own.”

“Yes.”

In order to get out before this place got run over by the parasites they needed to hurry a little bit.

Jukma remembered something while making the plan and then spoke.

“Oh yeah. I heard there was quite a special guy out of the newcomers this time around?”

At those words Jukma nodded to himself.

“That is right.”

“There’s quite a lot of fun guys out of the Koreans this time. Let’s take him. We can just give him runes and raise him.”

“Understood.”

Amil Stadan heard Jukma's words and then started to send carrier pigeons and messages in all directions.

.....

Michael opened his mouth as he looked towards the six trunks.

“In two days the passage is going to open. Once the mirror opens then there's no need for others of the Pillars to fight. They will probably leave first. Sorry but that's the case for us as well.”

Going through the Mirror was very simple.

Once a month, the surface of the lake turned like a mirror.

They just needed to go through it then.

If they have the qualifications then they will disappear into it.

If they don't then they will walk out from the spot whence they walked in from.

Of course most of their clansmen, who were high level adventurers, had the qualifications.

They had been pushing it back until it now but then there's no reason to not leave anymore.

‘There’s no reason to get massacred in a fight where there’s nothing to gain.’

Sofía grinded her teeth at Michael’s words.

“These bitches... Seriously. You guys are really heartless. Those who don’t have the qualifications cannot leave.”

Of course all the other high-ranking adventurers including themselves will leave.

But then what will happen to the countless other adventurers left behind.

If strong people flooded out then the ones remaining below will just get massacred.

Michael snorted at Sofía’s words.

“What, then you want us to get killed here as well? I don’t know about the parasites but what are you going to do when the Ouroboros comes down? You damned bitch. I don’t know what you’re thinking but to us our clan is more important than everyone else in the world combined.”

Fighting with their life on the line for people they don’t know about.

Words were easy to speak.

But could they actually do it?

It was human nature to feel sad for their own family getting hurt more than a distant war.

‘I can’t give up.’

As Michael and Sofía’s argument grew, the one who was feeling troubled was actually Camille.

Camille looked towards Hansoo after staring at the two for a while.

He had killed two of the four Calamities so far.

Wouldn’t he have a method of dealing with the Ouroboros as well?

“Do you perhaps have a method of killing the Ouroboros?”

Michael snorted at Camille’s words.

Hansoo had killed the Calamities by wrecking them from inside the body.

But for some reason the Ouroboros sent out all the parasites which acted as the inner defensive system.

What did this mean?

‘This means that it won’t let anyone come inside anymore.’

According to his clansmen inspections, every hole in its body was being blocked by the scales on the body.

This meant that they have to kill it in a full frontal battle but a single swipe from that snake tail could smash apart the giant Root they were standing on.

Though it did not have any special abilities like the Devouring and Vomiting Root but the size, hardness and mass of its body made it overwhelming.

Killing that thing in a head on battle did not make any sense.

No, if nobody distracted the parasites to buy time then fighting it was impossible in the first place.

Hansoo nodded at those words.

“It’s a bit hard alone.”



“...?”

Everyone made a surprised expression.

That meant that he could kill it if they helped.

Hansoo started to quickly calculate things within his head.

‘Two weeks are a bit tight.’

A beast that was getting controlled by somebody who had evil intentions and a beast that was faithful to its primitive instinct.

There was no need to say which was more dangerous.

It wasn't that they were going to wait 2 weeks and killing it after it comes down.

They had to beat it before 2 weeks, before that thing was completely under control.

‘It's too hard to do it alone’

If he and the Seven Departed Souls combine their power and borrow the power of the artifact, it'd be doable to fight with the bastard drinking zealously the poison water.

‘Not only Sofía, we call the six others as well. And while the six pillars and the other guys block the parasites, we climb to beat the Ouroboros.’

Other people wouldn’t know but there was a way of contact between the Seven Departed Souls.

Done thinking, Hansoo opened his mouth and explained his plan.

And Michael, Sofía and everybody else froze after hearing the plan.

‘... You want us to trust that kind of plan and not leave?’

If they miss the chance of two days later, they’re trapped here for a whole month.

If Hansoo fails to kill the Ouroboros, after two weeks of calm they’ll have no choice but to spend the remaining two weeks until the passage opens again with the Ouroboros raging around. (\*PR: Edited this sentence heavily to make it clear)

There was not much to say about the result as well.

No. Even then, why would the other clans agree and help them.

‘Damn it. What is he thinking. Is he mad?’

Michael clenched his teeth inwardly.

But Sofía's expression froze because of another reason.

“Do you guys even know what we are doing?”

The people thought that those who were called the Seven Departed Souls were running around the branches for stronger or better artifacts.

And they thought that this was the reason why they weren't seen from the eyes of those around the Trunk or Roots.

But this was not correct.

The reason why they were staying around in this place for such a long time was not because of such petty reasons.

And because of this the seven of them could not leave at the same time.

Hansoo quietly grasped onto Sofía's hands from those words.

“What...!”

While Sofía was surprised, Hansoo wrote something down on

Sofía's hand.

<Akuma>

“...What are you?”

The thing that they were sealing.

Sofía's expression froze from the word that no one should know other than the seven of them, the word which Hansoo had written down on her hand.

# Chapter 81 – Racial War (4)

---

The Calamities people knew about were four in total.

One at the Sea.

One at the Roots.

One at the Trunk.

One at the Branch.

‘And a very special one.’

Hansoo mumbled inwardly.

The 1st year Adventurers who had searched far and wide in order to explore the new world 20 years ago had seen the four kinds of Calamities but didn't worry much.

Since these guys seemed busy eating up the World Tree and didn't really seem interested in people.

While they were searching all over the World Tree while avoiding the Four Calamities, Keldian and his comrades found something extremely dangerous deep within the World Tree.

A creature that seemed like it was being sealed by somebody.

And tens of thousands of marks of those who got massacred while trying to seal that creature.

The six powers that were controlling the wide World Tree Mountain Range heard the news and then quickly gathered to the location of the Seal.

And they realized.

That this thing was more dangerous than the calamities if it were to get released.

But this guy looked like a incomplete creature unlike the completed lifeforms such as the Calamities.

Like something somebody had failed while making it.

And it was weaker than the Calamities because of that but unlike the Calamities who weren't really interested in people, this thing was showing extreme reactions against living creatures.

They hadn't included it in the Calamities because it was an incomplete product but then if this thing were to go on a rampage after getting out then the people who came after them will just get killed without being able to do anything.

No, they would get swept over too.

<This thing being released must be blocked no matter what.>

Their family might come after them.

They couldn't leave this behind and go up.

But then they had no methods of killing it.

Since being slightly weaker than the Calamities meant that it was much much stronger than humans.

So they only had one option.

<Guard the seal>

They first put their powers around Six Trunks near the location of the Seal in order to block random people from getting to the Seal.

Since if they, the strongest, were guarding it then nobody would be able to get to the Seal as well.

At the same time they decided to keep it a secret from them as well.

Since it would be dangerous for them to know about such a dangerous existence and people who get blinded by the greed of reward will come out.

And one of the six people who had gathered had remained behind in order to keep the Seal.

The man who had raised the giant power of Hecarim, one of the six Pillars, without the ability of a Lord and with only strength alone.

Naming the creature had befallen to the one who had chosen to sacrifice himself for everyone else and the man who had chosen to remain behind, Miyamoto, named the creature Akuma.

He then realized that it was too much for him to maintain the constantly weakening seal and then gathered people who had the potential to get strong and had the same thoughts as him as comrades.

These were the Seven Departed Souls.

The protectors who hadn't gone up and were protecting the seal for tens of years.

'I don't know why that guy had failed in creating this thing but... Kill the Akuma first then take these guys to kill the Ouroboros.'

But Sofía's expression didn't change while looking at that



Hansoo.

‘What does this kid know?’

Four Calamities.

They were indeed dangerous.

And his confidence would probably be brimming since he had killed two of them.

But if those things were natural disasters then the thing they were sealing was like a nuclear weapon created with evil intentions.

Not as strong as a natural disaster but the fact that humans can't go up against it was the same and it actually went against humans unlike natural disasters.

‘But even then... I still can't ignore him.’

She could not ignore a person who had killed two of the Four Great Calamities and also knew the name of Akuma.

She had to talk to the leader, Miyamoto.

Sofía set the intention of communicating into her mind and then

took out the next question.

“Ok so we’re set then but what are you going to do about the other clansmen?”

Sofía threw something into the air as soon as she finished talking.

The small ball that left Sofía’s hands got bigger and bigger as it grew to the size of a man and then rose into the air.

The round object which had risen to the air suddenly opened its eyes.

Then it started to show the scenery of the Six Trunks above clearly in front of Sofía.

Michael was shocked as he saw this.

‘...God’s white of the eye. Such a high level skill.’

A skill which allowed one to see whenever they wanted in the World Tree continent as long as they fulfilled the requirements.

The reason why the Seven Departed Souls were scary was because of that.

They had collected and raised the mastery of skills and artifacts for almost 10 years.

In conclusion they had numerous artifacts that were hard for anyone to acquire one of and used high-level skills freely.

And battle experience that exceeded others by a few times.

There's no way they couldn't be strong.

But Camille groaned from a different reason than Michael's.

"It's not even a mess..."

Sofía's skill was showing them the situation above clearly.

A few of the Six Pillars were reacting in a hurry to the sudden wave of parasites.

But on the other hand, the Pillars that were located far away from the Ouroboros' tail didn't really care for as to whether the clans in the front were fighting or not as they took everything they needed and were taking their clan upwards.

Though the Six Pillars who were fighting looked like heroes of justice, it wasn't really that.

The Pillars that were fighting were only doing so because they had gotten close, they still made sure to maintain their power as they fell backwards.

Michael clicked his tongue as he saw this.

‘That’s the right decision.’

Two days.

It was long but at the same time very short.

Everyone probably realized this.

That it’ll take about 2 weeks in order for the Ouroboros to come down.

Though it won’t be as good as the Library Sofía had, there were plenty of traits that were similar.

If they get those traits, experience and combine it with the data handed down through the Six Pillars then it wasn’t that hard to realize that that thing will come down in 2 weeks.

If the Ouroboros didn’t come down then there might be some clans who decide to fight.

But since that thing's descent was decided, everyone chose to ran.

With as much of their power maintained as possible.

“What are you going to do. Solve that first. If you show me that then I'll believe you.”

If they couldn't even block the parasites charging over there then they couldn't even progress after that.

Hansoo pondered for a moment at those words and then got up.

.....

“Goddamnit! The other clans aren't coming? What about Hecarim!”

“Damnit! Damage will increase if they get through! We have to block them here! No matter what!”

Two of the Six Pillars, Helper Clan and the Triple Lights Union, were blocking the tide-like parasites as they screamed out.

Hooong

A green-colored skill of one of the Celestial Generals from the Triple Lights Union exploded towards the parasites crawling down from above.

Somebody who didn't know every well about these things would have been scared to their wits.

To send attacks towards the Ouroboros above!

What would they do if the Ouroboros got enraged.

But the Celestial General didn't even put that into his calculations.

'Fuck. If an attack like this worked on it then I wouldn't even be scared.'

Booom!

A circle which was of tens of meters in radius had turned into ashes and tens of parasites had turned into dust but as he expected the Ouroboros didn't react at all.

Since the Ouroboros was too lazy to move just because its scales were a bit scratched.

Though it had worked out as he planned, his expression wasn't that great.

‘These damned things. They’re too big.’

Since the bodies of the parasites were huge, there weren't many of them who fell in the range of a large area skill.

And killing few tens of them didn't even dent their numbers.

The space that had been emptied by the ones dead had been quickly refilled by those who were constantly pushing down the road to hell upon the body of the Ouroboros.

‘Bitch...Hecarim, Pillars you despicable bastards! For not a single one of you to show up!’

But the Celestial General knew as well.

That there was no reason for them to shed blood and come help.

The reason why the Triple Lights Union and the Helper Clan were fighting was not because they had a hidden mission or anything.

Though something like that might've existed in the beginning of the Six Pillars but in the near 20 years that the clans existed for,

the clan members had been replaced over and over again.

What has been left now were not ideals but rather reality.

The reason why they were fighting here was because the damned tail of the Ouroboros that acted as the path for the charging Parasites was located in between the Helper Clan and Triple Lights Union.

Since their main base would get wrecked if they didn't block them.

But their situation wasn't something they would curse over.

'We shall also guard for a bit and then maintain our formations as we get out.'

Though they didn't feel comfortable about the adventurers below but they couldn't do anything.

It was impossible for the adventurers below to raise their strength to the point where they can get through the Mirror in 2 days anyways.

It might be possible if all the Clans focused on doing so but no one had the leisure to do so.

While they were grinding their teeth, a huge soundwave was



heard in the distance.

‘Hmm?’

Though this wasn't the time for him to get distracted, the Celestial General had been in the Otherworld too long to ignore an extremely strong existence that pervaded all their detection skills.

‘Monumental Air path... Who has a skill like this?’

And something like this meant that they had increased the mastery to the extremes.

The Celestial General heard the sound wave coming from the Base Root and then looked over towards that direction.

‘Sofía Vargera....’

The Seven Departed Souls were in a awkward situation with the Six Pillars.

Their relationship wasn't good but wasn't that bad.

‘Damn it. There's no way someone like her would help either.’

Even from the start it would be a piece of cake for someone like her to just go through the Mirror when something like this

happened.

At that time something bulky started to form in Sofía's hands.

Green, white and blue lights intertwined and then turned into a jade colored dot.

Then the jade-colored marble made a huge noise as it flew over the sky.

Clink!

The marble which had flown over the sky while drawing out a jade line on its path landed between the swarming parasites.

Clang!

Soon the surface started to freeze up along with the explosion.

Cracklecrackle

In an instant an area many times larger than the Celestial General's attack froze up and all the parasites within that area turned into frozen statues.

‘Oh my god.’

The Celestial General saw that scene as his eyes fluttered.

People spoke of the Seven Departed Souls but there was never an occasion where they would actually see them.

Since they had heard that people like them played around up above.

But what he had heard was the truth after seeing it himself.

The Ouroboros that didn't even react to the previous attack trembled.

Which meant that they had gotten on its nerve quite a bit.

‘It didn't even seem like she went all out.’

And she wasn't alone either.

‘Who’s that next to her.’

A face he had never seen before.

Everyone’s gazes including the Celestial General’s turned to Sofia and Hansoo next to her.

Hansoo then got lost in thought as he pondered while looking at the countless amounts of parasites crawling down from the giant tail of the Ouroboros in front of him.

‘Is this decision the right one?’

If he went into action then he can hold onto all the people from the Six Pillars in this spot.

No, he can actually make them fight more desperately.

And he will help with the relics of the Arsenal.

The damage from the parasites would not increase.

But the parasites weren’t the important part.

‘Isn’t there a method of killing the Ouroboros without doing all of this?’

It wasn't a sin to struggle to survive and these guys trying to escape through the Mirror had quite a normal reaction.

But if he were to fail at killing the Ouroboros after all this then he will be throwing all of the people from the Six Pillars, who could've escaped, into death.

But Hansoo made up his mind.

'There's no other way.'

Somebody had to fight against these parasites.

It was arduous enough for him to focus on the Akuma and Ouroboros themselves.

Light started to shine around Hansoo who was standing above the frozen scales of the Ouroboros.

Kiiiiiiing

The huge amount of energy from the fragment that was being controlled by the three relics started to gather on the tip of the Galadriang’s Relic in Hansoo’s hands.

Soon the light from the Galadriang’s Relic turned into a huge golden hammer instead of a sword.

Hansoo then jumped down as he smashed the hammer down onto the center of the tail of the Ouroboros.

.....

Kwaaaaaaaaaang!

A roar that shook the heavens and the earth resonated throughout the Pillars and the lake and in all directions.

At the thunder-like sound Jukma, who was commanding his Clansmen, quickly looked towards the location where the sound and the light came from.

And then frowned.

‘What is happening now!’

Kurururururu

The tail of the Ouroboros which didn't even react until now started to react quite agitatedly.

It then started to aggressively push in its tail in between the Six Pillars as if it was trying to find the rat that had disturbed its tail.

Boom! Boooooom!

A few more thundering sounds rang out.

The tail kept on poking in between the Pillars as if it was trying to find the one annoying it numerous times.

The tail that was throwing off the tens of thousands of parasites on it laid down as if it got lazy since the thing that had agitated it stopped.

The problem was that the spot the tail landed was the center of the lake, the Mirror.

“Goddamnit.”

Jukma looked at this scene with disbelief.

Chase until the end if you're going to chase.

Why did it stop in such a place.

Soon the parasites that had come down on the tail filled up the lake as they crawled out in all directions.



Chirurururuk

Though the depth of the lake was rather deep, it was just a normal lake other than the single day in which it acted as the Mirror.

It wasn't an obstacle to the 4m-large parasites.

The lake was extremely wide but there were enough parasites to fill it up many times over.

Jukma's expression turned extremely ugly at this scene.

Now it would be impossible for them to get into the mirror without getting through that with all their strength.

In what was this different from a war?

And now all the people on the surface of the Red Zone would get massacred.

'Which crazy bastard...'

At that time a Carrier Pigeon flew in.

<Let's talk.>

Jukma, who had heard the message within the Carrier Pigeon, grinded his teeth as he got up.

‘...I believe some talk is needed.’

“Let’s go.”

Jukma ordered Amil Stadan and started to gather up a few people.

# Chapter 82 – Akuma (1)

---

Jukma looked at his surroundings.

There were a few familiar faces.

Patriarch of Lighthouse, Michael, and Patriarch of Helper, Gichul, and other patriarchs of the Six Great Clans.

And their Guards that they had fought with since the Base Roots.

Though they had gathered from time to time if there were things to discuss but this was the first time when all six had gathered like this.

A very rare event if one took account of the patriarchs of the 12 Roots who would arrive soon.

But there was no time to chitchat.

Since the clansmen of the Six Clans were shedding blood while going against the parasites even at this moment.

Jukma looked at Michael as he spoke.

“I heard that you crawled into the Devil’s Mouth. Is that thing coming down your doing?”

The thing which had been quiet for 20 years suddenly went on a rampage.

There was only 1 thing that could effect that giant thing.

Jukma grinded his teeth at Michael who didn't reply.

“I don't care if you kill the Calamity Fish and cook it up or make a salad out of the Devouring and Vomiting root but you should at least do it so you don't bring us harm. You aren't going to share the things you gained with us anyway right?”

At those words a few people who had been quite dissatisfied nodded their heads.

The fact that he killed the Calamities was amazing.

But what of it.

It might be different if they were going to stay here longer but the Red Zone's peace did not matter to them who were going to go up soon.

There wasn't anything bad but nothing really good about it either.

If it ended at the Ouroboros coming down then they wouldn't

have really said anything.

But to block their escape hole.

Jukma, who had seen the five to one scenario, made a satisfied expression as he got to the main point.

“I won’t stretch it out long. Bring that Kang Hansoo guy. Since it wasn’t just your clan’s doing.”

Kang Hansoo.

The guy who had acted out without any fear and saying that he will kill the Calamity Fish.

They scoffed at him at first.

But they could not anymore.

Since they knew that two of the Four Great Calamities had been killed by that guy.

But they didn’t really feel like congratulating him.

Kang Taeho, who held the responsibility as the Union Head of the Triple Lights Union, quietly listened and then spoke out:

“Bring that guy. If he had killed two of the Four Great Calamities then he should know something about this situation too.”

From the start they had never even considered the fact that Hansoo killed the Calamity Fish with his battle strength.

Since logic still existed.

Sofía Vargera who had gotten strong at an illogical pace with her trait, Library, still took 3 years to get strong.

Him getting that strong when it hasn't even been a month since the tutorial ended had not entered their brains.

Which meant that the thing they needed was the intel and the method to solve the current situation.

‘Hoo. I’m going to go crazy.’

Kang Taeho signed inwardly.

For them to rely on one person in solving such an emergency situation.

They were that desperate.

There was no way for them to drive all of the things from the

lake out with their current gear.

Michael grinded his teeth inwardly as he saw the other clan Patriarchs glaring at him.

‘That crazy bastard. For him to really do it.’

He wanted to block them but there was no way for him to.

How could they block one of the Seven Departed Souls with just 150 people.

<You Crazy Bastard! Then you will basically be turning not only the Six Pillars but the 12 Roots into enemies! Are insane!>

Hansoo answered quite simply.

<Will they think that I did it? I’m just a newcomer?>

<...>

Once logic and reality got too far apart from each other people tended to think of logic more than reality.

There weren’t any words more suitable than newcomer to make them drop their guard.

Especially more so if the person was an existence that defied all rules like the one in front of him.

No one would have thought that this guy would have gotten this strong.

<I'm gonna go do my work now. We won't see each other for a bit. I'll give you some useful things before I leave. This should be enough.>

Michael, who had finished thinking about the conversation he had with Hansoo, thought of the objects that guy had found after the battle.

'This... Is more than enough for the reward for killing the Calamity.'

Michael finished his thoughts after bringing up the image of the millions of weapons that had poured out from the air.

"I don't know where he went. But... I have thoughts of sharing the things I've obtained."

"What?"

The moment his words ended, the clansmen of Lighthouse who had received the orders held onto huge amounts of items as they slowly walked towards the Pillars.



Jukma squinted his eyes as he saw the clansmen of Lighthouse walking towards them from the distance.

.....

Chwajajak

Sofía and Hansoo who had gotten out in the small frame after they had smashed the tail of the Ouroboros hadn't gotten as far away as Jukma and Michael had thought.

They were headed towards the heart of the World Tree that was located above the Lake where the Pillars sprouted from.

Sofía Vergara, who had applied Stealth which was a side effect of mastering the Monumental Air Path to the extreme, felt a cold sweat running down her back from the extreme amounts of mana that she could feel behind her.

‘This is a newcomer?’

But being surprised is being surprised and grasping the truth was grasping it.

There was a need to dissect his battle strength objectively.

Sofía looked over Hansoo with her eyes at the same time she used the skill, Monumental Air Path.

‘Though it's amazing... There's a limit to transferring this to his battle power.’

It was a huge amount of mana for sure.

But there was a limit on how much of this mana Hansoo could actually absorb.

Since there was a difference between using it for himself and spreading it in all directions.

Like how a power plant didn't use all the energy it generated.

‘...But he should still be stronger than myself.’

Sofía was angry but she decided to recognize the things she needed to recognize.

She hadn't fought him but it had been long since he had gone past the line where she needed to fight him to realize it.

Though it wasn't an infinite amount of mana but an amount of mana that had exceeded the limit of a human with that much mana control.

Though he had only a few gears on, every one of them looked oppressing.

‘He might really be able to get Akuma...’

But Sofía shook her head.

This guy was quite amazing too but Akuma was a thing that made one scared the moment one saw it.

‘The Judgement will be given by the Leader, Miyamoto.’

The six huge pillars that towered up from the grounds got closer and closer to each other as they went further up and eventually combined into one.

And there was a very small tunnel in the center of the location where the six pillars connected to each other.

An entrance that was covered with various skills and artifacts.

Hansoo and Sofía went past that entrance and then followed the vertical tunnel in the center of the World Tree as they climbed up.

At that location the other six people who had received Sofía’s message were gathered.

Miyamoto Junichi.

Kyle Cooper.

Baek Jongsang.

Arc Mariangt.

Yoruba.

Tina Charliz.

And Seven including herself.

Hansoo looked over to the thing that was located in the center of the giant area behind the seven people.

Something that had been pierced with a giant spear and had been tied down with huge chains.

It's body couldn't be seen because the chains had tightly and heavily tied him down but the evil aura was spreading out through the chains.

Hansoo mumbled as he saw the thing that looked like an egg of something.

‘Akuma.’

Weirdly, there wasn't a Divine Stone Fragment within the hidden fifth Calamity.

The fifth Divine Stone Fragment existed within the <Flower>

located in the top of the World Tree as far as he knew.

A structure where the energy of the Fragment on the top of the World Tree plummeted straight down onto this place.

Basically it had a different mana wave than Hansoo's mana wave.

‘Maybe the reason why that thing's so vile is because it doesn't have a stable energy within its body like the other Calamities.’

Hansoo looked at the tens of thousands skeletons spread around the Akuma.

Two of the Five Great Tiger Generals who had came to kill the incomplete Calamity and had gotten killed.

Ekim and Kaghon.

And their relics, the Chain Scythe and Spear.

Though those two had failed, they had succeeded in sealing the incomplete Calamity, Akuma.

By using the energy of the Divine Stone Fragment that plummeted down from the top of the World Tree.

‘Though it seems like that thing acts as the thing that protects

that guy.'

In conclusion, they had turned the Akuma into a pause mode with the energy that would've gotten into the Akuma instead but on the other hand the seal was acting as a protection towards that thing.

If he were to pull out the chains in order to kill him then the energy flowing into the chains will flow into Akuma and cause it to gain back its strength again.

The Seven Departed Souls were managing that energy so as much of the energy as possible flowed into the chains and not into the Akuma.

'It seems it doesn't like intruders in the system.'

As another person, Hansoo, came into the mana wave the calm breath of the Akuma got slightly faster as the chains shook.

Like a living creature becoming much more vicious.

This might be one of the reasons why Keldian had decided to keep this place a secret.

Miyamoto looked at Hansoo and spoke with a happy expression.

"Oh? Is this the friend? The friend our youngest one has brought.

Anyways. For you to want to kill the Akuma.”

Miyamoto laughed with a peaceful expression.

20 years since he had guarded this place.

This new friend was a type that provoked one’s curiosity in numerous ways.

To know about the Akuma and even say he wanted to kill it.

But there was something he could guess.

‘Did one of my friends who had found the Akuma with me before leave behind a record somewhere?’

The owners of the Six Pillars who had found this place along with him.

If one of them had left behind a record and this guy had found it then it was something that he could believe.

‘Shall we see?’

His will was good but if his strength didn’t support it then it was just useless.



He understood that this guy called Hansoo was strong but he had seen the Akuma for too long to get shocked by that.

But Miyamoto could only be surprised once he saw the relics that were around Hansoo.

“...The two around the Akuma weren’t the only ones. For there to be three more.”

The others were a bit confused but Miyamoto, who had guarded the Akuma for longer than them, knew instantly when he saw it.

That the three relics around Hansoo were the same type as the two on Akuma’s body.

“Good. It seems I can strengthen the seal even more.”

Miyamoto smiled brightly.

It was getting harder to suppress the Akuma who was getting more and more vicious anyway.

With those relics he will be able to suppress it with a stronger seal for a while.

‘Things will become easier.’

Miyamoto spoke as he looked at Hansoo.

“Let’s tie down the Seal on the Akuma with those for now. Then our movements will become easier so we will be able to handle the parasites below. You can leave in between then. You haven’t... Seen the Akuma so you probably spoke like that. Look over there. Can you kill that thing?”

Miyamoto then pointed towards the egg that was giving off an aura that twisted one’s body.

There wasn’t much to talk about Ouroboros, that incomplete creature was sending off such an aura.

According to Miyamoto’s logic, killing the Akuma and the Ouroboros was not possible.

It might be different once the Ouroboros came down but with this current situation they had to save the people who can go through the mirror before the Ouroboros came down and the Akuma got released.

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

Since that guy was thinking the exact opposite of what he was planning.

Why would he have smashed the tail of the Ouroboros onto the lake?

‘Well. He might not know that I’ve done that yet.’

Since he had come up right after he hit the tail, this guy might not know it if he was focused on the Akuma’s seal.

Hansoo sighed quietly.

The Seven Worlds that started out from the Red Zone.

And the Seven Legacies left behind by the fallen races.

Revive them all and use them to strengthen the Human Race.

The first stage was the World Tree.

He had to kill the five calamities here, collect the Divine Stone Fragments, complete the Divine Stone, revive the World Tree and use the Relic to control the World Tree.

It wasn’t anyone’s wrongdoing but their views were different.

Since he was looking at the bigger picture, the people who were living in the moment could not understand it.

In order for them to understand, he needed to reveal the future’s story but then the invasion would get faster.

‘I wonder how many times something like this will happen.’

Hansoo shook his head and then spoke.

“I shall decline.”

“What?”

“The seal needs to get destroyed. The relic isn’t something to be used that way.”

Miyamoto’s eyelids were slightly raised at Hansoo’s words.

## Chapter 83 – Akuma (2)

---

Miyamoto breathed in and out from Hansoo's words and the spoke.

“...You really speak of it easily. Do you even know how many of us would die while you kill the Akuma?”

Miyamoto replied coldly.

They had all gathered here with some sense of justice.

Since they knew how many people the job they had could save.

But the problem changed once they had to put their lives on the line.

‘I'm honestly scared.’

Miyamoto mumbled inwardly.

He had felt two things inside of him during the time when he had ruled over the World Tree Mountain Ranges with Keldian, Eres and those who were his friends and enemies.

First he had lost fear.

Secondly, he gained fear.

These two contradictory feelings existed.

He had lost fear.

He had been able to crash through this world because he had a bit of talent and he had gotten stronger as he ruled over the Red Zone.

By the time he found the Akuma he had a huge power following him and because his strength was also great he had the confidence that he wouldn't fall behind anyone.

The timeframe in which he had struggled to survive had passed and the time in which he had struggled to get strong had also passed.

Of course he lost fear when no human and beast could go up against him.

At the same time he felt fear.

This was just the first world.

But things like the Four Calamities roamed around and things like the Akuma were hidden.

He couldn't even guess what could be in the next world through the coldly transparent lake.

If he were to get to the next world then he had to struggle again in order to survive and get stronger.

But the others didn't seem to have any notion of fear as they started to walk towards the Mirror.

<We're going to have to go through it anyway! It's better to go through it first!>

<It's the basics that the one who goes first has the advantage. Since I have come to the Otherworld, I will continue to charge forward.>

<I will go ahead and build up the base for the people after.>

While the other people prepared to go through the Mirror with different thoughts, he on the other hand endlessly pondered and pondered.

He was scared of change to go over but then nervousness and his pride from staying caused him to fall into pondering.

At the moment he was thinking about this, the Akuma that had appeared.

And the single sacrifice that was needed.

Miyamoto swimmingly said that he will take that role.

<I shall take the role of sealing this thing for the people behind.>

Though it looked like he had given up a chance for the greater cause, and the others had seen him that way but at least on Miyamoto's situation, it was a very satisfactory choice.

Since the Akuma had provided him a very good haven of mind.

No one could threaten him in the Red Zone since he had constantly gotten stronger for 20 years as long as he maintained the seal on the Akuma.

A moment's choice had turned Miyamoto quite comfortable for the past 20 years.

And the Pillar, Hecarim, that he had raised praised him like a god every once a while he visited them.

But the guy in front of him was trying to break that peace.

Miyamoto started to ponder as he saw that Hansoo.

'Damn it. I heard that he was a dumbass but for him to be this



much.'

If this guy released the seal for the Akuma and then failed to kill it then it didn't just end at <Oh my. I couldn't kill it. I'll try again next time.>

Why would that guy let them tie him that easily.

If Hansoo couldn't kill the guy who was released than that thing will cause a catastrophe.

His life will be endangered too.

'It won't do.'

Miyamoto shook his head as he spoke.

"I can't agree with you. We cannot undo the seal. Do you know how many people you will be killing if you fail?"

Hansoo didn't reply to Miyamoto's words as he started to raise his energy.

Kiiiiing

Soon Hansoo's body started to get surrounded by a bright light.

The three relics started to pull out the fragment's energy to the extremes.

In a different manner than from before, beyond the limit that one can control with the relics.

Kudududuk

The mana storm started to swirl in all directions.

It started to get overloaded as it went beyond the limit Hansoo could control.

Miyamoto made a cold expression as he looked at that Hansoo.

‘So you’re trying to solve it with strength huh. I definitely cannot let you go then.’

Miyamoto and the other six raised the power in their bodies as they started to block the entrance heading towards the Akuma.

At this time something unexpected happened.

Kuduk

“Huh?”

Miyamoto made a dumbfounded expression at the thing that had flown past him and onto Hansoo.

Something that was extremely familiar.

The objects he had seen for 20 years.

The Chain Scythe and the Spear.

The two relics that had been surrounding the Akuma flew towards Hansoo when Hansoo poured out an enormous amount of energy towards the other three relics as if they were magnets.

As if they were made as a set from the start.

“Goddamnit!”

Miyamoto hurriedly looked behind him.

Since the mana wave that were coursing around them like a storm had calmed down due to the two relics but the vicious aura behind Miyamoto exploded out.

The beastly lifeform that had a human's form unlike the other Calamities.

Miyamoto looked at that Akuma and then shouted at Hansoo.

“You crazy bastard! What are you doing! Do you think we'll work with you if you do this?”

Hansoo then looked at Miyamoto with a befuddled expression and the spoke.

“What are you talking about. You guys just watch. Don't interrupt.”

“...What?”

“I'll kill the Akuma alone.”

‘I can kill it.’

Miyamoto had decided that it wasn't possible after seeing him use three relics.

But since he had collected all five relics, he could go up against the Akuma without the help of the other Seven Departed Souls.

Since he didn't need these guys for the Akuma in the first place.

The problem was the Ouroboros after that.

‘There’s no time because of that goddamn clone.’

He didn’t have any plans of persuading these guys according to his original plan.

Since he was going to wait until his Racial Metamorphosis’ cooldown after killing up to the Root.

But as long as the Clone was connected to the Ouroboros, he had to kill it.

‘The Ouroboros is stronger than Akuma.’

Even if the Ouroboros was weakened by the poison, it was a complete creature unlike the Akuma.

It had a Divine Stone Fragment within it and employed all of its energy.

If he wanted to beat the Ouroboros without the Racial Metamorphosis and only with the five relics then he needed the help of these guys.

But on the other hand, if he went over the current hurdle then things will actually become easier.

‘Let’s think positive.’

He had obtained the Thousand Soldier Armors and it was going to go on like this anyway.

Since all of the calamities coming down one by one after him having decided to kill one was normal.

They hadn’t gone over each other’s territory because they were cautious of each other.

Even if the Clone didn’t come back the Ouroboros would’ve come down anyway.

‘Should I have killed the Calamity Fish a bit slower?’

With his abilities, he probably could’ve turned his runes into 100% with just 3 months.

It would’ve been easier if he had hunted it afterwards.

But Hansoo shook his head.

<About 9 months between the time I came out of the Tutorial and the next batch coming in. I have to finish it as quickly as possible if I can. The quicker I kill the Calamity Fish the more the World Tree’s Roots spread out to the Tutorial area. Have in mind that the

survival rate of the Tutorial decreases by 5% for every month.>

‘Tsk.’

The total number of people who have already been dragged into the Otherworld should be 2 billion.

According to the Alchemists’ calculations then the next year’s estimated entrance number would be around 4.2 billion.

If 5% of them died off in a month then 200 million would die and in 3 months almost 600 million would die.

‘The invasion of the Abyss is a problem too.’

Hansoo warmed up his body as he spoke.

“Decide after you see me fighting. To whether I can kill the Ouroboros or not.”

Who would believe them if one just told them.

If he was going to fight with them while entrusting his back to them then forcing them into it is meaningless.

‘I shall show it to them first and if they still don’t follow then I’ll use other methods.’



Hoooong

Hansoo started to focus on the five relics.

The seven marbles of Ekidrang's relic one by one fit in between the extremely long chain.

Charurururu

The Chain started to take form like an Imugi and floated around Hansoo's body.

A mana storm like from before didn't rage out from the body of Hansoo who had a spear on his left hand and a sword on his right but the amount of intimidation he let out was not even comparable to before.

The golden energy, which used to rage like the wind and coursed through the air, got controlled to the extremes and solidified almost into a liquid form and surrounded Hansoo.

Hansoo spoke towards the Seven behind him while controlling the relics.

"Oh. By the way..."

"Hmm?"

"If you are thinking of helping out then don't hesitate. Just jump in."

"... You said you are going to fight it alone?"

"What are you saying. It's better to crush it with numbers if you can."

“ ... ”

Hansoo ended with those words as he charged forward.

.....

Oooooong

Jukma made a strange expression at the five different artifacts surrounding his body.

Sword.

Seven Marbles.

Bracelet.

Iron Chains.

Spear.

Jukma moved his eyes from the artifact and then looked at the battle in the distance.

Boom!

“Pour it!”

“Uwahahahaha! It’s amazing!”

The clansmen, who were on the defensive before, were jumping here and there and pouring out skills as if they were happy from

the new gears or had gotten some leisure.

It was obvious.

Since he would've done so too.

Weapons and armors that can pour out strong mana reinforcements without worrying about mana.

It was like being able to use ultimate skills without a limit so how could it not be fun.

A strong mana that was supplied along with their 5 new weapons.

When these two things combined with the existing skills of the clansmen, the parasites, which seemed to be almost crushing the humans, were blocked by the defensive formation of the Six Clans and could not proceed.

Of course it was hard for them to advance as well due to the endless amounts of parasites that came out but they could at least prevent injuries at this rate.

And because of this Jukma, who had some leisure, turned his eyes towards a different location.

“Michael. That damned bastard. He hid the real good ones.”

He was quite shocked when Michael peacefully handed these out.

Since these weapons were really strong.

One could see just from the clansmen who were fighting in the distance.

But the important part wasn't the weapon.

“Mana wave huh.”

The quality of the five gears that seemed like relics was quite high.

But they also had weapons like these.

The important thing was the mana wave.

The mana wave that turned these weapons into peerless treasures.

Jukma looked at Amil because of this.

“Amil. Can you feel it?”

“Yes. It's moving bit by bit.”

He could feel it though it was very minute.

This mana wave was coming off from one place as the center.

‘I can’t tell exactly where the center is but... I can at least recognize that it is moving.’

The flow of the mana, which was moving very subtly, was giving them information.

And another thing.

“I don’t know who has it but... If they can use it this delicately then turning it on and off would be within their power too.”

And not only turning it on and off.

They might be able to send the mana to some people and sever it from the others.

There was no other reason why Michael had peacefully given them the weapons.

What did it matter when their lives were in his hands.

Even if he just cut off the mana supply to the other five Pillars, it

would already be a huge profit for Michael.

“You ordered the clans beneath the mountain and are collecting the adventures from all around right?”

Amil Stadan nodded at those words.

Since it was war now.

They needed more numbers in order to advance over their defenses.

And because of this the Six Pillars and the Twelve Roots were calling every single adventurers out there to this location.

Usually it would be hard to move around because of beasts but for some reason there weren't many beasts.

Thanks to this the numerous adventurers who had been split up all around were gathering to the Six Pillars with bellies full of nutritional fluids.

“There's a thing I need to do before they arrive. I need to find the origin of the mana.”

The most important thing Jukma had realized in the Otherworld was that leaving the sword in the opponent's hand was a truly crazy act.



Allies and enemies were only a thin paper apart and a very small event can change it all.

So, don't leave the sword in other people's hands.

If the enemy was holding onto a sword then at least he needed to have one too.

And better if he was the only one holding the sword.

“Get 20 of the search team members, cover them with relics and then send them off in all directions. Search the range limit of the mana wave. We will find its origin that way.”

The relics wouldn't work once they went past the range of the mana wave.

If the Mana spread out in a spherical shape then they just needed to find the range limit and then find the center.

Kiiing

‘Hmm?’

While Amil Stadan was sending a message, the mana wave that was surrounding them rocked back and forth like a wave.

Amil and Jukma both frowned at this change.

Since it got easier to find the center because of this change but they also knew that the other clansmen would also react quickly.

‘We should move quickly.’

Jukma, who had quickly guessed the location of the origin of the manawave, frowned slightly as he started to send orders in all directions.

# Chapter 84 – Akuma (3)

---

Boom! Boom!

Shockwaves from the Akuma's and Hansoo's clash resonated in all directions.

To the point where that force went past where they were standing and even shook the Pillars of the World Tree very minutely.

‘...’

Sofía looked at Miyamoto and asked carefully while observing this scene.

“Aren't you going to help?”

Though the others might see the Seven Departed Souls to be at the same level as each other and though this was true, their leader Miyamoto was different.

There was a clear difference between the other six and Miyamoto.

And a much larger difference than people thought.

Miyamoto gave a short reply at Sofía's words.

“Wait. That guy said he’ll do it alone.”

“...Yes.”

Miyamoto looked at the battle between Hansoo and the Akuma and squinted his eyes after silencing Sofía.

‘He could probably kill the Akuma with that much. How does this make sense. That’s a newcomer?’

It wasn’t that he didn’t understand how that guy had gotten so strong so fast.

Though people thought that one needed time to get strong in the Otherworld, this was only half correct.

Time is needed in order to get strong in the Otherworld.

This was obvious.

Since you needed time in order to collect strong Artifacts, runes and skills and at the same time raise the mastery of those skills and nail down battle experience onto your body.

And as long as somebody didn’t provide these things to you, it would take an extreme amount of time for one to slowly raise their power step by step and get stronger.

But on the other hand this meant that getting strong would just take a moment once that person acquires all of this.

Strong Artifacts could be handed down.

Skill Runes were the same.

Higher level skills showed more might than mastered lower level skills even if their mastery was low.

For his mindset there's no need to polish it if they had already gone through the tutorial.

Once one obtains the above things then it wouldn't take long to get runes.

They can receive that too.

But battle experience was different.

‘What the hell was he in real life.’

Like being able to see the difference in games despite the players using the same character, there is a huge difference in battle power with the same runes, skills and artifacts.

Turning the above things into diamonds or leaving them as ores were all upon the user's experience and talent.

And this wasn't something that could be gained in just a few days unlike the other things.

But that guy over there was fighting much more proficiently than him who had been living in the Red Zone for 20 years.

As if he was squeezing out everything he had.

'...If I hadn't stayed still and went up then I would've already reached heights that he wouldn't even be able to fathom.'

A reproach which came from greed, jealousy and himself who had denied progression.

He didn't have such thoughts until now since there wasn't anybody stronger than him.

Since he was the king of the Red Zone.

If you excluded the Calamities then the 6 pillars and even the other six Departed souls could not ignore his orders.

Though he had been stationary for 20 years, he never had thoughts of himself being stationary.

Since everyone else was below him.

But seeing the newcomer in front of him fighting made him feel like his 20 years had been wasted.

‘Damn it. This is annoying.’

Miyamoto clenched his teeth but he stabilized his breath and then started to figure out the current situation.

He needed to hide his emotions for the moment.

He had to decide the next set of events from now on.

Miyamoto, who had glanced at Hansoo who was pushing the Akuma back, started to calculate quickly within his head.

He needed to set up a goal first.

The utmost important rule that he had followed until now.

Calmness of the mind and safety of the body.

Hansoo’s goal seemed simple.

Kill the Akuma and then kill the Ouroboros with their help.

The problem was that this set of events was going against his goal.

‘...Should I say I won’t do it?’

Though there were parasites below, it would be extremely easy to get out once the Akuma was gone.

But would that guy leave him alone?

That guy was the guy who had charged in in order to kill the Calamity Fish as soon as he came in.

Though Miyamoto didn’t know Hansoo’s goals, killing the Ouroboros would be a must.

And that guy had appealed very strongly.

That he needed their help.

He will try to use whatever methods he has in order to take them to kill the Ouroboros.

‘Damn it. I feel more anxious since I don’t know what his trait is.’

The worst situation is him maybe, just maybe having a Lord trait.



The Lord's symbol from weaker ones could not control them but if that guy had the Lord trait then the story changes.

Though he had heard that one of his traits were similar to that of Sofía's but there was always a possibility of hidden cards.

Since he also had two traits.

If that guy charged at them, beat them down and then forced the Lord's symbols onto them then they would have to go fight with the Calamities on the outside without being able to do anything.

‘Do I really need to strike him in the back.’

Everything will become peaceful once that guy disappeared.

Though it seemed like him leaving his sanctuary, the Red Zone, was inevitable, it was still much better than going and fighting the Ouroboros.

But Miyamoto shook his head.

It would be great if he was able to strike him in the back and kill him while he was fighting the Akuma.

But what if he fails at killing him?

And that guy were to successfully retreat?

Then they would have to deal with the Akuma over there.

‘I must think of a method.’

At that moment Miyamoto felt the strange mana flow that was searching nearby.

There was no way for Miyamoto, who had experienced everything, to not know this feeling.

‘Long distance sight skill.’

It meant that somebody was looking around here.

‘Who is it.’

Miyamoto squinted his eyes and then started to trace the skill.

.....

“....So you’re telling me that the one who’s creating all that noise over there is the newcomer? And the things spinning around his body is the reason for the mana wave?”

Jukma, who had checked the scene of the center of the mana with Amil Stadan's skill fell into silence but then sighed.

‘Hooh. I feel like I’ll go crazy. What is he and what is the thing he’s fighting with?’

He thought he had seen it wrong at the start but it was reality.

Two existences who were clashing and creating shockwaves that shook the trunk of the World Tree.

He finally figured out.

As to who had shoved the Ouroboros tail onto the lake.

He had to now throw out the label of newcomer and only believe in the things he could see.

He didn't know how but that guy had gotten unbelievably strong.

“...Can one become like that once they take the things which drop from the Four Great Calamities? If I knew it was something like that then I would've actually challenged it.”

Jukma laughed and spoke towards Amil as if he was trying to brighten up the mood.

He would've never gone in even if he knew about it.

But it was true that seeing the scene seen from the skill made him jealous.

“...Cancel the entry for now.”

Those people could only watch from the insides since there were the Seven Departed Souls.

If they were to get caught in that then they'll become dust.

And there was something that reassured him.

‘So the one who had the sword wasn't Michael.’

As long as that guy wasn't the one with the sword then there was no obligation for him to steal the source of the mana wave.

Since he couldn't steal it anyway and a guy that strong wouldn't threaten them with the mana wave.

Which meant that it was time for him to focus on the next problem.

‘His objective is... Clear. Killing the Ouroboros.’

Shoving the Parasites onto them was probably a preparation for that also.

So he could focus on the Ouroboros with all his power.

‘The best scenario is... Just getting out.’

But that seemed a bit hard.

Though it didn’t seem like casualties would increase while going against the parasites but keeping the formation and charging into the center of the Lake in 2 days were two entirely different problems.

Which meant that there were 2 results.

Whether that guy will fail at killing the Ouroboros.

Or succeed.

Nothing will change if he succeeds.

But they’ll get massacred if he fails.

‘Damn this situation. It’s extremely unfavorable.’

Jukma grinded his teeth.

There was no way that the fact of his life being in the hands of one person could feel good.

Even more so if the thing that guy wanted to do was extremely dangerous with a high failure rate.

The best path has been decided already.

Going through the lake while that guy blocked the parasites.

‘Find his weakness.’

As long as he was human then there will be an open spot somewhere.

He wouldn’t be invincible even if he was strong.

And it wasn’t that their request was hard also.

For example, he wouldn’t agree if they were to take a hostage and ask him to die for them.

But taking a hostage and asking him to buy some time while they go through the Mirror wouldn’t be that hard for Hansoo.

‘Then he will probably give up and go through the Mirror too.’

According to his thoughts, Hansoo didn't have any ideas of staying in this world and throwing his life away.

Once he decides that killing the Ouroboros is hard after they leave then he will probably go into the Orange Zone through the Mirror.

Though the dangers of becoming enemies with him is created, he just needed to figure out a way to solve it then.

Since this was better than sitting by idly and keeping their fate in that guy's hands.

‘It seems like it'll be hard with just our strength...’

There was a need for somebody to distract Hansoo while they planned things out.

‘Damn it. Who would...’

While Jukma was making a frustrated expression, a carrier pigeon flew towards Jukma..

‘This is...’

Red Carrier Pigeon.

A skill that was a level above the blue carrier pigeon.

Jukma slightly frowned at the familiar mana wave.

‘Miyamoto. It’s that senile old man.’

Why did he try to get treated like a king from time to time when he just created the clan.

Of course he treated him so because it wasn’t hard but the fact that there was somebody above him in a clan where he should be at the top wasn’t that pleasant to him.

Since it felt like his blood was flowing the other way around every time his clansmen were caught between choosing between his and Miyamoto’s orders.

But Jukma decided to suppress his emotions because of the message within it.

Since it seemed like they would be able to get on the same boat this time.

<Find the weakness of that Kang Hansoo guy. At least a precious companion he has.>

‘Let’s have a look.’



Even without the present situation, that was something he needed to do.

He needed to find that guy's weakness as soon as possible and figure out his open spots.

If not that guy himself, then the people around him.

‘Even if it’s you, you should at least have someone you hold dear.’

Boom!

Jukma started to send messages towards his clansmen after seeing the black devil whose body was getting smashed apart while fighting with Hansoo.

.....

“Hook. Hooook.”

‘It seems like... I should be able to reach there within a day.’

Sangjin mumbled while looking at the World Tree Trunk he could see in the distance.

Sangjin, who had separated from Hansoo, was traveling with

Mihee and the people she was leading.

Since it was faster to improve in a group than working alone.

But during that time an emergency situation occurred in all of the World Tree Mountain Range and thanks to that they were being carried upwards with the guidance of the people from the Six Pillars.

“Huuaaaap!”

Sangjin clenched his teeth after slashing his sword to cut apart a Makun charging at him.

‘What is that guy thinking of?’

Sangjin thought of the time when he separated from Hansoo.

<The things I’ll be fighting from now won’t be Humans. So I won’t need your help for a while. If something happens... And we aren’t able to meet before leaving the Tutorial then still keep increasing your strength. I will contact you. If you have thoughts of being with me while roaming around the Red Zone then you just need to give me a reply.>

He wasn’t worried about Hansoo.

And his thoughts of wanting to be with Hansoo didn’t change.

Actually the thing he was worried about was something else.

‘...Will that guy be at a level where he’ll still need me?’

He didn’t know why Hansoo asked him to follow him rather than the others.

2 months since he had seen Hansoo’s face.

He had also grown quite quickly.

Since it seemed like he had quite a talent in this.

But he heard rumors.

That somebody had killed a Calamity that no one could.

And the fact that the person was a newcomer.

It was obvious who it was.

At least in Sangjin’s perspective, there wasn’t anyone else but Hansoo who would do such a thing.

Though he thought that he had grown quite quickly, the

difference between him and Hansoo could not be described with just words.

‘Is there a way that I won’t be a nuisance to you? Will the people who you find annoying be at the level where I can take care of them? Or do you have different thoughts?’

People who could annoy Hansoo would be like hurricanes to him.

Could he face those people?

No answer appeared in Sangjin’s mind.

So Sangjin clenched his teeth even harder.

.....

“Hooo....”

Miyamoto quietly mumbled as he saw the Akuma who was now a corpse.

Seeing the corpse affirmed that it didn’t have a human’s form.

It was the same form as the skeletons spread around in the distance.

‘Was it an original inhabitant of this place? Anyways, he really killed it. Does that mean the Calamities who have been chopped up by this guy’s hands number three now? He’s a real talent huh.’

And he had to now go against someone like him.

‘Calm down.’

Miyamoto gulped at the anxiousness that he could feel all over his body in a very long time.

It was better to be close if he wanted to look for an opportunity.

Miyamoto, who had joined with the other six in order to kill the Akuma together, looked at Hansoo and spoke.

“We will help you. Since killing the Ouroboros is the way to save the most amount of people. Even though it’s a bit dangerous... There’s nothing we can do about that. Since the things we have done so far were also dangerous.”

‘Use my image to the fullest.’

Miyamoto mumbled inwardly.

His image wasn’t bad.

No, it was actually very good.

Since the friends who had erected the Pillars with him had agreed.

Hansoo laughed inwardly while looking at that Miyamoto.

Since he could think of the words of Eres.

<Mr. Miyamoto is, though I feel a little guilty for saying this but... A person who would do anything for their safety. Ah! Don't misunderstand. Since that not a bad thing. It's just that he leans towards that direction in crucial moments. Though it seemed like he was trying to keep his image in check.>

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“You chose well. Let's have a go at it together.”

‘How do I entangle him to make him work hard? It seems like I'll be busy.’

Hansoo ended his words as he thought of the Ouroboros that should have its body tied around the Trunk at the moment.

# Chapter 85 – Ouroboros (1)

---

Sangjin saw some clansmen moving about busily in the distance while going up.

‘...What is that?’

Sangjin tapped Mihee standing next to him.

“What is it?”

“I’ll go look around for a bit.”

Sangjin then pointed towards the clansmen roaming around in the distance.

Imugi symbols that were on the backs.

A symbol which symbolized the Hecarim that had the strength which wasn’t even comparable to theirs.

But those people were moving around as if they were searching for something.

‘I need to grasp suspicious movements.’

The weak always had to know the actions and whereabouts of the

strong.

Mihee looked at Sangjin with a worried expression at those words.

“You’re going alone?”

Sangjin nodded.

‘Humans are more dangerous than beasts.’

Even if he were to get caught, he had to prevent Mihee from getting involved.

Moving alone was easier too.

Sangjin left the worrying Mihee, made some distance, and then activated his skill, <Combined Ringing>.

A skill which he had obtained in the beginning of the Red Zone.

A skill which caught the vibration in the air and the ground from the opponent’s conversation and turned them back into voices.

It’s strong point was that it could spy on conversations quite a distance away and that it wouldn’t be caught by others since it didn’t use mana to check over the people.



Sangjin configured all his skills like this in the first place.

‘I won’t be able to do anything if I try to do everything half-heartedly.’

Skills for going against humans and going against beasts were completely different.

One needed to focus on a few selective skills in order to raise their mastery.

‘I shouldn’t get caught... With this.’

Sangjin, who was located quite a distance away, hid as much presence as possible and started to listen in on the conversation.

<...Let’s see.>

<How do we find people that know Hansoo?>

<Damnit. I heard that there were people who knew that guy out of the newcomers??>

<That guy didn’t know much. Well, we just need to look for Koreans so let’s search around a bit more.>

‘...’

Sangjin’s expression froze.

‘Why are they looking for us?’

He didn’t know what Hansoo was thinking of but he knew what he was trying to do.

Since the thing he had done was so surprising that the messages went back and forth and spread out extremely fast.

He had killed 2 of the 4 Great Calamities.

‘He will try to kill the next one.’

Sangjin raised his head and then looked at the pillars in the distance.

A huge snake that struck fear into one just from its sheer size.

Sangjin’s mentality became chaotic as soon as he saw the snake.

Hansoo was busily running around in order to kill such a thing.

But he was afraid of a few clansmen to the point where he was just cautiously eavesdropping on them.

The gap has been increased too much.

But Sangjin shook his head.

‘He probably has a plan. Why would he have accepted me if he wasn’t going to take me along?’

Sangjin set his mind straight and then analyzed the current situation.

Hansoo tried to kill the Ouroboros.

At the same time the Six Pillars were looking for people who were related to Hansoo.

‘This doesn’t feel good.’

If this was something Hansoo had asked the Six Pillars to do then they wouldn’t search around like that.

Hansoo would have told them the name and their characteristics and told them to bring them.

Which meant that those guys were searching for them without Hansoo’s knowledge.

‘Damn it. They don’t have good intentions.’

Sangjin cautiously turned his body and headed towards the direction that was away from them.

He then quickly ran towards Mihee.

But Sangjin frowned after returning.

“Oh really? So you guys are well acquainted with Kang Hansoo! Uahaha! Amazing, you’re friends with that famous guy.”

‘Goddamn it.’

It seems they found out after a few words.

Sangjin frowned as he saw Hecarim’s Clansmen surrounding Mihee and people.

They didn’t have a lot of people as if they came out with patrolling as the objective so they could probably win if he joined in but that was a crazy act.

Since one of the Six Pillars wouldn’t stand by idly and let them attack.

‘...We aren’t going to all get dragged along at this rate right?’

They might take them all if they were going to use them as Hansoo's weakness.

While Sangjin was looking at this scene with anxiousness the clansmen of Hecarim shrugged their shoulders as they spoke.

“Well then hurry and go up. The battle is fierce up there. To the point where we need to borrow your strength.”

‘...Mmm?’

Sangjin and the others squinted their eyes as they saw the Hecarim clansmen laughing and moving and waving their hands.

The clansman chuckled at the people dazing at them and then spoke.

“What are you doing. Go up quickly. Do you think we need to keep protecting you while you go up? Just don't go astray and follow this path. It's really urgent.”

“...Understood.”

The Hecarim clansmen disappeared with those words and Sangjin squinted his eyes.

‘What is he thinking?’

.....

<Reports that they've found them. They don't know how close they are to Hansoo but reports say that they are indeed people who had completed the 1st stage of the tutorial with him. I've sent them to the designated location as you said. We shall continue to track them from afar.>

Jukma nodded and laughed as he saw the message which had flown towards him.

'We've found them right on time.'

The lake will open in 1 day.

He didn't know who was significant to Hansoo but he would gather everyone who had seen him and gather them all into one location.

But Jukma wasn't going to interrogate them or not.

'Since the most important thing hasn't been confirmed yet.'

As to whether the hostages were meaningful in any way.

He needed to know this.

Since he might just piss him off if the hostages were useless in a decisive moment so this was necessary.

And because of this he needed to poke him around before using him.

Check by seeing if Hansoo will help them in times of danger or need.

‘It’s a bit too risky for me to do it personally.’

It would be a problem if the hostages didn’t have an effect but also a problem if it did.

Since he would be pissing off Hansoo before the lake opened.

‘There’s no way Miyamoto will help either.’

He would probably be wanting Jukma to do that for him.

But why did he need to do it himself?

Thankfully he knew the perfect candidates for such things.

The newcomers who had been forcibly recruited just a while ago.

Unlike the upper level clansman who were well known already, these guys wouldn't be a problem since they were caught in secret.

‘There are a lot of talented people in that tutorial group. Though Hansoo is like that too...’

There were people who shone brighter than others in that group.

Like that Wongyung guy who was coming up with the Clan Unions.

Jukma applauded after seeing his talent.

Since that guy was amazing just by seeing his Lord trait.

‘But then what does that matter. There's nothing about a Lord if their soldiers are weak.’

Exactly as he said.

The reason why that guy was unlucky was that he had shown himself too much within the Clan Union.

A white tiger will get stronger than anything else once it matures.

But it will be hunted for the fur.



It was suitable for them to hide their claws as a baby but they had too much confidence in the fact that 10 clan lords had allied.

Since they had tried too hard to clash with other newcomers on the End Root in order to recruit strong people.

And because of this they had been caught in the eyes of the Quadratus who had been searching around to recruit newcomers under their orders and eventually had been caught in their own eyes.

‘If you aren’t going to hide it then grow to the point where no one else can catch up to you.’

Jukma, who had a bitter taste in his mouth from thoughts of Hansoo, sent a message downwards.

<Get the newly recruited guys to create friction and attack those from the 4th and 5th Root. Don’t leave any evidence that newcomers and our clans are related.>

If Hansoo reacts after they threaten then the answer is simple.

Throw the newly recruited guys away as used cards and take them into hostage once the chance arrives.

Since Miyamoto told them that he will keep Hansoo’s eyes off.

How could a guy who wanted to kill the Ouroboros protect a hostage by their side for the whole day.

There are plenty of chances.

Of course Hansoo might not react at all after they threaten them.

A situation which would be extremely infuriating to Jukma.

‘Then... Those guys will just have to act as stress relievers.’

This had to be done after him, who was one of the Six Pillars, went out and failed at selling a product.

‘Since I’ve done up to this point at least he should attract sightseers.’

Jukma sent a message towards Miyamoto after finishing his thoughts.

.....

Hansoo looked at the five shining relics in front of him.

Spear.

Sword.

Marbles.

Chains.

Bracelet.

‘With this much... It’s possible to almost control half of the energy a single Divine Stone Fragment emits.’

If one took account of the fact that the Divine Stone kept the World Tree alive and supplied hundreds of billions of Elvenheims then even half of a fragment of a Divine Stone which had been split into fives was still a formidable amount.

And another thing.

A small cross symbol which had appeared on Hansoo’s head as soon as he gathered all five Relics.

It was a sign of the <Administrator> which had the rights to the powers on the World Tree along with the King.

Hansoo loosened up after receiving countless amounts of information that poured in through the World Tree.

Since the huge amounts of information that felt like they were splitting his head was too burdensome.

Unlike an Elvenheim, there was a limit for him to use all the powers of an Administrator as a human.

And even more so if the World Tree's status wasn't normal.

‘But this is still a great help.’

He had gained the power of an Administrator and five relics.

He had geared up quite a bit.

But Ouroboros, who still had a Divine Stone Fragment and could play around with its giant body was still dangerous.

Though he wanted to just smash its head or heart, and his original plan was approaching it from the inside and ripping out the Divine Stone Fragment and destroying the heart but the the invasion from within was blocked off.

Getting through its thoracic bones or its skull which was hundreds of meters in thickness and killing it like that was impossible.

‘Plan around its weakness.’

It's weakness was its spine that was on its back.

Unlike the intestines deep within, the Spine on its back protruded out here and there.

He needed to cut the nerves in between every spine, which was a size of a small hill, and seal its movements.

‘The poison should be spreading throughout its body.’

The thing that was spreading throughout his body was a neurotoxin.

Which meant that he just needed to blow up the heart and kill it off.

‘I need to aim for when it drops its guard.’

There's a reason why it was always focused on drinking the Toxic Waters from the start.

Why did it need to care about other things when it had no natural predator.

And because of this it wouldn't react to most things.

He needed to utilize the time when it wasn't on guard and cut off

its nerves in a single sweep.

‘The people who have the ability to get through the Scales and cut off the thick nerves in an instant are only the Seven Departed Souls.’

The rest were not at the level where they can even get through the scale of the Ouroboros.

Which meant that while the people below were distracting the parasites, him and the Seven Departed Souls had to attack together, cut off 8 nerves and then dodge the thrashing Ouroboros to cut off four more.

Because of this the Seven Departed Souls had to do their part very well.

‘Continue as soon as the injury from the battle with the Akuma heals. Anyways, they should be planning something out by now.’

Miyamoto’s 1st goal was getting out of this place.

Hansoo, who had been looking at the five relics floating around him, looked at Miyamoto who was suddenly approaching him with a strange expression.

“Are the preparations going well?”

“What’s the problem?”

Miyamoto laughed as he spoke.

“Why do I need a problem to come see you when we are going to be fighting together from now on. I just came to take a stroll for a bit. We should go outside for a bit and have a look at the Ouroboros. I know a location with a good scene.”

Hansoo nodded at those words.

“Then let’s. I also have something to tell you.”

The two of them then left the large area the where the Akuma was.

## Chapter 86 – Ouroboros (2)

---

Hansoo made a surprised expression at Miyamoto who was standing next to a tree.

‘A lot of skills... and high mastery levels.’

He was quite formidable for rolling around the ground for 20 years.

And it seemed like he was quite talented as well.

If he had chosen to go up instead of staying here then he would’ve gotten quite famous.

Miyamoto looked at that Hansoo and then spoke.

“Are you really going to fight with that thing? For What? The Reward?”

Miyamoto then looked at the Ouroboros that was wrapped around the giant World Tree’s trunk.

A phenomenal size.

If one said that they weren’t afraid after looking at that thing which seemed like it depicted a beast from a myth then they would probably be lying.



Hansoo gazed at that Miyamoto and then spoke out.

“You can say it honestly. That you don’t want to fight.”

“ ... ”

Miyamoto’s eyes danced about at Hansoo’s direct words.

‘...What is he thinking?’

Why did he suddenly say this to him.

Miyamoto was shocked at the sudden words of Hansoo but he just shrugged his shoulders and spoke.

“What are you talking about. I said I’ll fight with you.”

And when he was just about to add some extra words a chaotic noise was heard from before.

Miyamoto squinted his eyes as he looked at the origin of the sound.

Though they were quite a distance away from the World Tree, it wasn’t hard for Hansoo to know at his level.

‘It started.’

Miyamoto looked at the fight in the distance and then spoke towards Hansoo casually.

“It seems like a fight broke out. It could only be so when they tried to gather a large amount of people in such a short amount of time.”

Miyamoto looked at Hansoo’s reactions while he spoke.

If there was a meaning to the hostages then it would be simple.

He just needed to take the hostages and cross the lake.

Then Hansoo wouldn’t be able to do anything then.

But if the hostages had no meaning then it would become a little bit troublesome.

Since he would then need to look for an opening while fighting with the Ouroboros.

Of course the former was much more comfortable.

Since the latter meant that he would need to fight with the Ouroboros.

‘Let’s see.’

Miyamoto looked at Hansoo who seemed to have gotten interested in the fight in the distance.

.....

‘Hmm.’

Hansoo compared the two sides.

Though it was quite a distance away, it wasn’t something that Hansoo, whose ability was amplified by the relics and could utilize the powers of the World Tree to a degree, could not see.

After looking around for a bit, both sides had quite an amount of familiar faces.

One side had Mihee and Sangjin.

The other side was familiar because of a different reason.

‘...Dark Mad Lord?’

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

Since he knew what had happened.

‘They revived him with the Cross huh.’

But Hansoo shook his head.

Since that wasn’t the important part.

‘There are too many familiar faces.’

Everyone who he had known once upon a time had gathered.

It didn’t make any sense for all those guys to meet by a chance.

And they were all in life endangering situations.

‘Some bastard collected them huh. It seems like they’ll all die if I don’t do anything.’

The attacking side was also attacking while throwing their lives on the line.

It seems like they were going to take in hostages and make him take care of the parasites.

They were trying in order to find his weakness but there were too many people who could be suspects.

It could be Miyamoto behind him, one of the Six Pillars or even one of the 12 Roots.

People who had the ability to go through the mirror at this moment but could not because of himself.

People who wanted to at least save their own body.

Hansoo sighed inwardly

‘It’s quite a chaotic situation.’

He was the only person who wanted to kill the Ouroboros.

The others were trying their best in order to find a hole they can escape through.

‘They’re probably doing so because they think that they can escape.’

It seemed like him having closed off the exit with the parasites didn’t quite seem closed off to them.

They were now coming out too directly.

They think that that’ll be that if they didn’t get caught but it wasn’t like that in Hansoo’s situation.

‘I do understand.’

The only people who lived were those at the Purple Zone.

Since everyone weaker than that had been wiped off.

So even if these people went up from here, they could only live for about 5 more years.

But he understood their actions since they didn't know those facts.

And they might still try to escape even if they knew.

They might die right away in the fight against the Ouroboros and the parasites but if they escape then they might be able to live another 3 or 4 more years.

About a billion people here would die off but what did that matter in their perspective.

‘But this is it.’

He hadn't entirely closed the Mirror just in case he also failed.

Since he wouldn't be able to open the dimensional door until he completely recovers the World Tree.

And he thought that would be enough but apparently not for the others.

They were constantly trying to grasp ahold of his ankles.

‘There’s nothing I can do since you and I think differently.’

If those guys and Miyamoto actually do succeed in escaping then even he wouldn’t be able to kill the Ouroboros.

They could only clash since their goals were different.

Hansoo started to organize the five relics around his body.

Kiiing.

The Mana code within the relics started to move onto Hansoo.

The cross which symbolized the Administrator on Hansoo’s forehead started to shine.

Hansoo then put his hand on the World Tree and then spoke to Miyamoto.

“Miyamoto. Could you send a message? To the others?”

“What?”

“There won’t be a solution if we don’t kill other things other than the Ouroboros at this time.”

“...What are you trying to do?”



Miyamoto spoke with uneasiness while looking at the cross symbol shining on Hansoo's forehead.

Hansoo smiled as he heard Miyamoto's answer and spoke.

“Just because. I feel as if there's a need for us to become closer.”

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then sent an order down the World Tree.

<Close the Dimensional Door with the powers of the Administrator.>

The mana code which flared down the World Tree reached a very deep location beneath the lake.

The location where the mana which turned the Lake into the Dimensional Portal once a month gathered.

And soon the mana within that place shattered as it dispersed.

Now that Mirror wouldn't be able to turn into the Mirror.

Not until the World Tree was completely recovered.

‘But this isn't enough.’

Why would they believe him if he just said that the door was closed.

There was a need for the people to realize it a bit more clearly.

The current situation that is.

Hansoo sent down an extra order.

And soon a change occurred.

.....

‘They fight well.’

He had thought that these guys would get swept off in an instant but they were holding on quite well.

Jukma made an amused expression as he looked at the newcomers fighting valiantly in the distance.

Watching a fight was always interesting but the best thing out of those was watching newbies fighting each other.

These fights seemed rather cute after the battle he had seen between Hansoo and the strange Demonic thing.

‘There’s a few that stand out even there. Shall I try to rope them in if they survive.’

Jukma checked out a few people.

It didn’t matter what they had.

They could just give things to them.

The important part was how much of the thing they had could they push out to the limit and use.

That was talent.

‘There probably isn’t anyone like Hansoo but... There’s nothing bad about roping them in’

There wasn’t a need for all of them to die.

Since the important thing was checking to see if Hansoo reacted in times of danger.

Kugugugugu

“What is it?”

Jukma, who had been looking at Miyamoto and Hansoo's reactions up above frowned at the sudden vibration.

‘Is the Ouroboros moving?’

That was the only possibility for a vibration of this level.

Jukma quickly looked at the middle of the Lake where the tail of the Ouroboros was stuck onto.

He then doubted his senses that he had never done before until now.

Since a scene that definitely could not happen was happening.

Chuuuuruk

The volume of the lake was viciously decreasing.

The bottom of the Lake, which was filled with parasites, cracked apart as the waters that filled up the lake drained out.

The parasites were shocked at the ground suddenly getting cracked and were dodging here and there.

There was only 1 thing that came up in this head.

‘What just happened?’

Many thoughts clashed with each other in Jukma’s head.

‘Why did this suddenly happen? Could we still get out even if the lake dried out? The tunnel might open in a different way...’

But the worst situation slowly started to get drawn up in Jukma’s head.

And a red carrier pigeon flew towards that Jukma.

‘Miyamoto’s carrier pigeon.’

The red carrier pigeon, which was usually laid back as if it was depicting Miyamoto's psyche, rushed towards them.

No, it didn't only come to Jukma.

The red carrier pigeons were flying towards the other five pillars and 12 roots in the distance as well.

He would've applauded Miyamoto's ability to control the red carrier pigeon which was harder to handle than the blue ones but the message within the carrier pigeon filled his head with rage instantly.

"This crazy bastard..."

.....

'They're coming.'

Hansoo saw the enraged clansmen flying towards him from afar and moved his head.

And below Hansoo's feet, Miyamoto was holding onto his stomach and gasping for air.

"Kuha... What have you done..."

A monkey would've known as well.

As for why the lake below had dried out.

They realized another thing at the same time.

That all the safe escape routes had disappeared now.

Miyamoto's sanity froze up at that moment.

He didn't worry that much despite the exit being closed up with the parasites.

Others might not be able to get out but he thought that he would at least be able to get out.

But the story changed if this happened.

He really needed to fight with this life on the line.

Miyamoto, whose fort which he had guarded for 20 years had fallen down, couldn't maintain his mask anymore and then charged towards Hansoo.

And this was the result.

'Well. He probably thought that there wasn't a need to maintain

it anymore too.'

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at Miyamoto.

If he didn't have the relics then he wouldn't be able to beat Miyamoto.

Nurmaha's ring, Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement and Thousand Army Soldiers were amazing artifacts but there was a limit to closing the 20 year gap with those things.

The problem was that he had the relics.

While Hansoo was looking at Miyamoto who had charged at him and had gotten beaten up, hundreds of clansmen had flown into his location.

Everyone were important people from the Six Pillars and the Twelve Roots.

The clansmen who had rushed up with rage, flinched as they saw Miyamoto laid out on the ground.

Since there wasn't anyone who didn't know the face of the Seven Departed Souls who had acted as the king in this place for 20 years.

Miyamoto, who stumbled up, looked at Hansoo and shouted.



“You crazy bastard... What are you thinking. You. Don’t you know that you’ll get stabbed in the back if you act like a tyrant?”

No matter how strong they were, it was better to make as least amount of enemies as they can.

People who were pushed down under from strength will always look for opportunities.

He didn’t know what would happen from now on no matter how strong he was but for him to come out like this.

Hansoo made an amused expression as he spoke.

“You can calculate that after we finish. The important thing is that now you guys need me in order to live and go up from here. It’s a win-win since I need you too right?”

“ ... ”

“And I don’t know who of the 18 friends it is but you should stop the thing going on below. It’s a nuisance.”

This was the Maginot Line.

It was better to use a different method if they continue to grab onto his ankles.

Even if he were to organize the people in front of them.

‘I should visit Sangjin.’

While Hansoo was thinking of these things, Miyamoto grinded his teeth inwardly.

‘That relic. If only I can take those relics...’

Then that guy wouldn’t even be his opponent.

No, he might even be able to revive the Dimensional Door.

Miyamoto stared at the five blindingly bright relics shining around Hansoo’s body.

# Chapter 87 – Ouroboros (3)

---

Jubuk

“It’s been a while.”

Sangjin, who was treating his wounds because of the battle he had during the day, flinched at the sudden voice which came from behind.

A voice which familiar and caused his mind to become chaotic recently.

“It’s been a while. Hansoo.”

Sangjin turned around and then spoke.

He had heard the voice after a very long time but a burdensome mind came up instead of a welcoming mind.

He wasn’t curious as to how he had gotten to this place.

Since he probably came in with a method that he couldn’t even fathom.

The gap between him and Hansoo had been increased that much.

“Have you been well?”

Sangjin shook his head at Hansoo's words and then spoke.

“There's something I want to ask.”

“Hmm?”

“Do you really need me?”

He knew that Hansoo needed him.

But it wasn't him that he needed but rather somebody who fit his role.

He could be replaced with anybody at any time.

To stronger and more talented people.

He could even take one of the Seven Departed Souls.

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

Strength wasn't the important part.

Since he could just give that to him.

What he needed was somebody he could trust.

“I came here because of that.”

“...?”

Sangjin squinted his eyes.

Hansoo looked at that Sangjin and spoke.

“It didn’t matter if your mind changed up until this point and left. Since it’s quite a burdensome job.”

“...”

“There was a few things I’ve given you but it can’t even be compared to the thing you have done for me. I thank you for that.”

This person was somebody who would help Hansoo’s work.

He had to be thankful.

Since it wasn’t easy to clean up somebody’s behind in a world where it was hard to even take care of themselves no matter how much strength they gave them.

Hansoo continued to speak.

“But the things I will give you from now on are different. If you take these things and change your mind then... I will need to chase you down no matter where you go and retrieve these things.”

Retrieve.

He didn't know whether if the things Hansoo will give him were skills or artifacts.

But by the way he talked the method of retrieval was probably set already.

“This is the crossroad. I will respect your choice.”

Sangjin gulped while looking at Hansoo's eyes that was turning heavier.

.....

Guuuuuuuuu

A few people were climbing up the World Tree that the Ouroboros coiled around.

Exactly 8.

Hansoo and the Seven Departed Souls quickly headed towards the set location.

Carefully since the parasites might disturb them from cutting up the nerves if they find out.

Thankfully those guys were distracted from the swarming food below so they weren't paying much attention to them.

Hansoo touched the small earring on his ear and shook his head.

'He should've given it to me much earlier if he had something like this.'

<Pigeon House>.

An earring which had the skill that allowed one to send blue and red carrier pigeons saved within.

It wasn't an object that was easy to acquire but of course the Six



Pillars would have something like this.

They, who didn't give it to him before the Mirror was closed off, handed over the earring to Hansoo after their escape routes were blocked off.

‘They’re asking me to fight more fervently huh.’

Hansoo, who had concluded his thoughts of the Six Pillars below, spoke towards Miyamoto who was climbing the World Tree's wall next to him.

“Don't make such an expression.”

Hansoo looked at Miyamoto next to him who had an extremely dissatisfied expression as he spoke.

Miyamoto's expression didn't change as he spoke.

“How could you say such things when you forcibly pushed me into a fight?”

As if he gave up on maintaining his mask, Miyamoto replied bluntly.

Since he understood that he had to fight no matter what after this had happened.

‘Damn it. I charged in without thinking.’

His true self could not hold onto his rage and had shown itself.

‘No, he might’ve known already.’

The words Hansoo had told him before.

Asking if he didn’t want to fight.

He had exploded from Hansoo’s attitude which told him that he knew something and having his escape route blocked off.

Since the fact that he was playing around on his hand enraged him so much.

But he didn’t give up.

‘Yeah. Since this had happened already...’

He just wanted to open the Dimensional Door at the beginning but this thoughts slowly changed.

If he were to go up with that strength then he will become a huge help in the upper zones.

And because of this he needed the relics.

And this battle with the Ouroboros might become that change.

‘I should also take care of those things other than the Relics before I go up.’

A secret that nobody knew except him.

‘Oh those guys are exempt.’

Miyamoto then thought of the conversation he had with the owners of the other Pillars.

<I will remain here. But you guys help too. Since there would be treasures that would be incomparable to those of this place if you go up right? If I get beaten here then the Red Zone would get massacred by the Akuma. I plan on blocking it but I won't be able to if I don't have the strength. Leave some things that would be of help that you guys have behind. I will raise others.>

No matter how strong he was he couldn't block this place by himself.

And Miyamoto hated this as well.

He couldn't be stuck here forever.

So he needed people who were useful enough to fit his role while

he was gone.

Those who could maintain the Akuma's seal.

And he also needed things to make those guys useful.

Everyone including Eres nodded.

They had seen newcomers coming in every year while roaming around the World Tree Mountain Range.

And seen the numbers steadily rising.

They needed to faithfully maintain the Akuma's seal for those people and their possible family who might come mixed in with those people.

But they didn't just go over this.

<You are correct. But if you were to take this... And come up right? So let's make a condition.>

The first patriarch of the Triple Lights Union, Pao Ren.

His trait was <Covenant>.

A promise would be made when both sides agree.

Then both sides had to keep that promise.

The penalties would differ depending on the level.

If the levels were harsh then the side which broke the promise might even lose their life.

A trait which could only be used if one had absolute faith in their strength.

If they were weaker than the enemy then this trait would instead become poison.

‘Damnit. If I break it then I’ll just die.’

He knew without even seeing it.

A formless chain which tied down his heart.

It might’ve been different in the past but his heart will get crushed if he broke the promise now.

The promise back then were two things.

<One. Maintain the Akuma’s seal until a situation occurs where you cannot anymore without coming up.>

A welcoming noise on Miyamoto's terms.

There was no reason to disagree.

Since his current goal was peace and not growth.

'Though a situation which I can't handle anymore had occurred. Damn it.'

And second.

<Second. You will not use the things we leave behind and give them to those who would maintain the seal with you.>

<...>

<Why? This shouldn't matter if it was according to your words.>

Of course it didn't matter.

'Dumbass.'

That guy had probably set up such limitations in order to maintain the balance and to keep him from taking those things and becoming a king of the Red Zone and messing it up.

Since the things that guy had left behind were that mighty.

Why would they leave behind weak items when his job was protecting their family.

But they didn't know that he had another trait.

A trait which he had hidden from everyone.

<Fragment of Seven Souls>

He could transfer memories, information, skills, traits and battle experience as much as the user wanted to other people.

To a maximum of seven people.

This was why the other Six Departed Souls could use high level skills that were hard to obtain freely.

Since the other six could use them if he had them.

It was many times more efficient even at a glance.

‘And another thing that I never told anyone.’

A secret which he hadn't told the Six Departed Souls.

If the difference in levels is quite large then he would be able to even control them.

Where could someone eat a free meal in this world?

The Six Departed Souls received high level battle abilities from Miyamoto's soul fragment but he could somewhat control their bodies with the trait he had if he wanted.

So they were called Seven Departed Souls as a bundle but there was a clear difference between Miyamoto and the other six.

Since the other six were slaves if Miyamoto was the owner.

Miyamoto brought in the people who seemed quite talented with the Fragments of Seven Souls and raised them with the skill runes or artifacts that Eres, Keldian, Pao Ren or Kangtae had left behind.

To the point where they can control the Akuma's seal but couldn't resist his own control.

If they get to the point where they can deny his control then that alone will be a threat to them.

Miyamoto, who followed the idea of safety first, could not stand having a single hint of threat.



And another thing.

The skills and artifacts that may become a threat to him that the owners of the Pillars had left behind were all given to one person and hidden.

To the person who had received the final fragment.

‘I didn’t break the promise.’

He didn’t use them.

And he had given them to the people who were helping him maintain the seal.

Except he had just turned them to the point where they won’t be a threat to him.

At first he had thought that he could control them so he tried to raise them with the Soul Fragment.

If they steadily grew up then they would’ve reached a level where they’ll be able to deny his control.

If he couldn’t use it then others couldn’t use it as well.

Miyamoto, who had organized his thoughts, looked at Hansoo

and bluntly spoke out.

“Let’s start. Don’t drag it out. I want to finish this damnable job as quick as possible.”

They needed to quickly start in order to quickly finish.

‘There’s no need for me to take the risk.’

In a bad case he would look for a chance even by calling the other Departed Souls and using them as suicide soldiers with this second trait.

Since something like that was possible even if controlling them for a long time was hard.

Hansoo stared at that Miyamoto and then spoke out.

“Let’s go out. Follow the plan.”

They would cut out the nerves from 1st to 4th and from 9th to 12th.

Then they would regroup between the 5th and the 8th vertebrae and prepare for battle.

Even if they cut it, the area around the cut nerve would not freeze

up.

It would only become slow and weaker.

But if one accounted for its huge body then that was still threatening.

Soon everyone dispersed as they started to fall towards the body of the Ouroboros at an extreme speed.

.....

Kugugugugugu

A bright beam of light rose up from the top of the Ouroboros in the distance.

From 8 locations at the same time.

Kuuuuuung!

At the same time the World Tree shook while making crushing noises.

To be exact it wasn't the World Tree but the Ouroboros which coiled around the World Tree tightened its bind.

It probably just felt like being poked with a needle with its size but getting poked by a needle would still hurt.

It even pulled out its head that was drinking the toxic waters from the pain it had not felt in a really long time as it started to twist around its body.

“Damnit! Evacuate in between the World Tree Roots! Evacuate!”

“Uaak! Parasites are falling down from the sky.”

As the Ouroboros shook his body, the Parasites were falling from

the sky like rain.

They had made the area of battle smaller and lead the battle but that was now impossible.

No, they would just get shredded apart if they were to even get touched by the tail of the Ouroboros while maintain the formation.

It was now individual fights.

They had to now hide in between the roots and fight the parasites.

Jukma grinded his teeth as he saw this.

‘Damn it. This is the start.’

He had thought of a way to escape no matter what until now but that was now impossible.

And he was enraged even more at that.

At the current situation that was being shaken back and forth by a single person.

And he had to pretend to feel happy and supportive of Hansoo’s actions.

‘This is really frustrating.’

Jukma pondered for a moment.

Hansoo had told him to stop his works so he had stopped.

But he did that because he cared about these guys somewhat.

‘I should go vent out my anger.’

All his surroundings had gotten chaotic from the parasites and the Ouroboros.

Basically a cataclysm.

Which means this was the perfect time to land a blow on him.

It wasn't weird for a few people to die off in a chaotic situation like this.

There's no reason for evidence to be left behind either.

‘Let's see your expression after this all ends.’

Jukma laughed coldly as he started to send messages towards a

location.

.....

Sangjin drooled as he arrived at the destination deep within the World Tree

‘How did he find such a place like this...’

In this destination there were treasures that Hansoo had spoken of.

Rare artifacts and amazing skill runes that anybody could tell were rare from a single glance.

And Sangjin slightly frowned at the female who had those things equipped on her.

‘Who did such a thing...’

An unconscious female who had three limbs cut off and was barely being kept alive with a tube with nutritional fluids through stuck in her mouth.

Sangjin gulped at the sight of the female who had extremely fancy artifacts on her body and had numerous skill runes on her single arm left which made her look even more pitiful.

## Chapter 88 – Ouroboros (4)

---

Hansoo started to pull out the energy from within his body atop of the giant scales.

The scales beneath his feet were clashing around like waves as they smashed Hansoo's ankles like blades.

‘...Damnit. Faster.’

Hansoo, who had withstood the Ouroboros' attacks with the formless armor of the relic and the Thousand Soldiers Armor clenched his teeth and then smashed down towards the scale beneath his feet with huge amounts of energy.

Boooooom!

The attack Hansoo let out smashed apart the scales and then ruthlessly ripped apart the inner flesh.



Chiiiik

The nerve which had appeared between its spines was the size of a large lake but it could not handle the powerful energy Hansoo was letting out.

As the giant nerve started to burn up, it started to smash its body towards the World Tree as if it was getting enraged.

In order to smash the bugs on its body.

Booom!

As its body smashed onto the World Tree, a force which felt like a meteor smashed onto its body.

‘Kuuh.’

The parasites on its body started to madly fall down onto the ground.

The force which was smashing his whole body made him think of the already made decision.

‘Should I have taken them instead.’

Hansoo then thought of the things that Sangjin had probably

eaten by now.

The others didn't know but Hansoo knew that Miyamoto had the Fragments of Seven Souls as a trait.

Since the trait's victim, Sofía Vargera, told him after she came up.

<He's a damnable guy. We didn't know anything about it and were always thankful to him.>

Sofía Vargera.

One of the Seven Departed Souls.

And the person who had found the last hidden person in despair.

Sofía found Miyamoto's treasure vault and then figured out everything.

She then killed the lady who mustered up a small amount of remaining strength to beg her to kill her, took everything, smashed apart the control of Miyamoto and climbed up.

Gangtae, who had heard this story, grinded his teeth as he spoke:

<The ownership to that is ours. Once you return to the past go

retrieve it. Miyamoto this bastard... We gave those things to him to use properly.>

He knew of the location of Miyamoto's treasure vault because of this.

Objects that the strong people who had the ability to raise the Six Pillars left behind while asking him to protect their family.

And objects that Miyamoto had considered the most dangerous and had hidden away separately.

Of course their worth was amazing.

Since it had risen Sofía, who was talented but late, all the way up into the Final Brigade.

Objects that were hard to get even up above since they were growing ones.

And one of them was very outstanding out of these items.

<Goddamnit! If I knew that was such a skill then I wouldn't have given it! I thought a better one would come out up here!>

Kangtae surprisingly obtained a solo numbering skill while roaming around the Tutorial and the Red Zone.

Hansoo who was thinking of that skill looked in between the  
Roots which had turned into chaos.

.....

Hoooong

Keil Ross, one of the clansmen of Hecarim thought of the orders he had received.

<Kill the rest of the guys who had clashed between the 4th and 5th root from yesterday. Also kill off all the newcomers who have a connection to us that we used yesterday as well.>

The work itself was easy.

Since 15 Tracking Teams had been sent out in order to kill off a few newcomers.

But the environment was the problem.

‘Damnit. What am I doing when keeping my own life is hard enough.’

Keil, who was searching for the targets on his own, frowned as he saw the parasites falling from the sky.

‘This won’t do. I should at least have some fun when I find them instead of just killing them off.’

Apparently the asian girl called Mihee was famous for being pretty.

If they were a newcomer then the special toxicity of the otherworld shouldn't have seeped in yet either.

It will be fun playing around with her.

He found his target in the distance after running for a bit.

He then showed a conspicuous color.

‘Huh? Did no one really find them yet?’

This wasn't his area so he thought that others had already found them and were enjoying them.

But the girl called Mihee was still running around the battlefield with a small group of people in order to find a way to live.

‘My luck is really good.’

Right as Keil laughed and was about to run over, he felt a chill run down his back.

4 years since he had entered the Otherworld.

Keil knew, even without having a skill, that if he ignored this feeling then he will lose his neck.

Keil then froze his expression as he looked at the location where the aura came from and not at Mihee.

He then laughed.

‘Gosh. Did my perception rust quite a bit?’

He knew that fool over there quite well.

Since that guy was part of his targets this time.

‘Was he called Sangjin?’

The guy who had a ragged cape around his body was glaring at him with a cold expression.

Keil, who had gotten so annoyed to the point where he didn’t even want to open his mouth, pulled out a short sword, bit his pinkie to let out some blood and then started to write a character out.

He then threw it towards Sangjin.

The blood on the dagger drew out a strange symbol in the air.

The moment the strange dagger landed in front of Sangjin, a 2m

wide black sphere appeared with Sangjin as the center.

It then compressed everything into a small dot.

Kushushushuk!

Keil made a satisfied expression at the area which had been destroyed.

‘This is it.’

But Keil frowned.

Since something had flown over through the dust.

And Keil’s alertness exploded as soon as he saw Sangjin.

He could only do so.

Everybody could only get cautious once they saw the artifacts strung around his body.

And even more so if they wouldn’t even get scratched by his <Implosion Sphere>.

‘Goddamnit!’



Keil urgently poured out skills as he backed off but he could not dodge it all as the tip of Sangjin's long sword cut him.

‘Damn it. Where did this guy gain such artifacts... Anyways I need to prepare for more attacks...’

While Keil got flustered and prepared himself for his next set of attacks, he looked at Sangjin who wasn't chasing him anymore and then made a confused expression.

Why didn't he charge and attack him?

‘So scrubs can only do so much huh.’

Keil laughed coldly.

He should've tried to get as much out of the surprise attack he had achieved but it seems that he didn't from fear.

Keil who was landing while laughing had his view tilting as he fell over.

To be precise, not the view but himself was falling sideways.

“Uh? Uhhuh?”

Keil, who had freaked out and then checked his body, made a expression of disbelief at this right leg which had rotted and was shriveling up.

‘No way! It just barely scratched it!’

He then fell into despair at the purple mana reinforcement that was eating into his body.

He then realized it.

Why he had found the Mihee girl first.

It wasn’t that he had found her first.

The people before him had met the same fate.

‘Damnit...’

Kyle closed his eyes while looking at the sword flying towards his neck.

.....

‘To leave behind such a thing...’

Hansoo mumbled as he thought of the skill Kangtae had left

behind.

Actually Miyamoto's rewards were a bit awkward for him.

Since they didn't have much meaning to him who was using the relics.

And the skills were very high quality but not quite good enough for him who could only fill up seven.

But one thing, that thing was different.

<Lord of the Dead>.

A solo numbering skill which allowed one to raise the people whom they had killed as spectres during the night and use the skill <Death> during the day.

The solo numbering was something that was determined after it had grown to the purple stage.

So Kangtae wouldn't have known how good of a skill it would be at the Red Zone level,

No, he had actually gained other artifacts and skills so easily so he felt that better skills than this would come out so he had just left behind the worst of the useful ones he had.

A skill which was created entirely from luck which couldn't be laughed at.

This skill was something that even he could not ignore.

But Hansoo shook his head.

‘This isn’t... Something I will use.’

It wasn't suitable for him to use because of its burden to use against humans.

No, in order to use this properly then they had to raise the people whom they had killed in large numbers.

Since the true might of this strength was shown at night.

If they could raise the dead during the day then the skill's ranking would've went up even more.

Anyways, they will be walking around and advertising that they were human killers.

‘It'll be chaotic.’

And because of this, in the case he retrieved this he would need to give it to Enbi Arin who he was going to recruit as a Punisher in the

Orange Zone or to somebody else.

Since the main goal of this place was the Five Calamities and since there was a higher chance of clashing with people up above.

But he had gained a punisher that was not part of his plan and he was doing quite well so it was better to use it now and raise him.

‘If I raise him well starting from now then he’ll be better than Enbi Arin. Anyways, I should do what I need to do.’

Kiiing

The powerful energy in Hansoo's hand dug down into the nerve.

Like a giant lake evaporating from powerful flames, the mana wave that came out of Hansoo's hand melted down the nerves.

Kududududk

‘It’s done.’

As the 1st nerve that he had taken responsibility of melted down, Hansoo quickly launched a red carrier pigeon that signaled him having completed his objective.

Pudududuk

One carrier pigeon after another started to flow up from kilometers ahead.

Which meant that everyone had completed their objectives.

‘Good.’

It was now way more dangerous.

Since they had to cross over the body of the Ouroboros which was raving crazily and burn down the final four nerves.

Boooooom!

Hansoo looked at the giant body which was thrashing around as he hid between the scales.

A force which felt like being hit by a giant race of the Abyss hit Hansoo’s body.

It would’ve been dangerous if he hadn’t hidden quickly.

‘As I expected... the force is the greatest since it’s the most dangerous place.’



If they hadn't burned down the eight nerves at the same time then it would've been faster and more dangerous than this.

A much slower but still extremely formidable strength and speed.

‘Quickly... we must burn down the remaining four.’

He wanted to dig into the inside but it would take a long time for him to get through the harder inner scale and the hundreds of meters of thick muscle.

The World Tree might even get destroyed by the thrashing Ouroboros.

‘Never.’

Hansoo clenched his teeth and then dodged the scales which stood up in order to chop him apart as he started to quickly run in between those things.

.....

‘Hook. Hooook.’

Sofía, who had barely managed to burn down the nerve, clenched her teeth.

She had been sent to the safest location because she was the youngest.

If Hansoo's location was the end of the whip, the fastest part, then the location she was at was the start of the whip, the slowest part.

But her whole body still felt like it was getting smashed apart from the Ouroboros which was thrashing about.

‘I need to borrow strength.’

Sofía used the soul fragment that Miyamoto had given her that she rarely used because of her pride.

Kiiing

Suddenly eight different protective skills surrounded her body.

Sofía, who had checked her body which had gotten rather safe, thought of Hansoo in the distance as she made a bittersweet expression.

‘Damn it. I would’ve gotten stronger if I went up too... I shouldn’t have gotten entangled with Miyamoto back then.’

The one thing Sofía counted as both her strong and weak point.

She was extremely competitive.

She directly accepted Miyamoto’s offer at the single word that she was able to get stronger but then as if the world was proving nothing was free, it became harder for her to go against Miyamoto’s saying.

<Going up? I cannot allow you to. You must take care of the Akuma here.>

She managed to live with the pride that there was nobody who became as strong as her in 3 years but the newly appeared Hansoo lit the fire in her mind again.

‘I... I can get stronger.’

But Sofía shook her head and then threw away these thoughts.

This wasn't the time to focus on such things.

They needed to kill the Ouroboros quickly.

Since she also wanted the least amount of people to die.

She wasn't dumb to the point where she would lose sight of her goals after getting swept up by her competitiveness.

Sofía clenched her teeth and then pushed the skills of the soul fragment Miyamoto had given her as she started to run.

The fragment of the soul slowly started to take over Sofía's body.

## Chapter 89 – Ouroboros (5)

---

Hansoo frowned while looking at the thrashing Ouroboros.

Uduk. Udududuk.

As it thrashed around, the outer shell layer of the World Tree's Pillar area was being broken off without stopping.

Kuuuu

Hansoo clenched his teeth as he saw the fragments dropping down like meteors.

‘I need to plan things out quickly.’

Hansoo stabilized his breath as he saw the Seven Departed Souls flying in from the distance.

The plan of pairing up to take down four of the nerves wouldn’t work anymore.

Since the body’s thrashing had gotten quite aggressive as well as the outer and inner scales were gathering up above the nerves like waves.

The eight of them needed to gather, block the bladelike scale waves from all around and at the same time combine their strength to burn down the nerve in one go and then continue to the next one.

Boooom!

Hansoo, who had thrown out Ekidrang’s Relic, the Seven Star Marbles, in all directions in order to create footholds for the Seven Departed Souls, started to crazily Assault the scales charging towards them.

And the Seven Departed Souls flew in at a extreme speed around Hansoo.

.....

Booom!

Miyamoto, who had used a skill to deflect the bladelike scale waves, checked over Hansoo who was crazily smashing down at the scales in the distance.

Not only Hansoo but the other Departed Souls were faithfully burning off the scales on the back of the Ouroboros and at the same time gnawing down on the nerves.

Catch their body on the marbles if the thrashing of the Ouroboros got intense and then go back down to attack, repeat process.

Miyamoto mumbled inwardly.

‘He’s amazing.’

They were throwing down attacks hundreds of meters apart from each other.

They had no leisure to look after each other since they were

already busy enough dodging the storm like attacks of the Ouroboros.

But that guy was constantly resupplying the marbles and relics and helping them fight.

He was accomplishing a feat which was impossible without having the movements of all Seven Departed Souls who were hundreds of meters apart and the whip-like Ouroboros within his head and dissecting it.

They had already destroyed two nerves and were in the process of destroying the third.

If they smash this down then only one will remain.

Somebody else watching this might think that it's going well but Miyamoto's expression wasn't that good.

‘Damn it.’

Miyamoto's plan was simple.

While Hansoo was busy fighting against the Ouroboros, use Sofía, who was the weakest and easiest member to control, to attack.

It was easier to catch Hansoo off guard since she had known him



longer in comparison to the other Departed Souls.

Make him unable to battle, take the relics and then run away after opening the Dimensional Portal.

But Miyamoto's plan wasn't really working out very well.

‘Why are there no open spots being created?’

He knew that Hansoo had his guard up against him

And because of this Miyamoto was attacking the nerve from as far away as possible from Hansoo.

So Hansoo would feel at ease.

At a distance where Hansoo wouldn't feel threatened even if he were to launch a sneak attack.

It wasn't that hard since the nerve itself was so big.

But Hansoo was constantly checking on Sofía and the other Six Departed Souls and moving around.

An open spot wasn't being created despite him smashing apart the giant scales and utilizing a huge amount of energy.

Miyamoto clenched his teeth.

At this rate they'll be able to kill the Ouroboros and he'll lose the chance to obtain the relic.

Of course somebody could ask something like this.

<Wouldn't it better for you if the Ouroboros died since it will become safer?>

But Miyamoto knew.

That the army of the fifth calamity <Wasp Legion>, located at the top side of the Pillar, existed.

Which meant that this wasn't the end.

'That bastard would probably want to kill that thing too.'

And he felt a huge amount of greed towards those relics.

A production of a small sun-like amount of mana.

He would be able to act like a king in the next stage with those things.

'If there aren't chances... I just need to make them.'

He was strangely keeping an eye on Sofía more.

He didn't know whether it was love, interest or just curiosity.

They hadn't seen each other long enough for such things to bud.

‘Well. She is a bit pretty.’

It didn't matter which one of those above things it was.

The important part was that he was keeping an eye on it.

That was enough.

And according to the intel Jukma gave him, he took care of people that he fought with.

Miyamoto started to focus on the soul fragment.

.....

Sofía caught her breath on top of the floating marbles and looked at Hansoo fighting in the distance.

‘He's strangely paying more attention to me.’

His actions proved it even without words.

She could tell just from the precise controls of the marbles he had given to her.

That he was paying more attention to her.

At first her pride plummeted because she had thought that he was doing this because she was weaker than the other six but after observing for a while it seems like that wasn't the case.

Since the movements of the marbles told her that he had complete trust of her.

‘It feels weird.’

Sofía, who had making a confused expression, shook off her thoughts and then started to focus.

Since she could just ask things she was curious about after.

Sway

Sofía, who was focusing in order to use her skill <Triple Freezing Life Jade Orbs > which she had the most pride in, was greatly shocked when suddenly her body refused to listen to her orders.

“...Uh?”

A feeling of her whole body's controls getting taken over.

She quickly looked at the other people just in case it was an attack from the Ouroboros but they didn't have anything wrong with them.

‘Goddamnit... What is this!’

She tried her best in order to control herself but even her consciousness was fading as if it was making fun of that effort.

At that time the giant body of the Ouroboros flew in like a giant's arm towards Sofía.

Kuuuuuuuu!

‘God..Damnit...’

The marbles tried to get away with her body but it was fruitless.

Since the marbles were at most a help to her movements.

If Sofía didn't move herself then she wouldn't be able to get out of the attack range with just her body.

‘I’m dying in such a vain... I wonder if there won’t be pain.’

Sofía closed her eyes after mumbling in her almost disappeared conscious.

And in the final sight of Sofía, somebody rushing towards her could be seen.

.....

‘This guy. To go this far. It’ll be trouble if she dies!’

Hansoo grinded his teeth while rushing towards the falling Sofía in the distance.

Then he started to ponder.

‘Shall I clean it up?’

Killing the Ouroboros was now possible even without Miyamoto.

And Miyamoto's hostility towards him was beyond his expectations.

‘This lame bastard. You got rotten after 20 years of peace.’

He never expected that this guy would act like such a coward.

A person who had been acting like a King of the Red Zone for 20 years.

And the skills to match that.

He had thought that Miyamoto would show a look befitting that, and in fact didn't gain much harm from fighting the Ouroboros, but for him to go this far.

Hansoo's expression turned cold.

‘Clean it up.’

At this rate it was more of a disturbance than help.

But he had to save Sofía first.

Hansoo stepped off the marbles at an extreme speed and then caught Sofía.

He then hugged her and then raised his mana reinforcement to the limit.

‘It’s too late to dodge!’

And the giant body of the Ouroboros smashed into them like a whip.

Booom!

‘Kuhuk!’

Hansoo clenched his teeth at the force which made his whole body feel like it was getting smashed.

Hansoo’s body, which had been hit like a baseball being hit by a bat, started to rush towards the ground at an extreme speed.



Hoooong

Ekidrang’s marble rushed towards Hansoo very quickly.

Kigigigik

Hansoo used those marbles to reduce his speed in air and tried to catch his balance in air.

Since he will receive even more damage if he were to crash onto the ground like this.

At that moment the unconscious Sofía opened her eyes in Hansoo's embrace.

And then laughed while looking at Hansoo hugging him.

With a completely different eye than before.

Kiiing

Sofía started up the <Triple Freezing Life Jade Orbs> again under Miyamoto's orders.

‘Gullible bastard.’

It might be different from afar but if she were to attack from this distance then it'll end just like that.

And even more so if he had been hit by the Ouroboros.

But the moment Miyamoto tried to laugh with Sofía's face, a hand grasped Sofía's wrist.

Kiiing

And because of this the jade-colored marble that was being made inside Sofía's hand disappeared before it could even activate.

Miyamoto, who was controlling Sofía from the distance, spat out a sound at unconsciously at the sudden unexpected event.

“Uk?”

Miyamoto quickly tried to look at Hansoo but the sight of Sofía he was controlling started to quickly fade away.

‘What... What just happened...’

Miyamoto made a flustered face after being disconnected.

At the same time a chill ran down his back.

‘...No way.’

The reason why he had acted so drastically was in large part because he wasn't worried about getting caught.

Since he just could just blame it on Sofía.

How would Hansoo know that it was his doing?

But the danger he felt run down his back told him.

There was no way that a threatening feeling from the Ouroboros would come at this time.

‘I’ve been caught.’

He didn’t know how he found out or what the evidence was.

But the important fact was that Hansoo was now targeting him.

‘Damn it. What do I do. What do I do...’

It felt like Hansoo would come rushing up from below at any moment.

He thought of controlling the other five Departed Souls and having a go at it but then he would need to get in danger.

Miyamoto made his decision in a short moment.

‘Run away. Then look for a chance from the distance.’

There’s no way that this crazy guy will slash down the sinless six Departed Souls.

He just needed to hide deep within the World Tree and then wait until everything finishes.

If he were to hide in this vast World Tree Mountain Range then how would that guy find him?

If that guy was planning to kill the Wasp Legion then he would be able to look for another chance with the Departed Souls.

‘Damn it. This is miserable.’

But Miyamoto’s theory was the same as always.

The one surviving is the stronger one.

Miyamoto pulled out his final card, the feather.

Not a fragment but a whole leaf.

He would be able to go anywhere with this.

# Crumple

Soon Miyamoto's body got covered with a bright light and started to disappear.

.....

‘Huh.’

Hansoo swirled his tongue around at the guy who used the feather when he merely just broke the trait with Nurmaha's Ring.

Maybe it was because he valued safety over anything but his ability to sense danger was beyond everyone else.

He was going to ignore it and look for a chance to clean up so he didn't show anything but that guy had decided to run as soon as things didn't work out according to his plan.

‘You didn't spend 20 years in vain huh.’

Hansoo applauded Miyamoto as he ran away.

The way he ran was amazing as well.

An unstable World Tree leaf, <Feather>, had a short teleportation range and the location was random also.

But from the light surrounding his body, it seemed like he had quite an intact leaf.

With that then he could probably run away to anywhere in the World Tree Mountain Range.

It seems like he was going to wait until the Dimensional Door opened in a safe place.

But there was something that guy didn't know.

That when you become the Administrator of the World Tree, it wasn't hard to find someone who had Miyamoto's level of power.

Which meant if he wanted to hide then he had to get to a place that even Hansoo had trouble getting to.

'I shall help you a bit. So your feather wouldn't go to waste.'

Hansoo lightly laughed and then started to raise up the relic's mana code.

Soon the cross on his forehead started to shine.

<Change Setting of the Teleportation Coordinates.>



At those words the World Tree, which was the reason of the teleportation power, started to change the coordinates of the teleportation.

And soon Miyamoto's body disappeared within the light.

.....

Hoooong

Miyamoto looked at his surroundings after coming out from the light.

The place he had chosen to run away was the sanctuary he had created in the end of the World Tree just in case of an unexpected event.

But Miyamoto realized that something was wrong.

A cold wind blew past his face.

Only white clouds could be seen around him instead of the underground sanctuary.

‘This is... Branch?’

Miyamoto spat out a puzzled sound after checking beneath his feet.

An extremely thick branch of the World Tree that felt like the ground.

But the problem wasn't that.

Bzzzzzzzzzzzz

Rapid beatings of wings.

And they weren't just coming from one location.

A loud noise was coming out from all around the clouds around him.

‘Goddamnit... The Wasp Legion!’

A place where not even a Red Zone adventurer who came to the Branches for artifacts set their foot into.

Miyamoto's expression got covered in fear.

“Kuaaaaaak!”

And soon the huge wing-beating sounds started to resonate from around Miyamoto.

.....

‘I'll come to take the things you have later.’

Hansoo coldly looked into the location in the sky and then

jumped back into the Ouroboros.

Since there weren't any more disturbances, he just needed to smash one more Nerve.

‘Anyways... Why is the clone controlling it like this?’

There's no way that this guy would stay quiet like this.

Hansoo stopped rushing in and gazed at the Skull of the Ouroboros where the clone would be.

# Chapter 90 – Wasp Legion (1)

---

“...Uh?”

One of the Departed Souls, Baek Jongsang, freaked out as the countless skills on his body stopped working.

‘What? Did something happen?’

There was no way Miyamoto had died.

Jongsang quickly looked towards Miyamoto who would be at the nerve in the distance.

And then squinted his eyes.

‘...Not there? Did he really die? Huk!’

Jongsang clenched his teeth and dodged the tail which rushed towards him while he was thinking about other things.

‘It’s harder without the skills!’

The skills they had were also amazing.

But it was a system where all the core skills were owned and shared by Miyamoto.

And once all those skills disappeared the intensity of the battle suddenly multiplied by several fold.

‘Damnit... We might die when the situation is like this.’

Jongsang clenched his teeth.

Since the situation was so dangerous even Miyamoto could die.

Since the strongest person after Miyamoto, himself, had been struggling like this.

But for a person who had been surviving for 20 years to disappear like this.

‘...Something’s amiss.’

The others didn’t know but Jongsang, who had been the longest with Miyamoto, knew about him a bit more.

Miyamoto was a person who usually cared for his image but then would throw all of them as sacrifice in order to survive.

Only such a dangerous situation didn’t exist and they were only on the same boat because he gave them strength but he was definitely not a good ally to have.

But for the person who was so focused on living to die this easily and quietly?

This was important.

Since if Miyamoto was killed by someone with evil intentions then they won't be able to get exempt from it either.

Since it couldn't be part of them so there was only 1 suspect.

Jongsang, who had been making a wondering expression, realized that this wasn't the time for that.

Since it looked like he would die at this moment if they didn't finish off the Ouroboros.

'Let's focus.'

They just needed to burn one more nerve after this.

It wasn't impossible even without Miyamoto.

'I'll find out... After.'

Jonsang madly rushed towards the Ouroboros after finishing his thoughts.

.....



Kududududu

Hansoo pulled out the Divine Stone Fragment from the heart of the Ouroboros.

Oooooong

‘Three fragments now. The clone ran away huh.’

He ran towards the head as soon as he paralyzed the movements of the Ouroboros.

Just in case the clone was there.

But it had been a while since it had left.

‘Did it go to the Wasp Legion?’

Wasp Legion.

The last of the Four Great Calamities.

Unlike the other calamities who showed off a humongous body along with a inner defensive system, this thing had a Queen and hundreds of thousands of soldier wasps protecting it.

It was a meager number in comparison to the parasites but each one’s strength couldn’t even be compared.

Since even the Ouroboros couldn’t climb up because it feared that swarm.

‘They’re quite befitting as the gateway.’

There weren’t any tricks that would work against the Wasp Legion’s Queen.

Since it would instantly get rid of things that would become a threat to the Queen because of its cautiousness.

‘This time it’s really a face to face.’

He couldn’t be bothered to fight hundreds of thousands of the Wasp Soldiers.

He had to aim for the Queen while others were busy fighting off the Wasps and kill it off instantly.

The battle power of the Queen was the same as Akuma and maybe even beyond that.

‘At least this guy didn’t fall off.’

The thrashing Ouroboros just froze up while tightly coiling around the World Tree as all its nerves were disconnected.

Though he had sent in the neurotoxin in order to prevent this from the start but he was scared that it would fall because the movements of it had been so vicious but thankfully such a thing didn’t happen.

If this thing was left alone then it will slowly get absorbed by the World Tree and become the nutrients for it.

‘Good.’

At that moment somebody walked towards Hansoo.

Baek Jongsang asked Hansoo immediately as soon as he barely caught his breath,.

“Anyways what are you going to do now? Are you... Trying to kill the final one too?”

Jongsang then looked into the army above in the sky.

The high branches couldn't be seen because they were covered by the clouds but people around the level of Departed souls and high levels within the Six Pillars knew.

As to what was hidden within the cloud.

‘Since it wasn't just one or two who had been eaten after setting foot in there...’

The Wasps nibbled up the Branches and then brought it to the Queen.

The Queen would then swallow those sturdy branches and give birth to a new Wasp larvae.

The larvae created like this would be transferred to a nearby World Tree leaf nearby by a grown Wasp.

From that spot the larvae will receive the protection of the grown Wasp as it nibbled upon the World Tree leaf and grew up to become a new Wasp.

Of course the condensed area around the Queen and the larvae was a prohibited zone but there were always some people who were blinded by greed and ventured deep within.

If they get caught by a Wasp on the way in then they would instantly become food for the larvae.

These things didn't eat the leaves because they liked it.

They just couldn't come down because the other Calamities were down there.

They were only so because they grew up from leaves but if they absorb a human's traits then they would become a stronger Wasp.

‘...That's even more dangerous.’

Jongsang mumbled quietly.

Since the Ouroboros was scary but that thing was even more so.

Unlike the Ouroboros who waited for them while it sucked on the toxic waters, that thing was extremely direct in trying to multiply the swarm and was very offensive.

Since it was more befitting to call them a race if the calamities until now could be called single organisms.

But thankfully they didn't come down from the branches.

Since they were the favorite snacks of the Ouroboros even though they were dangerous.

If they fly up then the Ouroboros would just simply stretch its long body and chew them up.

‘Wait...’

Jongsang thought up to that point and quickly looked into the sky.

Then what would the Wasp Legion who hadn't come down until now do?

Jongsang realized that his worry was a foreshadowing after watching the sky for a while.

‘It’s too quiet.’

Hansoo laughed as he looked at that Jongsang.

“There’s no way those guys would act that rashly when they need to protect the Queen.”

From the Queen’s perspective it was good that her enemies had died off one by one but on the other hand it could’ve been dangerous for it too.

There was no way the Wasp Legion would act rashly when they needed to protect the Queen in such a situation.

‘I should still hurry the preparations.’

He didn’t know what tricks the clone had up his sleeves but he needed to do what he had to.

When Hansoo tried to quickly run down the World Tree in order to organize the situation below, Jongsang opened up and spoke the question that’s been stuck in his mouth after some pondering.

“Did Miyamoto die? What happened?”

They were too busy because they were trying to keep themselves alive so they couldn't pay attention to Miyamoto in the distance but Hansoo had the whole battlefield within his sight.

He would know exactly what had happened.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders at those words.

“He went somewhere with the Feather.”

“ ... ”

“It seems like he fell in danger while I was saving Sofia and wasn't paying attention but... Don't worry. Since it looked like he ran away safely using the Feather he will probably rejoin us soon. Anyways is the reason for all of you losing all your skills while fighting related to this?”

“ ... ”

‘It's quite logical...’

Jongsang himself didn't know all the functions of the Fragment of a Soul which he had received.

There was a possibility of the skill's sharing being disconnected when a teleportation occurred or they got too far from each other.



He might even send them a message with his life intact.

And according to Sofía’s words Hansoo had actually saved her from dying.

Since there was no reason for him to save Sofía if he was going to clean them all up.

There weren’t any faults with Hansoo’s words but the back of the head of Jongsang, who had been living in Red Zone for over 15 years, itched.

Jonsang backed off after completing his thoughts.

“Okay. let’s go down first.”

‘...I need to talk to the other guys. Including the Six Pillars.’

Jongsang looked at Hansoo with a slight uncertainty and then followed behind him downwards.

.....

Tekilon made a bitter expression as he saw the giant body of the Ouroboros which could be seen from between the branches.

He knew as soon as the poison-like foreign object came into the

body of the Ouroboros.

That he would soon invade.

But there wasn't anything he could do.

Since he hadn't gained the power of the king yet.

It had already been a long time since Tekilon finished his pondering and came up.

Instead of sticking by the thing he couldn't control, it was better to gain control of the thing that lived in the branches.

It would be good if that guy died whilst fighting the Ouroboros and he could just finish him off if he didn't.

And that work wasn't working out very well.

Bzzzzzzzz

Tekilon looked at the giant hornet-shaped Queen in front of him.

Larvae that would become Wasp Soldiers were constantly being created from the lower abdomen of the Queen.

Even more so than usual.

‘Hooh. Nothing is easy.’

It was very frustrating to have his ankles caught up in such a place when he didn’t even know the status of his Race.

Tekilon thought of an event of the past while focusing on his work and sighing.

The dried up trunk of the World Tree.

Skeletal Branches.

Destroyed Roots.

It wasn’t like this when the Elvenheims existed and the World Tree was normal.

The branches and the leaves which covered the sky supplied all Elvenheims with teleportations.

The fruit of the World Tree which stimulated the growth hormone surprisingly shortened the 100 years of time it required an Elvenheim to reach adulthood to 5 years.

The tree had sucked up the Toxic Waters and created the land for the Elvenheim to live and supplied the endless Nutritional Fluid to eat.

The population which always stayed low due to the extremely long growth period and the low fertility rate even with the Magical Engineering Technology exploded within the 100 years after the World Tree was created.

‘This is why... I have to obtain this World Tree.’

Then he needed to call his race to this side.

If his race, which was close to extinction, wanted to return to the days of the past then the World Tree was a necessity.

Since the basis of the strength of a race was their numbers in the end.

This is why he hadn't killed the World Tree after he created the Calamities.

Since he had to revive it again.

‘I need the relics you have.’

At the same time he needed to kill the other races beneath.

‘There’s only one race that can receive the protection of the World Tree.’

Living together was impossible.

Once a race started receiving the protection of the World Tree then all other races will be treated as foreign objects and get thrown out into the void by the World Tree.

This is the reason why he had wiped off the Elvenheims.

Since their race could not receive the protection if the Elvenheims existed.

And it was the same for the ones below.

‘Thinking about it. The thing I tried to completely suppress was greed.’

His goal was the relics.

Which meant that he didn't really need to completely control the Calamities.

Since he just needed to kill that guy and get the race below extinct.

And because of this Tekilon was not currently trying to suppress his greed of wanting to rule.

Rather he was stimulating his greed even more and was focusing on fanning it.

If the Ouroboros was an organism that focused on eating, this one was for breeding.

The huge amounts of larvae that constantly popped out proved this.

‘Good.’

In normal circumstances he would've never created this many larvae no matter how greedy he was.

Since the World Tree's leaves were way too scarce to feed all these larvae.

But wasn't there an amazing source of food?

‘Ouroboros. I need you to help me in a slightly different way now.’

The larvae followed the Queen’s orders and burrowed into the Branches.

And then got onto the Exterior which supplied the Nutritional Fluid and started to swim somewhere.

Chururururk

The harsh flow of the Nutritional fluid rushed towards the larvae but it was still the larvae of a Wasp Soldier.

There was nothing to say about its sturdiness and strength.

But the larvae that were heading towards the Pillar immediately stuck onto the walls of the Exterior as a strange scent could be detected.

The scent of a predator.

But it was now a dead predator.

It would now just be meat that would become nutrition for them.

The larvae dug out of the Exterior and then landed on the corpse of the giant snake coiled around the World Tree.

And the tens of thousands of larvae that had arrived started to devour the giant body of the Ouroboros.

The Larvae were thrilled.

The genes of an extremely strong and vicious existence that couldn't even be compared to the soft leaves.



The larvae prepared to become a new existence as they ate up the meat that was filled with those genes and the nutrition.

# Chapter 91 – Wasp Legion (2)

---

Kuuuuuuu

Jukma sighed in relief as he saw the movements of the Ouroboros stopping from below.

‘Thank god. He succeeded.’

He didn’t like that Hansoo guy but then all of them would die they if they couldn’t kill that thing.

‘It’s a mess. The tracker teams aren’t in contact as well... Did they get killed by the parasites?’

Jukma clicked his tongue.

Since he couldn’t prevent the chances of such things happening because it was such a mess.

At that moment he could see people crawling up the World Tree’s trunk.

There were a few individual adventurers but the clansmen of the other Five Pillars or the Twelve Roots could be seen as well.

‘Are those guys trying to crawl into the body of the Ouroboros?’

The people who had been fighting all around were cautiously

crawling into the body of the Ouroboros through the trunk.

Since it wasn't that hard to crawl into the body of the dead Ouroboros.

Jukma grinded his teeth while looking at that scene.

'Oh yeah. Relics.'

Jukma looked at the five gears hanging around his body.

Such objects had come out when they had only killed two.

There wasn't any guarantee that there won't be anything inside the Ouroboros.

Hadn't they obtained the Forgotten Sword in the stomach of the Calamity Fish?

'...I made a blunder. I should've moved before those guys went up first.'

No one knew what was inside it.

Whoever took it first was the owner.

There was nothing to lose even if nothing was there.

Since it was a no-risk.

The parasites died out as the Ouroboros stopped moving and the Ouroboros was now just a huge decor.

‘I have to move before the Wasp Legion moves out.’

The Queen of the Wasp Legion would become frantic in order to increase its power and search around for food.

Since there were more than a few people who had seen the people who had gone up to the Branches and flying around after becoming one of the Wasps.

Why would such things miss such a food source like the Ouroboros?

They haven’t sent the larvae yet because they were checking out the situation but once they do then they’ll send swarms of larvae.

Then the insides of the Ouroboros will get filled up with those vicious things.

‘I need to move quickly.’

Jukma hurriedly started to send his clansmen inside the Ouroboros.

.....

‘Hmm... He managed the situation well.’

Hansoo nodded after reading the carrier pigeon which had come from Sangjin.

There were things that had happened to Sangjin so far until now inside it.

‘He got much stronger. Though he’s not at the level of a Departed Soul...’

With the role Sangjin has, his runes will increase extremely fast.

‘The stronger the comrade the better.’

Hansoo stopped walking due to a strange sensation while descending down upon the Ouroboros.

A strange movement inside the Ouroboros.

‘Wasp Soldier’s larvae.’

Hansoo frowned slightly

‘It’s faster than I expected.’

He expected the Clone to go to the Wasp Legion.

But from the speed of how fast the larvae were spread, it seems like he had given up on the Ouroboros quite quickly.

‘And... With that many larvae.’

That guy would need to suppress his greed if he wanted to control it.

If he tried to control the guy who was focused on breeding then there was no way that many larvae would come out.

Which meant that he had completely given up on controlling it.

But Hansoo still nodded.

‘It’s alright so far.’

Since the battle depended on whether he was able to cut off the Queen’s neck or not.

Actually it was better to go up and kill off the Queen while those things, who couldn't come down due to the Ouroboros, were focused on the corpse of the Ouroboros and not humans.

‘It’s better to win with the least amount of casualties.’

But Hansoo squinted his eyes at the people crawling into the body of the Ouroboros

.....

Voices resonated throughout the giant corpse of the Ouroboros.

“Hey. Look closer. How would there not be any rewards when such a big thing like this died?”

“Ugh. Hansoo and the others would’ve taken them all. Those Departed Souls.”

Einkel shook his head as he looked at Ren who was pushing him.

He understood that guy’s intentions but logically speaking there won’t be any useful things left behind.

The eight who had killed this thing would’ve shared it with each other.



Ren shouted out abruptly.

“You bastard. There’s going to be the artifacts of the ones whom this guy had swallowed. As well as the Relics.’

“Ugh.”

Einkel shook his head.’

‘Well. There’s a possibility of that being true.’

Which was the reason why they were searching throughout the stomach of the Ouroboros.

If those of Large clans find this first then there won’t even be a drop left.

While Einkel was about to proceed forward, a noise resonated from deep within the flesh of the Ouroboros.

Kurururk

“Huh?”

Einkel put his ear up to the petrified flesh of the Ouroboros as soon as he heard a strange sound.

He then frowned.

Sagak Sagak

A sound of something being gnawed.

Einkel activated a skill.

Kiiing

The vibration which went through the flesh turned into a shape and then created a virtual image inside Einkel's head.

He then freaked out.

‘Wasp?’

A larvae of a familiar form was gnawing upon the corpse of the Ouroboros.

‘Damnit. Why are these guys here!’

Why were the things that were at the Branch over here.

Einkel focused everything onto the larvae over the flesh wall and then quickly shouted behind him.

“Ren! We have to get out!”

They needed to get out and spread this news.

There was one Ouroboros but there were hundreds of thousands of these things.

Even if Hansoo and the Seven Departed Souls fought in the front there was no way for them to charge through.

And eating a few humans made them much stronger than normal Wasp Soldiers.

They couldn't even imagine what they would become once they grew by eating up the Ouroboros.

“Ren! Ren! Why aren't you responding!”

Eiken's body froze as he turned around while shouting.

Since Ren, who was proceeding in the front, was being eaten by something.

Udududk. Kudududk.

“Goddamnit...”

Einkel spat out curses as he looked at Ren who was having his neck pulled off.

And around Einkel, something with a lower body of a snake and an upper body of a Wasp Soldier was approaching him.

‘Goddamnit...’

Einkel's consciousness was cut off with that.

<....>

And the Wasps just quietly ate up that corpse.

They hadn't completed their growth yet.

As they ate the human corpse, their body which still had room for change started to slowly change while making noises.

Two human-like arms popped out from the upper part of the bee.

At the same time there was a change at its head which was a strange combination of a snake and bee.

Kiiik

The Wasp Soldier, which had absorbed the human body, started to ponder.

The body of the predator it had eaten was amazing.

But two were better than one and three were better than two.

Since a wide variety of collections gave them the possibility.

Mixing the genes of their predator to theirs was amazing by itself but when they added another it gave a much better result.

The Wasp Soldier sent a message and asked the Queen.

As to whether it should keep eating what it had.

Or leave the corpse and eat the living ones below for more possibilities.

The Queen then gave the order.

.....

‘...We poked a wasp’s hive.’

The people of the Six Pillars who were gathered all frowned.

Reports were being made to them constantly.

That the ones who had been eating the corpse of the Ouroboros were now preparing to go down.

Once they collect enough numbers then they'll probably rush down.

But there were things they wanted to say.

‘Damn it. It doesn’t make sense.’

It was too fast.

Even if it was the Wasp Legion it wouldn’t try to increase its power this fast.

Hansoo shook his head while looking at these guys.

These guys would see even more casualties now.

It was a well-deserved punishment but they couldn’t just watch and take it.



Hansoo spoke as he looked at them.

“I need to kill off the Queen before they increase their powers even more. Defend here with your lives on the line.”

Hansoo then looked at the giant chain system set up between the Roots.

Six Pillars and the Six entrances in between them.

People were using the five relics to set up the chain system.

Raise the Seven Star Marbles and then connect it with the chains.

When millions of relics were used like that, a ginormous chain system which surrounded this area was created.

‘Let’s see.’

Hansoo pulled out the energy of the Divine Fragment.

Chijijjik

As a large amount of energy started to flow through, the relics and the chains made clanking noises and moved back and forth.

Set up the formation and then fight from the inside with the relics.

‘They can’t hold on for long.’

He needed to kill the Queen before they get run over.

Jongsang asked Hansoo while looking at the formation they had created.

“...How are you going to get up?”

That formation was quite useful but they couldn’t get near the Queen at the top with this.

The Wasp Soldiers on the way up can be dealt with but the new Wasps being created from within the Ouroboros will constantly pour out.

At that time a cross shone on Hansoo’s head.

At that time the Pillars of the World Tree that they were standing

on made creaking noises as they started to twist.

Kududuk. Ududuk.

“This is...”

The people were shocked as they saw the tunnel filled with light.

Since they had never seen such a thing when they’ve been living in these Pillars for years.

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at that tunnel.

‘Go up by creating the Vassal’s Tunnel.’

At this rate he would need to deal with countless newly evolved Wasp Soldiers if he were to go up climbing the World Tree’s Trunk in order to get to the Queen.

And they would pour down like water even while he is fighting.

That was too dangerous.

But there was a tunnel which lead straight up to the top of the World Tree.

<Vassal’s Tunnel>

A tunnel which only the Five Great Tiger Generals who had the ability to ask for an audience with the King could use, a tunnel which lead straight to the <Flower> which was the King's residency.

If he uses this then he can get to the Queen, which was located close to the Flower, quite quickly.

“If we go up using this tunnel then we can get to the Queen with the shortest route possible.”

“Hmm...”

The people's expressions brightened up as they heard this.

The reason why the Wasp Legion was dangerous was partly because the Queen was strong but mainly because of the viciousness of the Wasp Soldiers surrounding it.

If they could get to the Queen directly then a huge amount of pressure will be lifted off.

“Then we will create an elite force and go up.”

Hansoo shook his head at those words.

“Five.”

“What?”

Only five people can go through this tunnel.

This path was something only allowed to the Five Great Tiger Generals.

Which meant that only the five who had the keys that symbolized those five could go up.

There wasn't a need to distribute the keys but it was a tunnel for five people from the start.

“Goddamnit...”

Jongsang got flustered and then looked at the others.

Of course the strongest five had to go.

So if Hansoo took a spot it meant that only four of the remaining Six Departed Souls could go.

While Jongsang's expression was turning worse, Hansoo's expression wasn't very well off either.

‘Hooh... I didn't want to open it.’

If the situation wasn't dire then he wouldn't have gone up through this tunnel.

The Vassal's tunnel was a tunnel which opened to get to the king.

Of course the King will know it once it opened.

Not the clone.

The Fallen King himself who had succeeded in killing or exiling all the Elvenheims as well as completely drying up the World Tree.

The Elvenheims he had met at the Abyss were all exiled so they didn't know the events of the Fallen King after they were exiled.

He might've died or went somewhere else.

Hansoo needed to take into account the worst situation possible so he didn't want to open the Vassal's Tunnel but he did.

The King's power was dimensions apart from that of the Clone.

And their memories were different so it was impossible to calculate his actions unlike for the clone which acted blindly.

'I won't even be able to do anything if he exists...'

He can't abandon the best solution because of unsure variables and take risks.

But not having any risk was of course the best.

Oooooong

At that time the World Tree trembled slightly.

Without Hansoo doing anything.

‘Goddamit.’

Hansoo turned around his sight towards the top of the World Tree and then clenched his teeth.

.....

The giant flower which had denied access to the clone.

A man who had been lying inside the flower got up.

“ ... ”

The Elvenheim frowned as he got warned by the World Tree that somebody was coming to him.



## Chapter 92 – Wasp Legion (3)

---

Tekilon frowned slightly.

‘...He opened the path with the key huh.’

He had the cells of the King but he could not block that path.

Since that path was something created for the Five Great Tiger Generals in the first place.

‘And I can’t hide the Queen who doesn’t even listen to me.’

But that warning was enough.

Tekilon put his hand upon the Queen and relayed the message.

That the people who were coming to kill it had opened a path towards it.

<....>

The Queen started rubbing the eight pairs of wings on its back as that message pissed it off.

It was pondering whether to run away or not.

But then its thoughts stopped at the newly born this time alone.

The inner part of the World Tree wasn't fit for other Wasps to act.

Since it was too small for them to fly.

But it would be for those who had been born recently.

<....>

The Queen started to send messages towards the Wasp Soldiers who had grown up by eating the corpse of the Ouroboros.

While Tekilon was watching this scene he heard something calling him.

<Come here.>

“Uuk?”

An extremely familiar voice.

Tekilon freaked out as he heard the voice calling him.

‘He wasn't dead!.’

Tekilon was confused.

Why did he not complete his plans if he wasn't dead?

‘Yeah. Let’s first hear the story.’

Tekilon froze his expression and moved his body towards the Flower where he had been denied access before.

.....

Charururuk

The Flower, which didn't seem like it would let anyone through, melted down.

As the giant energy walls disappeared, a beautiful palace came into view.

<El-Karaeen>.

The palace of the Elvenheims.

The palace which didn't emit a single noise was extremely clean due to the petals that didn't even let a speck of dust through but it was still very barren to Tekilon who knew the palace of the olden days when it was filled with flowers and music.

'Well that's not the important part.'

Tekilon went past the corridor and the giant pillars and then approached the throne where the other version of him was.

A giant chair which had a giant spear leaned against it.

Tekilon frowned as he looked at the existence that looked exactly the same as him sitting on the Throne.

An existence that was looking at him with an extremely tired expression.

The original body spoke towards the clone.

“...It seems like the Devouring and Vomiting Root was extremely anxious.”

The original body had long understood the situation.

Calamity Fish, Devouring and Vomiting Root and even the Ouroboros.

‘And... That child has died too.’

He didn’t know who but it seemed amazing people had come into this world.

Tekilon looked at the original body as if that guy was a traitor and spoke.

“Why did you stop the plan mid way? Did you fail at connecting the dimensional portal?”

No, their plan was simple.

First, get the World Tree which protected the Elvenheims into a

mess.

Then kill off or exile all the Elvenheims to monopolize the power of the World Tree.

Borrow the yet-to-die World Tree's power and create a dimensional portal towards their world.

Call their dying race from the fallen world, get rid of the Calamities while the World Tree was still dying, revive the World Tree and then make their race bloom again.

It seemed like the Elvenheims were dead or exiled and the World Tree was dying but looked like it was still working.

But then where did their race go and why were randoms roaming around the World Tree?

The original body made a depressed expression at those words.

“...I opened the dimensional Portal. You've seen it too.”

“What?”

Tekilon freaked out.

He did indeed see it.

Since he was able to feel it while he was controlling the Ouroboros.

Through it stopped working now but there indeed was a dimensional portal way below the World Tree.

Was that connected to their world?

“Then why...”

The original body looked at Tekilon with a tired expression.

That was another him.

Him of the past when he had thoughts full of saving his race and was full of vigor.

That was why that guy didn't know yet.

Why he had failed.

And to why he had given up everything and decided to sleep inside the Flower instead.

The answer was extremely simple.

“Our race cannot come over here.”

“What?”

The goal he had achieved by killing countless Elvenheims who believed and followed him had failed.

Since that dimensional door could only send people towards that location and not bring them to this side.

“Why? Why not!”

Tekilon muttered with a blank expression.

Wouldn't he have looked into it?

Logically, the Dimensional Door was capable of bidirectional travel.

But why was it only one way?

The original body mumbled while looking at himself of the past.

“The density of the energy changed.”

Originally, their world and this world should have the same energy density.



But as to whatever happened, when he opened the Dimensional Door the energy of their world that was on the other side had been raised a level.

As if somebody had changed it to set the world up like a staircase.

So those from this world could go over to that side.

But the ones on the other side could not come over here.

Even if they do, they'll die very quickly.

Like a fish dying once it comes out of the water.

Tekilon made a devastated expression after hearing the whole story.

“Then what happened...”

He had feelings too.

He had met countless Elvenheims while he lived with them, he made friends and even family.

He had thought of giving up countless times while creating the Calamities in secret and continuing with the plan.

And because of this he had taken almost a year after he had created all four Calamities and finished his preparations in order to think and find a different method.

To find out if there was a way for the two race to live in harmony.

Despite knowing that his dying clan was suffering in the world across.

While he was pondering and pondering, the child he had gained over at this side had died.

<Elk-Tinheim>

At that moment the King, Tekilon, felt something snapping inside his head.

He had tried madly in order to save his son.

But something had gone wrong and the attempt of saving his son had instead just created a seed for another Calamity.

Tekilon then realized that it was time for him make a decision.

Either have all his plans exposed and return to nothing because of the existence that used to once be his son that was going crazy.

Or to rush his plan that he had been pushing back in order to accomplish his goals.

As if something was pushing him, the moment of choice had come to him.

And after a long period of thought, he chose the second option.

Since the moment his son died, he thought of the other son which he had left behind in the other world.

“Goddammit... Godammit...”

It was a plan which he had executed in such a desperate time.

While wiping off the race he had spent hundreds of years with.

Though it wasn't a complete extinction because there were many of them who had escaped out of this Dimension but it was basically the same as destroying an entire race.

But to not have succeeded after that.

The devastated Tekilon suddenly made a cold expression.

He knew after hearing the words of the old Tekilon.

The energy of the dimension changed as if somebody played around with it.

And while the old Tekilon gave up and was sleeping a strange race had taken residence below.

‘Is there really no connection between these two?’

The young Tekilon glanced below the World Tree and then muttered.

“I’m going to clean up everything below. You help me. You should understand me since you are me. I will try to open the Dimensional Portal again after sweeping up the guys below.”

He could do it.

There was nothing on his mind that could stop him.

Which meant that there was no reason to.

Since he had nothing to lose even if his decision was wrong.

No, he had to do this even if there was a 1% chance of his decision being correct.

The Old Tekilon made a bitter smile while looking at the young Tekilon.

There was too much of a time difference even if they were the same person.

He was exhausted.

He didn't have the strength or the will to cause such a mass murder.

And he had a feeling.

That it wouldn't work even if they did that.

The race below had no connection to this problem.

'But... He wouldn't listen.'

My young self.

He was different from the his old self who was exhausted and was about to die from loneliness.

He was full of vigor, his love for his race was stronger and he was also being affected from the loss of his son more.

And because of this he could create a mass murder without any hesitation even with just a slight possibility of saving his race.

The past Tekilon knew how the Old Tekilon felt because they were the same.

He knew that there was no point of trying to stop him.

“I’m not going to help you. But I will respect your choice.”

Then the old Tekilon lifted up the giant spear next to the throne.

King’s two treasures.

The two treasures that were required to keep the kingship.

One was the armor that protected the King, Thousand Soldiers Armor.

And another one.

A spear of punishment that allowed the King to kill anybody who has gone against the king whoever they were.

<Forked Lightning>

“Take it.”

Kudududk

The young Tekilon, who had received the King's Spear <Pronged Lightning>, looked down the World Tree with a renewed resolution.

.....

The World Tree was squirming as it was moving them upwards.

As if it was rapidly teleporting them over short distances.

And Hansoo, who had been heading up, thought of the Flower and the Wasp Legion at the end of the path.

‘I can almost see the end.’

Kill the Calamity Fish, revive the Roots and create land to live on.

Kill the Devouring and Vomiting Root, take the Plant and then take back the Toxic Waters that will go into the World Tree.

Kill the Ouroboros to retake the Pillar, which worked as the purifying pump.

Kill the Wasp Legion in order to revive the World Tree's branches and leaves that these things constantly gnawed upon.

Kill the Calamities that were eating up the World Tree and create some room for the World Tree to revive.

At this stage take all the Relics and Divine Stone Fragments to the Core within the Flower above the World Tree's Pillar, Branches, and leaves to return the Divine Stone Fragments to their original location.

Once he created some space for the World Tree to revive and supply it with the Divine Stone then the World Tree will come back to life.

Then he will be able to save most of the 3 billion people who would come after.

No, he would be able to use the fruits of the World Tree in order to multiply those numbers at an extreme speed.

‘Create a new Earth in this place.’

They didn't lack any food, could teleport anywhere and were supplied with plenty of energy.

The population would be able to multiply at an astronomical pace.

But that wasn't enough.



He didn't come here in order to create a peaceful world.

Use the relics to create a new <King>.

The new king of the Red zone.

An almighty authority that would have the power to control everyone within their hands with the Relics and all of the World Tree's Power with their basis no matter if the people who would come after reach the numbers of a billion, two or even three billion.

An existence that would be able to force those people into the battlefield and create them into soldiers without their consent.

Then his first plan, <Barracks>, will be completed.

The first stage which was to create an end result of billions of soldiers.

He will then be able to go up after leaving everything onto the King with ease.

'Who should I make the King?'

Hansoo mumbled as he looked at the people next to him.

He didn't bring Sangjin.

Since the Punisher needed to look like they had no relations to him.

The people he had brought were four of the six.

Baek Jongsang.

Arc Mariangt.

Kyle Cooper.

The three who had stayed here the longest after Miyamoto and were the strongest out of the Seven Departed Souls because of that.

And Sofía Vergara.

Sofía was the weakest since she was the youngest but her trait, <Library>, was extremely formidable.

‘And it’s actually very helpful.’

Sofía was endlessly pointing left and right while shouting out.

“Three from the left! Two from the Right!”

The mutated Wasps were popping out in the Vassal’s Tunnel endlessly while they were heading up.

“Goddamit! These guys are really strong!”

Jongsang shouted while grinding his teeth.

They were so sneaky that they weren’t even getting caught in their senses properly.

If they didn’t have Sofía’s trait then they would’ve gotten hurt from a sneak attack already.

‘But... We can go up if it’s just this much.’

While they were making slightly comfortable expressions, Sofía’s expression quickly turned solemn.

Something was heading towards them from very far away.

While pouring out a fierce aura in all directions as if it didn’t have any thoughts of hiding it.

‘Oh my god. What is this.’

Boom! Booboom! Boboboom!

An extremely thick and hard thing that was approaching them at extreme speed while breaking through the Pillar of the World Tree that had withstood the thrashing of the Ouroboros.

And Hansoo was standing at the end of that path.

“Damnit! Dodge...”

Booom!

Even before she could finish her words, a giant golden spear, which came through into the Vassal’s Tunnel, accurately smashed into Hansoo.

Hansoo tried to dodge it but the golden spear showed a turn which was impossible for its speed as it smashed into Hansoo’s chest like a homing missile.

Kududuk

“Kuhuk!”

Hansoo, who had barely stopped the spear that tried to penetrate his chest, couldn't handle the force as he broke through the Vassal's Tunnel and flew outside along with the spear.

# Chapter 93 – Wasp Legion (4)

---

Kugugugugu

Hansoo clenched his teeth while looking at the spear that was constantly pushing him back.

Despite him blocking it with all the power with his relics, the spear was constantly thrashing about in order to penetrate his heart.

‘Damn it. Is this the Forked Lightning I heard about?’

He had heard about it.

The ultimate spear which was created to crush down those who opposed the King.

Like how the relics got their energy from the Divine Stone Fragment, the Forked Lightning also received energy from the Divine Stone Fragments and showed as much power as the god’s punishment would within the area where the World Tree’s power reached out to.

There were two remaining fragments.

One in the heart of the Wasp Legion’s Queen.

And one in the Flower which had the palace within it.

From the might of it, it seemed like it flew at him with the power of the Divine Stone from the Flower.

‘Did the King decide to help the clone? Or did the King himself set out?’

Many different thoughts replaced each other in the short moment while he was flung out from the Vassal’s tunnel.

But a conclusion wasn’t made.

‘There’s not enough information.’

Hansoo clenched his teeth and then balanced himself in position.

He had to now fight two things.

The Wasp Legion and Forked Lightning.

The Wasp Soldiers were charging much more viciously.

‘First... Seal this Spear.’

Hansoo then grasped onto the Spear that was trying to penetrate him.



So that it wouldn't be able to get out.

If the clone felt threatened then it will retrieve the Forked Lightning and instead smash down upon the Departed Souls.

That'll be troublesome.

'You, play with me.'

Kududududk

Soon Hansoo and the golden spear's strength battle begun.

Kwagagagak

The golden spear continuously pushed Hansoo back and slammed him onto the Pillars of the World Tree.

Because of this Hansoo smashed the Pillar of the World Tree with his whole body and then fell downwards...

‘Kuuuu.’

A pain which felt like his whole body was being crushed.

Hansoo looked at the spear, which was constantly adjusting its own angle in order to penetrate his heart, and then poured out strength from all over his body.

He was barely holding on with his strength before becoming a skewer.

‘I heard that it wouldn’t stop until it penetrated the heart of the target once it was released but...’

Kiiing

Hansoo's relics madly resonated as they poured out the Divine Stone Fragment energy.

The energy that came out from the Divine Stone Fragment stuck onto the Relics and then stormed around in order to suppress the golden spear.

Kiriririk

The golden spear was shocked.

The golden spear also used the Divine Stone's energy but if they were to continue to fall down like this then it will get further away from it's energy supplier.

The spear that was plummeting downwards trying to pierce Hansoo suddenly started to thrash around.

Then it tried to fly off in a different direction with Hansoo still on it.

‘A bit troublesome.’

Hansoo got one of the five relics around his body, the chains, and started to wrap it around the spear.

Once the chains that were connected to the seven marbles were wrapped around the golden spear, Hansoo used his mana to pull Ekidrang's Relic, the seven marbles, onto the ground.

Kugugugu

‘Damn it. It’s still not enough?’

Hansoo was shocked at the golden spear that did not get pulled down to the ground easily.

‘But... This is enough for me to move it.’

Hansoo glared coldly at the golden spear that was trying to go up the World Tree through his body and then slammed his hand onto the World Tree’s surface.

Kududududk

He then started to slam his hands and feet inside the World Tree as he slowly moved down.

The golden spear had now even given up trying to penetrate Hansoo's heart and was trying to go back to the location it had been shot from.

‘It'll be a bit troublesome if that happens.’

Once it goes back and they shoot it with this power a few more times, even Hansoo will have holes all over his body.

He needed to get rid of it at this moment when he got ahold of it.

Kuduk. Kudududk.

The golden spear's strength was so strong that the chains wrapped around it got so tight to the point where they seemed like they would snap and the marbles latched onto it also trembled but the golden spear slowly got pulled downwards from Hansoo's strength combined with the relics as if it was an eagle that was caught within a net.

The people who were watching this scene from below made a confused expression.

“Huh? Why is it coming back down?”

“What is that?”

While people were making confused expressions as they saw Hansoo, who had gone up at an extreme speed, slowly crawl down, Hansoo shouted loudly.

“You need to bring all the chains and the Seven Star Marbles that made up the formation over here! Hurry!”

‘If it isn’t enough with one person’s strength then... I just need to stack tens of thousands of them.’

If he had his ankles caught here then the above situation couldn’t be solved with just the departed souls.

Since he didn’t know how the Wasp Legion or the King would act.



Kiriririrk

The golden spear that had been caught felt that the situation was dangerous as it started to thrash around madly and stabbed at Hansoo.

Kwaduk

Kudududk

“Quickly! Hurry up!”

The people finally realized something was wrong after seeing Hansoo falling towards the ground while fighting against the Golden Spear, quickly brought the chains and marbles that set up the formation and ran up to Hansoo.

Then they placed the marbles onto the chains and threw them towards the spear that was trying to penetrate Hansoo in a mad manner.

# Chwarurung

Kuduk

‘Kuhuk!’

Hansoo, who had his left arm grazed by the thrashing spear, bit onto his teeth, grabbed onto the chains that were flying up from all around him and started to wrap them around the golden spear.

One, two.

Soon thousands of giant chains wrapped around the golden spear.

‘This should be...’

Hansoo retrieved his relic that was wrapped around the Golden Spear.

He couldn’t stay here forever.

He had to tie down this spear as fast as possible and then go back up.

Karararang

As soon as Hansoo backed off a bit the golden spear started to madly thrash around again.

Tototong

At the same time thousands of chains and the marbles that were attached onto it made noises as they started to get dragged up into the air.

The people freaked out.

“What the hell is that!”

“Damnit! Throw more! Tie it with more!”

## Tititing

The chains that had been supplied with the Divine Stone Fragment's energy started to blow apart.

The people who had been maintaining the formation and watching the scene up until now all freaked out as they ran towards the golden spear with their relics.

They didn't know what it was but from the way it thrashed around it seemed like they would become skewers once it was released.

Soon almost ten thousand chains were tied onto it along with the marbles and only then did the golden spear's strength and the people's strength were equalized.



Kudududk

“Hoooh... Damnit. Throw some more!”

“Damnit! If we take out more then the formation will be unstable!”

Hansoo, who had barely tied down the Forked Lightning, looked at the status of the chains and then shook his head.

‘It won’t hold it for long.’

Chiiiik

Despite having been completely tied down its speed and penetration, the chains were slowly melting down from the mana lightning imbued within the spear.

At this rate he didn't know when it will come out to threaten him again.

‘I need to quickly go back up.’

Hansoo clenched onto his teeth and the started to climb up at a quicker pace.

.....

Oooooong

Tekilon frowned as he felt the spear wasn't moving the way he wanted.

Which meant that the Forked Lightning had been tied down somewhere.

Tekilon quickly looked below with his mana.

And then frowned as he saw the spear completely tied down.

‘The Thousand Soldiers Armors played a role huh.’

With that method it could indeed temporarily suppress down the golden spear.

‘Damn it.’

Tekilon glanced at the old Tekilon behind him.

Himself of the past was much more powerful but did not have any thoughts of acting despite that.

‘Damn it. There won't be a need to struggle like this if he helped.’

The young Tekilon clenched onto his teeth and then shouted.

“Why aren’t you helping! Don’t you feel sorry for the clansmen! We need to try even if there is a slight amount of possibility!”

The old Tekilon looked at the young Tekilon for a bit and then spoke out.

“I had many thoughts after the Dimensional portal failed. Because of that I was able to think back about a lot of things.”

“ ... ”

“The time when our world was destroyed. Do you remember?”

The young Tekilon grinded his teeth at those words.

<Calamity of Death>

The disease which had sent their entire world into destruction.

No, a Calamity which had the form of a disease.

The disease of unknown origin sent all of them close into extinction not long after it was spread.

“Do you remember around when that disease started to spread

out?”

The young Tekilon pondered for a while and then spoke out.

“...It was around when our body reconstruction surgery was being used perfectly and had been commercialized.”

Thanks to this their race had been able to have a much stronger body than ever before.

Before this they could only fight with limited supplies because they lacked everything.

Since dangers constantly stormed from the outside and they were always short on food.

But the body reconstruction surgery solved all their problems in an instant.

Their stamina got strengthened, they needed to eat much less in order to survive, their longevity lengthened and their battle powers increased by a huge amount.

Actually their tribe's original body wasn't that different from those things below.

But their body which had gone through the surgery had changed close to a beasts and soon after their body reconstruction surgery

had been perfected and commercialized, their whole race had finally united all together.

For the first time in history.

Then the Calamity of Death enveloped that specific race who were filled to the brim with hopes and dreams.

Their race screamed out in despair after falling into depravity.

That they had received a befitting punishment after invading god's territory of reconstructing the body.

‘Damnit...’

While the young Tekilon was frowning while thinking of those times, the old Tekilon spoke again.

“Yes. And do you remember when we had come over here in the soul form?”

“...When the World Tree was created.”

“Yes. When this side had been all united together from the World Tree's power.”

Their growth was slow, they were always threatened by the toxic

waters and they always lacked food.

The Elvenheims, who had been constantly fighting after being divided into hundreds of different tribes, met a grand unification not long after the World Tree was created.

And then they face total annihilation due to Tekilon who had come over with his soul.

“No way...”

Games were only fun when there were competition and enemies.

As soon as they gained a grand unification and had peace, both the races treaded the path of total destruction.

As if somebody threw over the game board that had gotten boring.

“What would we do even if we save our race at this point. We will need to keep fighting and fighting even if we save them.”

“...Isn’t that just an estimate?”

The old Tekilon shook his head.

“It’s not. Look at the beasts below. That’s not something we

created right?”

“...Then?”

“Something came to me one day.”

<It's a shame. If your race had unified after the Abyss was established then you would've at least received a chance to participate. But, we will be using this place for a bit. Your mentality is just our style but there's a race that's a bit too weak to fight with the other races so... We need to level them up a bit. Heehee.>

Tekilon, who had been exhausted beyond what he could endure, nodded at the fairy shaped existence and then fell into slumber.

“It'll... be okay to unify now. But we will just get swept over by the war with the other races in the place called the Abyss.”

The young Tekilon just grinded his teeth.

“Nonsense. How did I become like this?”

“What?”

“So what if we become a chess piece for somebody else? We can keep living if we continue to fight.”



“ ... ”

“It was a history of battles anyway. To not want to fight after tasting the short amount of peace.”

Before the unification.

They had fought and fought in order to survive.

It was set up so their race, the Elvenheims and all other races below had to fight in order to survive.

‘The fact that we have to continue to fight in order to survive is the same as saying that there is no absolute existence.’

If the only way to live was to fight then they just needed to do what they had always done.

Even if there was an absolute existence they won't butt in randomly in order to enjoy the fun.

Since a game where one can change the rules won't be fun.

“Don't say meaningless things. Saving them is the first priority. Give me the power to control the Wasp Legion. I will finish it off.”

“ ... ”

The Old Tekilon sighed as he transferred the shining star symbol on his head.

.....

Oooooong

The Queen had lost all its power to something which had invaded its head.

Tekilon who had become the new king gave an order as soon as he got control of the Queen.

For the Wasp Legion to attack the people hiding around the strange pillars.

To smash apart the formation and to release the Forked Lightning.

Soon the giant wasps that weren't moving in order to protect the Queen started to rush downwards.

At the same time he gave a different order to the newly evolved bees.

To buy time against the invaders who were coming up through the Pillar.

Hansoo, who had been climbing back up through the Vassal's Tunnel, grinded his teeth at the info that was coming in through the World Tree.

‘He had received the power. Or the King himself has moved out.’

It was now time to fight.

Whether the time for the tied down Forked Lightning to get released from the Wasp Legion was faster.

Or him smashing through the Wasp Legion and getting rid of the Queen and the Clone was faster.

‘...The quicker I finish this off the more people will stay alive.’

Hansoo breathed in deeply and then started to madly run in order to catch up to the Departed Souls who would have already gone up.

# Chapter 94 – Wasp Legion (5)

---

Kidudududk, Kidududk.

“Block it!”

“We’re getting pushed through.”

The people roared out as they saw the Wasp Legion charging at them from all directions.

Karururuk

The marbles and chains were getting destroyed from the wasps.

And one of them clenched their teeth as the formation in front of their eyes got dangerously close to getting broken apart.

‘Damnit. If that breaks...’

He was currently safe since he could hide behind the formation and attack with the skills but once his location was pushed through then the wasps will charge at him and kill him.

The man, Azra, thought of his chain and Seven Star Marbles which weren’t here.

Relics that he had tied down onto the golden spear in the distance in order to suppress that strange golden spear from before.

‘With that...’

With those he would be able to fortify the formation in front of his eyes that was on the brink of getting broken apart.

‘And it doesn’t look like it will come to pierce us.’

Everyone had thrown the chains in a state of panic before but

they weren't targets of the golden spear.

It was only aiming for Hansoo.

If he loosened up his chains then the golden spear will go to Hansoo and not himself.

‘...Damn it.’

Hansoo falling into danger was obvious.

But if he didn't fortify the formation then he was about to become food for the Wasp Legion.

Kurararakarak

“Huk!”

Az freaked out and backed up as his <El Lain's Protection> was shattered from the wasp that attacked him with its front legs.

And then instinctively called the chains and marbles in the distance over.



Chwarururuk

The chains and marbles that flew in from the instinctive orders blocked his view in front of him.

Clunk Clunk

Azra clenched his teeth and then mumbled inwardly as he bought himself some time due to the fortified formation.

Yeah... There's over ten thousand of them. One shouldn't affect it much.'

And even for Hansoo, it'd be better to reinforce the seal like this as well.

Since it'll be the end if they get pushed through.

The moment Azra started to focus on the Wasp Legion in front of his eyes, he heard a loosening sound behind him.

Azra quickly looked back and then clenched his teeth.

"Goddamnit..."

As if the people had similar thoughts as him, the chains were getting loosened up and were spreading out towards the formation.

Azra frowned as he saw the spear's clunking getting more vigorous.

.....

Kudududu

Hansoo swung Galadriang's Relic towards one of the wasps flying towards him.

Chooooooooong

The energy imbued into the sword, which was of much greater strength than before, cut apart the wasp in half.

But Hansoo made a dissatisfied expression.

The ones who had been cut apart had fallen down while screaming but more wasps had dug through the World Tree to replace them.

‘There’s no end at this rate.’

Hansoo pushed the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement to the limit and then just charged through these guys.

Meaning that he had given up going up while killing them one by one.

Even if he gained a bit of a loss, he had decided to go up forcefully.

Boooom!

The wasps in front of him were smashed apart from the synergetic effect of Hansoo’s formless armor, Thousand Soldiers Armor and Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement.

But only so.

He had been able to proceed for tens of meters but his charge had been stopped by the wasps who constantly blocked his path.

And the ones who had been strengthened through the consumption of the Ouroboros were getting through the formless armor and the Thousand Soldiers Armor and were injuring him.

‘...Nurmaha’s ring doesn’t work well because these guys are insects. I cannot go up when I’m stuck here like this.’

And if the suppressed spear below were to get released while he was doing this, it will become even more troublesome.

‘Though logically they will be able to stay on for a bit longer...’

If the formation started to break apart than there’s no way the people will keep the chains to suppress down the spear.

He had to finish this as fast as possible.

‘Damnit... This is quite a burden on my body.’

It was a bit too early to use the Racial Metamorphosis of the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement yet.

‘If I use it now... I’ll only get two hearts. Can I do it?’

He had gotten stronger but the mastery level of this hadn’t really increased much.

But he was going to become a skewer while being suppressed down by these guys at this rate.

‘It isn’t the time to worry about this.’

Hansoo pushed up the genes that were in a corner within his body.

Kududududk

The Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement started to turn Hansoo's body into one of a different existence.

The bones had changed into those of that different existence and a thin layer of scales covered over those.

At the same time a heart squirmed about as it appeared inside his body.



Kudududk

Another heart had appeared a bit to the right of the original heart's location.

But only that.

There weren't three hearts like before.

'Hooup'

But it wasn't the time to bicker over this.

He had to fight while squeezing out everything he had.

His physical ability may fall a bit but he had relics and the Thousand Soldiers Armors around his body unlike back then.

His overall battle strength back then couldn't even be comparable to the one he had now.

'Get through in the shortest amount possible... And kill the King.'

As long as the power to rule over the Wasp Legion was on the clone or the king, it was more effective to head towards the Flower instead of aiming for the Queen.

Since his heart might get pierced by the Forked Lightning while he fought with the Queen and dragged out the time.

On the other hand, there was no need to worry about the Wasp Legion once he killed the King.

Since he will be able to rule them however he wanted after succeeding the power.

Hansoo poured strength out from his body, which was currently of one from a different species, and then jumped out.

Booom!

A shockwave which without comparison to the ones before had been created.

The Pillar of the World Tree, that Hansoo was on, couldn't bear the force as it got smashed apart.

Hansoo used that reaction force as he headed above the Pillar like a meteor.

Not through the Vassal's Tunnel but through the path that the Forked Lightning had created while it came down in a straight line.

Kwajijijk!

There were countless amounts of mutant wasps in there but Hansoo ignored them as he just ran through them.

‘There’s no time for me to deal with them one by one.’

Kyaruruk

The wasps which had lower bodies of snakes and upper bodies of humans threw their whole body towards Hansoo.

As if they were treating the King like their Queen.

Kurururu

They constantly charged at him despite getting crushed and smashed apart.

With the Wasp Legion's scariest weapons in the front.

'...Poison stings. This remains after evolution huh.'

The scales from the snake's tail part of the wasp raised up.

At that time the poison poured out from the pores between the scales as it covered the blade-like scales.

The wasps had the hedgehog-like nails in front of them as they charged at Hansoo.

Kagagak!

Most of the scales were smashed apart when they met Hansoo's scales and the Thousand Soldiers Armor.

But when the speed at which Hansoo ran were combined with the huge amount of wasps, it caused his scales and the Thousand Soldiers Armor to slowly get broken apart.

Kudududk

‘Damn it. It’ll be a pain to fix it later.’

Hansoo frowned while looking at the Thousand Soldiers Armor that was becoming ragged.

Kwaduduk

Soon the tail scales of the Wasps got through relic's formless armor, Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement, Scales from the draconic transformation and the Thousand Soldiers Armors and started to dig down onto Hansoo's skin.

Kwaduduk.

The poison constantly dug down in order to melt down his body.

The two hearts constantly pumped the blood which had detoxifying effects as they struggled to resist the poison.

Hansoo continued to go up even as he felt his body slowly getting petrified.

‘...I'm almost there!’

Light was shining between the wasps who had filled the hole made by the Forked Lightning.

Which meant that he was almost at the top.

Just in case the wasps were to hold down onto him, Hansoo covered his body with the chains and the Seven Star Marbles, which he hadn't used up until so far, as he crazily charged up.

Since time to worry about such things when his defenses had been almost broken apart.

His body was going to get smashed apart if the chains and the marbles didn't block them.



Kudududuk

‘Damn it. They’re getting broken one by one.’

The Seven Star Marbles started to fall off one by one from the wasps who constantly charged at him.

Hansoo pushed and pushed the remaining two marbles as he continued to go up.

‘Once I arrive... It’s not that hard to kill him off.’

The King’s power was frightening in itself but his physical abilities weren’t that great.

And that was why he had the Forked Lightning and the Thousand Soldiers Armor.

But at this moment, when those two things were tied down from the King, Hansoo would be able to solve him in an instant once he got there.

Chiriririring

At that time something made a huge noise as it came up from below.

Right through the tunnel Hansoo had come up from.

Chirirrrng

Sounds of hundreds of strands of chains hitting each other.

Hansoo frowned as he looked downwards.

‘...It broke through the chains!’

It had rushed up so fast that hundreds of strands of chains had been melted and stuck onto the golden spear.

The spear, which had come up the tunnel while making a huge commotion from the hundreds of chains hitting each other, aimed right at Hansoo’s heart.

‘...I’ll give you one!’

Kwadududk

He couldn't block it anyway.

Hansoo clenched his teeth and then gave one of the hearts.

Hansoo's body raised up into the air from the spear which had pierced his heart.

Kudududuk

Hansoo gripped the golden spear that had pierced his heart with his hands and then rolled his upper body with the two remaining marbles as well as the chain and made a protective barrier.

Then Hansoo started to shoot up crazily into the sky due to the spear.

Kwagagagak

The wasps were smashed apart from Hansoo's body and the things that protected him.

And Hansoo's body escaped the tunnel that the light was shining into and then rose into the sky.

Hooooong

A giant palace came into Hansoo's view.

The giant palace of the Elvenheims that should normally be covered with the huge energy barrier, the Flower.

‘As I expected.... He can't handle using both the Flower's barrier and the Forked Lightning.’

Hansoo then poured strength onto the hand that held onto the Forked Lightning which had pierced his heart.

He then pulled it out.

Kururururk

The golden spear was shocked as the thing which it had pierced the heart of suddenly moved and tried to take Hansoo away but Hansoo had long gotten away from the golden spear.

At the same time Hansoo fell towards the two Elvenheims standing in the palace at a fierce speed.

The golden spear quickly changed its path and tried to pierce Hansoo again but the two marbles and the chains held onto the spear and suppressed its movements.

Of course it wouldn't be able to hold out for long.

Since it was something he had barely held onto with his own strength and seven marbles.

But that small instant was enough.

Hansoo madly rushed down and then landed between the two Elvenheims.

Booom!

‘Kill both of the... Damnit!’



He wanted to kill them both but the golden spear, which had already broken through the chains, smashed down onto Hansoo.

He would die if his heart were to get pierced again from that.

Hansoo hurriedly held the neck of the closest guy and then used the body to block his front.

Kiiiiik!

The golden spear stopped despite its speed in mid air as if it was perplexed.

‘Hooo...’

Hansoo breathed out and then growled at the one he was holding onto and the one staring at him.

“Stop the Wasp Legion at this moment.”

The formation getting released meant that the people below were already getting smashed apart by the Wasp Legion.

He had to quickly get this guy to stop the Queen.

Since he didn’t have such powers.

At that time the Elvenheim he held onto pondered for a moment and then screamed out.

“Don’t worry about me and just self destruct the Flower! I don’t mind dying here... If our race is doomed to perish like this!”

“...”

The one who was flustered was Hansoo .

‘Damn it. This was the clone and not the King?’

The power to self destruct the Flower only lay upon the King.

He could give away all other powers except this.

He had caught this guy because the symbol of controlling the Wasp Legion was on this guy and thought that this guy was the King but he was the clone instead.

At that moment the Elvenheim who had a slightly tired expression sighed as he was about to nod.

“I respect your cho...”

Pajajajak

The moment the clone was about to laugh in satisfaction as he saw the King open his mouth, a jade orb flew into the King.

Pajijjik

The King, who was going to speak out, froze whole.

As if he got caught within a ice prison.

“Hooh... Hooh. I wasn’t late right?”

Sophia, who had run towards the location Library told her and had smashed the Triple Jade Frozen Orb spoke towards Hansoo.

Hansoo, who had seen the other Departed Souls in the distance fighting with the wasps and buying time, sighed in relief as he nodded.

“It’s perfect.”

At those words Sophia fell unconscious after smiling and the young Tekilon whom Hansoo held the neck of made an extremely ugly expression.

# Chapter 95 – Orange Zone (1)

---

Hansoo looked at the five Divine Stone Fragments in his possession.

Four from the Calamity Fish, Devouring and Vomiting Root, Ouroboros and the Wasp Queen.

And one from the Flower.

The King's symbol was shining upon Hansoo's forehead.

A situation where he had both the Administrators and King's symbols.

Hansoo then walked to the Altar behind the Throne at the center of the Flower.

He then placed the five Divine Stone Fragments one by one onto the Altar as if he was solving a puzzle.

Kiiiiing

Five of the Divine Stone Fragments, which exerted a humongous amount of energy even on their own, were collected.

And the fragments connected to one another as if they melted.

Then the Divine Stone, which had finally become one, exerted a bright light.

Right as a huge energy storm was about to occur, Hansoo started to push the five relics around the Divine Stone one by one.

The Relics got inserted into the holes, which seemed like they were prepared for these specific relics, one by one.

Then the huge amount of energy that seemed like it was going to explode quickly calmed down.

Soon a huge amount of energy, which would've blown up Hansoo's body if he were to control it, started to get spread around the World Tree.

Giiing

Strength started to quickly come back to the dried up World Tree.

The Roots that had been constantly spreading out started to absorb and send the toxic waters towards the Pillar at a crazy rate and the Pillar used the enormous amount of energy supplied by the Divine Stone, purified all of those toxic waters and turned it into Nutritional fluid and sent it all over the World Tree.

<Waak! What! A huge amount of Nutritional Fluid is coming out suddenly!>

<Just drink it and see!>

The words of the people below between the Pillar and the Roots came into Hansoo's ears through the World Tree.

'It's done now.'

Hansoo nodded his head.

Though it still looked dried up it will quickly return to its original form using the Nutritional Fluid.

Like a dried up sponge absorbing water.

Since the World Tree's vitality was that strong.

‘Though it's a shame to go up without being able to see that change... There's nothing I can do.’

That change will be felt by the people who come after him.

Sofía looked at that Hansoo with a surprised expression.

‘...How did he know all this?’

The only person who knew anything about the incredible change in front of them was Sofía.

The people below would probably think the reason for the changes was the Calamities' disappearance but Sofía knew through the Library.

That the main reason for that change was those relics and the stone that was emitting a blindingly bright light.

<Ancient race's core point activated.>

<Possibility of expansion at a Civilization's level acquired.>

This was the conclusion of organizing and combining numerous



amounts of information that poured into her head.

‘...Did he kill the Calamities with this as the goal? How did he know about these things?’

Sofía had gone to every corner of the Red Zone because she was strong despite only being here for 3 years but she had never even imagined such a place like this could exist.

And Sofía wasn't the only one with questions.

The two Tekilons who had lost all their powers and had been frozen with only their heads sticking out also looked at Hansoo with confused expressions.

They could understand him having collecting the relics and the Divine Stone.

Since those two things showed off a huge amount of strength that couldn't even be imagined.

Since the Divine Stone Fragments couldn't be moved with teleportation and the strength of the Relics alone were very tempting.

But that guy had given up everything and placed them upon the Altar as if it was his goal from the very beginning.

‘What benefits are there for him to save the World Tree?’

Of course, for all races, there’s no bigger benefit as this but then the World Tree’s influence only existed within this world.

Which meant that it’s not a single bit of help to him who was going to go up to the next zone.

Hansoo walked towards Tekilon.

The memories of the previous king was constantly pouring into his head.

One of the functions of the King’s Symbol.

The King needed use the previous King’s memories to reduce mistakes and lead their race towards a better path.

And because of this, when a King transferred the rights they also transferred their memories onto the next King.

Hansoo knew because of this.

The reason the Elvenheims had wondered about for so long.

The thing that had suddenly turned their King crazy.

‘...So they were trying to save their race.’

“You guys. You were Akarons huh.”

<Akaron>

The ancient race who were the owners of the ruins he needed to revive for his next target, the <Body Modification>, in the Orange Zone.

The two Tekilon made surprised expressions.

He could find out that they were of a different race.

Since memories flowed in through the Symbol.

But the way Hansoo spoke was different.

Like he knew something more.

Hansoo started ponder while looking at these two.

‘...They are indeed alive. They aren’t extinct.’

A powerful race <Akaron> who had half a body of a human and half a body of a beast.

If these guys are the inhabitants of the other side, then this is another story.

“Sofía. Could we have a moment by ourselves for a bit?”

Sofía shrugged her shoulders at those words and then left.

Hansoo breathed in and out and then spoke out.

“Do you want to resurrect your race?”

“...What are you talking about?”

Hansoo chuckled as he spoke.

“Simple. Let’s form a contract.”

“...”

Hansoo simply explained his plan and then continued to speak.

“Both of you help me. One of you follow me and go up. And... One of you remain here as the King.”

One would follow Hansoo to the <Orange Zone> and act as the

guide for the objective he needed to accomplish.

One will remain here, strengthen the humans and send them up.

This was a win-win situation.

The chances of Hansoo succeeding in the Orange Zone increased the more they helped Hansoo and with that the chances of the Akaron surviving will increase.

The young Tekilon chuckled at Hansoo's simple explanation and then spoke.

“Well. Trusting you is another story but... You want one of us to act as a wet nurse here? By looking after your humans carefully so they don't get hurt?”

Hansoo laughed coldly at those words.

“No way. It's the exact opposite.”

“...What?”

“If you want to save your race... Push them as much as possible. The Humans. And then get them as strong as possible then send as many as you can. That much wouldn't be hard for you who has the experience of a King once I give you the powers of the World Tree.”

A person who had stayed as the King of the Elvenheims for hundreds of years.

They were dimensions apart from humans who had come over to the battlefield from a normal life.

And another thing.

‘There’s no way that this guy would have any benevolence.’

If he left it to a human then the King would probably allow humans living peacefully on their own.

And they might not be faithful to their job as the King because they get swept up by some emotions or greed.

But once this guy got on that seat the story would be different.

He will ruthlessly train the humans.

Since the chances of their race surviving increased the stronger humans got.

He won’t act as a Tyrant either.

Since it was better the more went up.

Hansoo looked at the young Tekilon who looked at him as if he was crazy and then handed something over.

The hard drive that was within the Devouring and Vomiting Root that the Fairy planted. (\*PR: it was mentioned that Hansoo took it out in a previous chapter)

“If you connect this onto the Plant the beasts will get produced again. Stimulate the humans consistently with this, turn them into warriors and send them up. And you... Will go up with me.”

Since the King he wanted to set up here was an iron-hearted Monarch and not a benevolent King.

One who would ruthlessly train every human who comes into a warrior.

But the two Elvenheims made confused expressions as if they still didn't understand.

They couldn't trust this guy but it was the same the other way around.

“On what basis can you trust me and leave this world to me? What if I decide to play around with you humans?”

Once somebody got the power of the Administrator and the King,

they could rule like a god even without the Forked Lightning or the Thousand Soldiers Armor.

Since they could just throw anybody they didn't like out of this dimension.

Hansoo laughed at those words.

“Correct words. So I was thinking... If you agree then I will need to have some insurance for the friend who will remain here.”

“What?”

At that moment something came out from a corner of Hansoo's body.

With enough information and strength necessary.

The fragment which had cracked from a corner of Hansoo's body came out from the end of his hand.

“What is...”

Hansoo coldly laughed at those words.

“It's insurance.”



.....

Reward for the Three Gates.

Second Gate’s reward was runes.

And the reward Ralph Lauren had received from the fairy a long time ago after getting to the end of the first of the Three Gates.

<Trait Granting>.

Ralph Lauren chose the trait <Berserk> at this place, became a fighting machine and then swept across the Otherworld until he reached the Final Brigade.

But the thing Hansoo needed was not battle strength but rather shackles.

Humankind, including Hansoo, had a lot of thoughts before sending a person back.

Setting up a King who can control all of the humans was good.

But if they couldn’t control that King then things will become difficult.

Since Hansoo would need to go after he finished his job here no

matter how strong he was.

Then Sofía had spoken out:

<You said that the reward for the First Gate of the Three Gates is Trait Granting right? Let's use that.>

Then three candidates came up to control the King.

Trait of a Lord.

Trait of a Covenant.

Trait of the Fragments of Seven Souls.

The trait of a Lord was dismissed.

According to what testing was done, it could not affect people across dimensions.

Same with the Covenant.

Like Miyamoto has already shown, it was always possible to bypass and find shortcuts if one wanted to.

The trait that had been chosen at the end was <Fragments of Seven Souls>.

From the tests it showed that it could go across the Dimensional Wall and still influence people.

Since they could borrow Hansoo’s strength, if the King was threatened then they could maintain their position with monstrous amounts of strength.

And since they can receive Hansoo’s memories there wouldn’t be a need to explain or help them understand it.

Since there wasn’t a need to teach.

The invasion of the Abyss may hasten but it wouldn’t be a big problem if he sent over selective memories.

‘You guys will need to become the whips.’

A strong whip which will constantly push humans into strong soldiers.

“Choose. How you want to do it.”

Hansoo looked at the two Elvenheims, no, Akarons as he looked at the fragment on his hand.

.....

After the two, who had accepted the proposal, left, Hansoo remained by himself and started to check his current status.

‘It feels naked... Without the relics.’

The strength that the relics gave was that formidable.

But there was no regrets, he would need to leave them here anyway.

‘There’s a lot I’ve gained too.’

The Forked Lightning and Thousand Soldiers Armors will be taken up by him.

These two things were prepared from the possible coup d’etat from the Five Great Tiger Generals.

There was nobody who could threaten the young Tekilon who had the relics of the Five Great Tiger Generals, the King’s power and even his soul fragment.

Though Hansoo won’t be able to show a god-like might without the divine stone, there wasn’t much to speak about since his armor had a skill which was the basis for its copy being a solo numbering artifact.

‘And one more thing.’

“Come out. I’ve killed them all.”

The air split apart as the fairy popped out after those words.

The fairy praised him as soon as it came out.

“Woah. You really killed all five huh?”

Hansoo looked at the fairy in front of his eyes and then spoke.

“It’s time to keep your side of the promise.”

The fairy shrugged as it spoke.

“Of course. We’re quite strict about these things. But it won’t be fun by itself so I’ll give you a choice.”

“... You really like choices.”

“Isn’t that the fun part?”

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders.

“Speak.”

“Something certain or something uncertain.”

“...”

“If you choose then I will give you a skill of your choice. On the other hand, if you choose random then I will give you a skill that nobody has gained so far.”

“Hmm.”

Hansoo made an awkward expression.

He didn't like these things but their rewards were quite faithful.

There wasn't a loss on both sides.

‘Well, this is indeed better than having 5 solo numbering skills...’

Since solo numberings won't on the same levels either.

There weren't many on the solo, or even double, numberings that worked well with him.

Even more so if the limit was seven like him.

Hansoo first thought about the certain path.

‘Should I pick Immortal Soul or Elemental Outfit?’

All ten skills were considered but these two skills came up first.

Solo numbering 1 skill.

<Immortal Soul>.

A skill which Kangtae had.

It turned the user’s body close to an immortal’s.

Kangtae trusted this skill and fought like a mad warrior in the front.

Since he was allowed to fight like a mad immortal as long as he didn’t die by constantly healing.

Solo numbering 3 skill.

<Elemental Outfit>

A skill Keldian had.

Attract the elements from all around, create the outfit of an elemental and bestow a power upon the user to use numerous elements in any way they wanted.

Since it was an outfit created from the surrounding environment, it obviously gave a huge amount of survivability and defense against the surrounding environment.

If he fought in a flaming desert then a blazing armor will be created and if he fought in a lightning island then a clothing of lightning will be created.

He could still remember Keldian wearing the Elemental Outfit and pouring out thousands of different skills.

If he were to use one of those two above skills then he wouldn't really lose even compared to the Zero Numbering, Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement.

But the thing the fairy would give him stuck around his mind.

Though he had killed the Calamities with the help of numerous people, his part wasn't small.

And since these guys aren't the type who would fool around here, the skill that the fairy would give him that nobody had gotten yet would be amazing.

'...But the fact that it's random sticks around.'



Not all skills synergized with Hansoo like the Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement.

No, there were more skills that didn't.

The Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement had amazing balance and was perfect for Hansoo's fighting style.

Just like the Elemental Outfit or Immortal Soul.

On the other hand, he wouldn't be able to pull out all of the skill's potential even if it was a Zero Numbering if it didn't fit with his fighting style.

A skill which he could utilize to its utmost potential.

Or a skill of higher quality and rarity but something he cannot guarantee would have synergy with himself.

Hansoo grabbed ahold of his chin and started to ponder.

## Chapter 96 – Orange Zone (2)

---

“Hooh...”

Hansoo pondered for a moment.

Since the things he did were dangerous, the Immortal Soul wasn't that bad.

No, the Elemental Outfit was good in terms of balance between attack and defense.

But he knew how to obtain these up above.

A skill like a Demonic Dragon's Reinforcement was hard to get within the Otherworld.

“Let's go random. Can you give it to someone else other than me?”

‘...I must calculate the possibility of getting a Lord-like skill of an already dead person.’

Skills with limits couldn't match up to solo numberings.

He couldn't fill up one of the seven spots with such things.

It was better to give it away to Sangjin or somebody else who was capable.

Because the affinity of the skill with the user can't be ignored.

The fairy nodded at those words.

“Don't worry. I will give it to you in a rune form. Wherever you want to use it is up to you.”

Then the fairy pulled out a small pouch.

“Here! Pick one from the bag.”

“ ... ”

It was an act of hospitality.

Then a shining skill rune which was letting off a reddish purple light popped out and the fairy exclaimed in surprise as it saw this.

“Woah. It's the Pandemic Blade.”

“Pandemic Blade?”

A skill which he had never heard of.

The fairy smiled as it spoke:

“It’s a skill of somebody who had destroyed a whole world. Heehee. That person had really entertained us well. Well. I’m not sure if it’s to your liking. Are you going to use it?”

Hansoo squinted his eyes after checking the skill’s options after hearing the fairy’s words.

.....

Kuooooooooo!

Beasts were charging in from all directions.

They had started to create the beasts again as the World Tree revived.

‘They’re doing good.’

Hansoo looked at those beasts and then nodded.

He had given a soul fragment to the young King, Tekilon, as well as all of the powers.

And after observing how he was doing, he was raising up the

humans very well.

Overwhelming them but at the same time not enough to kill them.

Thanks to this the newcomers were endlessly hunting beasts without a break and were getting stronger.

Which was the same for him.

‘It will take another... 3 more days for the lake to open.’

Only when the World Tree collects more mana will the dimensional door to the orange zone opens.

There was only one thing he needed to do.

To get the qualifications to go up by gathering runes.

‘Ah, some rest finally.’

This could only be called rest.

Though he didn’t have any relics, Hansoo had advanced too far for the beasts of the red zone to threaten Hansoo.

Hansoo lightly swung the Forked Lightning in his right hand.

Chwaaaak

As the spear which was over 3 meters long swung in the air, the 5m tall gorilla-shaped beast instinctively raised its right arm and blocked the attack.

Due to its quick reaction it was able to run away with just a light wound.

But at that time something happened.

Bubble bubble

Something started to grow madly from the Gorilla's arms.

Sofía, who had been watching Hansoo from afar, made an expression full of fear.

‘It's... It's that again.’

The yellowish fungi that had covered the wound grew out and then soon exploded.

Chiiiiik

Kuuuuuuuhh!

The bright yellow spores that exploded out from the fungi covered the entire body of the gorilla in an instant.

Infinite repetition.

The spores grew out again as it melted down the gorilla's body and from that location new fungi grew out.

The newly grown fungi exploded again as it spread more spores in all directions as those spores created more fungi.

Kuuuuhh!

Kyaaaah!

Soon the hundreds of beasts around Hansoo had been covered by the spore cloud.

Their body melted down as they rolled over the ground from the pain and slowly died while becoming a new source of fungi.

Hansoo nodded as he looked at the scene which looked like yellow fireworks exploding out in all directions.



‘Amazing.’

<Pandemic Blade.>

A blade of viruses and fungi.

The name was a blade but it was actually a skill which added a special effect to attacks.

The effect was very simple.

Creating fungi that infinitely spread out and infected everything.

It was extremely harmful and was hard to kill off since it was in such large numbers.

One could only persevere and hold on until the mana within the fungi ran out.

Of course there was a condition to this.

That mana needed to be supplied.

It would only grow and spread out from the mana it started off from.

‘On the other hand, as long as mana is supplied... Wow. I can only trust the fairy’s word huh.’

Hansoo clicked his tongue.

He had thought that the words of it being a skill that someone who had destroyed a whole world had used was a bluff.

Since it wasn’t easy for one to go against a whole world unless they took control of a being that protected a whole civilization like the World Tree.

But he could only believe it after seeing the effects.

If this was to continue to spread infinitely then it could erase a whole world.

If Hansoo was to use the relics and the divine stone fragments to imbue it with mana and spread the Pandemic Blade then he would probably kill over half the people in the red zone with just a single slash.

The amount of mana that the guy who had destroyed the whole world had wouldn’t even be comparable to that which he possessed.

There was a limit to Hansoo’s mana and there was a limit to how much he could do but it was indeed a skill that was frightening enough to be comparable to Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement.

‘...But it does indeed take up a huge amount of mana. I need to find out a few different uses for this later.’

He could feel his mana emptying out despite him only slashing a few times.

It was a skill that had clear pros and cons unlike the Demonic Dragon’s Reinforcement which had amazing balance.

But Hansoo didn’t change his expression while his mana was emptying out, he remained normal and slashed a few more times to cause a massacre.

‘I should warn them just in case.’

.....

Sofía made an awkward expression while looking at Hansoo from afar.

‘I worried for no reason.’

The one who had been the most shocked when Hansoo threw away the relics was Sofía.

Since though he was almost invincible with the relics, he wasn’t unbeatable without them.

Since she had way more skills with higher masteries and had a stronger trait.

His ring and armor were extremely powerful but she had more artifacts herself.

She could only worry.

Since she being able to barely contend with him meant that he was on equal ground with the other Departed Souls.

He might've created some friction between those from the Six Pillars since they didn't really like him.

Jongsang looked at Hansoo with a slightly disliking expression as well.

But that was a story of a few days ago.

After seeing the strange golden spear and the suspicious skill, they were making an expression which told that they didn't want to go against him.

And the people who were watching from the distance were making expressions full of fear as well.

Sofía looked at Hansoo, who had gathered up all the runes and

was walking towards her, and asked:

“How would we fare if we go up?”

They were strong.

But they had been stuck up against a wall for 5 to 6 years now.

Since it had been years since they gathered the best skills that could come out from this place and had raised their masteries to the brim.

And their battle experience could not increase since they didn't have any more opponents.

But those people who had gained better skills and artifacts in the upper zone and had fought with stronger foes will be stronger than them.

Since there will also be people who had been there for 4 to 6 years and had not left like the Departed Souls here due to some circumstances.

The artifacts they had were close to invincible here but could not be used above and the orange artifacts they gained from the Branch weren't that high of a quality.

‘Well. How would he know?’

She had asked because of the difference in strength between herself and him but there was no way for him to know.

But unlike Sofía's thoughts, Hansoo was calculating things meticulously within his mind.

‘Though she isn't weak... Sofía is a strong 5th year. Departed souls are between weak 6th and normal 6th years. I should be around 7th year.’

The artifacts they had were merely those of the lower level in the Orange Zone.

The usual duration for people to go up from the Red to the Orange zone was 4 years.

They wouldn't be like 4th years who had just gone up due to their skill masteries but it would be hard for them to fight against those of the Orange Zone who were armed with better artifacts and runes.

‘Well that'll be solved when we go up.’

Hansoo finished his thoughts and then looked at the giant lake, Mirror, which was filling up in the distance.

He would leave as soon as the mana of the lake filled up since his

runes were almost filled up.

Sofía, who had been watching Hansoo until now, asked something that she had been curious about:

“How did you know all of that by the way?”

“What do you mean?”

“That giant tree and the relics.”

Sofía’s actual personality was quite competitive and full of curiosity.

But there weren’t many things that drove either of these aspects of her personality lately.

She had gotten as strong as she could so there wasn’t anyone to feel competitive against.

Though the other six departed souls were stronger than her, they had been here for 7 to 8 years longer.

According to talent, she was much better.

There wasn’t much to be curious about.

Since there wasn't anywhere in the Red Zone that she hadn't been to.

And the places she hadn't been to were too dangerous for her to go in just from curiosity alone.

But the recently met Hansoo was constantly driving these two facets of her personality in a crazy manner.

Hansoo shrugged his shoulders as he spoke.

“Psychic powers.”

“Don't speak nonsense. Your trait isn't that.”

Hansoo had hunted in order to fill up his runes but Sofía didn't really have much to do for the past few days.

Playing with Camille was getting boring.

Sofía had invested the rest of the leftover time in observing Hansoo and made a conclusion from her trait, Library.

‘He isn't an omniscient type like me.’

Omniscient type.



A word to call traits which helped the user know things that they couldn't possibly know with their current knowledge.

But as Hansoo laughed and refused to answer, Sofia's eyes squinted down.

‘It’s a secret huh.’

There was something more to it but she could not figure out what.

‘Hmm...Hmmmm.’

Sofia pondered inwardly for a moment and then made her decision.

.....

Forked Lightning in the right hand.

Nurmaha's Ring on the left hand.

Thousand Soldiers Armors over the whole body.

Hansoo, who had filled up his runes, now looked at the filled up lake.

It wouldn't only open once a month anymore.

Since energy was overflowing throughout the World Tree.

‘It's time to go up.’

Hansoo, who had been looking at the Mirror which was ready to accept anybody at any time, thought of Sangjin who he would meet up soon and then spoke towards Sofía standing next to him.

“You want to go with me?”

Sofía nodded at his words.

“I know that your trait isn't that of the Omniscient type. Let's have a win-win. You won't know what's above, it'll be good for us to help each other.”

Though following him was due to her curiosity, she couldn't say this out aloud due to her pride so she made an excuse of survival and waited for a reply with a nervous mind.

‘Is he going to refuse?’

This could happen.

‘No. It felt like he was treating me well, no way.’

Observing for a few days, she found out that he was rather kind to her.

He kindly answered everything she had asked.

‘I guess beauty works again.’

Though strength was the main part in the Otherworld so most people didn’t approach her with ease but in the real world there was a truckload of boys who had followed her around while she was attending college.

Hansoo chuckled while looking at Sofía who was praising herself inside.

Because of old memories.

Sofía Vargera.

Member of the Final Brigade which consisted of the 100 most powerful people.

His comrade.

And a woman who had led him around like a teacher when he was roaming around the Otherworld.

<Well. If you want to follow then just follow. We should help each other.>

These were the words Sofía told him when they first met.

Of course the situation had changed a bit now.

Sofía, the person who had found his and Miyamoto's treasure while they were barely holding onto their lives while going up against the Six Pillars and the Twelve Roots of the Red Zone and had gone up due to not having any people to contend against.

This was something that should happen 2 years from now.

‘It’s nice to meet you again.’

“Sure. Let’s go together.”

Hansoo laughed as he looked at Sofía.

## Chapter 97 – Orange Zone (3)

---

Sofía looked at the man in robes standing next to Hansoo and pouted.

‘So I wasn’t the only one getting special treatment huh.’

Sofía, who was pouting, looked at Hansoo and asked.

“Is this guy going too?”

An ordinary looking man.

But that couldn’t deceive Sofía’s eyes.

‘This guy. This is the guy we caught above the World Tree’

One of the two people who looked like twins.

Though he had changed his appearance and was acting like a human being, numerous information was constantly popping up from <Library>.

Hansoo laughed as he spoke.

“This guy will help us. Apparently his hometown is over there.”

“...Is that so?”

‘So he came from the Orange Zone? You could come over to this side from that side?’

Sofía gave up after having numerous thoughts.

Though she had gotten curious, Hansoo would answer kindly until it reached a certain point and then just laughed it off.

As if there was a reason why he couldn’t answer.

Sofía made an expression full of uncertainty but then shrugged her shoulders.

‘Whatever. He probably has a plan.’

“Anyways, are we only going as a three? While the others are going like that?”

Sofía mumbled as she looked at the mobs of clansmen in the distance.

Hecarim’s clansmen, which numbered almost ten thousand, were preparing to cross over while walking towards the distance.

That was the smarter choice.

A world where they didn't know anything about.

It was better to go in numbers.

Hansoo laughed at those words.

“There's no point.”

“Huh?”

Tekilon mumbled while looking at Sofía who was making a confused expression.

‘Oh right... Where is this Dimensional Portal linked to?’

Though they can cross over to that side, all information from the other side will be disabled.

Of course even Tekilon wouldn't know where this Dimensional Portal connected to in the other world.

Tekilon mumbled while looking at the calmly shining lake.

.....

Kuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu

A huge creature was creating loud noises as it was walking around.

A huge creature which towers over multiple kilometers in length.

<Margoth>

Though it was smaller than the Calamity Fish, the giant dinosaur shaped creature that had the size beyond a human's imagination was smashing the trees beneath its feet as it walked.

Though the trees of the forest towered over tens of meters with ease, the size of the Margoth was well over 1km.

It was the same as walking over grass.

And there were a few people watching that Margoth.

Som Sak, a 4th year\* of the Orange Zone, made a confused expression while looking at the distant Margoth and then spoke towards someone next to him:

“Ken. Hasn’t it been over a week since the newcomers should have come?”



Ken also made a confused expression at those words as he nodded his head.

“Yeah... It has been long past since they should have come out.”

Then Ken thought of the time when he came over to this world from the Red Zone.

He had run into the Mirror because he had been chased by Amil Stadan, the captain of the Shock Troopers from Hecarim, because he had accidentally touched his woman.

Perfectly in time for the mirror that opened once a month.

While he was swimming madly through the lake, a bright light shone from a deep part of the lake and Ken freaked out once he arrived here from the rough current.

‘For the Dimensional Portal to be linked inside that thing’s mouth.’

<Margoth>.

A creature which had a huge mouth befitting of its size.

The place Ken had come out from while being shrouded in light was inside the Margoth’s mouth.

‘Damn it. If I was weaker then I would’ve died back then.’

Ken then looked at the Margoth in the distance that was opening its mouth wide.

The Margoth, which had opened its huge mouth, slammed down its mouth onto the ground.

Kudududududu

Though it looked like a herbivore, the reason why it had bit onto the ground was not to eat up the trees.

The Margoth pushed away the trees as if they got in the way and then bit onto the ground itself.

Gurglegurglegurgle

Then a red liquid started to rise up from the ground.

The Margoth hurriedly shoved its mouth in there and drank the red liquid at the same time as biting the surrounding ground.

‘...I came out from there a year ago huh.’

He was a 3rd year back then with a rather sturdy strength but if he couldn’t come out from that mouth then one of two things would’ve happened.

Get crushed.

Or get swallowed.

The worst part was those giant beasts that should only exist within stories used that mouth to eat every three minutes or so in order to sustain that huge body.

If one can’t adjust and move quickly then they would just get crushed inside that mouth and disappear.

Guoooooo

Ken shook his head while thinking of back then.

There was no reason for him to care.

Since they just needed to do what they had to.

‘Hurry up and get lost. You bastard.’

Only then will they be able to accomplish their next objective.

While Ken, Som Sak and the others were watching the creature with anxious expressions, light started to pour out from the long horn on its head.

Like a signal tower.

As if it recieved information from somewhere.

Som Sak made a surprised expression after seeing this.

“What? Why does the Dimensional Door open just now? It has already been a week?”

There was no way that they wouldn’t know the timing of the

Dimension Door's opening.

Once a month.

Once light shone from the horns on the Margoth's head, the people who crossed over from the Red Zone over the Mirror will randomly be teleported within the mouth of the Margoth.

But why did it randomly open now?

Gwuuuuuuuh!

The Margoth, which was focused on its feast, made an annoyed expression at the strange occurrence within its mouth.

It stopped its feast as if it it got pissed, started to chomp its teeth in order to get rid of the sensation and then puked.

Guwaakk

“Uhh. Memories of the past year are coming back.”

Som Sak made a disgusted expression.

Numerous noises were coming from in between the puke of the Margothe.

“What the fuck! What is this!”

“Goddamit! As soon as we come out!”

“Hey! If you don’t want to get killed then hurry and come out!”

Hundreds of people who had come out in between the puke freaked out at the giant creature in front of their eyes as they crawled out from the puke and ran.

‘Well. Those guys are at least lucky.’

Ken mumbled.

The reason why most people survived was because of that.

If that thing didn’t want to puke then most people will get

chewed and smashed.

‘Of course there are exceptions.’

Ken then looked at another Margoth in the distance.

A Margoth which looked like it had a worse personality than the others due to its slit eyes.

It was such a glutton to the point where it was constantly devouring the ground whilst its horn was shining.

No, it was actually eating more vigorously as if it was trying to get rid of the uncomfortable feeling in its mouth by chewing it down.

Ken mourned within his mind.

Most Margoths puked but sometimes there were a few that had bad personalities such as that.

Those who come out from that thing mouth would just die like that.

‘It’s really a meaningless death.’

To get chewed up as soon as they got to the Orange Zone, which



they had hopes on, after breaking through the Tutorial and the Red Zone with hardship.

While Ken was clicking his tongue, a strange reaction occurred from the one that was chewing onto the ground.

Kuuuugg!

It stopped eating and then raised its head.

An uneasiness disappeared from its face as rage filled it up instead.

The edges of its eyes got raised from the rage as it made the already angry-looking expression even worse.

But that was only for a moment.

Kuuuuuhh!

The rage quickly turned into pain.

A loud shockwave and a bright light following an explosion occurred within its mouth while it was making a painful expression.

Boom! Boom!

Kudududk

Kaduk!

After crying out from the sounds of things breaking and smashing apart, it freaked out as it opened its mouth in order spit and puke out everything within its mouth.

At that time tens of dolls flew out into the air.

Ken didn't believe his eyes as he saw this.

‘...What. Who came up?’

Even Amil Stadan, who chased him in order to kill him, couldn't make it cry from pain.

Since its body was too big for it.

Though it wasn't at the level of the Calamity Fish, the body which towered over multiple kilometers and the stadium sized head had a durability beyond human imagination.

‘Who at the level of a Red Zone...’

Someone flashed by Ken's head.

The seven who were thought of when one thought of the strong people of the Red Zone.

‘...Departed Soul?’

But Ken shook his head.

There was nobody who didn’t know the faces of the Departed Souls.

Since the Helper Clan showed drawings to the travellers around the Pillar and told them.

To not get killed by pissing them off without knowing who they are.

But the one in the distance within the mouth of the Margoth who was constantly smashing the inside of the Margoth’s mouth was not somebody he knew.

‘Who is he?’

Boom!

The people who had broken through landed one by one near Ken.

“Uwak. What is this.”

Sofía looked at the red liquid covering her whole body with disgust.

At the same time Sofía understood why Hansoo had told her that it didn't matter.

A humongous current swept over them the moment they got surrounded by the light.

The people who had been together were swept up by the current and were separated in all directions.

‘Damnit. Of course there was no way those fairies would just send us off with ease.’

The current looked like it performed the work of separating them into numerous directions.

‘Michael and Jukma, those guys will go through some shit. Kuhuhu.’

They wouldn't die since they weren't that weak but they would be pretty pained after losing the ten thousand which they wanted to do something with.

Actually a huge amount of carrier pigeons were flying up into the sky from all around.

In order to find their comrades.

‘So this three was the limit in order to bring that guy.’

Even if they knew, they couldn’t withstand the current without strength.

They could only hold onto each other because they were at the level of Hansoo and Sofía.

If one didn’t have the strength or resistance at the level of Hansoo or Sofía then the energy was not something they could endure.

It might’ve been different for the other Departed Souls but there was a limit of how many Hansoo and Sofía could bring while holding onto them.

But the other Departed Souls denied working with Hansoo and only the three of them came here.

‘Well. We’ll probably meet them again eventually. They aren’t people who would get killed off easily.’

While Sofía was looking around, Tekilon got lost in homesickness while looking around.

‘It’s home.’

A place where he could’ve come over to but hadn’t because he feared seeing his extinct race.

Only after seeing the giant Margoths they had fought with in the past did the feeling of home come back to him.

‘...To have multiplied the numbers which we had dwindled down during the second great war.’

Even at just a glance tens of Margoths came into his view.

Margoth.

A giant predator that roamed around the Orange Zone.

There were probably a lot more roaming around.

He had felt that his race was in danger on this side of the world.

Tekilon spoke towards Hansoo because he felt anxious.

“Let’s move out quickly.”

Boom!

At that time a skill flew towards them.

A perfectly aimed skill.

As Hansoo lightly swung his spear and received it, numerous people watching them shouted at them.

“Hey! Hey! Dumbasses! Come over here quickly! Don’t get in our way! You slow people!”

‘Huh?’

Sofía clicked her tongue because she was bewildered.

The people over there were threatening them with numbers and even weapons.

A few details came into Sofía’s head about the person standing in the very front.

Name is Ken.

A fourth year.

‘So he came up here last year. Then he should know who I am.’

She didn't want to bicker on with that but it was a bit sad on her part to be ignored like this.

‘Or... He has something backing him up.’

Sofía's eyebrows danced around from the marvelous treatment she had received the moment she came up.



# Chapter 98 – Orange Zone (4)

---

‘What does he have for him to act like this?’

Ken, who had seen Sofía’s expression, flinched a little bit but then quickly loosened up.

‘There’s no reason to get scared.’

And he wasn’t alone.

“Do you think that this is the Red Zone? Don’t interfere with our work.”

Ken, who had sent a carrier pigeon saying that he had found one of the Departed Souls somewhere, shrugged his shoulders as he spoke.

Ken had seen a lot of things in the past year while roaming around the Orange Zone.

He had seen a countless amounts of scenes but ironically the scene that left the strongest impression on him was the first thing he had seen when he came up.

It wasn’t the giant Margoth.

The important thing was what happened afterwards.

Which was the reason for their wait here.

“Don’t get in the way and just watch.”

Ken, who had muttered while looking at Sofía, looked at his comrades running towards the newcomers for their plan.

.....

“Hoo... that was terrifying.”

The captain of the tracking team of Triple Lights Union, Epilen, sighed in relief as the giant lifeform made booming noises and walked off.

‘Let’s see.’

Epilen looked at his surroundings and then frowned slightly.

‘As I expected... They all separated.’

They had all been separated due to the strong current that occurred along with the light.

But Epilen shrugged his shoulders.

‘Well. It wouldn’t matter much.’

Epilen looked around after sending a carrier pigeon to his clansmen to tell them of his location.

People who were so-so compared to him, the captain of the tracking team of Three Lights Union, but had the rights to come up.

‘Well. It wouldn’t be that boring on the way at least.’

Since he could just order these guys around.

“Hey! Over there!”

“Hmm? Me?”

Epilen, who had shouted towards the middle-aged man who still hadn’t completely waken up, smashed the man’s stomach.

Smack

“Kuhuk!”

“This bastard. Go scout around the surroundings. You and you over there too.”

The man, who had been hit in the stomach for no apparent reason, grinded his teeth in pain.

Why did this guy order him around when they weren't even from the same clan?

But the man saw the symbol of the person who had smacked him and then grinded his teeth because he knew that he couldn't retaliate.

‘Fuck... Triple Lights Union.’

The amount of strength he had was quite a lot but the Six Pillars was not something he could go up against.

‘Damned bastards... They were oppressive below but still are after they come up...’

But there was nothing he could do.

“You thought something would change when we came up? Come on. Let’s hurry.”

The strong will get stronger and the gap between them and the weak will only get larger.

The fact that the rich get richer and the poor poorer didn’t change in this world either.

Epilen looked at the giant creature which had puked him out after ordering a few guys after smacking them a few more times.

Kuoooooooo

‘...Amazing.’

He was laughing before but his mind wasn’t at ease either.

How could his mind be at ease if such a large, dinosaur-like creature was roaming around?

It was even worse because he had seen the chaos created by the Ouroboros and the Calamity Fish below.

While all of Epilen’s consciousness was focused on the giant creature, a sharp and deadly aura sniped him.

‘What?’

Booom!

A black arrow flew in from the distance and then smashed Epilen.

With extreme speed and accuracy.

Epilen could only receive a hit without even being able to activate a single skill due to this.

‘Kuhu... Damnit. Who was it?’

Epilen stumbled as he quickly caught his balance.

He then looked towards the direction where the person who attacked him was.

A familiar face.

Epilen thought for a while as to where he had seen the person who had attacked him and then clicked his tongue

“Look at this?”

“It’s been a while Epilen.”

A person which he didn’t even remember the name of.

But he could think actually think of one thing.

That the bastard over there had hurriedly ran over to the Orange Zone to get out of his hands.

He was extremely let down when that guy had ran into the mirror while he was hunting.

Epilen couldn’t go after and catch him because he was enjoying

the Red Zone and had no thoughts of heading up.

Though he had repaid it all onto his lover.

But for him to act this confidently after just eight months.

It wasn't like he was playing around in the Red Zone.

Epilen loosened up his body.

“I regretted not being able to catch you then, this is good.”

He needed someone who knew well about this world anyway so this was good.

A person would at least know the basics no matter how weak they were if they've been here for 8 months.

‘I just need to leave his mouth intact.’

Gitae laughed coldly as he charged towards Epilen.

.....

Ken thought of last year.



The group of people which had specifically targeted the strong people of the Six Pillars as soon as they crossed over.

The Six Pillars and the Twelve Roots who acted without knowing how high the sky was were sliced apart.

They had first thought that these guys wanted to massacre them and steal their artifacts and skills so they had been frightened but these guys checked their list and then walked off.

<Meh. You aren't on the list. Live well and don't make grudges with others.>

And then Ken found out their identity after roaming around the Orange Zone for the past year.

They weren't some incredible guys.

Actually they were people who were similar to him.

'Those who had been chased up.'

Those who had ruled around the Red Zone thought that 1 to 2 years of difference was okay so they stayed behind in the Red Zone.

To compensate for the hard times they've had.

In order to enjoy.

And during that time they trample upon others and have a joyful time.

And those who get trampled by these guys run to the Orange Zone in order to survive.

Like himself.

That abrupt choice, and because of this choice the gap between these two people in two different zones get larger.

Though it was the same time, the difference of how fast one got strong in the Red and the Orange zone was like heaven and earth.

Those who couldn't deal with the tyranny of the Six Pillars or the Twelve Roots and then barely fulfill the requirements to come here will struggle in order to survive while those in the Red Zone laze about.

And get stronger at a speed a speed befitting that.

Ken was like that too.

Ken had some thoughts while looking at himself getting stronger at a quick rate.

Though he had gotten here first and was getting stronger, once Amil Stadan, who had been chasing him, got here then he would get stronger here as well.

No, since he had gotten strong fast in the Red Zone there was a high chance that he will get stronger than him once he got to the Orange Zone and had some time.

And since these guys were people who had been close below, they will send out carrier pigeons even if they were separated for just a moment and bunch up again.

Ken knew after thinking to this point.

Why the others had caused a huge massacre near the Margothe.

The moment when the Margothe was spitting them out.

If it was now then it was possible.

These guys will get separated because of the dimensional current of the Mirror.

And they would be confused by the existence of something like the Margothe and would have been weakened too.

Those guys were at Orange Rune 0.01.

They were over 30% because they had hunted for a whole year.

Amil Stadan of the old days was something Ken had trouble even looking at.

But Ken was confident now.

That he could smash Amil Stadan 99 out of 100 times if they fought now.

Ken thought up to this point and then went to search them out.

In order to participate in the revenge.

People who had gathered in order to return the pain they had received in the Red Zone.

No, it was actually people who had gathered to cut off the roots.

While they hated them this much, the people who came up wouldn't really like them either.

And when those guys got strong again then the thing that happened below will just repeat itself.

Because of this they had to cut off their necks in this period where the door opened once a month.

So it was a group that that gathered once a month.

Ken stared at the participants who were causing a massacre all around.

.....

“You son of a bitch! Did you really think you will be able to live long after killing my friend?”

“Die! You bastard! You didn’t know that things would turn out like this!”

There was chaos everywhere.

As soon as the Margoth made some distance from them the people who had been on standby had assaulted the clansmen.

Epilen was part of the people who had been swept over by this tidal wave.

Epilen couldn’t believe the reality.

‘This is insane... It has only been 8 months.’

Epilen, who had both his arms smashed apart, looked at the

person charging at him with an expression of disbelief.

And Gitae was bleeding in front of that Epilen but was in a much better state than Epilen.

Epilen grinded his teeth and the shouted to his surroundings.

“You bastards! What are you doing! Help out!”

As the people were watching from the side with an awkward expression, Gitae shouted out coldly.

“If you aren’t part of this then don’t butt in! This has nothing to do with you! Look! Our targets are just these guys!”

Then the people who had been looking at this situation realized that those words were true and quickly backed off.

They knew even after looking at it for a bit.

That the people who were charging at them were precisely charging at their targets only.

And there was no reason why those from the Six Pillars or the Twelve Roots who were getting attacked would look as people who should get saved to them.

No, it actually felt rather good.

The fact that people who had been oppressing them and were acting arrogantly had gotten beaten up and sliced apart.

“This damned...”

Epilen made an expression of despair as he looked at Gitae slowly walking towards him.

.....

Ken, who had been invigorated from the massacre that was happening all around, smirked at Sophia.

This place was a very honest world.

In some way, much more than the modern society they used to live at.

In society, once a gap was created between then closing that gap was almost impossible.

Like how no matter how much a normal businessman made, they wouldn't be able to get richer than the landlord who just laid about lazily.

But this place was different.

The moment they get strong and relax, a chance is created for those who struggle.

The people dying off over there was the evidence for that.

Those guys had looked amazing when they were below but it was different once they had gotten up here.

‘You guys are just... Departed Souls. Just a title.’

Their attitude was the problem and not the strength.

One would get left behind even by just lazing around for 1 or 2 years.

Those who had been lazing for 8 to 9 years would be even further back.

Those who had come in the Otherworld at the same time as the Departed Souls could probably kill off the Departed Souls with just a press of their thumb.

At that time a Carrier Pigeon flew towards Ken.

‘The reply to the carrier pigeon before had come.’



One couldn't look over every Margoth mouth in this wide open area.

So they shared the information.

When a person on the list came into view, they would either send a carrier pigeon to those who had grudges against them.

Or kill them for them instead.

There were a few carrier pigeons belonging to the Six Pillars out of those flying above but most of them were theirs.

There were two things written on those carrier pigeons.

First, that they had found Amil Stadan whom he had grudges against.

Second.

‘Sofía Vergara... You got onto the list too huh.’

While Ken was mumbling, Sofía's eyes squinted in an instant.

The status of him changed on her trait

From passive to hostile.

Though he wasn't showing it from the outside, he would charge in as soon as he got the chance to.

‘Look at this kid.’

She didn't have such a bad temper to the point where she would beat them down because she had been ignored but hostility was a different story.

Though she wanted to turn him into frozen tuna right now but causing a face to face fight the moment she came up was a bit unattractive to her.

Since the aura of those charging weren't average.

‘And we haven't understood the situation completely yet either.’

And another thing.

‘This Hansoo guy had a plan I think.’

It might've been different if she was acting alone but once you had comrades, you couldn't act any way you wanted.

Sofía tapped Hansoo with her elbow as she whispered.

“What are you going to do?”

Hansoo looked at Ken in front of him at those words.

# Chapter 99 – Orange Zone (5)

---

Kududududu

A tremendous vibration ran throughout the ground.

Kwaruru

“Uuk!”

“What!”

From the single wave of the huge vibration, the people’s bodies flew into the air and then bounced off all around.

They hadn’t gotten hurt due to their inhuman physiques and skills but it was a vibration that was strong enough to bounce these guys into the air.

‘What. Is it an earthquake?’

But it didn’t seem like even an earthquake would be at this level.

While Sofía was shocked from the huge vibration, a huge soundwave rang from far away.

Kuoooooooo

The cry of a Margoth was loud enough on its own but the level of this cry was on a different dimension.

A cry which shook the heavens and was like thunder that pushed apart the clouds.

‘...Pain?’

While Sofía was frowning at the emotion that was carried upon that cry, somebody hugged Sofía from behind.

“Uh?”

Sofía was shocked at the sudden actions of Hansoo.

‘What is this sudden...’

While Sofía was blushing, Hansoo spoke towards Sofía behind her.

“We need to fly away quickly Sofía. Hurry.”

“What?”

“I don’t have a flying skill.”

Sofía looked at the surroundings at those words.

“Damnit! Run to the shelter!”

“Goddamnit! Why the clash already!”

Ken and the others who were killing and hunting were hurriedly running in all directions.

Some went through the hole on the ground and hid.

Another one used all their skills to harden themselves and then smashed their body into the ground.

Some threw their body into the air and then quickly flew towards a direction.

As the seniors of the Orange Zone were acting like that, the people who were getting attacked and those who were watching the attack started to follow them as well.

Since that strange vibration and the actions of their seniors were enough to make them feel uneasy.

Kuuuuung!



The giant Margoths started to cry out as they smashed their heads deep into the grounds.

At the same time they compressed their bodies as much as possible and stuck as close as they could onto the ground.

As if they were trying to prevent getting flicked off somewhere.

Sofía was dazed at the tens of hills that were created in an instant.

‘What is going on...’

Tekilon approached Sofía and then hung onto the back as well.

And then spoke.

“I’ll be in your care too. Female.”

“ ... ”

Sofía suppressed the sudden rage which skyrocketed for some unknown reason and then started to activate her skill, <Monumental Air Path>.

Oooooong

Sofía's body carried the two male bodies and then started to rise high up into the sky.

‘How far do I have to go up?’

It was better to copy others when one didn't know.

As she saw, the people who had gotten onto the sky already had climbed up hundreds of meters.

But their expressions didn't really look that great.

As if they wanted to go up higher but couldn't due to the restrictions of their skills.

While Sofía was pondering while looking at these people, Hansoo spoke to her.

“Since you've come all the way here it's better for you to see it. Go up as high as possible.”

“What?”

Sofía looked downwards at those words.

Margoths that had shrunk down.

But nothing different could be seen yet.

‘...Let’s go up a bit higher.’

Sofía’s curiosity was stimulated from the current situation which told her that something might happen.

Sofía followed Hansoo’s words as she went up even higher.

Though she had gone up hundreds of meters higher than the others who were floating in the sky, she still could not find the origin of the vibration.

Just vast plains.

But at that time another wave of the huge vibration rang throughout the lands.

Kururururururur

At the same time something smashed the ground after cutting through the clouds on the edge of the plains.

Boooooom!

Sofía freaked out after seeing something whipping around in the distance.

‘...Ouroboros?’

The thing that had been smashed on the edge of the land could be seen by their eyes.

The beasts below were big as well but the Ouroboros, which they had fought, was naturally thought of at the humongous size that wouldn’t even be compared to them.

‘Though it does seem a bit different...’

While Sofía was squinting her eyes to see it more clearly, Hansoo shook his head and spoke.

“You’ll be able to see it if you go up higher. It’ll be hard to see yet.’

“ ... ”

Sofía went up higher with Hansoo and Tekilon on her back at those words.

After a long while after Sofía had reached the heights where the clouds had shrouded her body, she could see what it was.

And where the vibrations had come from.

Kuooooooooo

“Uwaaaaa...”

Sofía looked beneath her feet.

It was a sea of lava all around.

No matter where she looked the only thing she could see was a sea of lava.

A hell-like environment that no life could live on.

But there was a creature living in such an environment.

“...So we were above that thing huh.”

The land they thought of as the land was actually not land.

A giant beast that couldn't even be compared to the Calamity Fish.

‘...With that size it could probably be as big as a small country.’

Four legs that were like the trunk of the World Tree.

And a giant body which could be compared to the area of a whole country which was being supported by such legs.

The thing which had made her think of the Ouroboros was a long and thick tail.

A giant cow-like head and a pair of horns that shot above the clouds.

The giant beast had half of its body submerged within the sea of lava and was screaming out in pain.

Tekilon mumbled with a bitter-like expression.

“It’s the Gragos.”

Divine Beast, Gragos.

A giant beast that should only come out within legends and tales which maintained its body temperature by submerging its body within the sea of lava, the <Heringsen>, and supplied its body with energy by drinking the lava.

A gigantic creature which was located a level above the Margoth.

A creature which supplied land and food to other creatures upon the Heringsen where no life could exist upon.

At that time a question occurred upon Sofía's mind.

‘What could possibly threaten this?’

It was clearly shouting out in agony.

But what would threaten something with a body such as this?

The dinosaur-like thing they had seen earlier was big too but those things taking a few bites would just feel like fleas gnawing on its bits.

And they were probably allowed to do so because it was only that much.

‘If they could actually inflict pain onto it then it would just roll around once or so.’

It may only be a flip to it but once that thing flipped upon the sea of lava that was probably thousands of meters in depth, the creatures living upon it would probably go through an armageddon.

At that time Tekilon spoke:

“The only thing that can threaten a Gragos... Is another Gragos.”



Kuuuuuuuhh!

At that time something jumped out from the sea of lava and then attacked the Gragos.

Though they were both Gragos, they still looked different.

If the giant Gragos they were on looked like a cow then the Gragos that popped out from the sea of lava and was trying to bite down upon the buttocks of the cow-like had the form of a lizard.

The lizard-like Gragos which had popped out from the lava opened its jaw and then bit down onto the buttocks of the bull-like Gragos.

Then a battle occurred.

The bull-shaped Gragos was much larger than the Lizard but as if it didn't want to fight, it smashed at the Lizard with its hind legs, whipped its tail and tried to run away from it.

The Lizard shaped Gragos continued to bite down upon the buttocks of the Bull-shaped one as if it wouldn't let go easily.

‘...So that thing was a tail.’

Sofía then finally understood why all the creatures above that thing ran away in fear and tried to firmly tie down their bodies.

Though the Bull wasn't really fighting back vigorously, this much was still a calamity to those living upon it.

Though they could live through the shockwave, what if they got flicked off into the sea of lava?

Or get swept by the tail that was swinging from side to side?

'...But that thing's a bit weird.'

Sofía realized that the attacking Lizard and the Bull had differences.

No, their size and looks were both different but there was another difference on the Lizard.

That the lower half of its body had blackened.

She couldn't tell when it was submerged under the lava but once it got upon the Bull's buttocks with its front legs, she could see the blackened lower body.

And as if the blackened lower body didn't move properly, the Lizard only used its front legs and its mouth while it hung onto the Bull's buttocks.

Kuuuuung!

Soon the Bull-shaped Gragos had succeeded in flinging off the Lizard and running away.

Though their sizes had an impact, the fact that the Lizard couldn't use its lower body was a major factor as well.

Kiiii

The Lizard looked at the running Bull with a regretful expression but looked at the flesh in its mouth contently as it started to chew on it.

Then a change occurred.

The lower part of its body which was blackened started to recover its color.

The Lizard-shaped Gragos cried sadly upon looking at the color of the body that had slightly returned and then plunged its body back into the sea of lava.

“...”

“Let’s go down. It’ll be hard to catch up to the Gragos if it went off further away from us.”

Sofía stayed silent from Tekilon’s words and then slowly went downwards.

Sofía looked around the surroundings after reaching the ground.

“Uwaaa...”

Chaos.

The giant trees had been all broken and pulled off and the Margoths were slowly raising their bodies while crying out in agony as if their bodies were in pain.

“Kuuu...”

“Kuhak.”

The adventurers stumbled up as they walked off into a direction as they released their skills as if they had barely survived this time as well.

‘...It was just a Lizard biting off a bit of the meat on a Cow’s butt.’

Since it was humongous in size even compared to the lizard, there wasn’t a calamity this time.

No, it was only this much because the Bull didn’t like to fight, if it were to madly charge with its horns like in a bullfight then it would’ve been much worse than this.

‘No, If that thing had lost...’

The Bull had won because a small one had come.

What if an opponent which the Bull needed to fight against with all of its strength appeared?

Or an existence which could devour the bull?

‘Insane.’

Sofía looked at Tekilon as she spoke.

“What happened? The lizard had half of its body blackened.”

Though Sofía had thought of Tekilon as a nuisance when they had first come here, now she was very grateful for having him.

From the fact that there was a person next to her who could satisfy her curiosity which was vigorously rising up.

Tekilon spoke.

“Calamity of Death.”

“What?”

“It’s the name of the calamity that destroyed our world.”

It wasn’t that their race, the Akaron, had died from an epidemic.

The things that had gotten sick were another existence.

The Divine Beasts, Gragos.

The giant creatures which supplied them with the land and nutrition they needed to survive.

Their race, the Akarons, looked up to the power of the Gragos and then used their genes and invented the Body Modification which would strengthen their bodies.

And that attempt had succeeded very well to the point where they had driven off the Margoths that had threatened them and had united their race who were living on multiple Gragos' bodies.

This was the 2nd Great War.

But the spotlight of the 3rd Great War was not them.

The Gragoses that had been inflicted with the Calamity of Death had gone crazy and started to chomp down upon the other Gragoses.

And their world had embarked on the path of destruction in an instant.

Since the Akarons and the Margoths were nothing but bugs

compared to the transcendental existence, the Gragos.

There was nothing they could do in a situation where the gods were jumping around and the lands were getting destroyed.

Tekilon spoke towards Hansoo.

“You saw the Gragos. It’s not weird for yours or my race to get killed off at any time. So I want to ask. How are you trying to save our race? Don’t say nonsense like killing the Gragos that attack. The Calamity Fish or the Ouroboros were just extremely toned-down versions of the Gragos.”

The Four Calamities.

These were merely toned down versions they had created while researching the Gragos for their Body Modification.

The transcendental creature, Gragos, was perfect beyond reason and much larger and did not have a weakness.

A predator of a Gragos was another Gragos.

Sofía made an expression full of fear at those words.



# Chapter 100 – Orange Zone (6)

---

Hansoo laughed at those words.

“Of course that’s a bit too far. How would I kill that?”

Hansoo wouldn’t be able to kill that no matter how strong he was.

Their race was different in the first place and there was a limit to how strong he got from the things that came out in the Orange Zone.

Like how the Seven Departed Souls didn’t get infinitely stronger despite the countless years in the Red Zone.

And even if he were to get strong enough to kill that thing, why would it let him kill it peacefully?

During the time Hansoo fights it about half of the creatures atop the Gragos would die off.

‘Each and every one of them are precious.’

He had to not kill them even if he could.

Akaron, the race which were cultivating their culture throughout numerous Gragos.

The 1st and 2nd Great Wars had occurred because of similar reasons.

Since only a limited amount of creatures could live atop of the Gragos.

No other creature could live upon the Heringsen of lava other than the Gragoses.

In order to maintain their life, they could only eat the bodily fluids of the Gragos or the other creatures that grew on that bodily fluid.

But there was a limit to the bodily fluid of the Gragos.

Since a great calamity would occur if they drink too much bodily fluid from the Gragos.

Once a too large quantity of fluid escapes then the Gragos will roll around the sea of lava, Heringsen, in order to maintain its health.

In order to get rid of the parasites.

So there was a limit to how many creatures could live upon the Gragos.

Since there was a limit to the quantity of its bodily fluid despite its huge size and vast territory.

There were even 3 Akaron tribes who had gotten greedy and had gotten destroyed in the past.

No, even if they weren't being greedy, there were quite a lot of Akarons who got swept up by the Margoth who didn't know such a thing as restraint.

Because of this, many Arakon tribes, who were each cultivating their own cultures, went through Great Wars with each other.

In order to get atop of each other's Gragoses to take over the land and gather more things to eat.

Or to get to a different Gragos before the lava bath of the Gragos started due to the Margoths.

This was the 1st Great War.

The Margoths weren't their original opponents.

Since the Margoths were powerful beyond comparison to the Akarons.

But one man's thoughts were different.

<In order for Akarons to expand, we have to get rid of all the Margoths. How could our tribes survive when those gluttons keep chugging down the bodily fluids?>

The much larger Margoths drank a tremendous amount of bodily fluids from the Gragos.

And because of this the man focused all his strength on developing the Body Reconstruction technology, united the whole race with this power and then swept off all the Margoths.

This was the 2nd Great War.

Basically the 1st and 2nd Great Wars were battles that had occurred in order to obtain food from the Gragos.

‘A lot more humans will come over from now on.’

One Gragos that was being used as the starting area was enough since there weren't that many humans yet but once hundreds of millions of humans cross over then a single Gragos was not even close to giving all the humans a place to live.

How could he kill the Gragos when he needed more of them?

Tekilon replied at those words.

“...And dodging the attacking Gragos is a problem as well. Sadly

there are probably only a few Gragos left. Even if you unite all the remaining Gragos, you won't be able to acquire land that your race will live upon."

Tekilon had seen the Elvenheims who had expanded under the influence of the World Tree so he knew the strength of the World Tree.

He didn't know how long it would take for Hansoo's race to cross over here but if they borrow the strength of the World Tree then expanding their numbers a few hundreds of times wouldn't take long.

Since the World Tree sped up rate of growth.

Probably hundreds of millions or billions of them would cross over.

And they needed tens of Gragos in order to sustain that race.

'No, hundreds may be required to live on.'

They couldn't use all the Gragos as a place to live on.

The Gragos had more differences with each other than similarities and there were a few crucial conditions that were needed to be fulfilled in order for people to be able to live upon them.

First, they could not have a habit of enjoying a hot bath by diving under the lava.

And the smaller ones who got submerged under the lava could not be used.

Their personalities couldn't be bad.

Since they would try to fight every Gragos they see if their personalities were bad.

Though the Gragos survived by drinking the lava, the ones with bad personalities will attack other Gragos for stress relief or even as a snack.

Of course these things would not fight peacefully.

They would roll around the lava and fight aggressively.

And it needed to be large enough to survive through the sneak attacks of other Gragos.

The Akarons had searched through every passing Gragos thoroughly in order to find those who fulfill these conditions and only after that had they moved.

Since all the Akarons who had gotten on top of that Gragos would

get massacred if even one of those above conditions wasn't fulfilled.

They could only find out their movement patterns after countless years because they were so big and were laid back but they had succeeded in dividing between safe and unsafe Gragos and Tekilon knew of this.

But they in order to find tens of Gragos who fulfilled the above requirements they needed to search through hundreds of Gragos.

‘...There's no way hundreds of them would be alive.’

The moment the Calamity of Death was introduced, the number of Gragos had declined at an extreme speed.

Since there weren't many when he had left, there would be even less now.

<Calamity of Death>.

A strange unknown disease which only occurred to the Gragos.

The effect of the disease was very simple.

It would slowly eat through the infected Gragos and paralyse it.

But there was a damned way to cure this disease.

The body of a healthy Gragos.

The earlier Lizard was a Gragos that wasn't really aggressive.

Though it was too small and as such it couldn't be used to live, something the Akarons had seen a possibility of being able to live upon once it grew more but it had gotten that aggressive after catching the disease.

It had attacked the uninfected Gragos in order to cure its lower body that was getting paralysed.

The peaceful Gragoses went insane and started to attack and bite off each other after the Calamity of Death fell.

It was a problem even if they didn't get attacked.

The Gragos that was infected thoroughly by the Calamity of Death didn't die but would slowly fall beneath the lava after having its whole body paralysed.

And not much to say for the creatures living atop of it.

'...Damnit.'



Tekilon grinded his teeth when he thought of back then.

Since he had thought of back then when 23 of the 27 colonies atop of 27 different Gragoses had been smashed apart in an instant.

A calamity which had befallen them during the happiness they had attained after driving off the Margoths.

Hansoo laughed at those words.

“That’s why we need to cure them.”

“...What? How are you going to do that?”

Tekilon shouted out because he was dumbfounded.

Tekilon had roamed the outside world after turning into a soul-form.

In order to find out a way for their race to survive.

But they were not stupid.

What would have been the first thing they would have tried to do after the Calamity of Death swept about.

Of course they would’ve tried to cure the Calamity of Death.

And they had been fairly confident.

Since if the Elvenheims had a speciality at magic engineering like with the World Tree, then they were skilled at dealing with life and genes.

But the result was a huge failure.

They lacked time, manpower and leisure as well the Calamity of Death being different from anything they had seen so far.

In the end the 13 Akarons who had special physiques and could live through the Soul Converter left behind the Akarons struggling upon the Gragos while waiting for their doom as they headed to different worlds.

But for a random guy to pop out of nowhere and speak like this, how would he not get pissed?

Hansoo merely shook his head.

“I know of the cure.”

They had searched of countless methods in order to solve the Seven Zones.

But it wasn't only them who had been running here and there in

order to solve the Seven Zones.

Like the Elvenheims whom they had met at the Abyss.

The humans, along with Hansoo, had not been able to meet the Akarons but they had found the artifacts of a man while roaming around the Abyss.

<Elkadion>.

Within the memory crystal of the man who had called himself an Akaron, there was a clear way to cure the Calamity of Death which had occurred in the Orange Zone.

A cure which he had completed after hundreds of years roaming around the Abyss where time and space had been distorted.

Elkadion couldn't handle the harsh environments of the Abyss and had died off but the crystal he had left behind with his regrets and the cure had been handed down to the humans.

<If anybody finds this cure... Please go to our world, cure the Calamity of Death and save our race.>

In that crystal, a method for creating the cure by only using materials that could be found in the Orange Zone was written down.

Elkadion had created a cure using the materials from the Abyss much earlier but he had prepared for the instance where somebody landed upon the Orange Zone with only their body and had found a way to create the cure by only using materials from the Orange Zone.

The alchemists who had found this extremely intricate and detailed knowledge could only exclaim.

Though it wasn't hard to create a cure with the materials in the Abyss, creating a cure with the materials from the Orange Zone was basically the same difficulty as trying to create a dragon by breeding snakes.

It was obvious why Akarons could not figure out a way to cure it.

It was a miraculous result created from the countless experiences and knowledge gained through the Abyss as well as the obsession of saving one's race.

There was a message from Elkadion at the end of the memory crystal which had the cure.

<I've learned too much about the personalities of the people who roamed around the Abyss while roaming the Abyss myself. There's no way these people will help my world if I ask them to do this without any compensation. So I will leave you a hint of the reward you will receive after you solve this. A hint of what you can earn after solving this problem. I don't know who you are, how strong you are or what objectives you have but... I believe you won't be

disappointed with the reward.>

‘Well. I could get that after this all ends.’

He could only receive those rewards if his work on the Orange Zone was completed.

Hansoo opened his mouth in order to finish his talk.

“There’s something we need to kill in order to make the cure.”

“What is it?”

Tekilon decided to find out the details later since this guy was somebody who hid too many things and first decided to focus on solving his current curiosity.

“It was called the Margoth Du Tiradus I think.”

“...Margoth of the Tiradus lineage?”

Tekilon sighed at those words.

“Damnit. It’ll be easier to just put a hole on the skull of the Gragos.”

The Gragos wasn’t reachable.

Since they were placed far above where they could reach.

But Tekilon, who had participated on the 2nd Great War against the Margoths, knew the fright and strength of the Tiradus too well.

They had won against the Margoths but hadn't easily driven them off.

They wouldn't have called it the Great War otherwise.

It would've been called the Great Massacre.

Margoth du Tiradus.

The most aggressive and powerful Margoth out of the 8 different kinds.

It was the name of a beast which was the least numerous but had massacred the largest amount of Akarons.

"It seems like you know a lot... Then you know that the food of the Tiradus are those Margoths over there right?"

Tekilon then pointed towards the Margoths which had puked them out, walking off in the distance while towering numerous kilometers into the air.